



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

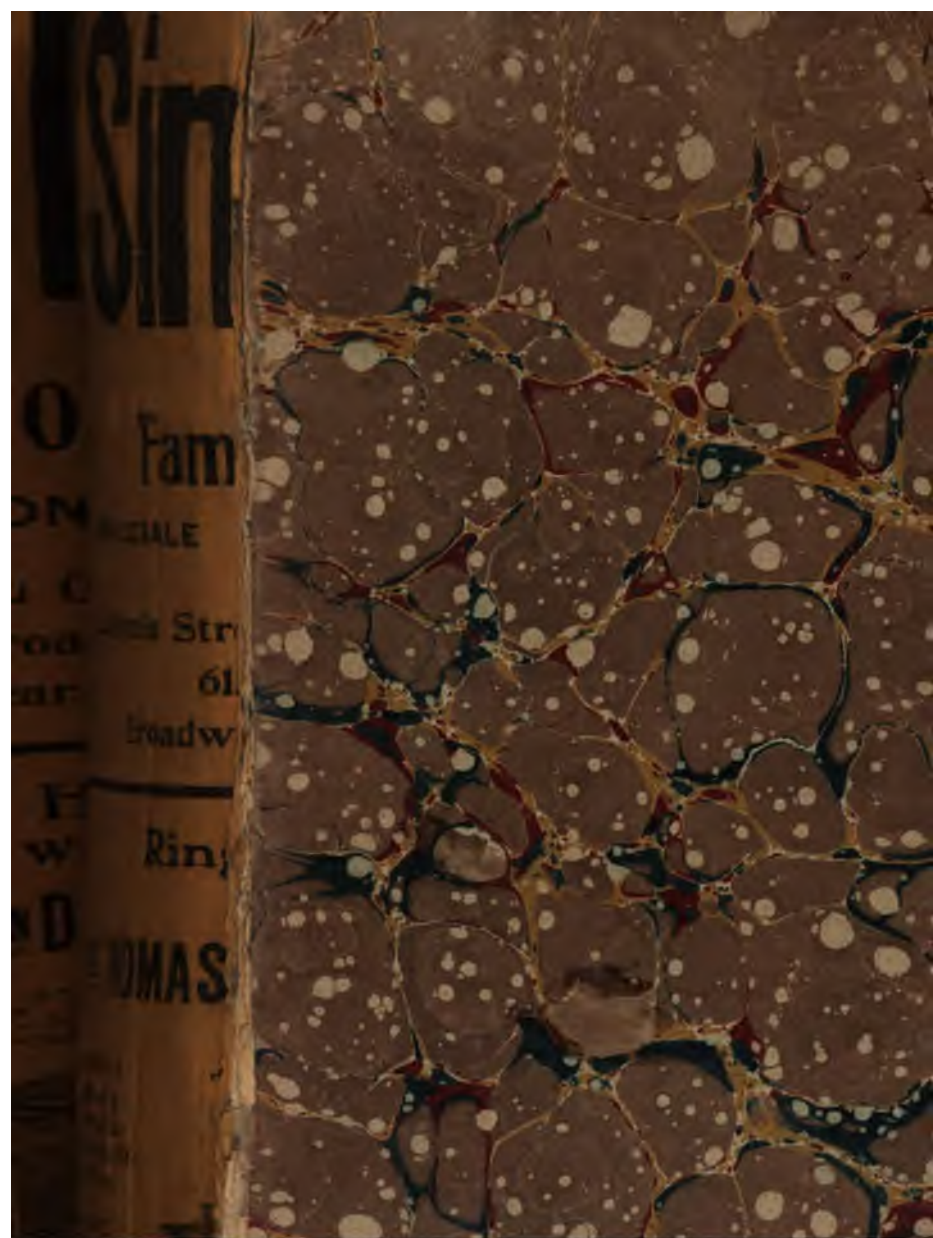
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



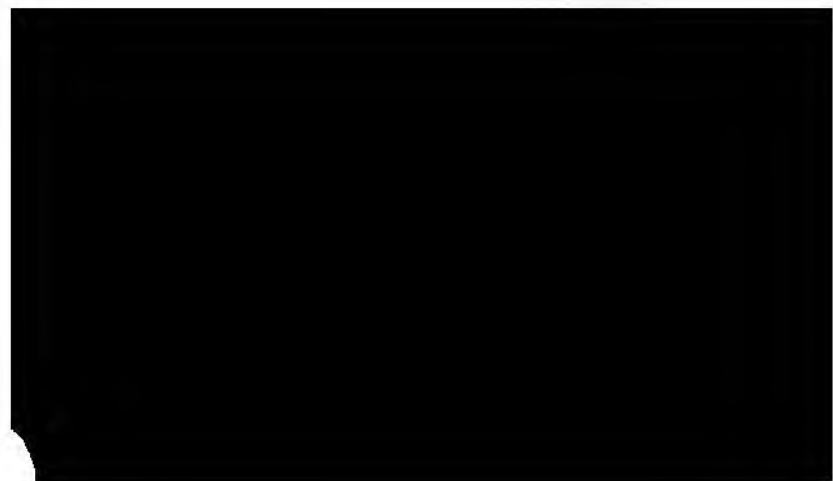


821.1

C4968

no. 73











8164-40.72

The Harleyian MS 7334

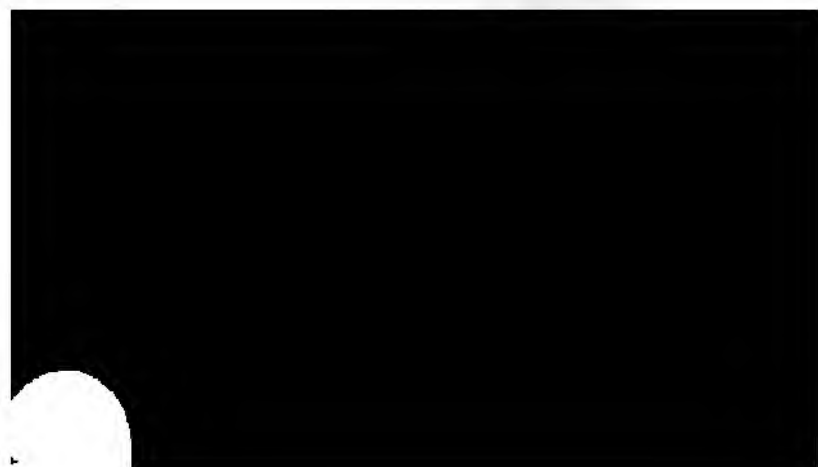
of

Chaucer's Canterbury Tales.

11

1000 1000 1000

1000 1000 1000



THE
Harleian MS 7334
OF
Chaucer's Canterbury Tales.

EDITED BY
FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL.



LONDON:
PUBLISHT FOR THE CHAUCER SOCIETY BY
N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

MDCCCLXXXV.

TO
The Lovers of Chaucer,
PAST, PRESENT,
AND
TO COME
159606



FOREWORDS.

WHEN thinking in 1868 what were the six best MSS of the *Canterbury Tales* to print in my *Six-Text* for the Chaucer Society, the Harleian 7334 was of course one of the first that occurred to me. But as it had been printed twice by the late Thomas Wright—in 3 vols. for the Percy Society, and then in cheap double-column,—then by Mr. Jephson for the late Robert Bell's Series of English Poets (published by Jn. Wm. Parker), and a fourth time by my friend Dr. Richard Morris for George Bell's Aldine Series,¹ I decided to let these four printings suffice for the Harleian 7334, and so get a fresh MS (which proved to be of the B-type) into print among my Six. It was not a wise decision, as there are too many of the Corpus or B-type already in the *Six-Text*, and I have unluckily filled up gaps in the better A-type MSS—Ellesmere, Hengwrt, and Cambridge—with extracts from B-type ones, though in several cases the Christchurch A-type MS was open to me. But when I started Chaucer work, I didn't know even the little that the course of it has taught me. (Still, as investigation of the niceties of Early English goes on, probably no student will blame me for having printed one more MS of *The Canterbury Tales*. And though collators' curses for the amount of labour I've thrown on them have already fallen thickly upon me, I always assure these Balaams that they'll bless me when their work is done.)

¹ Mr. George Bell meant at first simply to reprint Pickering's text of Chaucer's Poetical Works, but, on my strong remonstrance as to its badness, Mr. Bell agreed to engage Dr. Morris to re-edit the whole from MSS.

Well, when Editors began to edit Chaucer's Tales, and wanted to know what the reading of Harleian 7334 is, they often found some italics in Dr. Morris's text, showing that he'd altered his MS; and as his publisher wouldn't let him give various readings, a reference to the MS became necessary. This was a great bore, specially when a man lived in Germany or America. Moreover, my friend Prof. Child meant his foundation-Essay on Chaucer's language and metre to be based on the MS Harl. 7334, and not on any Editor's changes of it, whether right or wrong. So it gradually became plain that a simple print of this MS must be done for the Chaucer Society. And here accordingly it is. It is as accurate as twice reading of every line with the MS by me can make it; but no doubt little slips have happened: they always will befall.

The MS is dear to the soul of HENRY BRADSHAW and all concerned in the due order of the Canterbury Tales, because it has, at the end of the First Fragment of Group B—the Man of Law's Tale—the proper Man-of-Law-Shipman Link, which should hook it on to the Second Fragment that the Shipman's Tale heads. No Shipman's Tale and Fragment 2 however follow it—but instead, Group D,—Wife, Friar, Summoner,—then Groups E, F, G, C,—and after these, the wanting Second Fragment of B, though without its genuine End-Link.

The MS is of an independent type, not falling into





1—487 of the Franklin's Tale, p. 354-5 below, Harl. paging), render it less fitted for the basis of a complete edition of *The Canterbury Tales* than the fine illuminated Ellesmere MS.¹ Moreover, Harl. 7334 sticks 8 spurious lines—2004 b, c; 2012 b, c; 2037 b, c; 2048 b, c,—p. 443-4, into the Summoner's Tale, and one, l. 592 (p. 444) into the Squire's Tale. It also has not 2 lines, A 252 b, c, in the General Prolog, p. 8; 2 in the Cook's Tale, A 4375-6, p. 127; and 8 at the end of the Cook's Tale, A 4415—4422, p. 128; 7 lines in the Knight's Tale, A 2013-18, p. 58, A 2958, p. 84; 2 lines in the Miller's Tale, A 3721-2, p. 106; 2 in the Reeve-Cook Link (A 4355, 4358, p. 125-6; 4 lines altered into two); one line in the Man of Law's Tale, B 417, p. 443, and five at the end of the Man of Law's End-Link, B 1186—1190, p. 444; thirty lines in the Wife's Preamble, D 575—584, 605—612, 619—626, 717—720, p. 443-444, 444; eight in the Second Nun's Tale, G 155, 210—216, p. 444, 444; the 8 genuine Ellesmere lines² in the Franklin's Tale, 1455-6, 1493-8, p. 443-4, besides leaving out 2 lines (2356-7, p. 444) in the Merchant's Tale,³ four (299-300, 305-6, p. 444) in the Doctor-Pardoner Link, two in the Pardoner's Tale, C 478-9 (p. 444); five in the Shipman's Tale, B 1355 (p. 444) and B 1376-9 (p. 444); one in Sir Thopas, B 1995 (p. 444); about a dozen of prose (trebles) in Melibe,⁴ one stanza of 8 in the Monk's Tale, B 3213-20 (p. 444), four lines in the Nun's Priest's Tale, 4136-7 (p. 444), 4478-9 (p. 444), and all its End Link, 16 lines, (for which see p. 694,) and about 23 treble ones in the Parson's Tale: see the gaps in pages 443-444 as you

¹ The Ellesmere has not the Man-of-Law-Shipman Link which Harl. 7334 has.

² No other MS yet examined by me has these 8 lines.

³ Lines like these, due to the scribe's jumping from one 'sight' to the other, might well have been dotted differently in the print, so as to show the jump.

⁴ B 2252-3 (p. 444), 2264 (p. 444), 2432, 2444 (p. 444-445), 2623-4 (p. 444-445), part of 2646-7 (p. 444), 2708 (p. 444), part of 2726, 2730, 2741 (p. 444-445), part of 2854 (445), 3034 (p. 444).

turn over the leaves. Altogether, at least, 760 lines are wanting in Harl. 7334 : a serious loss.¹ But on the other hand, this Harl. 7334 puts lines 1307-8 of Group D, the Friar's Tale, in their right place, on p. 444 instead of their wrong one as lines 1293-5 of the Wife-Friar Link, on p. 444.

That in some cases the Harl. readings are not so good as those of the Ellesmere, I showed in my article 'Recent² Work at Chaucer' in *Macmillan's Magazine* for March 1874 ; but I admitted that in other instances the Harleian readings were the better. Of the MSS which contain the spurious 'Tale of Gamelyn'—the A-type ones don't—Prof. Skeat found Harl. 7334 much the best. See his 1s. 6d. edition of *Gamelyn* for the Clarendon Press.

I once hoped to have edited the *Tales* and all Chaucer either with Mr. Bradshaw or alone ; but alas, what with the Philological Soc., and occasional work for its Dictionary, Early English Texts and Wyclif, Shakspeare and his Quartos and Folios, Browning and Shelley Societies, Sculling-Fours, Kangaroo bicycles, evenings out, and general laziness, I fear that edition must be left for some more learned and energetic person than myself. Let it suffice that the Chaucer Society has cleared the way for the coming man. I am due now at our Rowing-Club Dance.

British Museum,
Friday, Jan. 8, 1886, 7.30 p.m., under the Electric Light.



CONTENTS

OF THE HARLEIAN MS 7334.

Group	Six Text pages	Harl. pages
A. § 1. General Prologue ¹	1	1
§ 2. Knight's Tale (of Palamon, Arcite, and fair Emelye) (Pt. II, p. 40; Pt. III, p. 54; Pt. IV, p. 71)	26	26
§ 3. Knight-Miller Link	89	89
§ 4. Miller's Tale (of Nicholas, Absolon and the Oxford-Carpenter's Wife)	92	92
§ 5. Miller-Reeve Link	111	111
§ 6. Reeve's Tale (of the Trumpington Miller and Cambridge Clerks)	113	113
§ 7. Reeve-Cook Link	125	125
§ 8. Cook's Tale (of the London Victualler's Apprentice) <i>unfinished</i> ²	127	127
Appendix to Group A. The Spurious Tale of <i>Gamelyn</i>		129
<hr/>		
B. § 1. Man-of-Law's Head-Link	129	155
§ 2. Man of Law's (Proem p. 131 and) Tale (of Constance and her Boy) (Pt. I, p. 131; Pt. II, p. 131; Pt. III, p. 131)	132	158
§ 3. Man-of-Law's End-Link ³	167	193
[For B § 4—14, see p. 167, and for B § 15, see Appendix 1, p. 694. For Group C, see p. 167.]		

¹ It has not the Friar lines 252 *b, c* of the Hengwrt MS.² Eight genuine lines, 4415—4422, are left out here.³ Five genuine lines at the end are left out, 1186—1190.

Group	Six-Text pages	Harl. pages
D. § 1. Wife of Bath's Preamble (of her 5 Husbands, &c. <i>less 30 lines</i> , p. 448-449, 449)	334	194
§ 2. Wife of Bath's Tale (of what Women most desire: Rule over Husbands)	359	219
§ 3. Wife-Friar Link ¹	371	231
§ 4. Friar's Tale ² (of the Summoner being carried off to Hell)	372	232
§ 5. Friar-Summoner Link	383	243
§ 6. Summoner's Tale (of the Friar being trickt by a Sick man and a Lord's Squire)	385	245
<hr/>		
E. § 1. Clerk's Head-Link	403	262
§ 2. Clerk's Tale (of Grisilde) (Pt. II, p. 450 ³ ; Pt. III, p. 451 ⁴ ; Pt. IV, p. 452 ⁵ ; Pt. V, p. 453 ⁶ ; Pt. VI, p. 454 ⁷ ; Chaucer's Envoy, p. 455 ⁸)	405	264
§ 3. Clerk-Merchant Link	442	301
§ 4. Merchant's Tale (of January and May)	443	302
§ 5. Merchant's End-Link	476	335
<hr/>		
F. § 1. Squire's Head-Link	478	336
§ 2. Squire's Tale (of the Magic Horse, &c., and the Falcon) <i>unfinisht</i> ⁴ (Pt. II, p. 480 ⁵)	479	337
(§ 3 has been torn out of the MS)		
§ 4. Franklin's Tale (of Dorigen, Arviragus		



CONTENTS OF THE HARLEIAN MS 7334.

xi

Group		Six-Text pages	Harl. pages
G. § 1.	Second Nun's (Proem and) Tale (of St Cecile)	527	367
§ 2.	Second-Nun-Canon's-Yeoman Link	547	387
§ 3.	Canon's-Yeoman's Preamble (of Alchemy)	552	392
§ 4.	Canon's-Yeoman's Tale (of the rascally Alchemist Canon)	560	400
<hr/>			
C. § 1.	Doctor's Tale (of Virginia)	303	415
§ 2.	Doctor-Pardoner Link ¹	312	424
§ 3.	Pardoner's Preamble (of his Preaching and Tricks)	314	426
§ 4.	Pardoner's Tale (of the Three Rioters ²)	318	430
<hr/>			
B. § 4. ³	Shipman's Tale (of the Monk and the Merchant's Wife)	168	445
§ 5.	Shipman-Prioress Link	181	458
§ 6.	Prioress's Tale (of the little murdered Boy)	182	459
§ 7.	Prioress-Thopas Link	190	467
§ 8.	Chaucer's Tale of Sir Thopas (<i>unfinisht</i>)	191	468
§ 9.	Thopas-Melibe Link	199	476
§ 10.	Chaucer's Tale of Melibe (prose: englisht from French)	201	478
§ 11.	Melibe-Monk Link	253	530
§ 12.	Monk's Tale ⁴ (of folk fallen from high estate)	256	533

¹ Four lines, 299-300 and 305-6, are left out in this.

² Dr Richard Morris was the first to track this to its source in one of the Buddhist Jataka Tales. He englisht it long ago for me, and mentiond the Eastern source in his article in *The Contemporary Review*, May 1881, p. 728-749.

³ For B § 1-3 see Man-of-Law's Head-Link, Tale and End-Link, p. 112, above.

⁴ The four 'modern instances'—1. Peter (the Cruel) of Spain, 2. Peter of Cyprus, 3. Barnabo Visconti of Milan, and 4. Ugolino, Count of Pisa—are rightly put after Zenobia, l. 3564, p. 112, and not at the end of the Tale as in the Ellesmere and other A MSS, p. 500-3 Elles. But one stanza is missing, B 3213-20, p. 117.

[Illegible text]
 [Illegible text]
 [Illegible text]

[Illegible text]
 [Illegible text]

[Illegible text]
 [Illegible text]
 [Illegible text]
 [Illegible text]
 [Illegible text]
 [Illegible text]
 [Illegible text]
 [Illegible text]

[Illegible text] 493
 [Illegible text] 494
 [Illegible text]
 [Illegible text]
 [Illegible text]
 [Illegible text] 495
 [Illegible text]





STANFORD LIBRARY

GROUP A. FRAGMENT I.

§ 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE.

HARLEIAN MS. 7334 (British Museum).

WHan that aprille with his schowres swoote [leaf 1]
The drought of Marche haþ perced to þe roote
And bathud euery veyne in swich licour
Of which vertue engendred is þe flour 4
whan ȝephirus eek with his swete breeth
Enspirud hath in euery holte and heeth
The tendre croppes and þe ȝonge sonne
hath in the Ram his halfe cours I-ronne 8
And smale fowles maken melodie
That slepen al þe night wiþ open yhe
So prikeþ hem nature in here corages
Thanne longen folk to gon on pilgrimages 12
And palmers for to seeken straunge strondes
To ferne halwes kouthe in sondry londes
And specially from euery schires ende
Of Engelond to Canturbury þey wende 16
The holy blisful martir for to seeke
That hem haþ holpen whan þat þey were seeke
Byfel þat in þat sesoun on a day
In Southwerk at þe Tabbard as I lay 20
Redy to wenden on my pilgrimage
To Canturbury with ful deuout corage
At night was come in to þat hostetrie
Wel nyne and twenty in a companye 24
Of sondry folk by auenture I-falle
In felaschipe and pilgrymys were þei alle
That toward Canturbury wolden ryde

The Chambres and þe stables weren wyde 28
 And wel we weren esud atte beste
 And schortly whan þe sonne was to reste
 So hadde I spoken with hem euerychon
 That I was of here felawschipe anon 32
 And made forward erly to a Ryse
 To take oure weye ther as I ȝow deuyse
 But natheles whiles I haue tyme and space
 Or þat I ferþere in þis tale pace 36
 Me þinkeþ it acordant to resoun
 To telle ȝow alle þe condicioun
 Of eche of hem so as it semed me [leaf 1, back]
 And which þey weren and of what degre 40
 And eek in what array þat þey were Inne
 And at a knight than wol I first bygyune
A Knight þer was and þat a worþy man 44
 That from þe tyme þat he ferst bigan
 To ryden out he louede Chyualrye
 Trouthe and honour fredom and curtesie
 Ful worthi was he in his lordes werre
 And þerto hadde he riden noman ferre 48
 As wel in Cristendom as hethenesse
 And euere honoured for his worþinesse
 At Alisandre he was whan it was wonne
 Ful ofte tyme he hadde þe bord bygonne / 52



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 3

This ilke worþi knight hadde ben also 64

Somtyme with þe lord of Palatye

Ageyn anoper bethene in Turkye

And euere more he hadde a souereyn prys

And þough he was worþy he was wys 68

And of his port as meke as a mayde

he neuer ȝit no vilonye ne sayde

In al his lyf vnto no maner wight

he was a verray perfyȝt gentil knight 72

But for to telle ȝou of his array

his hors was good but he ne was nouȝt gay

Of fustyan he wered a Gepoun

Al by smoterud with his haburgeoun 76

For he was late comen from his viage

[lea/2]

And wente for to doon his pilgrimage

With him þer was his sone a ȝong^e squyer

A louter and a lusty bachelor 80

With lokkes crulle as þey were layde in presse

Of twenty ȝeer he was of age I gesse

Of his stature he was of euene lengthe

And wondrously delyuer and gret of strengthe 84

And he hadde ben som tyme in Chiuachie

In Flaundes in Artoys and in Picardie

And born him wel as in so litel space

In hope to stonden in his lady grace / 88

Embrowdid was he as it were a mede /

Al ful of fresshe floures white and reede

Syngynge he was or flowtynge al þe day

he was as fressh as is the moneth of may 92

Schort was his goune with sleeues long and wyde

wel cowde he sitte on hors and wel cowde he ryde

he cowde songes wel make and endite

Iustne and eek daunce and wel purtray and write 96

So hote he louede þat by nightertale

he sleep nomore þan doþ a nightyngale

Curteys he was lowly and seruyable

4 GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334.

And carf byforn his fadur at þe table / 100

Aȝeman had he / and seruantes nomoo
At þat tyme for him lust ryde soo
And he was clad in coote and hood of grene
A shef of pocok' arwes bright and kene 104

vnder his belte he bar ful priftily
wel cowde he dresse his takel ȝomanly
His arwes drowpud nouȝt wiþ fetheres lowe
And in his hond he bar a mighty bowe 108

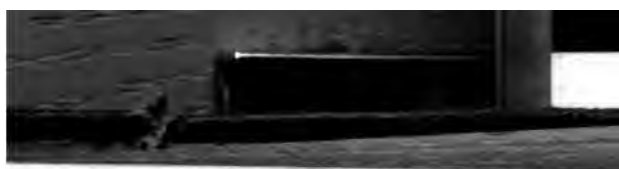
A not heed hadde he wiþ a broun visage
Of woode craft cowde he wel al þe vsage
vpon his arme he bar a gay bracer
And by his side a swerd and a bokeler 112

And on þat oþer side a gay daggere
harneysed wel and scharp as poynt of spere
A cristofre on his brest of siluer schene [leaf 2, back]
An horn he bar þe hawdrik' was of grene 116

A forster was he sothely as I gesse
Ther was also a Nonne a prioresse
That of hire smylyng' was ful symple and coy
hire grettest' ooth nas but by seynt loy 120

And sche was clept / madame Englentyne
Ful wel sche sang þe seruise deuayne
Entuned in hire nose ful semyly
And frensch sche spak ful faire and fetysly 124

Aftur þe scole of Stratford atte Bowe



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 5

Ful semely aftur hir mete sche raught 136
And sikurly sche was of gret disport
And ful plesant/ and amyable of port
And peyned hire to counterfete cheere
Of court and ben estatlich of manere 140
And to ben holden digne of Reuerence
But for to speken of hire conscience
Sche was so charitable and so pitous
Sche wolde weepe if pat sche sawe a Mous 144
Caught in a trappe if it were deed or bledde
Of smale boundes hadde sche pat sche fedde
With rostud fleissch and mylk and wastel breed
But sore wepte sche if oon of hem were deed 148
Or if men smot it wip a 3erde smerte
And al was conscience and tendre herte
Ful semely hire wymples I-pynched was
Hire nose streight hire eyen grey as glas 152
Hire mouth ful smal and perto softe and reed [leaf 3]
But sikurly sche hadde a fair forheed
It was almost a spanne brood I trowe
For hardily sche was not vndurgrowe 156
Ful fetys was hire cloke as I was waar
Of smal coral aboute hire arme sche baar
A peire of bedes gaudid al with grene
And per on heng a broch of gold ful schene 160
On which was first I-writen a crowned A.
And after pat Amor vincit omnia.
Anothur Nonne with hire hadde sche
That was hire Chapelleyn and prestes pre 164
A Monk per was a fair for the maistrie
An out Rydere pat loved venerye
A manly man to ben an abbot able
Ful many a deynte hors hadde he in stable 168
And whan he rood men might his bridel heere
Gyngle in a whistlyng wynd so cleere
And eek as lowde as doþ þe chapel belle

Ther as þe lord was keper of þe selle 172
 The Reule of seynt maure or of seint Beneyt
 By cause þat it was old and somdel streyt
 This ilke monk leet forby hem pace
 And helde aftur þe newe world þe space 176
 he ȝaf nat of þat text a pulled hen
 That seiþ þat hunters been noon holy men
 Ne þat a monk whan he is Cloysterles
 Is likned to a fiasche þat is watirles 180
 This is to seyn a monk out of his cloystre
 But þilke text hild he not worþ an oystre /
 And I seide his opinioun was good
 what schulde he studie and make himseluen wood 184
 Vppon a book in Cloystre alway to powre
 Or swynke with his handes and laboure
 As Austyn byt // how schal þe world be serued
 lat austyn haue his swynk to him reserued 188
 Therefore he was a pricasour aright
 Greyhoundes he hadde as swifte as fowel in flight
 Of prikyng and of huntyng for þe hare [leaf 3, back]
 was al his lust for no cost wolde he spare 192
 I saugh his sleues purfiled atte hond
 wiþ grys and that þe fynest of a lond
 And for to festne his hood vndur his chyn
 he hadde of gold y-wrought a curious pyn 196
 A loue knotte in þe gretter ende þer was
 His heed was ballid and schon as eny glas



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 7

A Frere þer was a wantoun and a merye 208
A lymytour a ful solempne man
In alle the ordres foure is noon þat can
So moche of daliaunce and fair langage
He hadde I-made many a fair mariage 212
Of ȝonge wymmen at his owne cost
vnto his ordre he was a noble post
Ful wel biloued and famulier was he
with Frankeleyns ouer al in his cuntre 216
And eek with worþi wommen of þe toun
For he hadde power of confessioun
As seyde himself more þan a curat
For of his ordre he was licenciāt/ 220
Ful sweetly herde he confessioun
And plesaunt was his absolucioun
He was an esy man to ȝeue penance
Ther as he wiste han a good pitance 224
For vnto a poure ordre for to ȝeue
Is signe þat a man is wel I-schreue
For if he ȝaf he dorste make auaunt
He wiste þat a man was repentaunt 228
For many a man so hard is of his herte [leaf 4]
He may not wepe þough him sore smerte
Therefore in stede of wepyng and prayeres
Men mooten ȝiuen siluer to þe pore freres 232
His typet was ay farsud ful of knyfes
And pynnes for to ȝiue faire wyfes
And certayn he hadde a mery noote
wel couthe he synge and pleye on a Rote 236
Of ȝeddynges he bar vturly þe prys
his nekke whit was as þe flour delys
Ther to he strong was as a Champioun
He knew wel þe tauernes in euery toun 240
And euery Ostiller or gay tapstere
Bet þan a laȝer or a beggere
For vnto such a worþi man as he

Accorded not as by his faculte 244
 To haue with sike lazars aqueyntaunce
 It is not honest it may not auance
 For to delen with such poraille
 But al with riche and sellers of vitaille 248
 And ouer al þer eny profyt schulde arise
 Curteys he was. and lowe of seruyse
 Ther was no man no wher so vertuous
 He was þe beste begger in al his hous 252
 [.
 *no gap in the MS.*]
 For þough a widewe hadde but oo schoo
 So plesaunt was his In principio
 3et wolde he haue a ferthing or he wente
 his purchase was bettur þan his rente 256
 And rage he coupe and pleye as a whelpe
 In loue-dayes ther couthe he mochil helpe
 For þer was he not like a cloysterer
 With a thred-bare cope as a pore scoler 260
 But he was like a maister or a pope
 Of double worstede was his semy cope /
 That rounded was as a belle out of presse
 Somwhat he lipsede for wantounesse , 264
 To make his Englissch swete vpon his tunge
 And in his harpyng when þat he hadde sunge
 His eyzen twynkeled in his heed aright [leaf 4, back]



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 9

wel couþe he in eschange scheeldes selle /
This worþi man ful wel his witte bisette
Ther wiste no man that he was in dette 280

So estately was he of gouernaunce
with his bargayns and with his cheuysaunce
For sothe he was a worþi man with alle
Bot soth to say I not what men him calle / 284

A Clerk þer was of Oxenford also
That vnto logik hadde longe I-go
Al so lene was his hors as is a rake
And he was not right fat I vndertake 288

But lokede holwe and þerto soburly
Ful thredbare was his ouerest courtepy
For he hadde nouȝt geten hym ȝit a benefice
Ne was not worþy to hauen an office 292

For him was leuer haue at his beddes heed
Twenty bookes cloped in blak and reed
Of Aristotil and of his philosophie
Then Robus Riche or fithul or Sawtrie 296

But al pough he were a philosopre
ȝet hadde he but litul gold in cofre
But al þat he might gete and his frendes sende
On bookes and his lernyng he it spende 300

And busily gan for þe soules pray
Of hem þat ȝaf him wherwith to scolay
Of studie tooke he most cure and heede
Not oo word spak he more þan was neede 304

Al þat he spak it was of heye prudence [lears]
And schort and quyk and ful of gret sentence
Sownyng in moral manere was his speche /
And gladly wolde he lerne and gladly teche 308

A Sergeant of lawe war and wys
That often hadde ben atte paruys
Ther was also ful riche of excellence
Discret he was and of gret Reuerence 312
He semed such his wordes were so wise

Iustice he was fuloften in assise
 By patent and by pleyn comissioun
 For his science and for his heih renown 316
 Of fees and Robes had he many oon
 So gret a purchasour was þer no wher noon
 Al was fee symple to him in effecte
 his purchasyngt might nought ben to hi m suspecte 320
 No wher so besy a man as he þer nas /
 And ȝit he semed besier þan he was
 In termes hadde caas and domes alle
 That fro þe tyme þat kyngt were falle 324
 Ther to he coupe endite and make a þingt
 Ther coupe no man pynche at his writyngt
 And euery statute couthe he pleyn by roote
 He rood but hoonly in a medled coote 328
 Gird with a seynt of silk wip barres smale
 Of his array telle I no lenger tale
A Frankeleyn þer was in his companye /
 whit was his berde as þe dayesye 332
 Of his complexioun he was sangwyn
 wel loued he in þe morn a sop of wyn
 To lyue in delite was al his wone
 For he was Epicurius owne sone 336
 That heeld opynyoun þat pleyn delyt
 was verrailly felicite perfyt
 An houshaldere and þat a gret was he



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 11

And many a brem and many a luce in stewe
Woo was his Cook^t but if^t his sauce were
Poynant^t and scharp and redy al his gere 352
His table dormant^t in his halle alway^t
Stood redy couered al þe longe day
At sessions þer was he lord and sire
Ful ofte tyme he was knight of þe schire 356
An Anlas and a gipser al of silk^t
heng^t at his gerdul whit as morne mylk^t
A schirreue hadde he ben and a counter
was nowher such a worthi vauaser 360

AN haburdassher and a Carpenter
A webbe a deyer and a Tapicer
weren with vss eeke clothed in oo lyuere
Of a solempne and gret^t fraternite 364
Ful freissh and newe his gere piked was
Here knyfes were I-chapud nat^t with bras
But^t al with siluer wrought^t ful clene and wel
here gurdles and here pouches euery del 368
wel semed eche of hem a fair burgeys
To sitten in a zeldehalle on þe deys
Euery man for þe wisdom þat he can
was schaply for to ben an aldurman 372
For Catel hadde þey Inough and rente /
And cek^t here wyfes wolde it^t wel assente /
And elles certeyn hadde þei ben to blame
It is right^t fair for to be clept^t Ma Dame 376
And for to go to vigilies al byfore
And han a mantel rialy I-bore

A Cook^t þei hadde with hem for þe nones 380
To boyle chiknes and þe mary bones
And poudre marchaunt / tart^t and galyngale [leaf 6]
wel cowde he knowe a drauht^t of londoun ale
He cowde roste sethe boille and frie
Make mortreux and wel bake a pye 384
But^t gret^t harm was it as it^t semede mo

That on his schyne a mormal hadde he
 For blankmanger he made with þe beste
A Schipman was þer wonyng fer by weste 388
 For ought I woot he was of Dertemouthe
 He rood vpon a rouncey as he couþe
 In a gowne of faldyng to þe kne
 A dagger hangyng on a laas hadde he 392
 Aboute his nekke vnder his arm a doun
 The hoothe somer had maad his hew al broun
 And certainly he was a good felawe
 Ful many a draught of wyn had he drawe 396
 From Burdeauxward, whil þat þe chapman sleep
 Of nyce conscience took he no keep
 If þat he foughte and hadde þe heizer hand
 By water he sente hem hoom to euery land 400
 But of his craft to rikne wel þe tydes
 his stremes and his dangers him bisides
 His herbergh and his mone his lodemenage
 Ther was non such from hulle to Cartage 404
 Hardy he was and wys to vndertake
 with many a tempest hath his berd ben schake
 He knew wel alle þe hauenes as þei were
 From Scotlond to the cape of fynestere 408
 And euery Cryk in Bretayne and in Spayne
 His Barge y-clepud was the Magdelayne

Ther was also a Doctour of phisik



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 13

he was a verrey parfight' practisour
The cause I-knowe and of his harm þe roote
Anon he gaf þe syke man his boote 424
Ful redy hadde he his apotecaries
To sende him dragges and his letuaries
For eche of hem made opur to wyne
Here frendschipe nas not newe to begynne 428
wel knew he þe olde Esculapius
And deiscorides. and eeke Rusus
Old ypocras. haly and Galien
Serapyon. Razis and Auycen 432
Auerrois damascen and Constantyn
Bernad and Gatisden and Gilbertyn
Of his diete mesurable was he
For it was of no superfluite 436
But of gret' norisching' and digestible
His studie was but litel on þe bible
In sangwyn and in pers he clad was al
Lyned with taffata and with Sendal 440
And ȝit he was but esy in dispence
He kepte þat he wan in pestilence
For gold in phisik' is a cordial
Ther fore he louede gold in special 444
A Good wif was þer of byside bathe
But sche was somdel deaf and þat was skape
Of cloth makyng' sche hadde such an haunt
Sche passed hem of ypris and of Gaunt 448
In al þe parisshe wyf ne was ther noon
That to þe offryng' byforn hire schulde goon
And if þer dide certeyn so wroth was sche
That sche was þanne out of alle charite 452
hire keuerchefs weren ful fyne of grounde
I durste swere þey weyzede ten pounde
That on a sonday were vpon hire heed
hire hosen were of fyn scarlett reed 456
Ful streyte y-teyed and schoos ful moyste and newe [leaf 7]

14 GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. *Harleian 7334.*

Bold was hir face and fair and reed of heewe
 Sche was a worþy womman al hire lyfe
 Housbondes atte chirche dore hadde sche fyfe 460
 withouten oþur companye in ȝouthē
 But therof needeth nouȝt to speke as nouthe
 And þries hadde sche ben at Ierusalem
 Sche hadde passud many a straunge streem 464
 At Rome sche hadde ben and at Boloynē
 In Galice at seynt Iame and at Coloyne
 Sche cowde moche of wandryng by þe weye
 Gattothud was sche soþly for to seye 468
 vppon an amblere esely sche sat
 wymplid ful wel and on hire heed an hat
 As brood as is a bocler or a Targe
 A foot mantel aboute hire hupes large 472
 And on hire feet a paire of spores scharpe
 In felawschipe wel cowde lawghe and carpe
 Of Remedyes of loue sche knew par chaunce
 For of þat art sche knew þe olde daunce 476
A Good man was ther of Religioun
 And was a pore persoun of a toun
 But riche he was of holy þought and werk
 He was also a lerned man a Clerk 480
 That cristes gospel gladly wolde preche
 His parischens deuoutly wold he teche
 Benigne he was and wondur diligent



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 15

The ferrest in his parissche moche and lite
Vppon his feet and in his hond a staf [leaf 7, back]
This noble ensample vnto his scheep he ȝaf 496
That first he wroughte and after þat he taughte
Out of þe gospel he þo wordes caughte /
And þis figure he addid ȝit þerto
That if gold ruste what schulde yren doo ? 500
For if a prest be foul on whom we truste
No wondur is a lewid man to ruste ;
And schame it is if a prest take kepe
A schiten schepperd and a clene schepe 504
wel oughte a prest ensample for to ȝiue
By his clenness how þat his scheep schulde lyue
he sette not his benefice to hyre
And lefte his scheep encombred in þe myre 508
And ran to londown vnto seynte poules
To seeken him a chaunterie for soules
Or with a brethurhede be wiþ-holde
But dwelte at hoom and kepte wel his folde / 512
So þat þe wolf ne made it not myscharye
He was a schepparde and no mercenarie
And þough he holy were and vertuous
he was to senful man nought dispitous 516
Ne of his speche daungerous ne digne
But in his teching discret and benigne
To drawe folk to heuen by clenness
By good ensample was his busynesse 520
But it were eny parson obstinat
what so he were of high or lowe estat
him wolde he snybbe sharply for þe nones
A bettre preest I trowe ther nowher non is 524
he waytud after no pompe ne reuerence
Ne maked him a spiced conscience /
But cristes lore and his apostles twelue
he taught. and first he folwed it himselue 528

With hem þer was a plough man his broþur

That hadde I-lad of dong' ful many a fopur
 A trewe swynker and a good was hee
 Lyuyng in pees and parfyt charitee 532
 God loued he best al his trewe herte [long]

At alle tymes pough him gamed or smerte
 And þanne his neighebour right as himselue
 He wolde threisshe and þerto dyke and delue 536
 For cristes sake with euery pore wight
 wipouten huyre if it laye in his might
 His tythes payede he ful faire and wel
 Bathe of his owne swynk' and his catel 540
 In a tabbard Rood vpon a mere

Ther was also a Reeue and a mellere
 A sompnour and a pardoner also
 A maunciple and my self þer was no mo 544 2

THe mellere was a stout carl for þe nones
 Full big' he was of braun and eek' of boones /
 That preuede wel for ouer al þer he cam
 At wrastlyng he wolde bere away þe Ram 548
 He was schort schuldred broode a pikke knarre
 Ther was no dore þat he nolde heue of harre
 Or breke it with a rennyng' with his heed
 his berd as ony sowe or fox was reed 552
 And þerto brood as pough it were a spade
 vpon þe cop right of his nose he hade
 A werte and þer on stood a tuft of heres



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. **Harleian 7334.** 17

And þerwiþ al he brought vs out of towne

A Gentil maunciple was ther of a temple
Of which achatours mighten take exemple 568

For to be wys in beyyng of vitaille

For wheþur þat he payde or took by taille

Algate he wayted so in his acate [leaf 8, back]

That he was ay biforn and in good state 572

Now is not þat of god a ful fair grace

That such a lewed mannes wit schal pace

The wisdom of an heep of lernede men

Of maystres hadde moo þan þries ten 576

That were of lawe expert and curious

Of which þer were a doseyn in an hous

worthi to be stiward of Rente and lond

Of any lord þat is in Engelond 580

To make him lyue by his propre good

In honour detteles but if he were wood

Of lyue as scarsly as he can desire

And able for to helpen al a schire 584

In any caas þat mighte falle or happe

And ȝit this maunciple sette here aller cappe

The Reeue was a sklendre colerik man
his berd was schaue as neigh as euer he can 588

his heer was by his Eres neigh I-schorn

his top was dockud lyk a preest biforn

Ful longe wern his leggis and ful lene

Al like a staff ther was no calf y-sene 592

wel cowde he kepe a gerner and a bynne

Ther was non auditour cowde on him wynne

wel wiste he by the drouȝt and by þe Reyn

The ȝeeldyng of his seed and of his greyn 596

his lordes scheep his neet his dayerie

his swyn his hors his stoor and his pultrie

was holly in this Reeues gouernynge

And by his couenaunt ȝaf þe Rekenynge 600

Syn þat his lord was .xx.th ȝeer of age

Ther couthe noman bringe him in arerage
 Ther nas baillif ne herde ne oþer hyne
 That þey ne knewe his sleight and his couyne 604
 They were adrad of him as of þe deth
 his wonyng was ful fair vpon an heth
 wiþ grene trees I-schadewed was his place
 he cowde bettre þan his lord purchace 608
 Ful riche he was I-stored priuely [leaf 9]
 His lord wel couthe he plese subtilly
 To ȝeue him and lene him of his owne good
 And haue a þank a cote and eek an hood 612
 In ȝouþe he lerned hadde a good mester
 he was a wel good wright a carpenter
 This Reeue sat vpon a wel good stot
 That was a pomely gray and highte Scot 616
 A long surcote of blew vpon he hadde
 And by his side he bar a Rusty bladde
 Of Northfolk was þis Reeue of which I telle
 Byside a toun men callen Baldeswelle 620
 Tukkud he was as is a frere aboute
 And euer he rood the hynderest of þe route
 A Sompnour was þer with vs in þat place
 That hadde a fyr-reed Cherubyns face 624
 For sawceslem he was with eyzen narwe
 As hoot he was and leccherous as a sparwe
 Wiþ skalled browes blak and piled berd



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 19

Than wolde he speke no word but latyn
 A fewe termes hadde he tuo or pre
 That he hadde lerned out of som decree 640
 No wondur is he herde it al þe day
 And eek ȝe knowe wel how þat a lay
 Can clepe watte as wel as can þe pope
 But who-so wolde in oþur þing him grope 644
 Thanne hadde he spent al his philosophie
 Ay questio quid Iuris wolde he crye
 He was a gentil harlot and a kynde [leaf 9, back]
 A better felaw schulde men nowher fynde 648
 He wolde suffre for a quart of wyn
 A good felawe han his concubyn
 A .xij. moneth. and excuse him atte fulle
 And pryuely a Fynch eek cowde he pulle 652
 And if he fond owher a good felawe
 he wolde teche him for to haue non awe
 In such a caas of þe archedeknes curs
 But if a mannes soule were in his purs 656
 For in his purs he scholde punyssched be
 Purs is the Ercedeknes helie quod he
 But wel I woot he lyeth right in dede
 Of cursyng oweth ech gulty man to drede 660
 For curs wol slee. right as assoillyng saueth
 And also ware him of a Significaut
 In daunger he hadde at his owne assise
 The ȝonge gurles of the Diocese 664
 And knew here counseil and was al here red
 A garland had he set vpon his heed
 As gret as it were for an ale stake
 A bokeler had he maad him of a cake 668
With him þer rood a gentil Pardoner
 Of Rounciual his frend and his comper
 That streyt was comen from þe court of Rome
 Ful lowde he sang com hider loue tome 672
 The sompneur bar to him a stif burdoun

20 GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. **Harleian 7334.**

was neuere trompe of half so gret a soun
 This pardonere hadde heer as zelwe as wex
 But smothe it hengt as doth a strike of Flex 676
 By vnces hynge his lokkes þat he hadde
 And þerwith he his schuldres ouerspradde
 Ful thenne it lay by culpons on and oon
 And hood for Iolitee ne wered he noon 680
 For it was trussud vp in his walet
 Him þought he rood al of þe newe get
 Discheuele sauf his cappe he rood al bare
 Suche glaryng eyzen hadde he as an hare 684
 A vernicle hadde he sowed on his cappe [leaf 10]
 His walet lay byforn him in his lappe
 Bret ful of pardoun come from Rome al hoot
 A voys he hadde as smal as eny goot 688
 No berd ne hadde he ne neuer scholde haue
 As smothe it was as it ware late I-schaue /
 I trowe he were a geldyng or a mare
 But of his craft fro Berwyk vnto ware 692
 Ne was þer such another pardonere
 For in his male he hadde a pilwebeer
 which þat he saide was oure lady weyl
 he seide he hadde a gobet of þe seyl 696
 That seynt Petur hadde whan he wente
 Vpon þe see til ihū crist him hente
 he hadde a cros of latoun ful of stones



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 21

But altherbest he sang an offertorie
For wel¹ he whan þat song was songe [¹ later wyte at side]
he moste preche and wel affyle his tunge 712
To wynne siluer as he right wel cowde
Therefore he sang ful meriely and lowde
Now haue I told 3ou shortly in a clause
Thestat þarray þe nombre and eek þe cause 716
why þat assembled was þis companye
In Southwerk at þis gentil Ostelrie
That highte þe Tabbard faste by þe belle
But now is tyme to 3ow for to telle 720
how þat we bare vs in þat ilke night
whan we were in that Ostelrie alight
And aftur wol I telle of oure viage [leaf 10, back]
And al þe remenaunt of oure pilgrimage 724
But ferst I pray 3ou of 3our curtesie
That 3e ne rette it nat my vilanye
Though þat I speke al pleyn in þis matere
And telle 3ou here wordes and here cheere 728
Ne though I speke here wordes propurly
For þis 3e knowen also wel as I
who-so schal telle a tale aftur a man
He moste reherce as neigh as euer he can 732
Euery word if it be in his charge
Al speke he neuer so Rudely ne large
Or elles he moot telle his tale vntrewe
Or feyne þing or fynde his wordes newe 736
He may not spare þough he were his broþur
He moste as wel sey oo word as anoþur
Crist spak himself ful broode in holy writ
And wel 3e woot no vilanye is it 740
Eke Plato seith who-so þat can him rede
The wordes mot be cosyn to þe dede
Also I pray 3ou to forȝeue it me
Al haue I folk nat set in here degre 744
Here in þis tale as þat þei schulde stonde

My witt is thynne. 3e may wel vnderstonde

G Rect' cheere made oure ost' vs euerichon

And to þe souper sette he vs anon 748

He serued vs with vitaille atte beste

Strong' was þe wyn and wel to drynke vs leste

A semely man oure Ooste was wiþ alle

For to han been a Marchal in an halle 752

A large man was he with eyzen stepe

A fairere burgeys is þer noon in chepe

Bold of his speche and wys and wel I-taught'

And of manhede lakkede he right naught' 756

Eke þerto he was right' a mery man

And after soper playen he bygan

And spak' of myrthe. among' oþur þinges

whan þat we hadde maad our rekenynges 760

And sayde þus. Lo lordynges trewely

[leaf 11]

3e ben to me right' welcome hertily

For by my trouthe if þat I schal not lye

I ne saugh þis 3eer so mery a companye 764

At oones in this herbergh as is now

Fayn wold I do 3ow merthe wiste I how

And of a merthe I am right' now bythought'

To doon 3ou eese and it' schal coste nought' 768

3e goon to Caunturbury god 3ou speede

The blisful martir quyte 3ou 3oure meede

And wel I woot/ as 3e gon by þe weye

3e schal goon to talle and to lare

772



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. **Harleian 7334** 23

But 3e be merye smyteþ of myn heed
hold vp 3oure hond with-oute more speche
Oure counseil was not longe for to seche 784
vs þoughte it nas nat' worþ to make it wys
And graunted him wipoute more avys
And bad him seie his verdite as him leste
L Ordynges quop he now herkenep for þe beste 788
But taketh not' I pray 3ou in disdayn
This is þe poynt to speken schort' and playn
That' ech of 3ow to schorte with 3oure weie /
In þis viage schal telle tales tweye 792
To Caunturburiward I mene it so
And homward he schal tellen oþur tuo
Of auentures þat þer han bifalle
And which of 3ow þat bereþ him best' of alle 796
That is to seye þat telleþ in þis caas
Tales of best' sentence and of solas
Schal han a soper at 3our alþer cost [leaf 11, back]
Here in þis place sittynge by þis post' 800
whan þat we comen ageyn from Canturbery
And for to make 3ou þe more mery
I wol my seluen gladly with 3ou ryde
Right' at myn owen cost' and be 3oure gyde 804
And who-so wole my Iuggement' withseie
Schal paye for al we spenden by þe weye
And if 3e vouche sauf' þat it be so
Telle me anon wipouten wordes moo 808
And I wole erely schappe me þefore
This þing' was graunted and oure othus swore
with ful glad herte and prayden him also
That' he would vouche sauf' for to doon so 812
And þat he wolde ben oure gouernour
And of our tales Iugge and reportour
And sette a soper at a certeyn prys
And we wolde rewled be at his deuys 816
In heygh and lowe. and þus by oon assent

24 GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. **Harleian 7334.**

We been accorded to his Iuggement
 And þer-vpon þe wyn was fet' anoon
 we dronken and to reste wente echoon. 820
 wipouten eny lengere tarynge
 A morwe whan þat þe day bigan to sprynge
 vp roos oure Ost' and was oure althur cok'
 And gaderud vs to-gidur alle in a flok' 824
 And forth we riden a litel more þan paas
 vnto þe waterynge of' seint Thomas
 And þere oure Ost' bigan his hors areste
 And seyde lordus herkenef if' 3ow leste 828
 3e woot' 3oure forward and I it 3ou recorde
 If' ouesong' and morwesong' acorde
 Lat se now who schal telle ferst a tale
 As euere I moote drinke wyn or ale 832
 who-so be rebel to my Iuggement
 Schal paye for al þat' by the weye is spent
 Now draweth Cut/ er þat' we forther twynne
 which þat' hath þe schortest schal bygynne 836
 Sire knight' quop he maister and my lord *[leaf 18]*
 Now draweth Cut. for þat is myn acord
 Cometh ner quod he my lady prioresse
 And 3e sir Clerk lat' be 3our schamfastnesse 840
 Ne studieth nat ley hand to euery man
 Anon to drawen euery wight' bigan
 And schortly for to tellen as it' was
 were it by aventure or sort' or cas 844



GROUP A. § 1. GENERAL PROLOGUE. Harleian 7334. 25

what welcome be þou cut. a goddus name
Now lat vs ryde and herkneþ what I seye
And with þat word we riden forþ oure weye 856
And he bigan with right a merie chere!
His tale. and seide right in þis manere.

[*break of one line in the MS.*]

Whilom as olde stories tellen vs [on leaf 12]
 Ther was a Duk' þat highte Theseus 860
 Of Athenes he was. lord and gouernour
 And in his tyme swich a conquerour
 That' gretter was ther non vnder þe sonne
 Ful many a Riche Contre hadde he wonne 864
 That' with his wisdam and his chivalrie
 He conquered al the regne of Femynye
 That' whilom was I-cleped Cithea
 And weddede the queen Ipolita 868
 And brought' hire boom with him in his Contre
 with moche glorie and gret' solempnite
 And eek' hire ȝonge suster Emelye
 And þus with victorie and with melodye 872
 Lete I þis noble duk' to Athenes ryde /
 And al his Ost' in armes him biside [leaf 12, back]
 At' certes if it nere to long' to heere
 I wolde han told ȝow fully þe manere 876
 How wonnen was the regne of Femenye
 By Theseus and by his Chivalrye
 And of þe grete bataille for þe nones



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 27

lat' every felawe telle his tale aboute
And lat' see now who schal þe soper wyne 891
And ther I lafte I wolde agayn begynne
[break of one line
in the MS.]
This Duk' of whom I make mencion
whan he was comen almost' vnto þe toun
In al his wele and in his moste pryde
he was war as he cast' his eyze aside 896
wher þat' ther kneled in þe hye weye
A companye of ladies tweye and tweye
Ech after other clad in clopes blake
But' such a cry and such a woo þey make 900
That in þis world nys creature lyuyng
Ther herde such anoþer weymentynge
And of þat' cry ne wolde þey neuer stenten
Til þey þe Reynes of' his bridel henten 904
what' folk' be 3e þat' at' myn hom comynge
Partourben so my feste with cryenge
Quod Theseus. haue 3e so gret' enuye
Of myn honour þat' þus compleyne and crie 908
Or who hath 3ow mysboden or offendid
And telleþ me if' it may ben amendid.
And why þat' 3e ben clad þus al in blak' [leaf 18]
The oldest' lady of hem alle spak' 912
whan sche had swowned with a dedly chere
That it was routhe for to seen or heere
And seyde lord to whom fortune hap' 3eu
victorie and as a conquerour to luyen 916
Nought' greueth vs 3oure glorie and honour
But we beseken mercy and socour
Haue mercy on oure woo and oure distresse
Som drope of pitee thurgh 3oure gentilnesse 920
Vppon vs wrecchede wommen lat' þou falle
For certus lord. ther nys noon of' vs alle
That' sche nath ben a duchesse or a queene
Now be we Caytifs as it is wel seene 924
Thanked be fortune. and hire false wheel

That noon estat assureth to ben weel
 And certus lord to abiden ȝoure presence
 1 Ther in þe temple of þe goddessse Clemence 928
 we han ben waytynge al þis fourtenight [a later 'here' in margin]
 Now helpe vs lord syn it is in þy might
 I wrecche which þat wepe and waylle þus
 was whilom wyf to kyngt Capaneus 932
 That starf at Thebes. cursed be þat day
 And alle we þat ben in þis array
 And maken alle þis lamentacioun
 we lesten alle oure housbondes at þe toun 936
 whil þat þe sege. þer aboute lay
 And ȝet þe olde Creon welaway
 That lord is now of thebes þe citee
 Fulfild of Ire and of Iniquite 940
 He for despyt and for his Tyrannye
 To do þe deede bodyes vilonye
 Of alle oure lordes which þat ben I-slawe
 Haþ alle þe bodies on an heep y-drawe 944
 And wol not suffren hem by noon assent
 Nother to ben y-buried nor I-brent
 But makeþ houndes ete hem in despite
 And with þat word withoute more respite 948
 They fillen gruf and criden pitously [leaf 13, back]
 haue on vs wrecched wommen som mercy
 And lat oure sorwe synken in thyn herte
 This gentil duke down from his courser sterte/ 952
 with herte pitous whan he herde hem speke
 him þoughte þat his herte wolde breke
 whan he seyh hem so pitous and so maat
 That whilom weren of so gret estat 956
 And in his armes he hem alle vp hente
 And hem confortet in ful good entente
 And swor his oth as he was trewe knight
 he wolde do so ferforþly his might 960
 vpon þe tyraunt Creon hem to wreke

That al þe poeple of grece scholde speke
 how Creon was of Theseus y-serued
 As he þat haþ his deth right wel deserued 964
 And right anon wiþoute eny abood
 his baner he displayeþ and forþ rood
 To Thebes-ward, and al his oost bysyde
 No ner athenes wolde he go ne ryde 968
 Ne take his eese fully half a day
 But onward on his way þat nyght he lay
 And sente anon ypolita þe queene
 And Emelye hir 3onge suster schene 972
 vnto the toun of athenes to dwelle
 And forth he ryt þer is no more to telle
The reede statue of mars with spere and targe
 So schyneþ in his white baner large 976
 That alle þe feeldes gliteren vp and down
 And by his baner was born his pynoun
 Of gold ful riche in which þer was I-bete
 The Minatour which þat he slough in Crete 980
 Thus ryt þis Duk þus ryt þis Conquerour
 And in his oost of Cheualrie þe flour
 Til þat he cam to Thebes and alighte
 Faire in a feeld wher as he þoughte to fighte / 984
 But schortly for to speken of þis þing
 with Creon which þat was of Thebes kyng
 He faught and slough him manly as a knight / [leaf 14]
 In pleyn bataille and putte his folk to flight / 988
 And by assaut he wan þe Cite aftur
 And rente down boþe wal and sparre and raftur
 And to þe ladies he restored agayn
 The bones of here housbondes þat were slayn 992
 To do exequies as was þo þe gyse
 But it were al to long for to deuysen
 The grete clamour and þe waymentynge
 which þat þe ladies made at þe brennyng 996
 bodyes and þe grete honour

That Theseus the noble conquerour
 Doth to þe ladyes whan þey from him wente
 But schortly for to telle is myn entente 1000
 whan þat þis worthy Duk þis Theseus
 hath Creon slayn and Thebes wonne þus
 Stille in þe feelde he took' al night his reste
 And dide with al þe contre as him leste 1004
TWO Ransake in þe cas of bodyes dede
 hem for to streepe of herneys and of wele /
 The pilours diden businesse and cure
 After þe bataile and discomfiture 1008
 And so byfil þat in þe cas þei founde
 Thurgh girt with many a greuous bloody wounde
 Two yonge knightes liggyng by and by
 Boþe in oon armes clad ful richely 1012
 Of whiche two Arcite hight þat oon
 And þat oþur knight hight Palamon
 Nat' fully quykt ne fully deed þey were
 But by here coote armure and by here gere 1016
 Heracles knewe hem wel in special
 As þey þat weren of the blood real
 Of Thebes and of Sistren tuo I-born
 Out of þe chaas þe pilours han hem torn 1020
 And han hem caried softe vnto þe tente /
 Of Theseus and ful sone he hem sente
 Tathen for to dwellen in prisoun



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 31

Til it fel cones in a morwe of may
That Emelie þat fairer was to seene
Than is þe lillie on hire stalkes grene 1036
And fresscher þan the may with floures newe
For with þe rose colour strof hire hewe
I not which was þe fyner of hem two
Er it was day as sche was wont to do 1040
Sche was arisen and al redy dight
For may wole haue no sloggardye anyght
The sesoun prikeþ euery gentil herte
And makeþ him out of his sleepe sterte 1044
And seith arys and do þin obseruance
This maketh Emelye han remembrance
To do honour to May and for to ryse
I-cloped was sche fressh for to deuyse 1048
hire ȝolwe heer was browdid in a tresse
Byhynde hire bak aȝerde long I gesse
And in the gardyn at þe sonne vpriste
Sche walkeþ vp and down wher as hire liste 1052
Sche gadereþ floures party whyte and reede
To make a certeyn gerland for hire heede
And as an aungel heuenly sche song
The grete tour þat was so pikke and strong 1056
which of þe castel was the cheef dongeoun
Ther as þis knightes weren in prisoun
Of which I tolde ȝow and telle schal
was euene Ioynyng to þe gardeyn wal 1060
Ther as þis Emely hadde hire pleyynge
Bright was þe sonne and cleer þat morwenynge
And Palamon þis woful prisoner [leaf 15]
As was his wone by leue of his gayler 1064
was risen and romed in a Chambre on heigh
In which he al þe noble cite seigh
And eek þe gardeyn ful of braunches grene
Ther as þe fresshe Emelye þe scheene 1068
was in hire walk/ and romed vp and down

This sorweful prisoner þis Palamon
 Gooth in þe chambre romyng to and fro
 And to himself compleynyng of his woo 1072
 That he was born / ful ofte he seyde alas
 And so byfel by auenture or cas
 That þurgh a wyndow þikke and many a barre
 Of Iren greet and squar as eny sparre 1076
 he cast his eyen vpon Emelya
 And þer with al he bleynte and cryed .A.
 As þat he stongen were vnto þe herte
 And with þat crye arcite anon vp sterte 1080
 And seyde cosyn myn what eyleþ þe
 That art so pale and deedly for to see /
 why crydestow who hap þe doon offence
 For goldes loue tak al in pacience 1084
 Oure prisoun for it may non opir be
 Fortune hap ȝeuen vs þis aduersite
 Som wikke aspect / or disposicioun
 Of Saturne by sum constellacioun 1088
 Hath ȝeuen vs þis alpough we hadde it sworn
 So stood þe heuen whan þat we were born
 we moste endure it þis is þe schort and pleyn
 This Palamon answered and seyde ageyn 1092
 Cosyn for sothe of þis opynyoun
 Thou hast a veyn ymaginacioun
 This prisoun caused me not for to crye



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 33

Biforn me sorwful wrecched creature
Out of þis prisoun help þat we may scape
And if so be oure destyne be schape 1108
By eterne word to deyen in prisoun
Of oure lynage haueth sum compassioun
That is so lowe y-brought by Tyrannye
And with þat word Arcite gan espye 1112
wher as this lady romed to and fro
And with þat sight/ hire beaute hurt him so
That if þat Palamon was wounded sore
Arcite is hurt as moche as he or more 1116
And with a sigh. he seyde pitously
The freissche beaute sleeth me sodeynly
Of hir that rometh 3onder in þe place
And but I haue hir mercy and hir grace 1120
That I may see hir atte leste weye
I nam but deed / ther nys no more to seye
This Palamon whan he tho wordes herde
Dispitously he loked and answerde 1124
whether seistow in earnest or in pley
Nay quop Arcite in earnest in good fey
God helpe me so me lust ful euele pleye
This Palamon gan knytte his browes tweye 1128
Hit nere quod he to the no gret honour
For to be fals ne for to be traytour
To me that am thy cosyn and thy broþer
I-swore ful deepe and ech of vs to oþer 1132
That neuer for to deyen in þe payne
Til þat deeth departe schal vs twayne
Neyþer of vs in lande to hynder other
Ne in non other cas / my leue broþer 1136
But þou schuldest trewly forþer me
In euery caas and I schal forþer þe /
This was þyn othe / and myn eek certayn [leaf 16]
I wot right wel þou darst/ it nat wiþsayn 1140
Thus art þou of my counseil out of doute

And now thou woldest falsly ben aboute
 To loue my lady whom I loue and serue
 And euere schal vnto myn herte sterue 1144
 Now certes fals arcite þou schal not so
 I loued hir first / and tolde the my woo
 As to my counseil / and to broþer sworn
 To forthere me as I haue told biforn 1148
 For which thou art I-bounden as a knight
 To helpe me / if it lay in þi might /
 Or elles art þou fals I dar wel sayn
 This Arcite ful proudly spak agayn 1152
 Thou schalt quop he be rather fals þan I
 But þou art fals / I telle þe vttyrly
 For paramour I loued hir first þen þow
 what wolt þou sayn thou wost it not ȝit now 1156
 wheþer sche be a womman or goddesse
 Thyn is affeccoun of holynesse
 And myn is loue as of a creature
 For which I tolde þe myn aduenture 1160
 As to my cosyn / and my broþer sworn
 I pose þat þou louedest hire biforn
 wost þou nat wel the olde clerkes saw
 That who schal ȝeue a loue eny lawe 1164
 loue is a grettere lawe by my pan
 Then may be ȝeue / to eny erply man
 Therefore posityf lawe and such decre

To breke alwey for loue is schalde me

1168

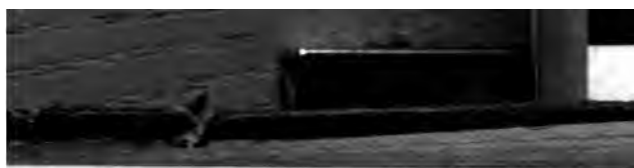


GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 35

They foughte alday and ȝit here part was noon
Ther com a kyte whil þat þey were wrope
That bar away the boon bitwixe hem bope 1180
And þerfore at the kynges court my broþer
Eche man for himself þer is non other
Loue if the list for I loue and ay schal
And sothly leue brother þis is al 1184
Eke in þis prisoun moote we endure
And euery of vs take his auenture
Gret was the stryf and long bytwixe hem tweye
ȝif þat I hadde leysir for to seye 1188
But to the effect it happed on a day
To telle it ȝow as shortly as I may
A worpy Duk þat highte Perotheus
That felaw was to þe duk Theseus 1192
Syn pilke day þat þey were children lyte
Was come to Athenes his felawe to visite
And for to pley as he was wont to do
For in þis world he loued noman so 1196
And he loued him as tendurly agayn
So wel þey loued as olde bookes sayn
That whan oon / was deed soþly to telle
his felawe wente and sought him down in helle 1200
But of þat story lyst me nought to write
Duk Perotheus loued wel Arcite/
And hadde him knowe at Thebes ȝeer by ȝeer
And fynally at requeste and prayer 1204
Of Perotheus withoute any raunsoun
Duk Theseus him leet out of prisoun
Frelly to go wher him lust ouer al
In such a gyse as I ȝou telle schal 1208
This was the forward playnly to endite
Bitwixe Theseus and him Arcite
That if so were þat Arcite were founde
Euere in his lyf by daye night or stounde 1212
In eny contre of þis Theseus

And he were caught it was acorded thus
 That with a swerd he scholde lese his heed [leaf 17]
 Ther nas noon oþer remedy ne reed 1216
 But took his leue and homward he him spedde
 Lete him be war his nekke lip to wedde
How gret a sorwe suffreþ now Arcite
 The deþ he feleþ þorugh his herte smyte 1220
 He weepeth weyleth cryeth pitously
 To slen himself he wayteþ pryuyly
 he seyde allas þe day þat I was born
 Now is my prisoun werse þan was biforn 1224
 Now is me schape eternally to dwelle
 Nought in purgatorie but in helle
 Allas þat euer knewe I Perotheus
 For elles had I dweld with Theseus 1228
 I-fetered in his prisoun for euere moo
 Than had I ben in blis and nat in woo
 Oonly þe sight of hir whom þat I serue
 þough þat I hir grace may nat deserue 1232
 wold han sufficed right ynough for me
 O dere Cosyn Palamon quod he
 þyn is þe victoire of þis auenture
 Ful blisfully in prisoun to endure 1236
 In prisoun nay certes but in paradys
 wel hath fortune y-torned þe dys
 That hap þe sight of hir and I the absence

For will is / ... 1240



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 37

Far wel my lyf and al my Ioly nesse

Allas why playnen folk so in comune
Of purueance of god or of fortune 1252

That zeueth him ful ofte in many a gyse [leaf 17, back]
wel better þan þei can hemself deuise

Som man desireþ for to haue richesse
That cause is of his morthre/ or gret seeknesse 1256

And som man wolde out of his prisoun fayn

That in his hous is of his mayne slayn

Infinite harmes ben in þis mateere

we wote neuere what þing we preyen heere 1260

we faren as he þat dronke is as a mows

A dronke man wot wel he haþ an hous

But he not nat which þe righte wey is þider

And to a dronke man þe wey is slider 1264

And certes in þis world so faren we

we seeken faste after felicitye

But we gon wrong ful ofte trewely

Thus may we seyen alle and namely I 1268

That wende haue had a gret opinioun

That gif I mighte skape fro prisoun

Than had I be in ioye and parfyt hele

Ther now I am exiled fro my wele / 1272

Syn þat I may not se ȝow Emelye

I nam but deed ther nys no remedye

Vppon þat oþer syde Palomon
whan he wiste þat arcite was agoon 1276

Such sorwe makeþ þat þe grete tour

Resowneth of his grete zollyng and clamour

The pure feteres of his schynes grete

weren of his bitter salte teres wete 1280

Allas quod he arcita cosyn myn

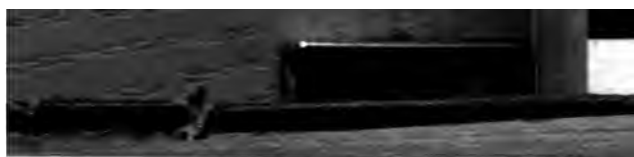
Of al oure strif god woot þe fruyt is þin

Thow walkest now in Thebes at þi large/

And of my woo þou zeuest litel charge/ 1284

Thou maiste seen þou hast wysdom and manhede

Assemble al þe folk' of oure kynrede
 And make a werre so scharpe in þis Cite
 That' by som auenture or by som trete 1288
 þou mayst/ hire wyne to lady and to wyf
 For whom þat' I most' nedes leese my lyf
 For as by wey of possibilitie [leaf 18]
 Syn þou art at þi large of prisoun free 1292
 And art' a lord gret is þin auantage
 More þan is myn þat' sterue here in a kage
 For I moot weepe and weyle whil I lyue
 with al þe woo þat prisoun may me 3yue 1296
 And eek' with peyne þat' loue me 3eueþ also
 And doubleþ al my peyne and al my wo
 Ther with þe fuyr of Ielousye vpsterte
 wiþinne his brest' and hent him by þe herte 1300
 So wodly / þat' lik' was he to by-holde
 The box tree or þe asschen deed and colde
 Tho seyde he O goddes cruel þat gouerne
 This world' with byndyng' & wiþ word eterne 1304
 And writen in þe table of Athamaunte
 3oure parlement and 3oure eterne graunte
 what is mankynde more to 3ow holde
 Than is a scheep þat roukeþ in þe folde 1308
 For slayn is man right' as anoþer beste
 And dwelleþ eek' in prisoun and arreste
 And haþ seknesse and greet' aduersite



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 39

wipouten doute it may stonde so
The answer of þis I lete to diuinis
But wel I woot þat in þis world gret pyne is 1324
Allas I se a serpent or a þeeft
That many a trewe man hap doon mescheef
Gon at his large and wher him lust/ may turne
But I moste be in prisoun þurgh saturne 1328
And eek þorugh Iuno Ialous and eke wood [leaf 18, back]
That hap destroyed wel neyh al þe blood
Of Thebes wip his waste walles wyde /
And venus sleep me on þat oper syde / 1332
For Ielousye and fere of him Arcyte
Now wol I stynte of Palamon a lite
And lete him stille in his prisoun dwelle
And of arcita for þan wol I telle 1336
The somer passeþ and þe nightes longe
Encrescen double wise the peynes stronge
Bothe of þe lover and þe prisoner
I noot which hath þe wofullere cheer 1340
For schortly for to sey þis Palomon
Perpetuelly is dampned in prisoun
In cheynes and in feteres to be deed
And Arcite is exiled vpon his heed 1344
For eueremo as out of þat contre
Ne neuere mo schal he his lady see
Now lonyeres / axe I þis question
who hap þe worse Arcite or Palomon. 1348
That on may se his lady day by day
But in prisoun he moot dwelle alway
That oper may wher him lust ryde or go
But seen his lady schal he neuer mo 1352
Now deemeth as 3ou luste 3e þat can
For I wol telle forþ as I bigan

Whan þat arcite to Thebes come was
 Ful ofte a day he swelde and seyde alas 1356
 For seen his lady schal he neuer mo
 And schortly to concluden al his wo
 So moche sorwe had neuer creature
 That is or schal whil þat þe world wol dure 1360
 his sleep his mete his drynk' is him by-raft'
 That lene he wexe / and drye as eny schaft/
 his eyen holwe / grisly to biholde
 his hewe falwe and pale as asschen colde 1364
 And solitary he was and euer alone
 And dwellyng' al þe night' making his moone
 And if he herde song' or Instrument/ [leaf 19]
 Then wolde he wepe he mighte nought' be stent 1368
 So feble were his spirites and so lowe
 And chaunged so þat' no man couþe knowe
 his speche noþer his vois þough men it herde
 And in his gir for al þe world he ferde 1372
 Nought' oonly lyke þe louers maladye
 Of hercos but rapier lik' manye
 Engendrud of humour malencolyk'
 Byforne in his selle fantasyk' 1376
 And schortly turned was al vp so doun
 Bothe abytt' and eek' disposicioun
 Of him þis woful louere daun arcite
 what schulde I alway of his wo endite 1380
 when he endured hadde a year or two



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 41

Arrayed was þis god as he took/ keepe
As he was whan þat Argous took' his sleep
And seyde to athenes schalt' þou wende
Ther is þe schapen of þy wo an ende 1392
And with þat word arcite wook' and sterte
Now trewely how sore þat me smerte
Quod he to athenes riȝt now wol I fare
Ne for þe drede of' deth schal I not spare 1396
To see my lady þat I loue and serue
In hire presence I recche nat to sterue /
And with þat word he caught' a gret myrour
And saugh þat chaunged was al his colour 1400
And saugh his visage was in anoþer kynge
And riȝt' anon it ran him into mynde
That' seppen his face was so disfigured
Of' maladie the which he haȝ endured 1404
he mighte wel if' þat he bar him lowe [leaf 19, back]
lyue in athenes eueremore vnknowe
And see his lady wel neih day by day
And riȝt' anon he chaunged his aray 1408
And cloped him as a pore laborer
And al alone saue oonly a squyer
That' knew his pryuyte and al his cas
which was disgysed pourely as he was 1412
To athenes is he go þe nexte way
And to þe court / he went vpon a day
And at' þe ȝate he profred his seruyse
To drugge and drawe what so men wolde deuyse 1416
And shortly on þis matier for to seyn
he fel in office with a Chambirleyn
The which that' dwellyng' was with Emelye
For he was wys and couthe sone aspye 1420
Of' euery seruauunt which þat serued here
wel couþe he hewe woode and water bere /
For he was ȝonge and mighty for þe nones
And þerto he was long' and bygge of' bones 1424

To doon þat eny wight can him deuysen
 A ȝeer or two he was in þis seruise
 Page of þe chambre of Emelye þe bright
 And Philostrate he seide þat he hight 1428
 But half so wel byloued a man as he
 Ne was þer neuer in court of his degree
 he was so gentil of his condicioun
 That þoruh out al þe court was his renoun 1432
 They seyde þat it were a charite
 That Theseus would enhaunsen his degree
 And putten him in worschipful seruyse
 Ther as he might his vertu excersise 1436
 And þus wipinne a while his name spronge
 Boþe of his dedes and of goode tonge
 That Theseus hap taken him so neer
 That of his Chambre he made him squyer 1440
 And ȝaf him gold to mayntene his degree
 And eek men brought him out of his countre
 From ȝeer to ȝer ful pryuyly his rente [leaf 20]
 But honestly and sleighly he it spent 1444
 That no man wondred how þat he it hadde
 And þre ȝeer in þis wise his lyf he ladde
 And bar him so in pees and eek in werre
 Ther nas no man þat Theseus hap so derre 1448
 And in þis blisse lete I now Arcite
 And speke I wole of Palomon alyte



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 43

Therefore I passe as lightly as I may
hit fel þat in þe seuene þe ȝeer in May
The þridde night as olde bookes seyn
That al þis storie tellen more pleyn 1464
were it by auenture or destene
As whan a þing is schapen it schal be
That soone aftur þe mydnyght Palamoun
By helpyng of a freend brak his prisoun 1468
And fleeth þe cite fast as he may goo
For he had ȝiue drinke his gayler soo
Of a clarre maad of certeyn wyn
with nercotykes and opye of Thebes fyn 1472
That al þat night þough þat men wolde him schake
The gayler sleep he mighte nouȝt/ awake
And þus he fleþ as fast as euer he may
The night was schort and faste by þe day 1476
That needes cost he moste himseluen hyde
And til a groue ther faste besyde
with dredful foot þan stalkeþ Palomoun
For shortly þis / was his opynyoun 1480
That in þat groue he wolde him hyde al day [leaf 20, back]
And in þe night þen wolde he take his way
To Thebesward his frendes for to preye
On Theseus to helpe him to werreys / 1484
And shortelich or he wolde lese his lyf
Or wynnen Emelye vnto his wyf
This is þeffect of his entente playn.
Now wol I torne vnto Arcite agayn. 1488
That litel wiste how nyh þat was his care
Til þat fortune haþ brought him in the snare
The busy larke messenger of May
Salueþ in hire song þe morwe gray 1492
And fyry Phebus ryseþ vp so bright
That þe orient laugheþ of þe light
And wiþ his stremes dryeþ in þe greues
The siluer dropes hongyng in þe leues 1496

And arcite þat is in þe court ryal
 With Theseus his Squyer principal
 Is risen and loketh on þe mery day
 And for to doon his obseruance to May 1500
 Remembryng of þe poynt of his desire
 he on his courser stertyng as þe fire
 Is riden in to feeldes him to pleye
 Out of þe court were it a myle or tweye 1504
 And to þe groue of which þat I 3ow tolde
 By auenture his wey he gan to holde
 To make him a garland of þe greues
 were it of woodewynde or hawþorn leues 1508
 And lowde he song aȝens þe sonne scheene
 May wiþ al þyn floures and þy greene
 welcome be þou wel faire freissche may
 In hope þat I som grene gete may 1512
 And fro his courser wiþ a lusty herte
 Into þe groue ful lustily he sterte
 And in a pathe he romed vp and down
 Ther by auenture þis Palamoun 1516
 was in a busche þat no man might him see
 Ful sore afered of his deþ was he
 No þing ne knew he þat it was Arcite [leaf 21]
 God wot he wolde haue trowed it ful lite 1520
 But soþ is seyde goon ful many ȝeres
 That feld hap eyen and þe woode hap eeres



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 45

Now vp now doun as boket in a welle
Right as þe friday soþly for to telle /
Now it schyneþ now it reyneþ faste
Right so gan gery venus ouercaste 1536
The hertes of hire folk right as hir day
Is grisful right so chaungeþ hire aray
Selde is þe fryday al þe wyke I-like
whan þat arcite hadde songe he gan to sike 1540
And sette him doun wipouten eny more
Alas quod he þat day þat I was bore
how longe Iuno thurgh þy cruelte
wiltow werreyen Thebes þe Citee 1544
Allas I-brought is to confusioun
The blood royal of Cadme and Amphioun
Of Cadynus / þe which was þe furst man
That Thebes bulde or first þe toun bygan 1548
And of þat Cite first was crowned kyng
Of his lynage / am I and his ofspring
By verray line and of his stok ryal
And now I am so caytyf and so þral 1552
That he þat is my mortal enemy
I serue him as his squyer pourely
And ȝet doth Iuno me wel more schame
For I dar nough byknowe myn owne name 1556
But þer as I was wont to hote arcite [lea 21, back]
Now hote I Philostrate nouȝt worth a myte
Allas þou felle mars allas Iuno
Thus haþ ȝoure lre owre lynage fordo 1560
Saue oonly me and wrecchid Palomoun
That Theseus martyreþ in prisoun
And ouer al this to slee me vtterly
Loue haþ his fyry dart so brennyngly 1564
I stykid þorugh my trewe careful herte
That schapen was my deth erst þan my scherte
ȝe slen me with ȝoure eyhen Emelye
ȝe ben þe cause wherfore þat I dye 1568

Of al þe remenant of al myn oþer care
 Ne sette I nouȝt þe mountaunce of a tare
 So þat I couþe do ouȝt to ȝoure pleasaunce
 And with þat word he fel doun in a traunce 1572
 A longe tyme and aftirward vpsterte
 This Palamon þat þouȝt þurgh his herte
 he felt a cold swerd sodeynliche glyde
 For Ire he quook/ he nolde no lenger abyde 1576
 And whan þat he haþ herd arcites tale
 As he were wood wiþ face deed and pale
 he sterte him vp out of þe bussches pikke
 And seyð arcyte / false traitour wikke/ 1580
 Now art þou hent/ þat louest my lady so.
 For whom þat I haue al þis peyne and wo.
 And art my blood and to my counseil sworn
 And I ful ofte haue told þe heere byforn 1584
 And hast by-laped here þe duke Theseus
 And falsly chaunged hast þy name þus
 I wol be deed or elles þou schalt dye
 þou schalt not loue my lady Emelye 1588
 But I wil loue hire oonly and nomo
 For I am Palomon þy mortal fo
 And þough þat I no wepen haue in þis place
 But out of prisoun am y-stert by grace 1592
 I drede not þat oþer þou schalt dye
 Or þou ne schalt not loue Emelye



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 47

which þat þou seyst I haue maad to þe
For verray fool / þenk þat loue is fre
And I wol loue hire mawgre al þy might
But for þou art a gentil parfyt knight 1608
And wenest to dereyne hire by batayle
haue heere my troupe to morwe I nyl not fayle
wipouten wityngt of eny oþer wight
That heer I wol be founden as a knight 1612
And bryngen harneys right I-nough for þe
And ches þe best and lef þe worst for me
And mete and drynke / þis night wil I bryng
Inough for þe and cloþ for þy beddyng 1616
And if so be þat þou my lady wyne
And sle me in þis wood þat / I am Inne
Thou maist wel haue þy lady as for me
This Palomon answerþ I graunt it þe 1620
And þus þey ben departed til a morwe
whan ech of hem had leyd his feith to borwe
O Cupide / out of al charite
O regne þat wolt no felaw haue with þe 1624
Ful soþ is seyde / þat loue ne lordschipe
wol not his þonkes haue no felaschipe
wel fynden þat arcite and Palamoun
Arcite is riden anon to þe toun 1628
And on þe morwe or it were day light
Ful priuely two harneys hap he dight
Boþe sufficaunt and mete to darreyne
The batayl in þe feeld betwix hem tweyne 1632
And on his hors alone as he was born [leaf 22, back]
he caryed al þis harneys him byforn
And in þe groue at tyme and place I-sette
This arcite and þis Palamon ben mette 1636
Tho chaungen gan here colour in here face
Right as þe honterus in þe regne of Trace
That stondeþ in þe gappe with a spere
whan honted is þe lyoun or þe bere 1640

And hereþ him / comyng' in þe greues
 And brekeþ hope þe bowes and þe leues
 And þenkeþ here comeþ my mortal enemy
 wipoute faile he mot be deed or I 1644

For eyþer I mot' slen him at þe gappe
 Or he moot slee me if' it me myshappe
 So ferden þey in chaungyng' of' here hew

AS fer as eyþer of' hem oþer knew 1648
 Ther nas no good day ne no saluyng'

But' streyt' wipouten wordes rehersyng'
 Euery of' hem helpeþ to armen oþer
 As frendly as he were his owen broþer 1652

And þanne wiþ / here scharpe speres stronge
 They foyneden ech at oþer longe
 Tho it semed þat þis Palomon
 In his fightyng' were a wood lyoun 1656

And as a cruel tygre was arcite
 And as wilde boores gonne þey smyte
 That' froþen white as some froþe wood
 vp to þe ancle þey faught' in here blood 1660

And in þis wise I lete hem fiztyng' well
 And forþere I wol of' Theseus telle

The destyne mynistre general 1664
 That' excused in þe world ouer al

The purueans þat god haþ seye byforn
 So strong' it is þat þey þe world had sworn



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 49

That he nys clad and redy for to ryde
with hont/ and horn and houndes him byside
For in his hontyng' hap he such delyt
That is his ioye and his appetyt 1680
To been him self þe grete hertes bane
For after may he serueþ now Dyane
Cleer was þe day as I haue told or þis
And Theseus with alle Ioye and blys 1684
with his ypolita þe fayre queene
And Emelye cloped al in greene
On hontyng' be þay riden ryally
And to þe groue þat stood þer faste by 1688
In which þer was an hert as men him tolde
Duk' Theseus þe streyte wey hap holde
And to þe launde he rydeþ him ful right
There was þe hert y-wont to haue his flight 1692
And ouer a brook' and so forþ in his weye
This duk' wol haue of him a cours or tweye
wip houndes which as him lust to comaunde
And whan þis Duk' was come in to þe launde 1696
vnder þe sonne he lokeþ right anon
he was war of arcite and Palomon
That foughten breeme as it were bootes tuo
The brighte swerdes wente to and fro 1700
So hidously þat with þe leste strook'
It seemeþ as it wolde felle an Ook
But what þey were noþing' git he woot
This duk' wip spores / his courser he smoot 1704
And at a stert he was bitwix hem turn
And pullid out a sword and crisle houn
Nomore vp peyne / of leeyng' of þour heed
By mighty mars anon he schal be deed 1708
That smyteþ eny strook' þat I may seen (leaf 80, back)
But telleþ me what mestir men 30 haen
That ben so hardy for to fighten heere
wipoute lugge or oþer officers 1712

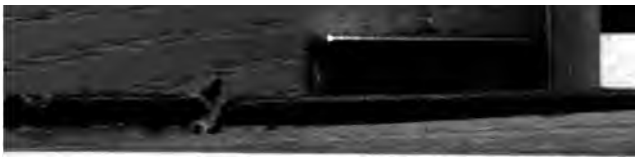
As it were in a lyste really
 This Palamon answerde hastily
 And seyde sire what nedep wordes mo
 we han þe dep deserued boþe tuo 1716
 Tuo woful wrecches been we and kaytyues
 That ben encombred of oure owne lyues
 And as þou art a rightful lord and Iuge
 Ne ȝeue vs neyþer mercy ne refuge/ 1720
 But sle me first for seynte Charite
 But sle my felaw eek as wel as me
 Or sle him first for þough þou knowe him lyte
 This is þy mortal fo þis is arcite 1724
 þat fro þy lond is banyschte/ on his heed
 For which he haþ I-serued to be deed
 For þis is he þat come to þi gate
 And seyde þat / he highte Philostrate 1728
 Thus haþ he laped þe many a yer
 And þou hast maad of him þy cheef squyer
 And þis is he þat loueth Emelye
 For siþ þe day is come þat I schal dye 1732
 I make pleyntly my confessioun
 þat I am / þe woful Palamoun
 That haþ þi prisoun broke wikkedly
 I am þy mortal foo and it am I 1736
 That loueþ so hoote / Emely þe bright
 That I wol dye present in hire sight



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 51

Gan for to wepe and so dede Emelye
And alle þe ladies in companye
Great pite was it as it þought hem alle
That euere such a chaunce schulde falle 1752
For gentil men þei were and of gret estate
And noþing but for loue was þis debate
And saw here bloody woundes wyde and sore
And alle þey cryde lesse and þe more 1756
Haue mercy lord vpon vs wommen alle
And on here bare knees anoon þey falle
And wolde haue kissed his bare feet right as he stood
Till atte laste aslaked was his mood 1760
For pite rennep sone in gentil herte
And þough he for Ire quok and sterte
he haþ it al considered in a clause
The trespas of hem boþe and here cause 1764
And al-þough his Ire here gylt accused
ȝet he in his resoun hem boþe excused
And þus he þought þat euery maner man
wol help himself in loue if þat he can 1768
And eek delyuer himself out of prisoun
And eek in his hert/ had compassioun
Of wommen for þey wepen euer in oon
And in his gentil hert he þought anoon 1772
And soþly he to himself seyde fy.
vpon a lord þat wol haue no mercy
But be a lyoun boþe in word in dede
To hem þat ben in repentaunce and drede 1776
As wel as to a proud dispitious man
That wol maynteyne þat he first bigan
That lord haþ litel of discrecioun
That in such caas can no diuisioun 1780
But wayteþ pride and humblenesse after oon
And schortly whan his Ire is ouer gon
He gan to loke on hem with eyen blake and light
And spak þese same wordes al in hight 1784

The god of loue a benedicite [leaf 24, back]
 how mighty and how gret a lord is he
 Agayns his might per gayneth non obstacle
 He may be cleped a god of his miracle 1788
 For he can maken at his owen gyse
 Of euery herte / as him lust deuyse
 Lo her is arcite and Palomon
 That quyte / were out of my prisoun 1792
 And might haue lyued in Thebes ryally
 And witen I am here mortal enemy
 And þat here dep lith in my might also
 And 3et hap loue maugre here eyzen tuo 1796
 I-brought hem hider bope for to dye
 Now lokep is nat þat an heih folye
 who may be a fole if þat he loue
 Byholde for goddes þap sitteþ aboue 1800
 Se how þey blede be þey nought wel arrayed
 Thus hap here lord þe god of loue hem payed
 here wages and here fees for here seruise
 And 3et wenen they to ben wise / 1804
 That seruen loue for oughþ þat may bifalle
 But þis is 3ette / þe beste game of alle
 That sche for whom þey haue þis Ielousye
 ¶ Can hem perfore as moche þank as me 1808
 Sche woot no more of al þis hoot fare
 By god þan wot a Cuckow or an hare



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 53

And 3e schullen bope anon vnto me swere
That neuer 3e schullen my corowne dere
Ne make werre on me night ne day [leaf 25]
But be my freendes alle þat 3e may 1824
I 3ou forȝeue þis trespas euery dele
And þey him swore his axyng euery dele
And him of lordschip and of mercy prayde
And he hem graunted mercy and þus he sayde 1828
TO speke of real lynage and riches
Though þat sche were a queen or a prynces
Ilk of 3ow bope is worþy douteles
To wedde when tyme is but napeles 1832
I speke as for my suster Emelye
For whom 3e haue þis stryf and Ielousye
3e woot 3oure self sche may not wedde two
At oones þough 3e faughten euer mo 1836
That oon of 3ow or be him loth or leef
he may go pypen in an Iuy leef
This is to say sche may nought haue bope
Al be 3e neuer so Ielous ne so lope 1840
For-þy I put 3ou bothe in þis degre
That ilk of 3ou schal haue his destyne
As him is schape / and herken in what wyse
Lo here 3our ende of þat I schal deuyse 1844
My wil is þis. for playn conclusioun
wipouten eny repplicacioun
If þat 3ou liketh tak it for þe best
That euery of 3ou schal go wher him leet 1848
Frely wipouten raunsoun or daungeer
And þis day fyfty wykes fer ne neer
Euerich of 3ou schal bryng an hundred knyghtes
Armed for lystes vp at alle rightes 1852
Al redy to derayne hir by batayle
And þus byhote I 3ou wipouten fayle
vpon my trouthe and as I am a knight
That whepir of 3ow bope þat hap might 1856

This is to seyn that wheþir he or þou
 May wiþ his hundred as I spak' of now
 Sle his contrary or out' of lystes dryue
 Him schal I ȝeue Emelye to wyue 1860
 To whom þat fortune ȝeueþ so fair a grace [leaf 25, back]
 The lyste schal I make in þis place
 And god so wisly on my sowle rewe
 As I schal euen inge ben and trewe 1864
 ȝe schul non opir ende wiþ me make
 That' oon of ȝow schal be deed or take
 And if ȝou þinkeþ þis is wel I-sayde
 Say ȝoure avys and holdeþ ȝow a-payde 1868
 This is ȝoure ende and ȝoure conclusioun
 who lokeþ lightly now but Palamoun
 who s pryngēþ vp for ioye but arcite
 who coupe telle or who coupe endite 1872
 The ioye þat is made in þis place
 whan Theseus haþ don so fair a grace
 But down on knees wente euery wight
 And þanked him with al here hertes might 1876
 And namely þe thebanes ofte siþe
 And þus wiþ good hope and herte bliþe
 They taken here leue and hom-ward þey ryde
 To Thebes / wiþ olde walles wyde 1880
 [.



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 55

Ful of degre þe height of sixty paas
That whan a man was set in o degre
he letted nought his felaw for to se 1892

Estward þer stood a gate of marbul whit
westward such anoþer in opposit/
And shortly to conclude such a place
was non in erþe in so litel space 1896

In al þe lond þer nas no craftys man
That geometry or arismetrike can
Ne purtreyour ne keruer of ymages [leaf 26]
That Theseus ne ȝaf hem mete and wages 1900

The theatre for to maken and deuyse
And for to don his right and sacrificise
he Estward haþ vpon þe gate aboue
In worschip of venus goddes of loue 1904

Don make an auter and an oratory
And westward in þe mynde and in memory
Of mars he haþ I-maked such an oper
That coste largely of gold a foper 1908

And northward in a toret on þe walle
Of alabaster whit and reed coralle
An oratory riche for to see
In worschip of Dyane goddes of chastite 1912

hath Theseus I-wrought in noble wise
But ȝit/ had I forgeten to deuyse /
The nobil keruyng and þe purtretures
The schap þe contynaunce of þe figures 1916

That weren in þe Oratories þre
Furst in þe temple of venus þou may se
wrought in þe wal ful pitous to byholde
Thre broken slepes and þe sykes colde 1920

The sacred teeres and þe waymentyng
The fuyry strokes and þe desiryng
That loues seruauntz in þis lyf enduren
The othes þat by her couenantz assuren 1924
Plesance and hope desyr fool-hardynesse

Beaute and ȝouȝe baudery and richesse	
Charmes and sorcery leaynges and flatery	
Dispense busynes and Ielousy	1928
That werud of ȝolo guldres a gerland	
And a cukkow sitting on hire hand	
Festes instrumentȝ carols and daunces	
Lust and array and al þe circumstaunces /	1932
Of loue which I rekned and reken schal	
Ech by oȝer / were peynted on þe wal	
And mo þan I / can make of mencioun	
For sothly al þe mount of Setheroun	1936
Ther Venus hath hir principal dwellyng	[leaf 28, back]
was schewed on þe wal here portrayng	
wip alle þe Gardyn and al þe lustynes	
Nought was forȝete þe porter ydelnes	1940
Ne Narcisus þe fayr of ȝore agon	
Ne ȝet þe foly of kyng Salomon	
Ne eek þe strengþe / of him hercules	
Thenchautementȝ of Medea and Ceres	1944
Ne of turnus of which þe hard fuyry corage	
The riche Cresus caytif in seruage	
Thus may we see þat wisdom and riches	
Beaute ne sleight strengþe ne hardynes	1948
Ne may wip venus holde champartye	
For as sche lust þe world þan may sche gye	
lo al þis folk I-caught were in hire trace	

And abouten hire heed dounes fleyng
 Bifore hir stood hir some Cupido
 vpon his schakles were wynges two 1964
 And blynd he was as it is often seeme
 A bowe he bar and arwes fair and grene
Why schuld I nouȝt as wel telle you alle
 The portraiture þat was vpon þe walle 1968
 wiþ in þe temple of mighty mars þe reede
 Al peynted was þe wal in lengþ and breede
 loke to þe Estres of þe grisly place
 That hight þe gret tempel of mars in trace 1972
 In þat colde and in þat frosty regyon
 Ther as mars hap his souereyn mannyng
 First on þe wal was peynted a *forreste* (leaf 57)
 In which þer dwelled neyther man ne beeste / 1976
 wiþ knotty knarry bareyn trees olde
 Of stubbes scharpe and hilous to byholde
 In which þer ran as wymbul in a swough
 As it were a storne schuld berst euery bough 1980
 And downward on an hil vnder a bent /
 Ther stood þe tempel of mars; armyng /
 wrought al of burned steel of which þe dore
 was long and streyt and gastly for to see 1984
 And þer out/ came a rage of muche aprise
 That it maad al þe gates for to rise
 The norþen light in at þe dore schon
 For wyndow on þe walle was þer noon 1988
 Thorough þe which men might no light discerne
 The dore wer alle ademaunt; eterne
 I-clenched ouer thward and endelong/
 with Iren tough / and for to make it strong 1992
 Euery piler þe tempel to susteene
 was tonne greet of Iren bright and schene
 Ther saugh I furst þe derk ymaginyng
 Of felony and al the compassyng 1996
 The cruel Ire as reed as eny gleede

The pike-purs and eek þe pale drede	
The smyler wiþ þe knyft vnder his cloke	
The schipne brennyng with þe blake smoke	2000
The tresoun of þe murþeryng in þe bed	
The open werres wiþ woundes al bibled	
kuttud with bloody knyft and scharp manace	
Al ful of chirkyng was þat sory place	2004
The sleer of himself zet saugh I þere	
here herte blood hap baped al his here	
The nayl y-dryue in þe schode a-nyght	
The colde deþ with mouþ gapyng vpright	2008
A-myddes of þe tempul set/ meschaunce	
wiþ sory comfort and euel contynaunce	
I saugh woundes laughyng in here rage	
The hunt strangled with wilde bores corage	2012
[.	
.	
.	
.	
.	
.	
. <i>no gap in the MS.</i>]	
The sowe freten þe child right in þe cradel	[leaf 27, back]
The cook I-skalded for al his longe ladel	2020
Nought beþ forgeten þe infortune of mart	
The carter ouer-ryden wiþ his cart	
vnder þe whel ful lowe he lay a doun	



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 39

ȝet was here deth depeynted þer byforn
By manasyng of marȝ right by figure
So was it schewed right in þe purtrefure 2036
As is depeynted in sterres above
who schal be slayn or elles deed for loue
Sufficeþ oon ensample in stories olde

[*A break of one line in the MS.*]

The statue of mars vpon a carte stoel
Armed and loket grym as he were wood
And ouer his heed þer schyneþ two figures 2044
Of sterres þat been cleped in scrij-tures

That oon puella þat ofur Ralbus
This god of armes was arayed þas
A wolfe þer stoel byforn him at his feet
wip eyen reed and of a man he cot 2048

wip sotyl pencil depeynted was þis storie
In redoutyng of mars and of his glorie

Now to þe temple of Dyane þe chaste
As shortly as I can I wol me haste 2052

To telle þou al þe descripcioun
Depeynted ben þe walles vp and down
Of huntyng and of schamefast chastite
Ther saugh I how woful Calystope / 2056

whan þat Dyane was agreued with here
was turned from a womman to a bere

And after was sche maad þe loode-sterre
Thus was it peynted I can say no ferre 2060

hire son is eek afir as men may see
Ther sawȝ I dyane turned in til a tree

I mene nouȝt þe goddes Dyane
But Peneus douȝter / þe whiche hight dane 2064

Ther saugh I atheon an hert I-maked
For vengeance þat he saugh Dyane al naked

I saugh how þat his houndes han him caught
And frenen him for þat þey knew him naught 2068

ȝit I-peynted was a litel forþer more

how atthalaunce huntȳd þe wilde bore
 And Melyagre / and many anoþer mo
 For which Dyane wrought him care and woo 2072
 Ther saugh I eek many anoþer story
 The which me list not drawe in to memory
 This goddess son / an hertful hy he seet
 with smale houndes at hire feet 2076
 And vnder-neþe hir feet sche had þe moone
 wexyng it was and schulde wane soone
 In gaude greene hire statue cloped was
 wiþ bowe in hande and arwes in a cas 2080
 hir eyzen caste sche ful lowe adoun
 Ther Pluto haþ his derke regioun
 A womman trauailyng was hire biforn
 But for hire child so longe was vnborn 2084
 Ful pitously lucyna gan she calle
 And seyde help / for þou mayst best of alle /
 wel couþe he peynte lyfly þat it wrouȝt
 wiþ many a floren he þe hewes bought 2088
 Now been þise listes maad and Theseus /
 That at his grete cost arayed þus
 The temples and þe Theatres euery del
 whan it was don it liked him right wel 2092
 But stynt I wil of Theseus a lite
 And speke of Palomon and of Arcite

The day approcheþ of her attournyng [leaf 28, back]



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 61

For euery wight þat loueþ chyualry
And wold his þankes haue a passant name
he preyed þat he might be of þat game 2108
A wel was him þat þerto chosen was
For if þer felle to morwe such a caas
I knowe wel þat euery lusty knight/
That loueþ paramours and hath his might 2112
were it in Engelond or elles where /
They wold here þankes wilne to be þere
To fight for / a lady benedicite
It were a lusty sighte for to see 2116
And right so ferden þey with Palomon
wip him þer wente knyghtes many oon
Some wol ben armed in an haburgoun
In a bright brest plat and a gypoun 2120
And som wold haue a peyre plates large
And som wold haue a prys scheld or a targe
Som wol been armed on here legges weel
And haue an ax and eek' a mace of steel 2124
Ther nys no newe gyse þat it' nas old
Armed were þey as I haue told
Euerich after his owen opinioun
Ther maistow se comyng' wip Palomoun 2128
Tligurge himself þe grete kyng' of Trace
Blak' was his berd and manly was his face
The cercles of / his eyen in his heed
They gloweden bytwixe ȝolw and reed 2132
And lik' a griffoun loket he aboute [long' 00]
with kempe heres on his browes stowte
his lymes greet' his brawnes hard and stronge
his schuldres brood his arnes rounde and longe 2136
And as þe gyse was in his contre
Ful heye vpon a chare of gold stood he
wip foure white boles in a trays
In stede of cote armour in his harnays 2140
wip nayles ȝolwe and bright as eny gold

he had a bere skyn cole-blak for old
 his lange heer y-kempt byhynd his bak
 As eny rauen fether it schon for blak 2144
 A wrepe of gold arm-gret and huge of wight/
 Vpon his heed set ful of stoones bright
 Of fyne rubeus and of fyn dyamaunt;
 Aboute his chare wente with white alaunt; 2148
 Twenty and mo as grete as eny stere
 To hunt at þe lyoun or at þe bere
 And folwed him with mosel fast I-bounle
 Colerd of gold and torett; fyled rounde 2152
 An hundred lordes had he in his route
 Armed ful wel wip hertes stern and stoute
With arcita in stories as men fynde
 The grete Emetreus þe kyng of ynde 2156
 Vppon a steede bay trapped in steel
 Couered wip cloþ and of gold dyapred wel
 Cam rydyng lyk / þe god of armes mars
 his coote armour was of a cloþ of Tars 2160
 Cowched of perlys whyte round and grete
 his sadil was of brend gold newe bete
 A mantelet vpon his schuldre hangyng
 Bret-ful of Rubies reed and fir sparclýng 2164
 His crispe her likt rynges was I-ronne
 And þat was þalwe and gliteryng as þe sonne
 his nose was heigh his eyen were cytryne

An Egle tame as eny lylie whyt
 An hundred lordes had he with him þer
 Al armed sauf here hedes in here ger 2180
 Ful richely in alle maner þinges
 For trusteþ wel þat dukes Erles kynges
 were gadred in þis noble companye
 For loue and for ences of Chiualrye / 2184
 Aboute þe kyngt þer ran on euery part
 Ful many a tame lyoun and lepart
 And in þis wise þis lordes alle and some
 Been on the sonday to þe cite kome 2188
 Aboute prime and in þe toun alight
 This Theseus þis duk þis worþy knight
 whan he had brought hem in to þis cite
 And ynned hem euerich at his degre 2192
 he festep hem and doþ so gret labour
 To esen hem and do hem al honour
 That 3it men wene þat no mannes wyt/
 Of non estat þat cowde amenden it/ 2196
 The mynstralcye þe seruyce at þe feste
 The grete 3iftes to þe most and leste
 The riche aray of Thebes his paleys
 Ne who sat first ne last vpon þe deys 2200
 what ladies fayrest ben or best daunsyngt
 Or which of hem can daunce best or syngt
 Ne who most felyngly spekep of loue
 what haukes sitten on þe perche aboue 2204
 what houndes lyen in þe floor a-doun
 Of al þis make I now no mencioniun
 But of þeffect þat pinkep me þe beste /
 Now comth þe poynt and herkneth if 3ou leste 2208
 The sonday night or day bigan to springe [ledf 30]
 when Palomon þe larke herde syng
 Al þough it were nougħt day by houres tuo
 3it sang þe larke and Palomon also / 2212
 with holy herte and with an heih corage

He roos to wenden on his pilgrymage
 Vnto þe blisful Cithera benigne
 I mene Venus honorable and digne 2216
 And in here hour he walkeþ forþ a paas
 Vnto þe lystes þer hir temple was
 And doun he kneleþ and wiþ humble cheer
 And her sore and seide as ȝe schal heer 2220
FAirest O fairest / O lady myn Venus
 Doughter of Ioue and spouse to Vicanus
 Thou glader of þe mount/ of Citheroun
 For þilke loue þou haddest to adeoun 2224
 haue pite on my bitter teeres smerte
 And tak' myn humble prayer to þin herte
 Allas I ne haue no langage for to telle
 Theffectes ne þe tormentȝ of myn helle 2228
 Myn herte may myn harmes nat bewreie
 I am so confus þat I may not seie
 But mercy lady bright þat knowest wel
 My þought' and felest' what harm þat I fel 2232
 Consider al þis and rew vpon my sore
 As wisly as I schal for euermore /
 Enforce my might' þi trewe seruant' to be
 And holde werre alday wiþ chastite 2236
 That' make I myn avow so ȝe me helpe
 I kepe nat of armes for to ȝelpe
 Ne nat' I aske to morn to haue victorie



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 65

3oure vertu is so greet in heven above
 Thy temple wol I worschipe evermo
 And on þin anter wher I ryde or go 2252
 I wol do sacrifice and fyres beeste
 And if þe wol nat so my lady sweete
 Than pray I þe to morwe with a spere
 That arcite me þurgh the herte here / 2256
 Thanne rekke I nat whan I haue lost my lyf
 Though þat arcite haue hir to his wyf
 This is peffect. and ende of my prayere
 3if me my love my blisful lady deere 2260
 whan thorisoun was doon of Palomon
 his sacrifice he dede and þat anon
 Ful pitously with alle circumstances
 Al telle I nat as now his obseruances 2264
 But at þe last þe statu of venus schook'
 And made a signe wherby þat he took'
 That his prayer accepted was þat day
 For þough þe signe schewed a delay 2268
 3et wist he wel þat graunted was his boone
 And wip glad herte he went him hom ful soone
The prid hour in equal þat Palomon
 Bigan to Venus temple for to goon 2272
 vp roos þe sonne and vp roos Emelye
 And to þe temple of Dian gan sche hye
 Hir maydens þat sche wip hir pider ladde
 Ful redily wip hem þe fyr þey hadde 2276
 Thencens / þe clopes and þemenant al
 That to þe sacrifice longen schal
 The hornes ful of meth as is þe gyse /
 Ther lakkeþ nouȝt to do here sacrificie 2280
 Smokyng þe temple ful of cloþes faire
 This Emelye wip herte debonaire
 Hir body wesch wip wtir of a wellle
 But how sche dide I ne dar nat telle 2284
 But it be eny þing in general

(Harl 73)

And ȝet it were a game to here it al
 To him þat meneth wel it were no charge
 But it is good a man be at his large 2288
 hir brighte her was kempt vntressed al
 A Corone of a grene Ok' cerial
 vpon hir heed was set ful fair and meete
 Tuo fyres on þe auter gan sche beete 2292
 And did hir þinges as men may biholde
 In state of Thebes and þe bokes olde
 whan kynled was þe fyre wiþ pitous cheere /
 vnto Dyan sche spak as ȝe may heere 2296
O chaste goddes of þe woodes greene
 To whom boþe heuen and erþe and see is scene
 Queen of þe regne of pluto derk and lowe
 Goddes of maydenes þat myn hert has knowe 2300
 Ful many a ȝeer / ȝe woot what I desire
 As keep me fro þe vengans of þilk yre
 That atheon aboughte trewely
 Chaste goddesse wel wost þou þat I 2304
 Desire to ben a mayden al my lyf
 Ne neuer wol I be no loue ne wyf
 I am ȝit þou wost of þi company
 A mayden and loue huntyng and venery 2308
 And for to walken in þe woodes wyld
 And nought to ben a wyf and be with chylde
 Nouȝt wol I knowe þe company of man

Next lines are likely subject to man and her

2312



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 67

And if so be þou wol do me no grace
Or if my destyne be schapid so [leaf 31, back]
That I schal needes haue on of hem two 2324
So send me him þat most desireþ me
Biholde goddes of clene chastite
The bitter teeres þat on my cheekes falle
Syn þou art mayde and keper of vs alle 2328
My maydenhode þou kepe and wel conserue
And whil I lyue a mayde I wil þe serue /
The fyres bren vpon þe auter cleer
whil Emelye was in hire preyer 2332
But sodeinly sche saugh a sighte queynt
For right anon on of þe fyres queynt
And quyked agayn and after þat anon
That oper fyr was queynt and al a-gon 2336
And as it queynt it made a whistelyng
As doþ a wete brond in his brennyng
And at þe brondes end out ran anon
As it were bloody dropes many oon 2340
For which so sore agast was Emelye
That sche wel neih mad was and gan to crie
For sche ne wiste what it signified
But oonely for fecre þus sche cryed 2344
And wepte þat/ it was pite to heere
And þer-wip-al Dyane gan appeere
wip bow in hond right as a hunteresse
And seyð a doughter stynt þyn heuynesse 2348
Among þe goddes hye it is affermed
And by eterne word write & confermed
Thou schalt be wedded vnto oon of þo
That haue for þe so moche care and wo 2352
But vnto which of hem may I nat telle
Far wel for I may her no lenger dwelle
The fyres which þat on myn auter bren
Schuln þe declare or þat þou go hen 2356
Thyn aduenture of loue and in þis caas

And wiþ þat word þe arwes in þe caas
 Of þe goddesse clatren faste and ryng
 And forþ sche went and made a vanysschyng 2360
 For which this Emelye astoneyd was [leaf 22]

And seide what amounteþ þisallas
 I put me vnder þy proteccioun
 Dyane and in þi disposicioun 2364
 And hoom sche goþ anon þe nexte way
 This is þeffect/ þer nys no mor to say

The nexte houre of mars folwyng þis
 Arcite to þe temple walkyd is / 2368

To fyry mars to doon his sacrificise /
 with al þe rightes of his payen wise
 with pitous herte and heih deuocioun
 Right thus to mars he sayd his orisoun 2372

O stronge god þat in þe reynes cold
 Of trace honoured and lord art þou hold
 And hast in euery regne and euery land
 Of armes al þe bridel in þy hand 2376

And hem fortunest as þe lust deuyse
 Accept/ of me my pitous sacrificise
 If so be þat my youthe may deserue
 And þat my might be worþi to deserue 2380

Thy godhed þat/ I may be on of þine
 Then pray I þe / to rewe on my pyne
 For pilke peyne and þat hote fuyre

The which whilom þou brandest for deure 2384



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 69

And as I trowe / wiþ loue offendid most /
That euere was eny lyues creature /
For sche þat doth me / al þis wo endure 2396
Ne rekkeþ neuer wheþer I synke or flete
And wel I woot or sche me mercy heete
I moot wiþ strengþe wyn hir in þe place [leaf 32, back]
And wel I wot / wiþouten help or grace 2400
Of þe / ne may my strengthe nought auayle
Then help me lord to morn in my batayle
For pilke fyr that whilom brende þe
As wel as þis fire now brenneþ me 2404
And do to morn þat I haue þe victorie
Myn be þe trauail al þin be þe glorie
Thy souerein tempul wol I most honouren
Of any place / and al way most labouren 2408
In þy plesaunce / and þy craftes strong
And in þy tempul I wol my baner hong
And alle þe armes of my companye
And euermore vnto þat day I dye 2412
Eterne fyr I wol bifore þe fynde
And eek to þis / avow I wol me bynde
My berd myn heer þat hangeth longe a doun
That neuer ȝit ne felt offensioun 2416
Of rasour ne of schere I wol þe ȝiue
And be þy trewe seruaunt whiles I lyue
lord haue rowþe vppon my sorwes sore
ȝif me þy victorie I aske no more 2420
The preyer stynt / of Arcita þe strange
The rynges on þe tempul dore þat hange
And eek the dores clatereden ful fast
Of which arcita som what was agast 2424
The fires brenden on þe auter bright
That it gan al þe tempul for to light
A swote smel anon þe ground vp ȝaf
And arcita anon his hand vp haf 2428
And more encens in to þe fyr ȝet cast

with oþir rightes and þan atte last
 The statu of mars bigan his hauberk ryng'
 And with þat soun / he herd a murmuryng' 2432
 Ful lowe and dym / and sayde þis victorie
 For which he ȝaf to mars honour and glorie
 And þus with ioye and hope wel to fare
 Arcite anon / vnto his Inne is fare / 2436
 As fayn as foul is of þe brighte sonne [leaf 33]
 And right anon such stryf is bygonne
 For þat grauntyng' in þe heuen aboue
 Bitwix venus and þe goddes of loue 2440
 And marcȝ þe sterne god armypotent
 That Iupiter was busy it to stent
 Til þat þe pale Saturnes þe colde
 That knew so many of auentures olde 2444
 Fond in his experiens an art/
 That he ful sone haþ plesyd euery part
 And soþ is sayd eelde haþ gret auantage
 In eelde is boþe wisdom and vsage 2448
 Men may þe eelde at-ren but nat at-rede
 Saturne anon to stynte stryf and drede
 Al be it þat / it be agayns his kynde
 Of al þis stryf he can remedy fynde 2452
 My deere douȝter venus quod Satourne
 My cours þat haþ so wyde for to tourne
 haþ more power þan woot eny man

Men is he drachunȝ in þe see so men

2456



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 71

I slowh Sampson in schakyng^t þe piler
And myne ben þe maladies colde
The derke tresoun and þe castes olde 2468
Myn lokyng^t is þe fadir of pestilens
Now wepe nomore I schal do my diligence
That^t Palomon þat is myn owen knight^t
Schal haue his lady as þou him bihight^t 2472
þow marcz schal kepe his kniȝt ȝet^t neuerþeles
Bitwixe ȝou þer moot som tyme be pees
Al be ȝe nouȝt of oo complexioun [leaf 28, back]
That^t ilke day causeþ such diuisioun 2476
I am þi ayele redy at^t þy wille
wepe þou no more I wol þi lust^t fulfille
Now wol I stynt^t of þe goddes aboue
Of mars and of venus goddes of loue 2480
And telle ȝou as plainly as I can
The grete effecte for þat^t I bigan
[.
.
. no gap in the MS.]
G Ret^t was þe fest^t in Athenus þat^t day
And eek^t þat^t lusty sesoun of þat^t may 2484
Made euery wiȝt to ben in such plesaunce /
That^t al the monday iousten þey and daunce
And spende hit^t in venus heigh seruise /
But^t by þe cause þat^t þey schuln arise 2488
Erly a morwe for to see þat^t fight^t
vnto þeir rest^t wente þey at^t nyght^t
And on þe morwe whan þe day gan spryng^t
Of hors and hernoys noyse and clateryng^t 2492
Ther was in þe oostes al aboute
And to þe paleys rood þer many a route
Of lordes vpon steede and on/palfreys
Ther mayst^t þou see deusyng^t of herneys 2496
So vncowþ and so riche wrought^t & wel
Of goldsmithy of browdyng^t and of steel

72 GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334.

The scheldes bright / testers and trappures	
Gold-beten helmes / hauberks and cote armures	2500
lordes in paramenz on her coursers	
knightes of retenu and eek squyers	
Rayhyng' þe speres and helmes bokelyng'	
Girdyng' of schoeldes wiþ layneres lasyng'	2504
Ther as need is / þey were noþing' ydel	
Ther fomen steedes on þe golden bridel'	
Gnawying' and faste / armurers also	
with fyle and hamer prikyng' to and fro	2508
þemen on foote / and knaues many oon	
wiþ schorte staues as pikke as þey may goon	
Pypes trompes nakers and Clariounes	
þat' in þe batail blewe bloody sownes /	2512
The paleys ful of pepul vp and doun	[100/34]
heer þre / þer / ten / haldyng' her question	
Dyuynyng' of þis Thebans knightes two	
Som seyden þus / som seyð it schal be so	2516
Som heelde with him with þe blake berd	
Som wiþ þe ballyd som wiþ pikke hered	
Som sayd he loked grym as he wold fight	
he haþ a sparth of .xx. ⁱⁱ pound of wight	2520
Thus was þe halle ful of deuynyng'	
Lang' after þat' þe sonne gan to spryng'	
The gret' Theseus / þat' of his sleep is awaked	
with menstralcy and noyse þat' was maked	2524



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 73

And whan he sawh þe pepul of noyse al stille
Thus schewed he þe mighty dukes wille 2536
The lord hap of his heih discrecioun
Considered þat it were destruccioun
To gentil blood to fighten in þis wise
Of mortal batail now in þis Emprise 2540
were for to schapen þat þey schuld not dye
he wol his firste purpos modifye
No man þefore vp peyne of los of lyf
No maner schot/ ne pollax ne schort knyft 2544
In to þe lystes sende or þider bryng
Ne schorte swerd for to stoke þe bytyng
No man ne drawe ne bere by his side /
Ne noman schal to his felawe ryde 2548
But oon cours with a sharpe spere
Feyne if him lust on foote himself to were
And he þat is at meschief schal be take / [leaf 24, back]
And nat slayn but be brought to þe stake 2552
That schal be ordeyned on eyþer syde
But þider he schal by force and þer abyde /
And if so falle a cheuenten be take
On eyþer side or elles sle his make / 2556
No lenger schal þe turneynge laste
God spede þou goþ forþ and ley on faste
wiþ long swerd and wiþ mace sizt þour fillo
Goþ now þour way þis is þe lordes wille 2560
The voice of þe poepul touchþ heuen
So lowde cried þei with mylde steuen
God saue such a lord þat is so good
he wilneþ no destruccioun of blood 2564
vp goþ þe trompes and þe melodye
And to þe lystes ryde þe companye /
By ordynaunce þurgh þe cite large
Hangyng wiþ cloþ of gold and not wiþ Sarge 2568
Ful lik a lord þis nobul Duk cam ryde
These tuo Thebans on eyþer side

And after rood þe queen and Emelye
 And after hem of ladyes anoþer companye 2572
 And after hem of comunes after here degre
 And þus þey passeden þurgh þat cite
 And to þe lystes come þei by tyme
 It nas not of þe day ȝet fully pryme 2576
 whan sette was Theseus riche and hye
 ypolita þe queen and Emelye
 And oþer ladyes in here degrees aboute
 vnto þe settes passeþ al þe route 2580
 And westward þorugh þe ȝates of mart
 Arcite and eek þe hundred of his part
 with baners ys I-entred right anon
 And þat selue moment Palomon 2584
 Is vnder Venus Estward in þat place
 with baner whyt and hardy cheer of face
IN al þe world to seeke vp and doun
 So euen wipoute Variacioun 2588
 Ther nere suche companyes tweye [leaf 35]
 For ther nas noon so wys þat cowþe seye
 That any had of oþer auantage
 Of worthines ne staat/ ne of visage 2592
 So euene were þey chosen for to gesse
 And in two Renges faire þey hem dresse
 And whan he names I-rad were euerychon
 That in here nombre gile were þer noon 2596

The were þe ȝates schitt and eried lorde



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334 75

vp sprengen speres on twenty foot on hight
Out goon þe swerdes as þe siluer bright 2608
The helmes þer to-hewen and to-schrede
Out brast þe blood wiþ stoute stremes reede
with mighty maces þe bones þay to-breste
he þurgh þe pikkest of þe þrong gan þreste 2612
Ther stomblen steedes strong and doun can falle /
he rolled vnder foot as doþ a balle
he feyneþ on his foot wiþ his tronchoun
And him hurteleþ with his hors a doun 2616
He þurgh þe body hurt is and sippen take
Maugre his heed and brougt vnto þe stake /
As forward was right þer he most abyde /
Anoper lad is on þat oper syde 2620
And som tyme doþ Theseus hem to rest
hem to refreissche and drinke if hem lest
Ful ofte a-day haue þis Thebans twoo
Togider y-met and wrought his felaw woo 2624
vnhorsed hap ech oper of hem tweye
Ther nas no Tygyr in þe vale of Galgopleye
whan þat hir whelp is stole whan it is lite [leaf 35, back]
So cruel on þe hunt / as is arcite 2628
For Ielous hert vpon þis Palomon
Ne in Belmary þer is no fel lyoun
That hunted is or for hunger wood
Ne of his prey desireþ so þe blood 2632
As Palomon to sle his foo arcite
This Ielous strokes on here helmes byte
Out renneþ blood on boþe here sides reede
Som tyme an ende þer is on euery dede 2636
For er þe sonne vnto þe reaste went
The strang kyng Emetreus gan hent
This Palomon as he faught wiþ arcite
And his swerd in his fleisch he did byte 2640
And by þe force of .xxii he is take
Vnzolden and I-drawe vnto þe stake

And in þe Rescous of þis Palomon
 The stronge kyng · ligurgius is born a down 2644
 The kyng· Emetreus for al his strengþe
 Is born out of his sadel his swerdes lengþe
 So hit him palamon er he were take
 But al for nought he was brought to þe stake / 2648
 his hardy herte might him helpe nouȝt
 He most abyde whan þat he was caught
 By force and eek by composicioun
 who sorweþ now but Palomoun 2652
 That moot no more gon agayn to fight
 And whan þat Theseus had seen þat sight
 he cryed hoo / nomore for it is doon
 Ne noon schal lenger vnto his felaw goon 2656
 I wol be trewe Iuge and nouȝt partye
 Arcyte of Thebes schal haue Emelye
 That hap by his fortune hire I-wonne
 Anoon þer is noyse bygonne 2660
 For ioie of þis so lowde and heye with alle
 It semed þat þe listes wolde falle
 what can now fayre Venus doon aboute
 what seiþ sche now what doþ þis queen of loue / 2664
 But wepeþ so for wantyng of hir wille [lea/30]
 Til þat hire teeres in þe lystes fille
 Sche sayde I am aschamed douteles
 Satourmus seyde douȝter hold þy pees 2668

Men hat his wille his knyght hat his heere
 Men hat his wille his knyght hat his heere



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 77

lokyng upward vpon his Emelye
And sche agayn him cast a frendly yee 2680
For women as fur to speke in comune
þay folwe alle þe favour of fortune
And was alle his cheer and in his hert
Out of þe ground a fyr infernal stert 2684
From Pluto send at þe request of Saturne
For which his hert for feere gan to turne
And keep a syde and foundred as he leep
And or þat areyte may take keep 2688
he pight him on þe pomel of þe heed
That in þat place he lay as he were deed
his brest tobroke with his sadil bowe
As blak he lay as eny col or crowe 2692
So was þe blood y-ronne in his face
Anon he was y-born out of þe place
with herte sore to Theseus paleys
Tho was he coruen out of his harneys 2696
And in a bed y-brought ful fair and blyue
For ȝit he was in memory and on lyue
And alway cryeng after Emelye
Duk Theseus and al his companye 2700
Is comen hom to Athenes his Cite
with alle blys and gret solempnite
Al be it þat þis auenture was falle [lost? 3d. book?]
he nolde nought discomfort hem alle / 2704
Men seyde eek þat arcita schuld nought dye
he schal be helyd of his maladye
And of anoper þing þey were as fayn
That of hem alle þer was noon y-slayn 2708
Al were þey sore hurt and namely oon
That wip a spere was þirled his brest boon
To oper woundes and to broken armes
Some hadde salve and some hadde charmes 2712
Fermacyes of herbes and eek saue
They dronken for þey wolde here lyues haue

For which þis noble duk' as he wel can
 Comforteþ and honoureþ euery man 2716
 And made reuel al þe lange night
 vnto the straunge lordes as it was right
 Ne þer was holden to discomfytyng'
 But as a Iustes or as a turmentyng' 2720
 For soþly þer was no discomfiture
 For fallyng' is but an aduenture
 Ne to be lad wip fors vnto þe stake
 Vnþolden and wip twenty knightes take 2724
 A person allone wipouten moo
 And rent forþ by arme foot and too
 And eek' his steede dryuen forþ wip staues
 wip foote men boþe þemen and knaues 2728
 It was aretted him no vylonye
 Ne no maner man held it no cowardye
FOr which Theseus lowd anon leet crie
 To stynten al rancour and al enuye 2732
 The gree as wel on o syde as on oþer
 And euery side lik' as oþeres broþer
 And ȝaf hem ȝiftes after here degre
 And fully heeld a feste dayes þre 2736
 And conueyed þe knightes worþily
 Out of his toun a iournee largely
 And hom went euery man þe righte way
 Ther was no more but far wel haue good day 2740



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 79

Ne may þe venym voyde ne expelle
The pyper of his lounge gan to swelle 2752
And euery lacerte in his brest adoun
Is schent with venym and corrupcioun
Him gayneþ noþer for to get his lyf
Vomyt vp-ward ne downward laxatif / 2756
Al is to-broken pilke regioun
Nature hap now no dominacioun
And certeynly wher nature wil not wirche
Far wel phisik go bere þe man to chirche 2760
This al and som þat arcyte moste dye
For which he sendeþ after Emelye
And Palomon þat was his cosyn deere
Thanne seyð he þus as 3e schul after heere 2764
Naught may þe woful spirit/ in myn herte
Declare a poynt of my sorwes sinerte
To 3ou my lady þat I loue most
But I byquethe þe seruice of my gost 2768
To 3ou abouen euery creature
Syn þat my lyf may no lenger dure
Allas þe woo allas þe peynes stronge
That I for 3ou haue suffred and so longe 2772
Allas þe dep allas myn Emelye
Allas departyng of our companye
Allas myn hertes queen allas my wyf
Myn hertes lady ender of my lyf 2776
what is þis world what asken men to haue
Now wiþ his loue now in his colde graue
Allone wiþouten eny companye [leaf 37, back]
Far wel my swete far wel myn Emelye 2780
And softe take me in 3our armes tweye
For loue of god and herkneþ what I seye
I haue heer with my cosyn Palomon
had stryf and rancour many a day I-gon 2784
For loue of 3ow and eek for Ielousie /
And Iupiter so wis my sowle gye

To spoken of a seruaunt proprely
 with alle circumstaunces trewely 2788
 That is to seyn troupe honour and knighthede
 wysdom humblesse astat. and by kynrede
 Fredam and al þat longeþ to þat art
 So Iupiter haue of my soule part 2792
 As in þis world right now ne know I non
 So worthy to be loued as Palomon
 That serueth þou and wol do al his lyf
 And if þat ȝe schul euer be a wyf 2796
 Forȝet not Palomon þat gentil man
 And with þat word his speche faile gan
 For fro his herte vp to his brest was come
 The cold of deþ þat him had ouercome 2800
 And ȝet more ouer in his armes twoo
 þe vital strengþ is lost and al a-goo
 Only the intellect wipouten more
 That dwelled in his herte sik and sore 2804
 Gan fayle whan þe herte felte deth
 Duskyng his eyzen two and fayled breth
 But on his lady ȝit he cast his ye
 his laste word was mercy Emelye / 2808
 His spiryt chaunged was and wente þer
 As I cam neuer I can nat tellen wher
 Therefore I stynte I nam no dyuynistre /
 Of soules fynde I not in þis registre 2812
 Ne me list nat thowynouns to telle



GROUP A § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334 51

whan þat here housbonds ben from hem ago
That for þe more part þey sorwen so 2824
Or elles fallen in such maladye
That atte laste certeynly þey dye
Infynyt been þe sorwes and þe teeres
Of olde folk þat ben of tendre ȝeeres 2828
So gret a wepyng was þer noon certayn
whan Ector was I-brought al freissh I-slayn
As þat þer was for dep of þis Theban
For sorwe of him þer weepþ boþe child and man 2832
At troye alas þe pite þat was þere
Cracchyng of cheekes rendyng eek of here
why woldist / þou be deed þis women crye
And haddest gold ynow; and Emelye 2836
No man mighte / glade Theseus
Sauyng his olde fader Egeus /
That knew þis worldes transmutacioun
As he hadde seen it torne vp and down 2840
Ioye after woo and woo aftir gladnesse
And schewed him ensample and likenesse
Right as þer deyde neuer man quod he
That he ne lyued in erþe in som degree 2844
ȝit þer ne lyuede neuer man he seyde
In al þis world þat som tyme he ne deyde
This world nys but a þurghfare ful of woo
And we ben pilgryms passyng to and fro 2848
Dep is an ende of euery worldly sore
And ouer al þis ȝit seide he mochil more
To þis effect // ful wysly to enhort
The peple þat schulde him recomforte 2852
Duk Theseus with al his busy cure
Cast busyly wher þat þe sepulture
Of good arcyte may best y-maked be [leaf 38, b. rect]
And eek most honourable in his degre 2856
And atte last he took conclusioun
That ther as first Arcite and Palomon

82 GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334.

hadden for loue þe batail hem bytwene	
That in the selue groue soote and greene	2860
Ther as he hadde his amorous desires	
His compleynt and for loue his hoothe fyres	
he wolde make a fyr in which thoffice	
Funeral he might al accomlice	2864
And leet comaunde anon to hakke and hewe /	
The Okes olde and lay hem on a rewe	
In culpouns wel arrayed for to brenne	
his officers wiþ swifte foot þey renne	2868
And ryde anon at his comaundement	
And after þis Theseus hath I-sent	
After a beer and it al ouer spradde	
wiþ cloþ of golde þe richest þat he hadde	2872
And of þe same sute he clad arcyte	
vpon his hondes were his gloues white	
Eke on his heed a croune of laurer grene /	
And in his hond a swerd ful bright and kene	2876
He leyde him bare þe visage on þe beere	
Ther wiþ he weep þat pite was to heere	
And for þe poeple schulde see him alle /	
whan it was day he brought hem to þe halle	2880
That roreth of þe cry and of þe soun	
Tho cam þis woful Theban Palomoun	
wiþ flotery berd and ruggy assly heeres	
In cloþis blak y-dropped al wiþ teeres	2884



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 83

The þridde bar with him his bowe turkeys
Of brend gold was þe caas and eek' þe herneys 2896
And riden forth a paas with sorwful chere
Toward þe groue as 3e schul after heere
The noblest of þe grekes þat þer were
vpon here schuldres carieden þe beere 2900
with alak' paas and eyhen reed and wete
Thurgh-out þe cite by þe maister streete
That sprad was al with blak' and wonder hye
Right of þe same is al þe stret I-wrye 2904
vpon þe right' hond went' olde Egeus
And on þat oþer syde duk' Theseus
with vessels in here hand with gold wel fyn
As ful of hony mylk' and blood and wyn 2908
Eke Palomon with a gret companye
And after þat com woful Emelye
with fyr in hond as was þat tyme þe gyse /
To do þoffice of funeral seruiſe 2912
Hey3 labour and ful gret apparailynge
was at þe seruiſe and at þe fyr makynge
That with his grene top þe heuen raughte
And twenty fadme of brede tharme straughte / 2916
This is to seyn þe boowes were so brode
Of stree first' was þer leyd ful many a loode
but' how þe fyr was makyd vpon highte
Ne eek' þe names how þe trees highte 2920
As Ook' · fyr · birch · asp · aldir · holm · popler ·
wilw. elm plane. assch. box. chesteyn lynde laurer.
Mapul. thorn · beech · hasil · ew · wyppyltre
how þey weren felde schal nouȝt be told for me 2924
Ne how þe goddes ronnen vp and down
Disheryt of here habitacioun
In which þey whilom woned in rest / and pees
Nymphes. Faunes and Amadryes 2928
Ne how þe beestes and þe briddes alle
Fledden for feere / whan þe woode was falle /

Ne how þe ground agast' was of þe light' [leaf 38, back]
 That' was nought' wont' to see no sonne bright' 2932
 Ne how þe fyr was couchid first' wip stree
 And þanne with drye stykkes clouen in thre
 And þanne wip grene woode and spicerie
 And þanne wip cloth of gold and wip perrye 2936
 And gerlandes hangyng' with ful many a flour
 The myrre thensens wip also gret' odour
 Ne how arcyte lay among' al þis
 Ne what' richesse / aboute his body is 2940
 Ne how þat' Emely as was þe gyse
 Putt' in þe fyr of funeral seruise
 Ne how she swowned whan sche made þe fyre
 Ne what' sche spak' ne what' was hire desire 2944
 Ne what' iewels men in þe fyr þo cast'
 whan þat' þe fyr was gret' and brente fast'
 And how sum caste hir scheeld and summe her spere
 And of here vestimentz which þat' þey were 2948
 And cuppes ful of wyn and mylk' and blood
 Vnto þe fyr þat' brent' as it were wood
 Ne how þe gregoyz wip an huge route
 Thre tymes ryden al þe fyr aboute 2952
 vpon þe lefte hond with an heih schoutyng'
 And þries wip here speres clateryng'
 And þries how þe ladyes gan to crye
 Ne how þat' lad was homeward Emelye 2956



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 85

By proces and by lengþe of certeyn ȝeres
Al styntyð is þe mornyng' and þe teeres 2968
Of alle grekys by oon general assent
Than semed me ther was a parlement [leaf 60]
At' athenes on a certeyn poynt / and cas
Among' þe whiche poyntes spoken was 2972
To han wiþ certeyn contrees alliaunce /
And haue fully of Thebans obeissance
For which þis noble Theseus anon
let' senden after gentil Palomon 2976
Vnwist' of him what' was þe cause and why
But' in his blake cloþes sorwfully
he cam at' his comaundement in hys
Tho sente Theseus for Emelye 2980
whan þey were sette and hussht' was al þe place
And Theseus abyden hadde a space
Or eny word cam fro his wyse brest'
His eyen set' he þer as was his lest 2984
And wiþ a sad visage he syked stille
And after þat' right' þus he seide his wille
The firste moeuere of þe cause aboute
whan he first made þe fayre cheyne of loue 2988
Gret was theffect / and leigh was his entente /
wel wist' he why and what þerof' he mente
For which þat' faire cheyne of' loue he bond
The fyr þe watir eyr and eek þe lond 2992
In certeyn boundes þat' þey may not flee
That' same prynce and moeuere eek quod he /
hap' stabled in þis wrecched world a doun
Certeyn dayes and duracioun 2996
To alle þat' er engendrid in þis place
Ouer þe day þey may nat pace
Al mowe they ȝit wel here dayes abregge
Ther needeþ non auctorite tallegge 3000
For it' is preued by experience
But' þat' me lust' declare my sentence

- Than may men wel by þis ordre discerne
 That þilke moeuere stabul is and eterne 3004
 wel many men knewe but it be a fool
 That euery partye dyryueþ from his hool
 For nature haþ nat take his bygynnyng'
 Of no partye ne cantel of a þing' [leaf 40, back] 3008
 But of a þing' þat parfyt is and stable /
 Descendyng' so til it be corumpable
 And þerfore of his wyse purueaunce /
 He hath so wel biset his ordenaunce 3012
 That spices of þinges and proressiouns
 Schullen endure by successiouns
 And nat eterne be wipoute lye
 This maistow vnderstand and se at ye 3016
LO þe Ook' þat haþ so long' norisschyng'
 Fro tyme þat it gynneþ first to spring'
 And as so long' a lyf as we may see
 3et atte laste wasted is þe tree 3020
Considereþ eek' how þat þe harde stoon
 vnder oure foot / on which we trede and goon
 3it wasteth it as it liþ by þe weye
 The brode Ryuer som tyme wexeþ dreye 3024
 The grete townes see we wane and wende
 Than may I see þat al þing' haþ an ende
OF man and womman se we wel also /
 That wendeþ in oon of þis termes two 3028
 That is to sayn / in souþe or elles in age



GROUP A. § 2. KNIGHT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 87

And here agayn no creature of lyue
Of no degre auayleþ for to stryue 3040
Than is it wisdom as þenkeþ me
To maken vertu of necessite
And take it wel þat we may nat eschewe
And namely þat þat to vs alle is dewe / 3044
And who-so gruccheþ aught he doþ folye
And rebel is to him þat al may gye [wa 41]
And certeynly a man haþ most honour
To deyen in his excellence and flour 3048
whan he is siker of his goode name
Than haþ he doon his freend ne him no schame
And gladder ought his freend ben of his deþ
whan with honour is zolden vp þe breth 3052
Thanne whan his name appeled is for age
For al forgeten is his vasselage
Thanne is it best as for a worþi fame
To dye whan a man is best of name 3056
The contrary of al this is wilfulnesse
why grucchen we why haue we heuynesse /
That good arcyte of chyualry þe flour
Departed is with worschip and honour 3060
Out of þis foule prisoun of þis lyf
why gruccheþ heer his cosyn and his wyf
Of his wel fare þat louen him so wel
Can he hem thank / nay / god woot neuer a del 3064
That hope his soule and eek hem self offende
And zet þey may here lustes nat amende
That may I conclude of þis longe serye
But aftir wo I rede vs to be merye 3068
And þanke Iubiter al of his grace
And or þat we departe fro þis place /
I rede þat we make of sorwes two
O parfyt ioye lastyng euer mo 3072
And lokeþ now wher most sorwe is her-Inne /
Ther wol we first amenden and bygynne /

Sustyr quod he þis is my ful assent
 wiþ al thauys heer of my parlement 3076
 That gentil Palomon þour owne knight
 That serueþ þow with herte wil and might
 And euer haþ doon syn fyrst tyme þe him knewe
 That þe schul of þour grace vpon him rewe 3080
 And take him for þour housbond and for lord
 Lene me þoure hand for þis is oure acord
 let see now of þour wommanly pite
 he is a kynges broþir sone pardee [leaf 41, back] 3084
 And þough he were a pore bachiller
 Syn he haþ serued þou so many a þeer
 And had for þou so gret aduersite
 hit moste be considered trusteþ me 3088
 For gentil mercy aughte passe right
 Than seyde he þus to Palomon ful right
 I trowe þer needeþ lital sermonyng
 To make þou assente to þis þing 3092
 Com neer and tak þour lady by þe hond
 Bitwix hem was I-maad anon þe bond
 That highte matrimoyn or mariage
 By alle þe counseil and þe baronage 3096
 And thus with blys and eek wiþ melodye
 Haþ Palomon I-wedded Emelye
 And god þat al þis wyde world haþ wrought
 Send him his loue þat haþ it deere I-bought 3100
 For now is Palomon in al his wele



GROUP A. § 3. KNIGHT-MILLER LINK. Harleian 7334. 89

[No break in the MS.]

¶ And þus bygygneþ þe prologe of þe myllere

WHan þat þe knight had þus his tale I-told
In al þe route nas þer zongt ne old
That he ne seyde it was a noble story

And worþi to be drawen in memory 3112

And namely þe gentils euerich oon

Oure host þo lowh and swoor so moot I goon

This gop right wel vnbokeled is þe male /

Let se now who schal telle anoþer tale 3116

For trewely þis game is wel bygonne /

Now telleþ now sir monk if þat 3e konne

Som what to quyte wiþ þe knightes tale /

The Myller þat for drunken was al pale 3120

So þat vnnethe vpon his hors he sat [leaf 42]

he wold auale nowþer hood ne hat

Ne abyde no man for his curtesye

But in Pilates voys he gan to crye 3124

And swor by armes and by blood and bones

I can a noble tale for þe noones

with which I wol now quyte þe knightes tale

Oure hoost saugh wel how dronke he was of ale 3128

And seyde Robyn abyde my leue broþer

Som better man schal telle vs first anoþer

Abyd and let vs worken þriftyly

By goddes soule quod he þat wol nat I 3132

For I wol speke or elles go my way

Oure host answered / tel on a deuel way

Thou art a fool þy witt is ouercome /

¶ Now herkneþ quod þis myller al and some 3136

But first I make a protestacioun

That I am dronke I knowe wel by my soun

And þefore if þat I mys speke or seye

wyte it þe ale of Southwerk I 3ou preye 3140

For I wol telle a legende and a lyf
 Bothe of a Carpenter and of his wyf
 how þat þe clerk hap set þe wriȝtes cappe /
The reue answered and seyde stynt þi clappe / 3144
 let be þy lewed drunken harlottrye
 It is a synne and eek a greet folye
 To apeyren eny man or him defame
 And eek to brynge wyues in ylle name 3148
 Thou mayst ynowȝ of oþer þinges seyn
 This dronken Miller spak ful sone a-geyn
 And seyde leue brother Osewold
 who hath no wyf he is no Cokewold 3152
 But I seye not þefore þat þou art oon
 Ther been ful goode wyues many oon
 And euer a þousand goode agayns oon badde
 That knowest þou wel þy self but if þou madde 3156
 why art þou angry with my tale now /
 I haue a wyf par de as wel as thou
 ȝit nolde I for the oxen in my plough [leaf 48, back]
 Take vpon me more þan ynough 3160
 Though þat þou deme þiself þat þou be oon
 I wol bileue wel þat I am ¹oon [1 a later n. proflx]
 An housbond schal not be inquisityf
 Of goddes pryete ne of his wyf 3164
 So þat he fynde goddes foyssoun þere
 Of þe remenaunt needeþ nought enquire /



GROUP A. § 3. KNIGHT-MILLER LINK. Harleian 7334. 91

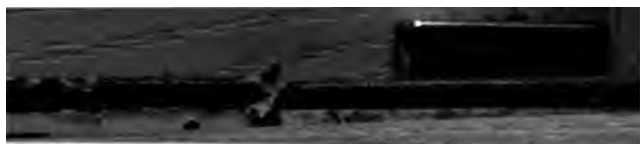
Turne ouer þe leef and cheese anoþer tale
For he schal fynde ynowe bothe gret and smale
Of storial þing þat toucheþ gentillesse
And eek more ryalte and holynesse 3180
Blameþ nat me If þat ȝe cheese amys
The Miller is a cherl ȝe know wel þis
So was þe reene and opir many mo
And harlotry þey tolden boþe two 3184
Auyseþ ȝou and put me out / of blame
And men schulde nat make earnest of game
Here endeþ þe prologe of þe Miller

[*No break in the MS.*]

¶ And bygynneth his tale

Whilom þer was dwellyng^t at Oxenford
 A riche gnof^t that gestes heeld to boorde
 And of his craft he was a Carpenter 3189
 wiþ him þer was dwellyng^t a pore scoler
 had lerned art^t but al his fantasye
 was torned for to lerne astrologye 3192
 An cowde a certeyn of conclusiouns
 To deme by interrogaciouns
 If þat men axed him in certeyn houres [leaf 48]
¹whan þat men schuld han drougt^t or ellys schoures 3196
 Or if men axed him what schulde bifalle
 Of euery þing I may nouȝt^t reken hem alle
 This clerk^t was cleped heende Nicholas
 Of derne loue he cowde and of solas 3200
 And þer wiþ he was sleigh and ful priue
 And lik^t amayden meke for to se
 A chambir had he in his hostillerye
 Alone wiþouten eny compaignye 3204
 Ful fetisly I-dight^t with herbes soote /
 And he himself^t as swete as is þe roote
 Of lokorys or eny Cetewale
 his almagest^t and bookes gret and smale 3208

his astrolabe longynget for his art



GROUP A. § 4. MILLER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 93

And þus þis sweete clerk' his tyme spente
After his frendes fyndyng' and his rente 3220

This carpenter had weddid newe a wyf'
Which þat' he loved more þan his lyf'
Of eyzteteene ȝeer sche was of age
Gelous he was and heeld hir narwe in cage 3224

For sche was wilde & ȝong' and he was old
And demed himself' be lik' a Cokewold
he knew nat Catoun for his wit' was rude
That' bad man schulde wedde his similitude 3228

Men schulde wedde aftir here astaat'
For eelde and ȝouþe ben often at debaat'
But' syn þat' he was brouȝt' in to þe snare
He moste endure as opere doon his care 3232

Fair was þe ȝonge wyf' and þer wiþ al
As eny wesil hir body gent and smal [leaf 48, back]

A seynt' sche wered barred al of silk'
A barmcloþ eek' as whit' as morne mylk' 3236
vpon hir lendes ful of many a gore
whit' was hir smok' and browdid albyfore

And eek' byhynde on hir coler aboute
Of coleblak' silk' wiþinne and eek' wiþoute 3240

The tapes of hir white voluper
weren of þe same sute of hire coler
hir filet' brood of silk' y-set ful heyne
And certeynly sche hadd a licorous eyȝe 3244

Ful smal y-pulled weren hir browes two /
And þo were bent as blak' as a slo
Sche was wel more blisful on to see
Than is þe newe perionette tree 3248

And softer þan þe wol is of a weþir
And by hir gurdil lyng a purs of leþir
Tassid wiþ silk' and perled wiþ latoun
In al þis world to seken vp and doun 3252

Ther nys no man so wys þat coupe þenche /
So gay a popillot' or such a wenche /

For brighter was þe smylyng of hir hewe
 Than in þe tour þe noble I-forged newe 3256
 But of hir song it was as lowde and 3erne
 As eny swalwe chiteryng on a berne
 Ther to sche cowde skippe and make game
 As eny kyde or calf folowyng his dame 3260
 hir mouth was sweete as bragat is or meth
 Or hoord of apples layd in hay or heth
 wynsyng sche was as is a Ioly colt
 long as a mast / and vpright as a bolt / 3264
 A broch sche bar vpon hir loue coleer
 As brod as is þe bos of a bocleer
 hir schos were laced / on hir legges hey3e
 Sche was a primerole¹ a pigges ney3e 3268
 For eny lord haue liggyng in his bedde [¹ a later & is put in here]
 Or 3et for eny good 3eman to wedde
 Now sir and eft sir / so bifel þe cas
 That on a day þis heende Nicholas [leaf 44] 3272
 Fil wip þis 3onge wyf to rage and pleye
 whil þat hir housbond was at Oseneye
 As clerkes ben ful sotil and ful queynte
 And pryuely he caught hir by þe queynte 3276
 And seyde I-wis but if I haue my wille
 For derne loue of þe lemman I spille /
 And heeld hir harde by þe haunche boones
 And seyde lemman loue me al at ones 3280

On I-wis day as wylked me sawe



GROUP A. § 4. MILLER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 95

And swor hir oth / by seynt thomas of kent
That sche wol be at his comaundement 3293
whan þat sche may hir leysir wel aspye
Myn housbond is so ful of Ielousie /
That but ȝe wayten wel and be pryue
I woot right wel I am but deed quod sche 3296
ȝe mosten be ful derne as in þis caas
Ther of ne care þe nought quod Nicholas
A clerk hap litherly byset his while
But if he cowde a carpenter bygyle 3300
And þus þey ben acorded and I-sworn
To wayte a tyme as I haue told biforn
Whan Nicholas had doon þus euery del
And thakked hire aboute þe lendys wel 3304
he kist hir sweet / and takeþ his sawtrye
And pleyeþ fast and makeþ melodye
Than fyl it þus / þat to þe parisch chirche /
Cristes owen werkes for to wirche 3308
This goode wyf / went on an haly day
Hir forheed schon as bright as eny day [leaf 44, back]
So was it waisschen whan sche leet hir werk
Now þer was of þat chirche a parisch clerk 3312
NThe which þat was I-cleped Absolon
Crulle was his heer and as þe gold it schon
And strowted as a fan right large and brood
Ful streyt and euene lay his ioly schood 3316
his rode was reed his eyzen gray as goos
with Powles wyndowes coruen in his schoos
In his hoses reed he went fetusly
I-clad he was ful smal and propurly 3320
Al in a kirtel of a fyn wachet
Schapen with goores in þe newe get
And þer vpon he had a gay surplys
As whyt as is þe blosme vpon þe rys 3324
A mery child he was so god me saue
wel coupe he lete blood and clippe and schauē

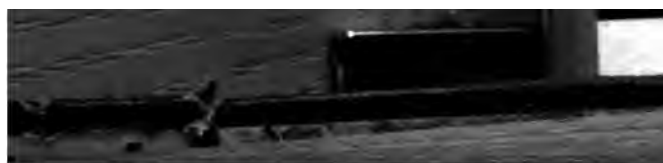
And make a chartre of lond and acquitaunce
 In twenty maners he coude skip and dance 3328
 After þe scole of Oxenforde þo
 And wiþ his legges casten to and fro
 And pleyen songes on a smal rubible
 Therto he sang som tyme a lowde quynnyble 3332
 And as wel coude he pleye on a giterne /
 In al þe toun nas brewhous ne tauerne
 That he ne visited with his solas
 Ther as any gaylard tapster was 3336
 Bot soþ to say he was som del squaymous
 Of fartyng / and of speche daungerous
 This absolon þat ioly was and gay
 Gop wiþ a senser on þe haly day 3340
 Sensyng þe wyues of þe parisch fast
 And many a louely look on hem he cast
 And namely on þis Carpenteres wyf
 To loke on hire him þought a mery lyf 3344
 Sche was so propre sweete and licorous
 I dar wel sayn if sche had ben a mous
 And he a cat he wold hir hent anoon
This parisch clerk this Ioly Absolon [leaf 45] 3348
 Hap in his herte such a loue longyng
 That of no wyf ne took he noon offryng /
 For curtesy he seyde he wolde noon
 The moone at night ful cleer and brighte schoon 3352
 And absolon his giterne hap I take



GROUP A. § 4. MILLER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 97

Ful wel acordyng to his gyternyng
This carpenter awook and herde him syng 3364
And spak vnto his wyf and sayde anoon
what alisoun herestow not absolon
That chaunteþ þus vnder oure boure smal
And sche answerd hir housbond þer wiþ al 3368
þis God woot Iohn I heere it euery del
This passeþ forth what wil þe bet þan wel
Fro day to day þis Ioly Absolon
So woweþ hire þat him is wo bigon 3372
he wakeþ al þe night and al þe day
To kembe his lokkes brode and made him gay
he wowitz hire by mene and by brocage
And swor he wolde ben hir owne page / 3376
he syngeþ crowyng as a nightyngale
And sent hire pyment meth and spiced ale /
And wafres pyping hoot out of þe gleede
For þat sche was of toune he profred meede 3380
For som folk wol be wonne for richesse
And som for strokes som for gentillesse
Som tyme to schewe his lightnes and maistrye
he pleyeth herod; on a scaffold hye 3384
But what awayleþ him as in þis caas /
Sche loueþ so þis heende Nicholas [leaf 45, back]
That absolon may blowe þe bukkes horn
he ne had for al his labour but a skorn 3388
And þus sche makeþ absolon hir ape
And al his earnest torneþ to a lape
Ful soþ is þis prouerbe it is no lye
Men seyn right þus alway þe ney alye 3392
Makeþ þe forre leef to be loþ
For þough þat absolon be wood or wroth
By cause þat he fer was from here sight
This Nicholas haþ stonden in his light 3396
Now bere þe wel þou heende Nicholas
For absolon may wayle and synge allas

¶ And so bifell it on a Satyrday
 This Carpenter was gon to Osenay 3400
 And heende Nicholas and alisoun
 Acordid ben to þis conclusioun
 That Nicholas schal schapen hem a wyle
 This sely Ielous housbond to begyle / 3404
 And if so were þis game wente aright
 Sche schulde slepe in his arm al night
 For þis was hire desir and his also
 And right anon wiþouten wordes mo 3408
 This Nicholas no lenger wold he tarye
 But doþ ful softe in to his Chambur carye
 Boþe mete and drynke for a day or tweye
 And to hir housbond bad hir for to seye 3412
 If þat he axed after Nicholas
 Sche schulde seye sche wiste nat wher he was
 Of al þat day sche saw him nat with eye
 Sche trowed he were falle in som maladye 3416
 For no cry þat hir mayden cowde him calle
 he nolde answere for nought þat may bifalle
This passeþ forþ al þat ilke satyrday
 Tha Nicholas in his chambre lay 3420
 And eet and drank and dede what/ him leste
 Til soneday þe sonne was gon to reste
 This sely carpenter hap gret meruaile [leaf 46]
 Of Nicholas or what þing may him ayle 3424



GROUP A. § 4. MILLER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 99

And at þe chambir dore whil he stood
he cryed and knocked as þat he were wood 3436
what how what do 3e mayster nicholay
how may 3e slepen al þis longe day
But al for noughȝt he herde nat o word
An hole he fond right lowe vpon a boord 3440
Ther as þe cat was wont in for to creepe /
And at þat hole he loked in ful deepe /
And atte laste he hadde of him a sight
This nicholas sat euer gapyng vpright 3444
As he had loked on þe newe moone
Adoun he goþ and tolde his mayster soone
In what aray he sawh þis ilke man
This carpenter to blessen him bygan 3448
And seyde now help vs seynte Frideswyde
A man woot litel what him schal betyde
This man is falle with his astronomye
In som woodnesse or in som agonye 3452
I thought ay wel how þat it schulde be
Men schulde nought knowe of goddes pryuyte
¶ 3e blessed be alwey a lewed man
That nat but oonly his bileue can 3456
So ferde anoþer clerk with astronomye /
he walked in the feeldes for to pry
vpon þe sterres what þer schulde bifalle
Til he was in a marle pit I-falle / 3460
he saugh nat þat but 3et by seint Thomas /
Me reweth sore for heende nicholas [leaf 46, back]
he schal be ratyd of his studyyng
If þat I may by ihū heuen kyng 3464
Gete me a staf þat I may vnder spore
whil þat þou Robyn heuest vp þe dore
he schal out of his studyyng as I gesse
And to þe chambir dore he gan him dresse / 3468
his knaue was a strong karl for þe noones
And by þe hasp he haf it vp at oones

And in þe floor þe dore fil doun anoon
 This nicholas sat stille as eny stoon 3472
 And euer he capyd vpward to þe eyr
 This Carpenter wende he were in despeir
 And hent him by þe schuldres mightily
 And schook him harde and cryed spitously 3476
 what Nicholas what how man loke a doun
 A-wake and pynk on cristes passioun
 I crowche þe from Elues and from wightes
 Ther-with þe night-spel seyde he anon rightes 3480
 On þe foure halues of þe hous aboute /
 And of þe preissfold of þe dore wiþoute
 lord Ihū crist and seynte bendight
 Blesse þis hous from euery wikkede wight 3484
 for nyghtes verray þe white pater-noster
 wher wonestow now, seynte petres soster
 And atte laste heende Nicholas
 Gan for to syke sore and seyde allas 3488
 Schal al þe world be lost eft sones now
 This Carpenter answerde what seystow /
 what þenk on god as we doon men þat swynke
 This Nicholas answerde fette me drynke 3492
 And after wol I speke in pryuyte
 Of certeyn þing þat toucheþ þe and me
 I wol telle it non oþer man certayn
 This Carpenter goþ forth and comp agayn 3496



STANFORD LIBRARY

GROUP A. § 4. MILLER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 101

That if þou wreye me þou schalt be wood
Nay crist forbode it for his holy blood 3508
Quod þo þis sely man I am no labbe
Though I it say I am nought leef to gabbe /
Say what þou wolt I schal it neuer telle /
To child ne wyf by him þat harwed helle 3512
Now Iohan quod nicholas I wol not lye
I haue I-founde in myn astrologye
As I haue loked in þe moone bright
That now on monday next at quarter night 3516
Schal falle a reyn and þat so wilde and wood
That half so gret was neuer Noes flood
This worlde he seyde more þan an hour
Schal ben I-dreynt so hidous is þe schour 3520
Thus schal mankynde drenche and leese his lyf
This Carpenter answered allas my wyf
And shal she drenche allas myn alisoun
For sorwe of þis he fel almost adoun 3524
And seyde is þer no remedy in þis caas
whe ȝis for gode quod heende Nicholas
If þou wolt werken aftir lore and reed
Thou maist nought worke after þin owen heed 3528
For þus seiþ Salomon þat was ful trewe
werke by counseil / and þou schalt nat rewe
And if þou worken wolt by good counsail
I vndertake wiþouten mast and sail 3532
ȝet schal I sauen hir and þe and me
hastow nat herd / how saued was Noe
whan þat our lord had warned him biforn
That al þe world wiþ watir schulde be lorn 3536
ȝis quod þis Carpenter ful ȝore ago
hastow nought herd quod Nicholas also [leaf 47, back]
The sorwe of Noe wiþ his felaschipe
That he hadde or he gat his wyf to schipe 3540
him hadde wel leuer I dar wel vndertake /
At þilke tyme þan alle his weperes blake

That sche hadde a schip hir self allone
 And þefore wostow what is best to doone / 3544
 This axep hast and of an hasty þing
 Men may nought preche or make taryng
 Anon go gete vs fast in to þis In
 A knedyng trowh or elles a kemelyn 3548
 For ech of vs but loke þat þey be large
 In which þat we may rowe as in a barge
 And haue þer In vitaille suffisant
 But for o day, fy on þe remenant 3552
 The water schal aslake and gon away
 Aboute prime vppon þe nexte day
 But Robyn may not wite of þis þy knawe
 Ne ek þy mayde Gille I may not saue 3556
 Aske nought why for þough þou aske me
 I wol nat tellen goddes pryete
 Sufficeth þe but if þat þy witt/ madde
 To haue as gret a grace as noe hadde / 3560
 Thy wyf schal I wel sauen out of doute /
 Go now þy wey and speed þe heer aboute
 And whan þou hast for hir and þe and me /
 I-goten vs þis knedyng tubbes þre 3564
 Than schalt þou hange hem in þe roof ful hie
 That no man of oure purueaunce aspye
 And whan þou þus hast doon as I haue seyd
 And hast our vitaille faire in hem I leyd 3568



GROUP A. § 4. MILLER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 103

And þou wolt' seye heyl maister nicholay
Good morn I see þe wel for it is day 3580
And þan schul we be lordes al oure lyf'
Of al þe world as noe and his wyf'
But' of' oo þing' I warne þe ful right'
Be wel auysed of' þat' ilke nyght 3584
That' we ben entred in to schippes boord
That' not' of' vs ne speke not' a word
Ne clepe ne crye but' be in his preyere
For it is goddes owne heste deere 3588
Thy wyf' and þou most' hangen fer a-twynne
For þat' bitwixe þou schal be no synne
No more in loking' þan þer schal in dede /
This ordynaunce is seyde, so god me speede / 3592
To morwe at' nyght' whan men ben a slepe /
In to our knedyng' tubbes wol we crepe /
And sitte þer abydyng' goddes grace /
Go now þy way I haue no lenger space 3596
To make of' þis no lenger sermonyng'
Men seyn þus / send þe wyse and sey no þing'
Thou art' so wys it' needeth nat' þe teche
Go saue oure lyf' and þat' I þe byseche / 3600
This seely carpenter goþ forþ his way
Ful ofte he seyde alas and weylaway
And to his wyf' he told his pryuete
And sche was war and knew it' bet' þan he / 3604
what' al this wente cast' was for to seye /
But' napeles sche ferd as sche schuld deye
And seyde alas go forth þy way anon
help vs to skape or we be ded echon 3608
I am þy verray trewe wedded wyf'
Go deere spouse and help to saue oure lyf'
lo which a gret' þing' is affeccioun
A man may dye for ymaginacoun 3612
So deepe may impressioun be take
This seely Carpenter bygynneth quake [leaf 48, back]

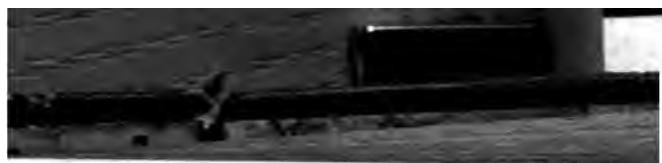
him þenkeþ verrayly þat he may se
 Noes flood come walkyng' as þe see / 3616
 To drenchen alisoun his hony deere
 he weepeþ wayleþ he maketh sory cheere
 he sikeþ with ful many a sory swough
 And goth and geteth him a knedyng' trougħ 3620
 And after þat a tubbe and a kymelyn
 And pryuely he sent' hem to his In
 And heng' hem in þe roof' in pryuele
 His owne hond þan made laddres þre 3624
 To clymben by þe ronges and þe stalkes
 vnto þe tubbes hangyng' in þe balkes
 And hem vitayled boþe trougħ and tubbe
 with breed and cheese wiþ good ale in a Iubbe 3628
 Suffisayng' right' ynough as for a day
 But' or þat he had maad al þis array
 he sent' his knaue and eek' his wenche also
 vpon his neede to londoun for to go 3632
 And on þe monday whan it' drew to nygħt
 he schette his dore wiþouten candel light
 And dressed al þis þing' as it' schuld be
 And schortly vp þey clumben alle þre 3636
 They seten stille wel a forlong' way
 Now pater noster clum quod Nicholay
 And Clum quod Ion and Clum . quod. Alisoun
 This Carpenter seyð his deuocioun 3640
 And stille he sitt' and budlet his prayer



GROUP A. § 4. MILLER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 105

Ther as þe Carpenter was wont to lye
Ther was þe Reuel and þe melodye [leaf 49] 3652
And þus lith alisoun and Nicholas
In busynesse of myrþe and of solas
Til þat þe belles of laudes gan to ryng
And freres in þe Chauncel gan to synge 3656
This parissch clerk þis ameraus absolon
That is for loue so harde and woo bygon
vpon þe Monday was at Osenay
with company him to desporte and play 3660
And axed vpon caas a cloysterer
Ful pryuely after þe carpenter
And he drough him a part out of þe chirche
And sayde nay I say him nat here wirche 3664
Syn satirday I trow þat he be went
For tymber þer our abbot hath him sent/
For he is wont for tymber for to goo
And dwellen at þe graunge a day or tuo 3668
Or elles he is at his hous certayn
wher þat he be I can nat soply sayn
This absolon ful ioly was and light
And thoughte now is tyme wake al night 3672
For sikerly I sawh him nought styryng
Aboute his dore syn day bigan to spryng
So mote I pryue I schal at Cokkes crowe
Ful pryuely go knokke at his wyndowe 3676
That stant ful lowe vpon his bowres wal
To alisoun þan wol I tellen al
My loue-longyng for ȝet I schal not mysse
That atte leste wey I schal hir kisse 3680
Som maner comfort schal I haue par fay
My mouth hap icched al þis longe day
That is a signe of kysyng atte leste
Al nyght I mette eek I was at a feste 3684
Ther fore I wol go slepe an hour or tweye
And al þe night þan wol I wake and pleye

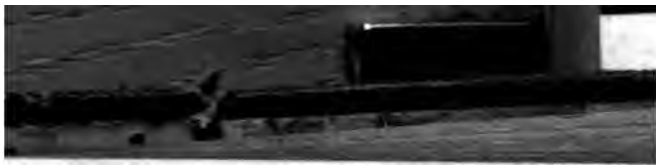
whan þat þe firste cok' hap' crowe anoon
 vp ryst' þis Iolyf' loue absolon 3688
 And him arrayeþ gay at' poynt' deuys
 But' first' he cheweþ greyn and lycoris [leaf 40, back]
 To smellen swete or he hadde kempt' his heere
 vnder his tunge a trewe loue he beere / 3692
 For þer by wende he to be gracious
 he romeþ to þe carpenteres hous
 And stille he stant' vnd' þe schot' wyndowe /
 vnto his brest' it' raught' / it' was so lowe / 3696
 And softe he cowhiþ with a semy soun
 what' do 3e hony comb swete alisoun
 My fayre bryd my swete Cynamome
 Awake lemman myn and spekeþ tone 3700
 wel litel þynke 3e vpon my wo
 That' for 3oure loue I swelte þer I go
 No wonder is if' þat' I swelte and swete /
 I morne as doþ a lamb after þe tete 3704
 I-wis lemman I haue such loue-longyng'
 That' like a turtill trewe is my moornyng'
 I may not' ete no more þan a mayde /
 ¶ Go fro þe wyndow Iakke fool sche sayde / 3708
 As help me god it wol not' be com paine
 I loue anoper and elles were I to blame
 wel bet' þan þe by Ihū absolon
 Go forþ þy wey or I wol cast' a stoon 3712
 And let me slene a twenty deuelway



GROUP A. § 4. MILLER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 107

And seide I am a lord at alle degrees 3724
For after þis I hope þer comeþ more
Lemman þy grace / and swete bryd þyn ore
The wyndow sche vndyd and þat in hast
haue doon quod sche com of and speed þe fast 3728
lest þat our neygheboures þe aspye
This absolon gan wipe his mouþ ful drye [long 50]
Derk was þe night as picche or as a cole /
Out atte wyndow putte sche hir hole / 3732
And absolon him fel no bet ne wers
But wiþ his mouth he kist hir naked ers
Ful sauorly, whan he was war of þis
Abak he sterte and þought it was amys 3736
For wel he wist a womman hap no berd
he felt a þing al rough and long I-herd
And seyde fy allas what haue I do
Tehee quod sche / and clapt þe wyndow to 3740
And absolon goþ forþ a sory paas
A berd a berd / quod heende Nicholas
By goddes corps þis game goþ fair and wel
This seely absolon herd euery del 3744
And on his lippe he gan for angir byte
And to himself he seyde I schal þe quyte
Who rubbiþ now who froteth now his lippes 3747
wiþ dust wiþ sand wiþ straw wiþ cloth wiþ chippes
But absolon þat seith fulofte allas
My soule bytake I vnto Sathanas
But me were leuer þan alle þis toun quod he
Of þis dispit awroken for to be 3752
Allas quod he allas I nadde bleynt
his hoot loue was cold and al I-queynt
For fro þat tyme þat he had kist hire ers
Of paramours ne sette he nat a kers 3756
For he was helyd of his maledye
Fulofte paramours he gan deffye
And wept as doþ a child þat is I-bete
A softe paas went he ouer þe strete / 3760

Vnto a smyth men clepith daun Gerueys
 That in his forge smythed plowh harneys
 He scharpeth schar and cultre bysily
 This absolon knokkeþ al esily 3764
 And seyde vnto Geruays and þat anoon
 what who art thou? it am I Absolon
 what Absolon what ¹cristes swete tree [*1 a later for is put here*]
 why ryse 3e so rathe benedicite [*leaf 50, back*] 3768
 what eyleþ 3ou some gay gurl god it woot
 haþ brought 3ou þus vpon þe verytrot
 By seinte noet / 3e wot wel what I mene
 This absolon ne roughte nat a bene 3772
 Of al þis pley no word agayn he 3af
 For he hadde more tow on his distaf
 Than Gerueys knew and seyde freend so deere
 That hote cultre in þe Chymney heere 3776
 As lene it me I haue þer wip to doone
 I wol it bring agayn to þe ful soone
 Gerueys answerde / certes were it gold
 Or in a poke nobles al vntold 3780
 3e schul him haue as I am trewe smyth
 Ey cristes fo¹ what wil 3e do þer wip [*1 a later to is added*]
 Ther of quod absolon be as be may
 I schal wel telle it þe to morwe day 3784
 And caughte þe cultre by þe colde stele
 Ful soft out at þe dore he gan it stele /



GROUP A. § 4. MILLER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 109

This wol I zine þe / if þou me kisse
This Nicholas was rise for to pysse
And þought he wold amenden al þe Iape
he schulde kisse his ers or þat he skape 3800
And vp þe wyndow dyde he hastily
And out his ers putteþ he pryuely
Ouer þe buttoke to haunche bon
And þer wiþ spak þis clerk þis absolon 3804
Spek sweete bryd I wot nat wher þou art /
This Nicholas anon let fle a fart' [leaf 51]
As gret as it had ben a thundir dent
And with þat strook he was almost I-blent 3808
And he was redy with his yren hoot
And Nicholas amyð þe ers he smoot
Of goþ þe skyn an hande brede aboute
The hoot culdre brente so his toute 3812
And for þe smert / he wende for to dye
As he were wood anon he gan to crye
help watir watir / help for goddes herte
This Carpenter out of his slumber sterte 3816
And herd on crye watir as he were wood
He þought allas for now comeþ Noes flood
he sit him vp wiþoute wordes mo
And wiþ his ax he smot þe corde a-two 3820
And doun he goþ he fond nowthir to selle /
No bred ne ale til he com to þe selle/
Vpon þe floor and þer aswoun he lay
vp styrt hir alisoun and Nicholay 3824
And cryden out and harrow in þe strete /
The neyghebours bope smal and grete /
In ronnen for to gauren on þis man
That a swowne lay bope pale and wan 3828
For with þe fal he brosten had his arm
But stond he muste to his owne harm
For whan he spak he was anon born doun
with heende Nicholas and alisoun 3832

They tolden euery man þat he was wood
 he was a gast and feerd of Noes flood
 Thurgh fantasie þat of his vanite /
 he hadde I-bought him knedyng tubbes þre / 3836
 And hadde hem hanged in þe roof aboue /
 And þat he preyed hem for goddes loue /
 To sitten in þe roof þar compaignye
 The folk gan lawhen at his fantasye / 3840
 In to þe roof þey kyken and þey gape
 And torne al his harm in to a Iape
 For what so euer þe carpenter answerde
 Hit was for nought no man his resoun herde [1751, 52] 3844
 wiþ opis greet he was so sworn a doun
 That he was holden wood in al þe toun
 For euery clerk anon right heeld wiþ opir
 They seyde þe man was wood my leue broþer 3848
 And euery man gan lawhen at his stryf
 Thus swyued was þe Carpenteres wyf
 For al his kepyng and his gelousye
 And absolon hap kist hir nepir ye 3852
 And Nicholas is skaldid in his towte
 This tale is doon and god saue al þe route
 Here endeth þe Millers tale

[No break in the MS.]



GROUP A. § 5. MILLER-REEVE LINK. **Harleian 7334** 111

¶ And bygygneþ þe prologe of þe Reeue

Whan folk' hadde lawhen of þis nyce caas
Of Absolon and heende Nicholas 3856
Dyuerse folk' dyuersely þey seyde

But' for þe moste part' þey lowh and pleyde /
Ne at þis tale I sawh no man him greue
But it' were oonly Osewald þe Reeue 3860
By cause he was of' Carpentrye craft'
A litel Ire is in his herte is laft'

He gan to grucche and blamed it a lite
So theek' quod he ful wel coude I þe quyte 3864
with bleryng' of a prowð mylleres ye
If þat' me luste speke of Ribaudye

But' yk' am old me list' not' play for age
Gras tyme is doon my foddir is now forage 3868

My whyte top writeþ myn olde ȝeeres /
Myn hert is al so moulyd a' myn heeres /
And ȝit I fare as doþ an open-ers
That' ilke fruyt' is euer lenger þe wers 3872

Til it be rote in mullok' or in stree
we olde men I drede so fare we /
Til we be roten can we nat be rype
we hoppen alway whil þe world wol pype 3876

For in oure wil þer stikeþ euer a nayl
To haue an hoor heed and a greene tayl
As hath a leek' for þough oure might' be doon
Oure wil desireþ folye euer in oon 3880

For whan we may nat' do þan wol we speke / [leaf 68]
ȝet' in oure aisschen old is fyr I-reke /

Foure gledys haue we which I schal deuynse
Auantyng' / lyng' / angur coueytise 3884

This foure sparkys longen vnto eelde /
Oure olde lymes mowen be vnweelde /

But wil ne schal nat fayle vs þat is soþ
 And 3et I haue alwey a coltes toþ 3888
 As many a 3eer as it is passed henne
 Syn þat my tappe of lyf bygan to renne /
 For sikirlik whan I was born anon
 Deth drough þe tappe of lyf and leet it goon 3892
 And now so longe / hap þe tappe I-ronne
 Til þat almost al empty is þe tonne
 The stream of lyf now droppeth on þe chymbe
 The sely tonge may wel ryng and chimbe¹ 3896
 Of wrecchednes þat passed is ful 3oore [¹ ? first chymbe]
 with olde folk / sauf dotage is no more
Whan þat oure host had herd oure sermonyng
 he gan to speke as lordly as a kyng 3900
 And seyde what amounteþ al þis wit
 what schul we speke alday of holy wryt
 The deuyl made a Reue for to preche
 Or of a sowter schipman or a leche / 3904
 Sey forþ þi tale and tarye nat þe tyme
 Lo heer is Depford / and it is passed prime
 Lo Grenewich þer many a schrewe is Inne
 It were al tyme þi tale to bygynne 3908
Now sires quod þis Osewold þe Reue
 I pray 3ow alle // þat noon of 3ou him greeue
 Though I answeere and somewhat sette his howue
 For leeful is wiþ force force to showue 3912



And here bygynneþ his tale

A T Trompyngtoun nat' fer fro Cantebrigge
Ther goth a brook' and ouer þat a brigge
Vpon þe whiche brook' þer stant' a melle
And þis is verray soþ þat I 3ou telle / 3924
A meller was þer dwellyng many a day
As eny Pecok' he was prowde and gay
Pipen he coude and fissh and nettys beete
And turne cuppes wrastle wel and scheete 3928
Ay by his belt' he bar a long' panade
And of a swerd ful trenchaunt' was þe blade
A Ioly popper bar he in his pouche
Ther was no man for perel durst' him touche / 3932
A Scheffeld thwitel bar he in his hose
Round was his face and camois was his nose
As pyled as an ape was his skulle/
he was a market' beter at þe fulle 3936
Ther durste no wight' hand vpon him legge
That' he ne swor anon he schuld abegge /
A peef' he was for-soþ of corn and mele
And þat a sleigh and vsyng' for to stele / 3940
his name was hoote deynous Symekyn
A wyf' he hadde / come of noble kyn
The parsoun of the toun hir fader was
with hire he 3af' ful many a panne of bras 3944
For þat Symkyn schuld in his blood allye
Sche was I-fostryd in a Nonnerye
For Symkyn wolde no wyf' as he sayde
But' sche were wel I-norissched and a mayde / 3948
To sauē his estaat' and 3omanrye
And sche was proud and pert/ as is a pye
A ful fair sighte was þer on hem two /
On haly dayes before hir wolde he go 3952

with his typet ybounde aboute his heed
 And sche cam aftir in a gyte of reed
 And Symkyn hadde hosen of þe same / [leaf 53]
 Ther durste no wight clepe hir but ma dame / 3956
 was noon so hardy walkyng by þe weye
 That with hir dorste rage or elles pleye
 But if he wold be slayn of Symekyn
 wiþ panade or with knyft or boydekyn 3960
 For gelous folk ben perilous eueremo
 Algate þey wolde here wyues wende so
 And eek for sche was somdel smoterlich
 Sche was as deyne as water in a dich 3964
 As ful of hokir and of bissemare
 hir thoughte ladyes oughten hir to spare /
 what for hir kynreed and hir nortelrye
 That sche had lerned in þe Nonnerye 3968
 A douȝter hadden þey betwix hem two
 Of .xxiiⁱⁱ ȝeer wiþouten eny mo
 Sauyng a child that was of half ȝer age
 In cradil lay and was a proper page / 3972
 This wenche pikke and wel I-growen was
 wiþ Canoys nose and eyȝen gray as glas /
 And buttokkes brode and brestes round and hye
 But right fair was hir heer I wol nat lye / 3976
 The parsoun of þe toun for sche was feir
 In purpos was to maken hir his heir /
 But of his tale / and his marriage /



GROUP A. § 6. REEVE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 115

And namely þer was a gret Collegge
Men clepe it þe Soler hali of Cantebregge
Ther was here whete and eek here malt I-grounde /
And on a day it happed on a stounde / 3992
Syk lay þe mauncyple on a maledye [leaf 53, back]
Men wenden wisly þat he schulde dye
For which þis meller stal both mele & corn
A þousend part more þan byforn 3996
For þer biforn he stal but curteysly
But now he is a þeef outrageously
For which þe wardeyn chidde and made fare
But ther of sette þe meller not a tare 4000
he crakked boost and swor it was nat so
Thanne weren þere poore scoleres tuo
That dwelten in þe halle of which I seye
Testyf þey were and lusty for to pleye 4004
And oonly for here mirþe and reuelrye¹ [the 1 is later]
Vppon þe wardeyn bysily þey crye
To ȝeue hem leue but a litel stounde /
To go to melle and see here corn I-grounde 4008
And hardily þey dursten ley here nekke /
The meller schuld nat stel hem half a pekke
Of corn by sleighȝte ne by force hem reue
And atte last þe wardeyn ȝaf hem leue 4012
Iohn hight þat oon and Alayn hight þat oper
Of o toun were þey born þat highte Strothir /
Fer in þe north I can nat telle where /
This aleyn makeþ redy al his gere 4016
And on an hors þe sak he cast anoon
Forþ goþ aleyn þe clerk and also Ion
wiþ good sward and wiþ bocler by her side
Iohn knew þe way þat hem needith no gyde / 4020
And at þe mylle þe sak a-down he layth
Alayn spak first al heil Symond in faith
how fares þy faire doughter and þy wyf
aleyn welcome quod Symond by my lyf 4024

And Iohn also how now what do ȝe heere
 By god *quod* Iohn, Symond, neede has na peere
 him falles serue himself þat has na swayn
 Or elles he is a fon as clerkes sayn 4028
 Our mancyples as I hope wil be deed
 Swa werkes ay þe wanges in his heed
 And therfore I is come and eek aleyn [luc/56]
 To grynde oure corn and carie it / ham ageyn 4032
 I prey ȝou speed vs in al þat ȝe may
 It schal be doon *quod* Symkyn by my fay
 what wol ȝe do whil þat it is in hande
 By god right by þe hoper wol I stande 4036
Quod Iohn and se how þat þe corn gas Inne
 ȝet sawh I neuer by my fader kynne /
 how þat þe hoper waggis to and fra
 Aleyn answerde / Iohn and wiltow swa 4040
 Than wol I be by-neþe by my croun
 And se how þat þe mele fallys down
 In to þe trouȝh þat schal be my desport /
 For Ion in faith I may be of ȝour sort 4044
 I is as ille a meller as ere ȝe
 This mellere smyleth for here nycete
 And þought al þis is doon but for a wyle
 They wenen þat no man may hem bigile 4048
 But by my þrift ȝet schal I blere here ye
 For al here sleight and al here philosophie /



GROUP A. § 6. REEVE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 117

Behynde þe mylle vnder a leuesel
And to þe hors he goþ him faire and wel
He strepeth of þe bridel right anoon
And whan þe hors was loos he gan to goon 4064
Toward þe fen þere wilde mares renne
For wiþ wihe / þurgh pikke and eek þurgh þenne
This meller goth agayn and no word seyde
But doth his note and wiþ þe clerkes pleyde / 4068
Til þat her corn was fair and wel I-grounde [leaf 54, back]
And whan þe mele was sakked and I-bounde /
This Iohn goþ out and fynt his hors a-way
And gan to crye harrow and weylaway 4072
Oure hors is lost aleyn for goddes banes
Step on þy feet cum on man al at anes
Aleyn þour wardeyn haþ his parfray lorn
This aleyn al forgeteþ mele and corn 4076
Al was out of his mynd his housbondrye
what wikked way is he gan gan he crye
The wyf cam lepyng inward wiþ a ren
Sche seyde allas þour hors goþ to þe fen 4080
wiþ wyld mares as fast as he may go /
vnþank come on his heed þat band him so /
And he þat bettir schuld han knyht þe Reyne
Allas quod Iohan aleyn / for cristes peyne 4084
Leg down þi swerd and I sal myn alswa /
I is ful wight god wat as is a Ra
By goddes hart / he sal nat scape vs bathe
why nad þou put þe capil in þe lathe 4088
Ilhail aleyn by god þou is a fon
This sely clerkes speeden hem anoon
Toward þe fen boþe aleyn and eek Ion
And whan þe myller sawh þat þey were gon 4092
he half a busshel of þe flour haþ take
And bad his wyf go knede it in a cake
he seyde I trowe þe clerkes ben a ferd
þet can a Miller make a clerkes berd 4096

For al his art/ 3e lat' hem go here way
 lo wher þey goon // 3e lat' þe children play
 They get' hym nat' so lightly by my crown
 This seely clerkes ronnen vp and down 4100
 wiþ keep / keep. stand stand Iossa ware derere
 Ga wightly þou and I sal keep him heere /
 But' shortly til þat' it was verray night' /
 They cowde nat' þough þey did al here might' 4104
 here capil cacche it ran away so fast' /
 Til in a dicke þey caught' / him atte last/
 wery and wete as bestys in þe Reyn [eu' 55]
 Comth sely Iohn and wiþ him comþ aleyn 4108
 Allas quod Iohn þat' day þat' I was born
 Now are we dryue til heping' and to scorn
 Oure corn is stole men woln vs folcs calle /
 Bathe þe wardeyn and eek' our felaws alle / 4112
 And namely þe myller weyloway
 Thus pleyneth Iohn as he goþ by þe way
 Toward þe mylle and bayard in his hand
 The myller sittyng' by þe fyr he fand 4116
 For it' was night' and forþer might' þey nought'
 But' for þe loue of god þey him bisought'
 As herberwh and of ese as for her peny
 þe myller sayd agayn if þer be eny 4120
 Swich as it' is 3it' schul 3e haue 3our part
 Myn hous is streyt. / but' 3e han lerned art/
 3e conne by argumentes make a place



GROUP A. § 6. REEVE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 119

And we wol paye trewly at þe fulle
wiþ empty hand men may na hawkes tulle
Lo heer our siluer redy for to spende
This meller in to toun his doughter sende 4136
For ale and breed and rosted hem a goos
And band her hors he schold no more go loos
And in his owne chambir hem made a bed
with schetys and with chalouns fair I-spred 4140
Nat' from his owen bed ten foot' or twelue /
his doughter had a bed al by hir selue
Right in þe same chambre by and by
Hit mighte be no bet' and cause why / 4144
Ther was no rommer herberw in þe place [leaf 55, back]
They sowpen and þey speke hem to solace
And dronken euer strong' ale atte beste
Aboute mydnyght' wente þey to reste 4148
wel haþ þe myller vernysshed his heed
Ful pale he was for dronken and nat reed
he ȝoxeth and he spekeþ þurgh þe nose /
As he were on þe quakke or on þe pose / 4152
To bed he goþ and wiþ him goþ his wyf
As eny Iay sche light' was and iolyf
So was his ioly whistel wel y-wet
The cradil at hire beddes feet' is set 4156
To rokken and to ȝine þe child to souke /
And whan þat' dronken was al in þe crouke
To bedde went the douȝter right' anon
To bedde goþ aleyn and also Ion 4160
Ther nas no more him needed no dwale
This meller haþ so wyaly bibbed ale /
That' as an hors he snortiþ in his sleep
Ne of his tayl bihynd took / he no keep. 4164
his wyf burdoun a ful strong'
Men might' her rowtyng' heeren a forlong'
The wenche routeþ eek' par companye
Aleyn þe clerk' þat herd þis melodye 4168

He pokyd Iohn / and seyde slepistow
 Herdistow euer slik' a sang' er now
 Lo slik' a couplyng' is betwix hem alle
 A wilde fyr vpon þair bodyes falle 4172
 wha herkned euer swilk' a ferly þing' /
 3e þei sul haue þe flour of ille endyng'
 This lange night' þer tydes me na rest'
 But' zet' na fors al sal be for þe best' 4176
 For Iohn sayd he as euer mot' I þryue
 If' þat I may 3one wenche sal I swyue
 Som esement hap' lawe schapen vs
 For Iohn þer is a lawe þat says þus 4180
 That if' a man in a poynt be agreued
 That in anoþer he sal be releued
 Oure corn is stoln soþly it' is na nay
 And we haue had an ylle fitt' to day 4184
 And syn I sal haue nan amendement
 Agayn my los I wol haue esement /
 By godde sale it' sal nan oþer be /
 This Iohn answerd / aleyn auyse þe 4188
 The Miller is a parlous man he sayde
 And if' þat he out of his sleep abrayde
 he mighte do vs boþe a vilonye
 Aleyn answerd I count it' nat' a flye 4192
 And vp he roos and by þe wenche crepte
 This wenche lay vpright' and faste slepte
 Til he so neih was or sche might aspye

¶ Qui in vno generatur
 in alio debet releuari

[leaf 56]



GROUP A. § 6. REEVE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 121

he aunted him and has his needes sped
And I lye as a draf sakt in my bed
And when þis lape is tald anoper day
I sal be held a daf a cokenay 4208
vnhardy is vnsely as men saith
I wol arise and aunte it in good faip
And vp he ros and softely he wente /
vnto þe cradil and in his hand it hente 4212
And bar it softe vnto his beddis feet
Soone after þis þe wyf hir routyng leet /
And gan awake and went hir for to pisse
And cam agayn and gan hir cradel mysse 4216
And groped heer and þer but sche fond noon
Allas quod sche / I had almost mys goon
I had almost goon to þe clerkes bed
Ey bendicite þan had I foule laped 4220
And forþ sche goþ til sche þe cradil fand [leaf 56, back]
Sche gropith alway forther with hir hand
And fand þe bed and þoughte nat but good
By cause þat þe cradil by hit stood 4224
Nat knowyng wher sche was for it was derk
But fair and wel sche creep in to þe clerk
And lith ful stille and wolde han caught a sleep
wipinne a while Iohn þe clerk vp leep 4228
And on this goode wyf leyp on ful sore
So mery a fytt/ ne hadd sche nat ful zore
he prikep harde and deepe as he were mad
This Ioly lyf han þis twey clerkes had 4232
Til þat þe þridde cok bygan to synge
Aleyn wax wery in þe dawenyng
For he had swonken al þe longe night/
And seyð far wel malyn my sweete wight 4236
The day is come I may no lenger byde /
But euermo wher so I go or ryde
I am þin owen clerk so haue I seel
Now deere lemman quod sche go far wol 4240

But or þou go o thing I wol þe telle
 whan þat þou wendist homward by þe melle
 Right at þe entre of þe dore byhynde
 Thou schalt a cake of half a busschel fynde 4244
 That was I-maked of þyn owen mele
 Which þat I hilp myn owen self to stele
 And goode lemman god þe saue and kepe
 And wiþ þat word almost sche gan to weepe 4248
A leyn vprist and þought er þat it dawe
 I wol go crepen in by my felawe
 And fand þe cradil wiþ his hand anon
 By god þought he al wrong I haue I-goon 4252
 My heed is toty of my swynk to nyght
 That / makes me þat I ga nouȝt aright
 I wot wel by þe cradel I haue mys go
 heer lith þe myller and his wyf also 4256
 Forþ he goþ in twenty deuelway
 vnto þe bed þer as þe Miller lay
 he wende haue crope by his felaw Ion [Ion/ 57]
 And by þe myller in he creep anon 4260
 And caught him by þe nekke and soft he spak
 And seyde Ion þou swyneshed awak
 For cristes sowle and here a noble game
 For by þat lord þat cleped is seynt Iame 4264
 As I haue pries in þis schorte nyght
 Swyued þe myllers douȝter bolt vpright
 whiles þou hast as a coward ben acast



GROUP A. § 6. REEVE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 123

And in þe floor wiþ nose and moup to-broke
They walweden as pigges in a poke
And vpon þay goon and down þey goon anon
Til þat þe Millner stumbled at a ston 4280
And doun he felle / bakward on his wyf
That wyste noþing of þis nyce stryf
For sche was falle a sleepe a litel wight
wiþ Ion þe Clerk þat waked al þe night 4284
And wiþ þe falle right out of slepe sche brayde
help holy croys of Bromholme sche sayde
In manus tuas lord to þe I calle /
Awake Symond þe feend is in þin halle 4288
My hert is broken help I am but deed
Ther lythe vpon my wombe and on myn heed
Help Symkyn for þis false clerkes fight
This Iohn stert vp as fast as euer he might 4292
And grasped by þe walles to and fro
To fynde a staf & sche sturt vp also
And knewe þe estres bet þan dede Ion
And by þe wal sche took a staf anon 4296
And sawh a litel glymeryng of light [leaf 57, back]
For at an hool in schon þe moone light
And by þat light she saugh hem boþe two
But sikirly sche wiste nat who was who 4300
But sche saugh a whit þing in hir ye
And whan sche gan þis white þing aspye
Sche wend þe clerk had wered a volupeer
And wiþ a staf sche drough hir neer and neer 4304
And wend haue hit þis Aleyn atte fulle
And smot þis meller on þe piled sculle
And doun he goþ and cryeþ harrow I dye
This clerkes beeten him wel and leet him lye 4308
And greyth hem wel and take her hors anon
And eek / here mele and hoom anon þey goon
And at the Millen dore þey tok here cake
Of half a buisschel flour ful wel I-bake 4312

Thus is þe prowde' Miller wel I-bete
 And hap I-lost' þe gryndyng' of þe whete /
 And payed for þe soper euerydel
 Of aleyn and of Iohn þat beten him wel 4316
 His wyf is swyued and his doughter als
 Lo such it is a Miller to be fals
 And þerto þis prouerbe is seyð ful soþ
 he þar nat weene wel þat euyl doþ 4320
 A gylour schal him self bygiled be
 And god þat sittest in þy mageste
 Saue al þis compaignie gret and smale / 4323
 Thus haue I quit' þe Miller in his tale / ¶ her' endeþ þe
 Reeues tale

[*Break of one line in the MS.*]



GROUP A. § 7. REEVE-COOK LINK. Harleian 7334. 125

The Cook' of londoun whil þe Reeue spak'
For Ioye he þought' / he clawed him on þe bak'
ha ha quod he / for cristes passioun
This meller hap a scharp conclusioun / 4328
vpon his argument of herburgage
wel seyde Salomon in his langage /
Ne bryng' nat' euery man in to þyn hous
For herburgage by night' is perilous 4332
wel aught' a man avised for to be
whom þat' he brought' in to his pryuyte [leaf 58]
I pray to god so gyf my body care /
3if euer sippe I highte hogge of ware 4336
herd I better myller set' a werke /
he hadde a Iape of malice in þe derke /
And þerfore if' 3e fouche sauf' to heere
But' god forbede þat' we stynten heere / 4340
A tale of' me þat' am a pouer man
I wol 3ow telle as wel as I kan
A litel Iape þat' fel in oure cite
Oure host' seyde I graunt it the 4344
Now telle on Roger & loke it be good
For many a pastey hastow lete blood
And many a Iakk' of' douer hastow sold
That' hap be twyes hoot' and twyes cold 4348
Of' many a pilgrym hastow cristes curs
For þy persly þey faren 3et' þe wors
That' they haue eten wiþ þe stubbil goos
For in þy schoppe is many a flye loos 4352
Now goode / gentil Roger by þy name /
But' 3it' I pray þe be nought' wroþ for game
[. No gap in the MS.]
Thow saist' ful soþ quod Róger by my faith 4356

But soth play quad play as þe flemyng^t saith

[. *No gap in the MS.*]

Be thou nat^t wroþ or we departe her

Though þat my tale be of an hostyler 4360

But napeles I wol not^t telle it ȝit/

But or we departe it schal be quyrt/

And þer wip al he lowh / and made chere

And seyde his tale as ȝe schal after heere 4364

[*No break in the MS.*]



GROUP A. § 8. COOK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 127

A Prentys dwelled whilom in oure Citee,
Of a craft of vitailers was he
Gaylard he was as goldfynch in þe schawe /
Broun as a bery and a propre felawe 4368
wiþ lokkes blak and kempt ful fetously
Dauncen he cowde wel and prately
That he was cleped Perkyn reuellour
he was ful of loue and paramour 4372
As is þe hony combe of hony swete
wel were þe wenche þat mighte him meete [leaf 58, back]
[.
. *No gap in the MS.*] 4376
FOr whan þer eny rydyng was in cheepe /
Out of þe schoppe þider wolde he lepe /
Tyl he hadde al þat sight I-seyn
And daunced wel he nold nat come ageyn 4380
And gadred him a meyne of his sort
To hoppe and synge and make such disport
And þer þey setten steuene for to meete
To pleyen atte dys in such a strete 4384
For in þe toun ne was þer no prentys
That fairer cowde caste a peyre dys
Than Perkyn coupe and þerto he was free /
Of his dispence in place of pryuyte 4388
That fand his mayster wel in his chaffare
For often tyme he fond his box ful bare
For such a ioly prentys reuelour
That haunteþ dys Reuel or paramour 4392
his maister schal it in his schoppe abyte
Al haue he no part of þe mynstraleye
For þeste and ryot be conuertyble
Al can þey play on giterne and rubible 4396

Reuel and troupe as in a lowe degre
 They ben ful wroþ al day as 3e may see
 This Ioly Prentys with his mayster bood
 Til he was oute ney3 of his prentys hood 4400
 Al were he snybbyd boþe erly and late
 And som tyme lad with reuel in to Newgate
 But atte laste his mayster him bythought
 vpon a day whan he his papyr sought 4404
 Of a prouerbe þat siþ þis same word
 wel bette is roten appul out of hord
 Than it rote al þe remenaunt/
 So fareth it by a ryotous seruaunt 4408
 hit is ful lasse harm to late him pa:
 Than he schend al þe seruauntes in þe place
 Therfore his mayster 3af him acqueyntaunce
 And bad him go wiþ sorwe and wiþ meschaunce 4412
 And þus þe ioly prentys had his leue //
 Now let hym ryot al þe night or leue.

[Lines 4413, 4414 form the last line of the page in the MS.]



APPENDIX TO GROUP A.

[THE SPURIOUS TALE OF GAMELYN.]

Litheth and lestneþ and herkneþ aright [leaf 59] 1
And þe schul heere a talkyng' of a doughty knight
Sire Iohn' of Boundys was his right' name
he cowde of/ norture ynough & mochil of game 4
Thre sones þe knight' þat' with his body he wan
The eldest' was a moche schrewe / and sone he bygan
his breþeren loued wel here fader / and of him were agast /
The eldest' deserued his fadres curs / and had it at þe last' / 8
The goode kniȝt' his fader lyuede so ȝore
That' deth was comen him to and handled him ful sore
The goode knight' cared sore . sik' þer he lay
how his children scholde lyuen after his day 12
he hadde ben wyde wher . but' non housbond he was
Al þe lond þat' he had / it' was verrey purchas
Fayn he wold it' were dressed / amonges hem alle
That' ech of hem had his part' / as it' might' falle / 16
Tho sent' he in to cuntre after wise knightes
To helpe delen his londes / and dressen hem to rightes
he sent' hem word by *lettres* / þey schulden hye blyue
yf þey wolde speke with him whil he was on lyue / 20

¶ Tho þe knyghtes herden / sik þer he lay
 hadde þey no reste noþer night ne day
 Til þey comen to him þer he lay stille /
 On his deþ bedde . to abyde goddes wille 24
 þan seyde þe goode knight sykt þer he lay
 lordes I 3ou warne for soþ wiþoute nay
 I may no lengere lyuen heer in þis stounde
 For þurgh goddes wille deþ draweth me to grounde 28
 Ther nas non of hem alle . þat herd him aright
 þat þey hadden reuþe of þat ilke knight
 And seyde sir for goddes loue ne dismay 3ou nought
 God may do bote of bale þat is now I-wrought 32
 ¶ Than spak þe goode knight sik þer he lay
 Boote of bale god may sende I wot it is no nay
 But I byseke 3ou kniȝtes for þe loue of me
 God and dresseþ my lond among my sones þre 36
 And sires for þe loue of god deleþ hem nat amys
 And forgetiþ nat Gamelyn my 3onge sone þat is
 Takeþ heed to þat on as wel as to þat oþer [leaf 50, back]
 Selde 3e see ony Eyr helpen his broþer 40
 ¶ þo leete þey þe knight lyen þat was nought in hele /
 And wenten in to counseil his londres for to dele /
 For to delen hem alle /. to oon þat was her þought
 And for Gamelyn was 3ongest / he schuld haue nouȝt 44
 Al þe lond þat þer was þey dalten it in two
 And leeten Gamelyn þe 3onge wiþoute lond go
 And ech of hem seyde to oþer ful lowde



APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Harleian 7334. 131

Iohan myn eldeste sone / schal haue plowes fyue
That was my fadres heritage whil he was on lyue
And my myddeleste sone / fyf plowes of lond
That I halp for to gete wip my right hond 60
And al myn other purchas / of londes and leedes
pat I byquepe gamelyn / and alle my goode steedes
And I byseke 3ow goode men pat lawe conne of londe
For Gamelynes loue pat my queste stonde 64
Thus dalte pe knight his lond by his day
Right on his dep bed / sik per he lay
And sone aftirward he lay stoon stille /
And deyde whan tyme com / as it was cristes wille 68
And anon as he was deed and vnder gras I-graue /
Sone pe elder broper gyled pe zonge knaue
He took in to his hond / his lond as his leede
And Gamelyn himselfe / to clothen and to feede 72
He clothed him and fed him yuel and eek wrope
And leet his londes forfare and his houses bope
his parkes and his woodes / and dede noping wel
And seppen he it abought on his faire fel 76
So longe was Gamelyn in his broperes halle [leaf 60]
For pe strengest of good wil pey doutiden him alle /
per was non per Inne nowper zong ne olde
That wolde wrappe Gamelyn were he neuer so bolde / 80
Gamelyn stood on a day in his broperes 3erde
And bygan wip his hond to handlen his berde
he pought on his londes pat layen vnsawe
And his faire Okes pat down were I-drawe 84
his parkes were I-broken / and his deer byreued
Of alle his goode steedes noon was him byleued
his howses were vnhiiled / and ful yuel dight
Tho poughte Gamelyn it wente nought aright 88
Afterward cam his broper walkynge pare
And seyde to Gamelyn is our mete 3are /
Tho wrapped him gamelyn and swor by goddes book
Thou schalt go bake pi self / I wil nouzt be py cook 92

how broþer Gamelyn / how answerest þou now /
 þou spake neuer such a word as þou dost now /
 By my faith seyde Gamelyn now me þinkeþ neede /
 Of alle þe harmes þat I haue I tok neuer ar heede 96
 My parkes ben tobroken and my deer byreued
 Of myn armure and my steedes nought is me bileued
 Al þat my fader me byquaþ al goþ to schame /
 And þerfor haue þou goddes curs broþer by þy name 100
 Than byspak his broþer þat rape was of rees /
 Stond stille gadelyng / and hold right þy pees /
 Thou schalt be fayn for to haue þy mete and þy wede /
 what spekest þou Gamelyn of lond oþer of leede 104
 Thanne seyde Gamelyn þe child þat was ying
 Cristes curs mot he haue þat clepeþ me gadelyng
 I am no worse gadelyng ne no worse wight
 But born of a lady and geten of a knight 108
 Ne durst he nat to Gamelyn ner a foote go
 But clepide to him his men and seyde to hem þo
 Goþ and betep þis boy and reueþ him his wyt /
 And lat him leren an oþer tyme to answeere me bet 112
 Thanne seyde þe child 3onge Gamelyn
 Cristes curs mot þou haue broþer art þou myn
 And if I schal algate be beten anon [leaf 60, back]
 Cristes curs mot þou haue but þou be þat oon 116
 And anon his broþer in þag grete hete
 Made his men to sette staues Gamelyn to bete
 whan þat euerych of hem / a staf had Inome



APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Harleian 7334. 133

Some for Gamelynes loue / and some for his eyze /
Alle þey drowe by halues // þo he gan to pleyze /
what how now seyde Gamelyn euel mot' ȝe thee
wil ȝe bygynne kontek' and so sone flee / 132
Gamelyn sought' his broþer / whider he was flowe
And saugh wher he loked out' / at a wyndowe /
Broþer sayde Gamelyn com a litel ner
And I wil teche þe a play atte bokeler 136
his broþer him answerde and swor by seynt Rycher
whil þe pestel is in þin hond I wil come no neer
Broþer I wil make þy pees / I swere by cristes ore
Cast' away þe pestel and wrappe þe nomore / 140
I mot' neede sayde Gamelyn wrappe me at oones
For thou wolde make þy men to breke myne boones
Ne had I hadde mayn and might' in myn armes
To haue I-put' hem fro me he wolde haue do me harmes 144
Gamelyn sayde his broþer be þou nought' wroþ
For to seen þe haue harm it were me right' loþ
I ne dide it nouȝt' broþer but' for a fondyng'
For to loken or þou were strong' and art' so ying' 148
Com a doun þan to me and graunte me my bone
Of þing' I wil þe aske / and we schul saughte sone
Doun þan cam his broþer þat' fykil was and felle
And was swiþe sore agast' of þe pestelle 152
he seyde broþer Gamelyn aske me þy boone [leaf 61]
And loke þou me blame but' I graunte sone
Thanne seyde Gamelyn broþer I-wys
And we schulle ben at oon þou most' me graunte þis 156
Al þat' my fader me byquath whil he was on lyue /
þou most' do me it haue ȝif' we schul nat' stryue /
That' schalt' þou haue Gamelyn I swere by cristes ore
Al þat' þi fader the byquath þough þou woldest' haue more 160
Thy lond þat' lyp' laye ful wel it schal be sowe
And þyn howses reysed vp þat' ben leyd so lowe
Thus seyde þ' knight' to Gamelyn wiþ mowthe /
And þought' eek' of falsnes / as he wel couþe / 164

The king bought on tresoun / and Gamelyn on noon
 And went and kist his broþer / and whan þey were at oon
 Allas þonge Gamelyn noþing he ne wiste /
 wiþ which a false tresoun his broþer him kiste / 163

L Ipeth and lestneþ and holdeþ þour tonge
 And ȝe schul heere talkyng of Gamelyn þe yonge
 Ther was þer bysiden cryed a wrastlyng
 And þerfor þer was sette vp a Ram and a Ryng 172
 And Gamelyu was in good wil / to wende þerto /
 For to preuen his might what he cowþe do
 Broþer seyde Gamelyn by seynt Richer
 Thou most lene me to nyȝt // a litel Courser 176

That is freisch to the spore on for to ryde
 I most on an Erande a litel her byside
 By god seyð his brother of steedes in my stalle
 Go and chese þe þe best and spare non of alle 180
 Of steedes or of course þat stonden hem bisyde
 And tel me goode broþer whider þou wolt ryde

¶ her byside broþer is cryed a wrastlyng
 And þerfor schal be set vp a Ram and a Ryng 184
 Moche worschip it were broþer to vs alle

Might I þe Ram and þe Ryng bryng home to þis halle
 A steede þer was sadeled smertely and skeet
 Gamelyn did a paire spores fast on his feet 188

he set his foot in styrop / þe steede he bystrood
 And toward þe wrastelyng þe þonge child rood

The Gamelyn þe yonge was ride out at þe gate. (Harleian 7334)

Allas seyde þis Frankeleyn þat euer was I bore
 For tweye stalworþe soncs / I wene þat I haue lore
 A Champioun is in þe place / þat hap I-wrought me sorwe
 For he hap slayn my two soncs / but if god hem borwe / 204
 I wold ȝeue ten pound by ihū crist and more
 wiþ þe nones I fand a man to handil him sore
 Goode man seyde Gamelyn wilt þou wel doon
 hold myn hors whil my man draweþ of my schoon · 208
 And help my man to kepe my cloþes and my steede /
 And I wil in to place go / to loke if I may speede /
 By god sayde þe Frankeleyn anon it schal be doon
 I wil my self be þy man / and drawen of þy schoon 212
 And wende þou in to þe place / ihū crist þe speede /
 And drede not of þy cloþes nor of þy goode steede /
BArfoot and vngert. Gamelyn in cam
 Alle þat weren in þe place heede of him þey nam 216
 how he durst aunte him of him to doon his might
 That was so doughty champioun in wrastlyng and in fight
 vp sterte þe Champioun raply and anon
 Toward ȝonge Gamelyn / he bigan to goon 220
 And sayde who is þy fader and who is þy sire
 For soþe þou art a gret fool þat þou come hire
 Gamelyn answerde þe champioun tho
 þou knewe wel my fader / whil he couþe go 224
 whiles he was on lyue / by seint martyn
 Sir Iohn of Boundys was his name and I gamelyn
 Felaw seyde þe champioun al so mot I pryue
 I knew wel þy fader whil he was on lyue 228
 And þiself Gamelyn I wil þat þou it heere [leaf 62]
 whil þou were a ȝongt boy a moche schrewe þou were
 þan seyde Gamelyn and swor by cristes ore
 Now I am older woxe þou schalt me fynd a more 232
 By god sayde þe Champioun welcome mote þou be
 Come þou ones in myn hond schalt þou neuer þe
 It was wel wipinne þe night and þe moone schon
 whan Gamelyn and þe Champioun to-gider gon to goon 236

The champion came thence to Chamelun þat was greet
 And Chamelun smot stille and hit him down his heed
 Thanne seyde Chamelun to þe Champion
 Thou art fast bounde to trynne me a joun. 240
 Now I haue begreued many armes of þyne
 Thou most be seyle prouen in or out of myne
 Chamelun to þe Champion seide smertly anon
 Of alle þe armes þat he coude he schewed him but oon. 244
 And kast him on þe left syde þat þe knyght wrook
 And þerso his own arm þat þat a gret crok
 Thanne seyde Chamelun smertly anon
 Schal it be holde for a cast or elles for noon. 248
 By god seyde þe Champion wher þat it bee
 he þat comes ones in þin hand schal he neuer þee
 Than seyde þe Frankelun þat had his sones þere
 Blessed be þou gamelyn þat ever þou bore were. 252
 The Frankelun seyde to þe Champion of him stood him noon
 This is yonge Gamelyn þat taughte þe þis pleye [eye
 Aȝein answerd the Champion þat liked no þing well
 he is a liȝer mayster and his pley is riȝt fell. 256
 Siȝ I wraстled first / it is I-go ful ȝore
 But I was neuere my lyf handled so sore
 Gamelyn stood in þe place allone wiȝoute serk
 And seyde if þer be eny mo lat hem come to werk. 260
 The Champion þat peyned him to werke so sore
 It semep by his continuaunce þat he wil nomore
 Gamelyn in þe place / stood as stille as stoon *



APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Harleian 7334. 137

Tho seyde þe Champion so brouk' I my sweere
he is a fool þat þer of beyep / þou sellest' it so deere
Tho sayde þe Frankeleyn þat' was in moche care
Felaw he seyde / why lakkest' þou his ware / 276
By seynt' lame in Galys þat' many man hap' sought'
3et' it is to good cheep þat' þou hast' I-bought'
Tho þat' wardeynes were of þat' wrastlyng'
Come and broughte Gamelyn þe Ram and þe Ryng' 280
And seyden haue Gamelyn þe Ryng' and þe Ram
For þe best' wrasteler þat' euer here cam .
Thus wan Gamelyn þe Ram and þe Ryng'
And wente wiþ moche ioie home in þe mornyng' 284
His broþer seih wher he cam with þe grete rowte /
And bad schitte þe gate and holde him wiþoute
The porter of his lord was ful sore agast'
And stert' anon to þe gate and lokked it fast 288
NOW litheþ and lestneþ boþe 3ong' and olde
And 3e schul heere gamen of Gamelyn þe bolde
Gamelyn com þerto for to haue comen In .
And þanne was it I-schet' faste wiþ a pyn 292
Than seyde Gamelyn porter vndo þe yate
For many good mannes sone stondeþ þer-ate
Than answerd þe porter and swor by goddes berd
Thow ne schalt' Gamelyn come in to þis 3erde 296
Thow lixt' sayde Gamelyn so browke I my chyn
he smot' þe wyket' wiþ his foot' and brak' away þe pyn
The porter seyh þo it might' no better be
He sette foot' on erþe he bigan to flee 300
By my faip seyde Gamelyn þat' trauail is I-lore
For I am of foot' as light as þou þough þou haddest swore
Gamelyn ouertook' þe porter and his teene wrak'
And gert' him in þe nekke þat' þe bon tobrak' 304
And took' him by þat' oon arm and þrew him in a welle (w. as)
Seuen fadmen it was deep . as I haue herd telle /
whan Gamelyn þe yonge þus hadde pleyd his play
Alle þat' in þe 3erde were drewen hem a way 308

þey dredden him ful sore for werkes þat he wrouȝte
 And for þe faire company þat he þider broughte
 Gamelyn ȝede to þe gate / and leet it vp wyde
 he leet in alle maner men þat gon in wold or ryde 312
 And seyde ȝe be welcome wiþouten eny greeue /
 For we wiln be maistres heer / and aske no man leue /
 ȝestirday I lefte / seyde ȝonge Gamelyn ·
 In my broþer Seller .v. tonne of wyn 316
 I wil not þat þis compaignye parten a-twynne /
 And ȝe wil doon after me while eny sope is þrynne
 And if my broþer grucche or make foul cheere 319
 Oper for spense of mete or drynk þat we spenden heere /
 I am oure catour / and bere oure aller pure /
 he schal haue for his grucchyng seint maries curs
 My broþer is a nyggoun / I swer by cristes ore
 And we wil spende largely þat he haþ spared ȝore / 324
 And who þat makeþ grucchyng / þat we here dwelle
 he schal to þe porter in to þe draw-welle
 vij. dayes and .vij. nyght Gamelyn held his feste
 with moche myrþ and solas / þat was þer and no cheste / 328
 In a litel toret his brother lay I-steke
 And sey hem wasten his good but durst he not speke
 Erly on a morn yng on þe viij^e day
 The gestes come to Gamelyn and wolde gon here way 332
 Lordes seyde Gamelyn / wil ȝe so hye
 Al þe wyn is not ȝet y-dronke so brouk I myn ye
 Gamelyn in his herte was he ful wroȝte

Al þe whil þat Gamelyn heeld his mangerye
 his broþer þoughit on him be wreke / wiþ his treeccherie
 Tho Gamelyns gestes were riden and I-goon
 Gamelyn stood allone frendes had he noon 348
 Tho after ful soone wiþinne a litel stounde
 Gamelyn was I-take and ful hard I-bounde
 Forþ com þe fals knight out of þe selleer
 To Gamelyn his broþer he ȝede ful neer 352
 And sayde to Gamelyn who made þe so bold
 For to stroye my stoor of myn houshold
 Broþer seyde Gamelyn wrappe þe right nouȝt
 For it is many day I-gon sippen it was bouȝt 356
 For broþer þou hast I-had by seynt richer
 Of xv. plowes of lond þis .xvj. ȝer
 And of alle þe beestes þou hast forþ bred
 That my fader me biquath on his deth bed 360
 Of al þis xvj. ȝer I ȝeue þe þe prow
 For þe mete and þe drynk þat we haue spended now /
 Thanne seyde þe fals knyȝt euel mot he the
 Herkne broþer Gamelyn what I wol ȝeue þe 364
 For of my body broþer geten heir haue I noon
 I wil make þe myn heir I swere by seint Iohn
 Par ma foy sayd Gamelyn and if it so be
 And þou þenke as þou seyst god ȝelde it þe 368
 No þing wiste Gamelyn of his broþeres gyle
 Therfore he him bigyled in a litel while
 Gamelyn seyde he o thing / I þe telle
 Tho þou þrewe my porter in þe draw-welle 372
 I swor in þat wrappe and in þat grete moot
 That þou schuldest be bounde boþe hand and foot
 Therfore I þe biseche brother Gamelyn
 Lat me noughit be forsworn broþer art þou myn 376
 lat me bynde þe now boþe hand and feet
 For to holde myn avow as I þe biheet
 Broþer sayde Gamelyn also mot I þe
 Thou schalt not be forsworen for þe loue of me 380

Tho made þey Gamelyn to sitte might' he nat' stonde [leaf 64]
 Til þey had him bounde boþe foot' and honde /
 The fals knight' his broþer of Gamelyn was agast'
 And sent' aftir feteres to feteren him fast' 384
 His broþer made lesynges on him þer he stood
 And told hem þat' comen In þat' Gamelyn was wood
 Gamelyn stood to a post' bounden in þe halle /
 Tho þat' comen in þer loked on him alle / 388
 Euer stood Gamelyn euen vpright'
 But' mete ne drynk' had he non neiþer day ne night
 Than seyde Gamelyn broþer by myn hals
 Now I haue aspied þou art' a party fals / 392
 had I wist' þat' tresoun þat' þou haddest' y-founde
 I wolde haue ȝeue þe strokes or I had be bounde /
 Gamelyn stood bounden stille as eny stoon'
 Two dayes and two nightes mete had he noon 396
 Thanne seyde Gamelyn þat' stood y-bounde stronge /
 Adam Spencer me þinkþ I faste to longe
 Adam Spencer now I byseche þe
 For þe mochel loue my fader loued þe/ 400
 yf þou may come to þe keyes lese me out' of bond
 And I wil parte wiþ þe of' my free lond
 Thanne seyde adam þat' was þe Spencer
 I haue serued þy broþer þis xvj. ȝeer 404
 If I leete þe goon out' of his bour
 he wolde say afterward I were a traytour
 Adam sayde Gamelyn so brouk' I myn hals
 þou schalt fynde my broþer atte laste fals 408
 Therfor broþer adam louse me out' of bond
 And I wil parte wiþ þe of' my free lond
 vp swich a forward seyde adam I-wys
 I wil do þerto al þat' in me is 412
 Adam seyde Gamelyn al so mot' I þe
 I wol hold þe couenaunt' and þou wil me
 Anon as adames lord to bedde was I-goon
 Adam took' þe keyes and leet' gamelyn out' anoon 416

He vnlokkeð Gamelyn boþe hand and feet
 In hope of auauncement þat he him byheet
 Than seyde Gamelyn þanked be goddes sonde [leaf 64, back]
 Now I am loosed boþe foot and honde / 420
 had I now eten and dronken aright
 Ther is noon in þis hous schulde bynde me þis night
 Adam took Gamelyn as stille as ony stoon
 And ladde him into spence rapely and anon 424
 And sette him to soper right in a priue stede
 he bad him do gladly and Gamelyn so dede
 Anon as gamelyn hadde eten wel & fyn
 And þerto y-dronke wel of þe rede wyn 428
 Adam seyde Gamelyn what is now þy reed
 wher I go to my broþer and girde of his heed
 Gamelyn seyde adam it schal not be so
 I can teche þe a reed þat is worþ þe two 432
 I wot wel for soþe þat þis is no nay
 we schul haue a mangery right on sonday
 Abbotes and priours many heer schal be
 And oþer men of holy chirche as I telle þe / 436
 Thow schalt stonde vp by þe post as þou were hond-fast/
 And I schal leue hem vnloke away þou may hem cast
 whan þat þey haue eten and waisschen here hondes
 Thou schalt biseke hem alle to bryng þe out of bondes 440
 And if þey wille borwe þe þat were good game
 Then were þou out of prison and I out of blame
 And if euerich of hem say vnto vs nay
 I schal do anoþer I swere by þis day 444
 Thou schalt haue a good staf and I wil haue anoþer
 And cristes curs haue þat oon þat faileþ þat oþer
 3e for gode sayde Gamelyn I say it for me
 If I fayle on my syde yuel mot I þe 448
 If we schul algate assoile hem of here synne
 warne me broþer adam whan I schal bygynne
 Gamelyn seyde adam by seynte charite
 I wil warne þe byforn whan þat it schal be 452

whan I twynk' on þe loke for to goon
 And cast' away þe feteres and com to me anon.
 Adam seide Gamelyn blessed be þy bones
 That' is a good counseil ȝeuynge for þe nones 456
 If þey werne me þanne to brynge me out' of bendes (leaf 65)
 I wol sette goode strokes right' on here lendes
 Tho þe sonday was I-come and folk' to þe feste /
 Faire þey were welcomed bope lest' and meste 460
 And euer as þey atte halle/ dore comen In.
 They caste þeir eye on ȝonge Gamelyn
 The fals knight' his broþer ful of trechery
 Alle þe gestes þat þer wer atte mangery 464
 Of Gamelyn his broþer he tolde hem with mouþe
 Al þe harm and þe schame þat he telle couþe
 Tho þey were serued Of messes tuo oper þre
 Than seyde Gamelyn how serue ȝe me 468
 It is nouȝt wel serued by god þat al made
 That' I sytte fastyng' and oper men make glade
 The fals knight' his broþer þer þat' he stood
 Tolde alle his gestes þat Gamelyn was wood 472
 And Gamelyn stood stille and answerde nought
 But adames wordes he held in his þought /
 Tho Gamelyn gan speke dolfully wiþ alle /
 To þe grete lordes þat' saten in þe halle 476
 lordes he seyde for cristes passioun
 helpeþ brynge Gamelyn out of prisoun
 Than seyde an abbott sorwe on his cheeke



APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. **Harleian 7334.** 143

Ow. seyde Gamelyn so brouk' I my bon
Now I haue aspyed þat' freendes haue I non
Cursed mot' he worþe boþe fleisch and blood
That' euer do Priour or abbot ony good 492
Adam þe Spencer took' vp þe cloþ
And loked on Gamelyn and say þat' he was wroth
Adam on þe pantrye litel he þought' / [leaf 65, back]
But' tuo goode staues to half dore he brougt 496
Adam loked on Gamelyn and he was war anoon
And cast' away þe feteres and he bigan to goon
Tho he com to adam he took' þat' oo staf
And bygan to worche and goode strokes 3af 500
Gamelyn cam into þe halle and þe spencer boþe
And loked hem aboute as þey had be wroþe
Gamelyn sprenged holywater wip an Oken spire ./
That' some þat' stoode vpriht' fel in þe fire 504
Ther was no lewede man þat' in þe halle stood
That' wolde do Gamelyn eny þing' but' good
But' stood besyde and leet' hem boþe werche
For þey hadde no rewþe of men of holy cherche 508
Abbot' or priour monk' or Chanoun
That' Gamelyn ouertok' anon þey 3eeden down
Ther was non of hem alle þat' wip his staf mette
That' he made him ouerþrowe and quyt' him his dette 512
Gamelyn seyde adam for seynte charite
Pay large lyuerey for þe loue of me
And I wil kepe þe dore so euer here I masse /
Er þey ben assoyled þere schan noon passe 516
Dowt' þe nought' seyde Gamelyn whil we ben in feere
kep pou wel þe dore / and I wol werche heere
Stere þe good adam and lat þer noon flee
And we schul telle largely how many þer be 520
Gamelyn seyde adam do hem but' good
þey ben men of holy chirche / draw of hem no blood
Saue wel þe croune and do hem non harmes
But' brek' boþe her legges and sippen here armes 524

whan I twynk' on þe loke for to goo
 And cast' away þe feteres and com to
 Adam seide Gamelyn blessed be þy bo
 That' is a good counseil ȝeuynge for þe
 If þey werne me þanne to brynge me
 I wol sette goode strokes right' on here
 Tho þe sonday was I-come and folk' to
 Faire þey were welcomed bope lest' and
 And euer as þey atte halle/ dore comen
 They caste þeir eye on ȝonge Gamelyn
 The fals knight' his broþer ful of trechery
 Alle þe gestes þat' þer wer atte mangery
 Of Gamelyn his broþer he tolde hem with
 Al þe harm and þe schame þat he telle cou
 Tho þey were serued Of messes tuo oþer þe
 Than seyde Gamelyn how serue ȝe me
 It' is nouȝt wel serued by god þat al made
 That' I sytte fastyng' and oþer men make
 The fals knight' his broþer þer þat' he stood
 Tolde alle his gestes þat Gamelyn was wood
 And Gamelyn stood stille and answerde nouȝt
 But adames wordes he held in his þought /
 Tho Gamelyn gan speke dolfully wiþ alle /
 To þe grete lordes þat' saten in þe halle
 lordes he seyde for cristes passioun
 helpeþ brynge Gamelyn out' of prisoun
 Than seyde an abbot sorwe on his cheque
 he schal haue cristes curs and seynte maries
 That' þe out' of prisoun beggeþ oþer borwe
 But euer worthe hem wel þat' doþ þe moche
 After þat' abbot þan spak' anoþer
 I wold þin heed were of þough þou were me
 Alle þat' þe borwe / foule mot hem falle
 Thus þey seyde alle þat' were in þe halle
 Than seyde a priour yuel mot' he þryue
 It' is moche skape boy þat' þou art' on lyue

Thus Gamelyn and adam wroughte right fast
 And pleyden wiþ þe monkes and made hem agast
 Thider þey come rydyng' iolily wiþ swaynes
 And hom aȝen þey were I-lad in cartes and in waynes 528
 Tho þey hadden al y-don þan seyde a gray frere
 Allas sire abbot what dide we now heere
 Tho þat comen hider it was a cold reed
 vs hadde ben better at home wiþ water and breed 532
 Whil Gamelyn made ordres of monkes and frere / [leaf 68]
 Euer stood his broþer and made foul chere /
 Gamelyn vp wiþ his staf þat he wel knew
 And gert/ him in þe nekke þat he ouerþrew 536
 Alitel aboute þe girdel þe Riggebon tobarst/
 And sette him in þe feteres þer he sat arst
 Sitte þer broþer sayde Gamelyn
 For to colyn þy blood as I dide myn 540
 As swiþe as þey hadde / I-wroken hem on here foon
 They askeden watir and wisschen anoon.
 what some for here loue and some for awe /
 Alle þe seruantz serued hem of þe beste lawe / 544
 The scherreuē was þennes but a fyue myle
 And al was y-told him in a litel while
 How Gamelyn and adam had doon a sory rees
 Bounden and I-wounded men aȝein þe kinges pees 548
 Tho bigan sone strif for to wake /
 And þe scherref aboute Gamelyn for to take /

Now lythep and lestnep so god ȝif ȝou goode fyn
 And ȝe schul heere good game of ȝonge Gamelyn 552



APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. **Harleian 7334.** 145

The porter hadde byholde hem a litel while /
he loued wel Gamelyn and was adrad of gyle
And leet þe wyket stonden y-steke ful styлле
And asked hem wipoute what was here wille 564
For al þe grete company þanne spak but oon
Vndo þe gate porter and lat vs in goon
Than seyde þe porter so brouke I my chyn
3e schul sey 3our erand er 3e comen In 568
Sey to Gamelyn and adam if here wille be
we wil speke wip hem wordes two or þre
Felaw seyde þe porter stond þere stille [leaf 66, back]
And I wil wende to Gamelyn to witen his wille 572
In went þe porter to Gamelyn anoon
And seyde sir I warne 3ou her ben come 3our foon
The scherreues meyne ben atte gate /
For to take 3ou boþe schul 3e na skape / 576
Porter seyde Gamelyn so moot I wel þe /
I wil allowe þe þy wordes whan I my tyme se
Go agayn to þe 3ate and dwel wip hem a while
And þou schalt se right sone porter a gyle 580
Adam sayde Gamelyn looke þe to goon
we haue foomen atte gate and frendes neuer oon
It ben þe schirrefes men þat hider ben I-come /
They ben swore to-gidere þat we schul be nome / 584
Gamelyn seyde adam hye þe right blyue /
And if I faile þe þis day euel mot I pryue
And we schul so welcome þe scherreues men
That som of hem schul make here beddes in þe den 588
Atte posterne gate Gamelyn out went /
And a good cart staf in his hand he hente
Adam hente sone anoþer gret staf
For to helpe Gamelyn and goode strokes 3af 592
Adam felde twayne and Gamelyn felde þre
The oþer setten feet on erþe and bygonne fle
what seyde adam so euer here I masse
I haue a draught of good wyn / drynk er 3e passe / 596

- Nay by god sayde þay ' þy drynk' is not good
 It wolde make mannes brayn to lien in his hood
 Gamelyn stood stille and loked him aboute
 And seih þe scherrene come with a gret route / 600
 Adam seyde Gamelyn what be now þy reedes
 Here comþ þe scherrene and wil haue oure heeles
 Adam sayde Gamelyn my reed is now þis
 Abide we no longer lest we fare amys 604
 I rede þat we to wode goon ar þat we be founde
 Better is vs þer loos þan in town y-bounde /
 Adam took' by þe hond þonge Gamelyn
 And enerich of hem tuo drank' a draught' of wyn · 608
 And after took' her coursers and wenten her way (over)
 The lond þe scherrene nest' but non ay
 The scherrene lighte a-down and went' in to þe halle /
 And fond þe lord y-fetered faste wip alle' 612
 The scherrene vnfetered him sone and þat anon
 And sent after a leche to hele his rigge boon
I Ete we now þis fals knyght' lyen in his care
 And talke we of Gamelyn and loke how he fare 616
 Gamelyn in to þe wode stalked stille
 And adam þe Spenser liked ful ylle
 Adam swor to Gamelyn by seynt Richer
 Now I see it is mery to be a Spenser 620
 That leuer me were / kepen for to here /
 Than walken in þis wilde wode my clothes to tere /
 Adam seyde Gamelyn dismaye þe right' nought
 Many good mannes child in care is I brought 624
 And as þey stode talkyng toþen in feere /
 Adam herd talkyng' of men and neȝh him þought' þei were
 That Gamelyn vnder þe wode loked aright'
 As soon of yonge men he saugh wel a dight 628
 Alle satte alle mete compas aboute /
 Adam seyde Gamelyn now haue we no doute
 After lute comþ boote þurgh grace of god almight'
 As þe þynk' þe of mete and drynk' þat I haue a right 632



APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Harleian 7334. 147

Adam lokede þo vnder woode bow;
And whan he seyð mete he was glad ynough
For he hopede to god for to haue his deel
And he was sore alonged after a good meel 636
As he seyde þat word þe mayster outlawe
Saugħ Gamelyn and adam vnder woode schawe /
ʒonge men seyde þe maister by þe goode roode
I am war of gestes / god send vs non but goode 640
ʒonder ben tuo ʒonge men wonder wel adight
And parauenture þer ben mo / who-so loked aright
Ariseþ vp ʒe ʒonge men and fetteþ hem to me /
It is good þat we witen what men þey bee / 644
Vp þer sterten seuene / fro þe dyner
And metten with Gamelyn and adam Spenser
whan þey were neyh hem þan seyde þat oon (leaf 67, back)
ʒeldeth vp ʒonge men ʒour bowes and ʒour floon . 648
Thanne seyde Gamelyn þat yong' was of elde
Moche sorwe mot he haue þat to ʒou hem ʒelde /
I curse non oþer but right my selue
þey ʒe fette to ʒow fyue þanne ʒe be twelue / 652
Tho þey herde by his word þat might was in his arm
Ther was non of hem alle / þat wolde do him harm .
But sayd vnto gamelyn myldely and stille
Com afore our maister and sey to him þy wille 656
yonge men sayde Gamelyn by ʒour lewte
what man is ʒour maister þat ʒe wiþ be
Alle þey answerde wiþoute lesyng'
Oure maister is I-crowned of outlawes kyng' 660
Adam seyde Gamelyn gowe in cristes name /
he may neyþer mete ne drynk' werne vs for schame /
If þat he be heende and come of gentil blood
he wol ʒeue vs mete an drynk' and doon vs som good 664
By seynt Iame seyð adam / what harm þat I gete /
I wil aunte to þe dore þat I hadde mete
Gamelyn and adam wente forþ in feere
And þey grette þe maister þat þey founde þere 668

Than seide þe maister kyng^t of outlawes
 what^t seeke 3e 3onge men vnder woode schawes
 Gamelyn answerde þe kyng^t wip his croune /
 he moste needes walke in woode þat^t may not walke in towne /
 Sire we walke not^t heer noon harm for to do 673
 But if^t we meete wip a deer to scheete þerto /
 As men þat^t ben hungry and mow no mete fynde
 And ben harde bystad vnder woode lynde 676
 Of Gamelynes wordes þe maister hadde roupe /
 And seyde 3e schal haue ynough haue god my troupe /
 he bad hem sitte þer adoun for to take reste / [1st MS. ette]
 And bad hem ¹ete and drynke and þat^t of þe beste / 680
 As þey sete and eeten and dronke wel and fyn ·
 Than seyde þat^t oon to þat^t oþer / þis is Gamelyn ·
 Tho was þe maister outlawe in to counseil nome
 And told how it was Gamelyn þat^t pider was I-come / 684
 Anon as he herde how it^t was bifalle [leaf 68]
 he made him maister vnder him ouer hem alle /
 wipin þe þridde wyke him com tydyng^t
 To þe maister outlawe þat^t þo was her kyng^t 688
 That^t he schulde come hom his pees was I-made
 And of þat^t goode tydyng^t he was þo ful glad
 Tho seyde he to his 3onge men soþ for to telle /
 Me ben comen tydynges I may no lenger dwelle / 692
 Tho was Gamelyn anon wipoute taryng^t
 Made maister outlawe and crouned her kyng^t



APPENDIX TO GROUP A. GAMELYN. Harleian 7334. 149

¶ whan þey had him founde on knees þey hem sette /
And a-doun wip here hood and here lord grette /
Sire wrappe þou nought for þe goode roode /
For we haue brought þou tydynges but þey be nat goode 708
Now is þy broþer scherrene and haþ þe baillye
And he haþ endited þe and wolues-heed dop þe crye
¶ Allas seyde Gamelyn þat euer I was so slak'
þat I ne hadde broke his nekke þo his Rigge brak' 712
God greteþ hem wel myn housbondes and wyf
I wol ben atte nexte schire haue god my lyf
Gamelyn came wel redy to þe nexte schire/
And þer was his broþer boþe lord and sire / 716
Gamelyn com boldelych in to þe moot halle
And put a doun his hood among þe lordes alle
God saue þou alle lordynges þat now here be
But Brokebak Scherreue euel mot þou þe / 720
why hast þou do me þat schame and vilonye /
For to late endite me and woluesheed me crye
Tho þought þe fals knight for to ben awreke [leaf 68, back]
And leet take Gamelyn most he nomore speke 724
Might þer be nomore grace but Gamelyn atte last
was cast in to prisoun and fetered ful fast
Gamelyn haþ a broþer þat highte sir Ote
As good a knight and heende as mighte gon on foote 728
Anon þer ȝede a messenger to þat goode knight
And told him altogidere how Gamelyn was dight
Anon as sire Ote herde how Gamelyn was a dight
he was wonder sory was he no þing light 732
And leet saddle a steede and þe way he nam
And to his tweyne breþeren anon right he cam
Sire seyde sire Ote to þe scherrene þo /
we ben but thre breþeren schul we neuer be mo 736
And þou hast y-prisoned þe best of vs alle /
Swich anoþer broþer yuel mot him bifalle
Sire Ote seide þe fals knight lat be þi curs /
By god for þy wordes he schal fare þe wurs 740

To þe kynges prisoun anon he is y-nome
 And þer he schal abyde til þe Iustice come /
 Par de seyde sir Ote better it schal be
 I bidde him to maympris þat þou graunt him me 744
 Til þe nexte sittinge of delyueraunce
 And þanne lat Gamelyn stande to his chaunce
 Broþer in swich a forthward I take him to the /
 And by þi fader soule þat þe bygat and me 748
 But if he be redy whan þe Iustice sitte /
 Thou schalt bere þe Iuggement for al þi grete witt
 I graunte wel seide sir Ote þat it so be
 Let delyuer him anon and tak him to me / 752
 Tho was Gamelyn delyuered to sire Ote his broþer
 And þat night dwelleden þat on wiþ þat oþer
 On þe morn seyde Gamelyn to sir Ote þe heende
 Broþer he seide I moot / forsothe fro þe wende 756
 To loke how my zonge men leden here lyf
 whether þey lyuen in Ioie or elles in stryf
 By god seyde sire Ote / þat is a cold reed
 Now I see þat al þe cark schall fallen on myn heed 760
 For whan þe Iustice sitte and þou be nought I-founde
 I schal anon be take and in þy stede I-bounde / (long 60)
 Broþer sayde Gamelyn dismaye þe nought
 For by seint Iame in gales þat many man hap sought 764
 If þat god almighty hold my lyf and witt
 I wil be þer redy whan þe Iustice sitt
 Than seide sir Ote to Gamelyn god schilde þe fro schame

They tolden him of auentures þat þey hadde founde /
 And Gamelyn hem tolde aȝein how he was fast I-bounde
 whil Gamelyn was outlawed had he no cors
 There was no man þat for him ferde þe wors 780
 But abbotes and priours monk and Chanoun
 On hem left he no þing whan he might hem nom
 whil Gamelyn and his men made merþes ryue
 The fals knight his broþer yuel mot he þryue / 784
 For he was fast about boþe day and oþer
 For to hyre þe quest to hangen his broþer
 Gamelyn stood on a day and as he biheeld
 The woodes and þe schawes in þe wilde feeld 788
 he þought on his broþer how he him beheet
 That he wolde be redy whan þe Iustice seet
 he þoughte wel þat he wolde wiþoute delay
 Come afore þe Iustice to kepen his day 792
 And seide to his ȝonge men dighteþ ȝou ȝare /
 For whan þe Iustice sitt we moote be þare /
 For I am vnder borwe til þat I come /
 And my broþer for me to prisoun schal be nome / 796
 By seint Iame seyde his ȝonge men and þou rede þerto
 Ordeyne how it schal be and it schal be do /
 whil Gamelyn was comyng þer þe Iustice sat/
 The fals knight his broþer forȝat he nat þat [leaf 69, back] 800
 To huyre þe men on his quest to hangen his broþer
 Though he hadde nought þat oon he wolde haue þat oþer
 Tho cam Gamelyn fro vnder woode Rys
 And broughte wiþ him / his ȝonge men of prys 804
 ¶ I se wel seyde Gamelyn þe Iustice is sette
 Go aforȝ adam and loke how it spette /
 Adam went in to þe halle and lokȝ al aboute
 he seyh þere stonde lordes gret and stoute / 808
 And sir Ote his broþer fetȝred wel fast
 þo went adam out of halle as he were agast
 Adam said to Gamelyn and to his felaws alle
 Sir Ote stant I-fetȝred in þe moot halle 812

3onge men seide Gamelyn þis 3e heeren alle
 Sir Ote stant I-fetered in þe moot halle
 If God 3if vs grace wel for to doo
 he schal it abegge þat broughte þerto 816
 Thanne sayde adam þat lokkes hadde hore /
 Cristes curs most he haue þat him bond so sore
 And þou wilt Gamelyn do after my red
 Ther is noon in þe halle schal bere a-wey his heed 820
 Adam seyde Gamelyn we wilne noughþ don so /
 we wil slee þe giltyf and lat þe oþer go
 I wil in to þe halle /and wip þe Iustice speke /
 On hem þat ben gultyf I wil ben a-wreke 824
 lat non skape at þe dore take 3onge men 3eme /
 For I wil be Iustice þis day domes to deme
 God spede me þis day at my newe werk
 Adam com on with me / for þou schalt be my clerk 828
 His men answereden him and bad him doon his best
 And if þou to vs haue neede þou schalt fynde vs prest
 we wiln stande with þe whil þat we may dure
 And but we werke manly pay vs non hure / 832
 yonge men seyde Gamelyn so mot I wel þe
 As trusty a maister 3e schal fynde of me /
 Right þere þe justice sat in þe halle
 In wente Gamelyn amonges hem alle 836
 ¶ Gamelyn leet/ vnfetere his broþer out of beande
 Thanne seyde sir Ote his broþer þat was heende [long 70]

The Iustice sat stille and roos nought anoon
 And Gamelyn cleuede his cheeke boon
 Gamelyn took him in his arm and no more spak'
 But prew him ouer þe barre and his arm tobrak' 852
 Durste non to Gamelyn seye but good
 For fered of þe company þat wiþoute stood
 Gamelyn sette him down in þe Iustices sete /
 And sire Ote his broþer by him / and adam at his feet' 856
 whan Gamelyn was I-set' in þe Iustices sete
 herknep of a bourde þat Gamelyn dede /
 he leet fetre þe Iustice and his fals broþer
 And dede hem come to þe barre þat oon wiþ þat oper 860
 Tho Gamelyn hadde þus y-doone had he no rest
 Til he had enquired who was on þe quest'
 For to deme his broþer sir Ote for to honge /
 Er he wiste which þey were he þoughte ful longe 864
 But as sone as Gamelyn wiste wher þey were
 he dede hem euerichone fetere in feere /
 And bringen hem to þe barre and sette hem in rewe /
 By my faip seyde þe Iustice þe Scherreue is a schrewe 868
 Than seyde Gamelyn to þe Iustise
 Thou hast y-geue domes of þe wors assise
 And þe .xij. sisours þat weren of þe queste /
 They schul ben hanged þis day so haue I reste 872
 Thanne seide þe scherreu to 3onge Gamelyn
 Lord I crie þe mercy broþer art þou myn
 Therefore seyde Gamely haue þou cristes curs
 For and þou were maister 3it I schulde haue wors [U 70, bk] 876
 For to make schort tale and nouzt to tarie longe
 he ordeyned him a queste of his men so stronge
 The Iustice and þe scherreu boþe honged hye
 To weyuen wiþ ropes and wiþ þe wynd drye 880
 And þe .xij. sisours sorwe haue þat rekke
 Alle þey were hanged faste by þe nekke /
 Thus ended þe fals knight wiþ his treccherie
 That euer had I-lad his lyf in falsnes and folye 884

He was hanged by þe nek' and nouȝt by þe purs
 That was þe meede þat he had for his fadres curs
 Sir Ote was eldest' and Gamelyn was ȝing'
 þey wenten wiþ here freendes euen to þe kyng' 888
 They made pees wiþ þe kyng' of þe best' assise
 The kyng' loued wel sir Ote and made him Iustise
 And after þe kyng' made Gamelyn boþe in Est' and west
 Chef' Iustice of al his fre forest' 892
 Alle his wighte ȝonge men þe kyng' forȝaft here gilt'
 And sitthen in good office þe kyng' hem hath I-pilt'
 Thus wan Gamelyn his lond and his leede 895
 And wrak' him of his enemys and quyt' hem here meede
 And sire Ote his broþer made him his heir
 And siþþen wedded Gamelyn a wyf boþe good and feyr
 They lyueden to-gidere / whil þat crist wolde
 And siþen was Gamelyn grauen vnder molde 900
 And so schal we alle may þer no man fle
 God bryng' vs to þe Ioye þat euer schal be / A M E N

[The rest of the page, eleven lines, is blank in the MS.]

GROUP B. (FRAGMENT II.)

§ 1. MAN OF LAW'S HEAD-LINK.

HARLEIAN MS. 7334 (British Museum).

Owre Hoste sawh þat þe bryghte sonne [leaf 71]
 The arke of his artificial day hap I-ronne
 The fourþe part of half an hour and more /
 And þough he were nat depe in lore 4
 he wist it was þe þrettenþe day
 Of april þat is messanger to may
 And sawe wel þat þe schade of euery tree
 was in þe lengthe þe same quantite 8
 That was þe body erecte þat caused it
 And þerfore by þe schadwe he took his wit
 That Phebus which þat schoon so fair and bryght
 Degrees was .xlv. clombe on hight 12
 And for þat day as in þat latitude
 Hit was ten of þe klokke he gan conclude /
 And sodeynly he plight his hors aboute
LOrdynge quod he I warne þou al þe route 16
 The fourþe party of þis day is goon
 Now for þe loue of god and of seint Ion
 leseþ no tyme as forþe as þe may
 lordynge þe tyme passeþ night and day 20
 And stelþ fro vs what pryely slepyng
 And what þurgh necligence in oure wakyng
 As doþ þe streem þat torneþ neuer agayn
 Descendyng fro þe mounteyn in to playn 24
 wel can senek and many philosopher
 Bywaylen tyme more þan gold in cofre
 For losse of catel may recouered be /
 But losse of tyme schendeth vs quod he 28

It wil nat come agayn wipoute drede
 Nomore þan wol malkyns maydenhede
 whan sche had lost it in hir wantownesse /
 let vs nat mowlen þus in ydelnesse 32

S Ir man of lawe quod he so haue 3e blisse
 Telle vs a tale anon as forward ys
 3e be submitted þurgh our fre assent/
 To stonden in þis cas at my Iuggement 36
 Acquyteþ 3ow and holdeþ 3oure byheste /
 Than haue 3e doon 3our deuour atte leste

H Ost quod he depardeux I assent [leaf 71, back]
 To breke forward is nat myn entent/
 Byheste is dette and I wol holde fayn 40

Al my byhest I can no better sayn
 For such lawe as a man 3eueth anoper wight
 he schuld him selue vsen hit by right 44

Thus wol oure text but napeles certeyn
 I can right now non oper tale seyn
 That Chaucer þey he can but lewedly
 On metres and on Rymyng certeynly 48

Hap seyð hem in such englich as he can
 Of olde tyme as knoweþ many man
 And 3if he haue nouȝt sayd hem leue brother
 In O bok he hap seyð hem in anoper 52

For he hap told of louers vp and down
 Moo þan Ovide made of mencion

The tree of philles for hir demephon
 The pleynt of Dyane and of Ermyon
 Of Adrian and of ysyphilee
 The barren yle stondyng in þe see / 68
 The dreynþ leander for hir Erro
 The teeres of Eleyn and eek þe woo
 Of bryxseyde and of ledomia
 The cruelte of þe queen Medea 72
 The litel children hangyng by þe hals
 For þilke Iason þat was of loue so fals
 O ypermystre penollope and alceste /
 3oure wyfhood he comendeth wip þe beste 76
 But certeynly no worde writeþ he *(leaf 72)*
 Of þilke wikked ensample of Canace
 That loued hir owen broþer synfully
 On whiche corsed stories I seye fy 80
 Or elles of Tyro appoloneus
 how þat þe cursed kyng Anteocheus
 Byrest his daughter of hir maydenhede
 That is so horrible a tale as man may reede 84
 whan he hir þrew vpon þe pament
 And þefore he of ful auysement
 wolde neuer wryte in non of his sermouns
 Of such vnkynde abhominaciouns 88
 Ne I wol non reherse if þat I may
 But of my tale how schal I do þis day
 Me were loth to be lykned douteles /
 To muses þat men clepen Pyerides 92
 Methamorphoseos wot what I mene
 But napeles I recche nat a bene
 They I come after him with hawe-bake /
 I speke in prose¹ and let him rymes make 96
 And wip þat word he wip a sobre cheere
 Bygan his tale as 3e schal after heere ¶ *Explicit prologus*

[No break in the MS.]

¹ Was *Melibe* first meant for the Man of Law?

[*The Proem*]

incipit fabula /

O Hateful harm condicioñ of pouert' [on leaf 72] 99
 wiþ þurst wiþ cold wiþ hunger so confoundyd
 To asken help it schameþ in þin hert
 If þou non aske wiþ neede so art þou woundyd
 That verray neede vnwrappeþ al þy woundes hyd
 Maugre þyn heed þou most for Indigence
 Or stele or begge or borwe þy dispençe 105

Thow blamest crist and seyst ful bitterly 106
 he mys departeþ riches temporal
 And þyn neyhebour þou wytes synfully
 And seyst þou hast to litel and he hap al 109
 Parfay seystow som tyme he rekne schal
 whan þat his tayl schal brennen in þe gleede
 For he nought helpeþ þe needful in his neede 112

Herkneþ what is þe sentens of þe wyse 113
 Bet is to dye þan haue indigence
 Thy selue neyghebour wol þe despyse [leaf 72, back]
 If þou be pore far wel þy reuerence 116
 3et of þe wyse man tak þis sentence

All to daye of mannes lyf is wylke /

SIX-TEXT 133
GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 159

3e seeke land and see for 3our wynnynges 127
As wyse folk^t as 3e knowe alle pastates
Of regnes / 3e be fadres of tydynge
Of tales boþe of pees and of debates / 130
I were right^t now of tales desolat
Nere þat^t a marchaunt^t gon sippen many a 3ere /
Me taught^t a tale which 3e schal after heere 133

[*The Tale*]

- I**N Surrie dwelled whilom a companye [on 77, b^r] 134
 Of Chapmen riche and þerto sad and trewe
 That wyde where sent her spycere
 Clopes of gold and satyn rich of hewe / 137
 her chaffar was so prifty and so newe
 That euery wight had deynte to chaffare
 wip hem and eek to selle hem of here ware / 140
- Now fel it þat þe maystres of þat sort 141
 han schapen hem to Rome for to wende
 were it for chapmanhode or for disport
 Non oper message nolde þey þider sende / 144
 But came hemself to Rome þis is þe ende
 And in such place /as þought hem auanntage
 For here entent þey tooke her herburgage 147
- Soiourned naue þese marchantz in þe toun 148
 A certeyn tyme as fel to here plesaunce
 But so bifell þat þexcellent renoun
 Of þemperoures doughter dame Custaunce 151
 Reported was with euery circumstaunce

SIX-TEXT 135

GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 161

In hire is hye bewte wipoute pryde 162
 3owpe wipoute greffhed or folye
 To alle here werkes vertu is hire gyde /
 humblesse haþ slayne in hir tyrrannye / 165
 Sche is myrour of alle curtesye /
 hir herte is verrey chambre of holynesse
 hir hond mynistr of fredom and almesse 168

And al pis voys is soþ as god is trewe 169
 But now to purpos let vs turne aȝein
 These marchantz haue don fraught here schippes newe /
 And whan þey haue pis blisful mayde seyn 172
 Home to Surrey be þey went aȝein /
 And doon here needes as þey haue don ȝore
 And lyuen in wele I can ȝou say no more / 175

Now fel it þat þese marchauntȝ stooden in grace / 176
 Of him þat was þe Sowdan of Surrye
 For whan þey come fro eny straunge place /
 he wolde of his benigne curtesye 179
 Make hem good chere and busily aspye
 Tydynges of sondry regnes for to lere/
 The wordes þat þey mighte seen and heere / 182

Among oþer þinges specially 183
 These marchauntȝ him told of dame Constaunce
 So gret noblesse in earnest so ryally
 That þis Sowdan haþ caught so gret plesaunce 186
 To haue hir figure in his remembraunce
 And al his lust and al his besy cure
 was for to loue hir whiles his lyf may dure 189

Par auenture in pilke large booke / 190
 which þat is cleped þe heuen I-write was [leaf 75, back]
 wip sterres whan þat he his burþe took
 That he for loue schulde haue his deþ allas / 193

For in þe sterres clerere þen is glas /
 Is wryten god woot' who-so cowþe it rede
 The deþ of euery man wiþouten drede 196

In sterres many a wynter þer byfore 197
 was write þe deþ of Ector and Achilles /
 Of Pompe Iulius er þey were I-bore /
 The stryf of Thebes and of Ercules / 200
 Of Sampson Turnus and of Socrates
 The deþ but mennes wittes ben so dulle /
 That no wight can wel rede it at þe fulle 203

This sowdan for his pryue counseil sent 204
 And schortly of þis mater for to pace /
 he hap to hem declared his entent
 And seyde hem certeyn but he might haue grace / 207
 To haue Constance wiþinne a litel space
 he nas but deed and charged hem in hyȝe
 To schapen for his lyf som remedye 210

Dyuerse men dyuers þinges seyde 211
 The argumentes casten vp and doun
 Many a subtil resoun forþ þey leyden
 They spekyn of magike and of ambusioun 214
 But finally as in conclusioun
 They can nought seen in bat non awauntage

GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 163

SIX-TEXT 137

And he answerde rapier þan I lese 225
 Constance I wol be cristen douteles /
 I moot be heres I may non oper cheese /
 I pray 3ou haldeth 3our arguments in pees / 228
 Saueþ my lyf and beþ nat recheles / [leaf 74]
 God geteþ hire þat haþ my lyf in cure /
 For in þis wo I may no lenger dure / 231

What needeþ gretter dilatacioun 232
 I say by tretys and ambassatrye
 And by þe popes mediacioun
 And al þe chirche and al þe chyualrye / 235
 That in destruccioun of mawmetrye
 And in encesse of cristes lawe deere /
 They ben acordid as 3e schal after heere / 238

How þat þe Soudan and his baronage 239
 And alle his lieges schuld I-crystned be /
 And he schal haue Constance in mariage/
 And certeyn gold I not what quantite 242
 And perfore founden þey suffisant seurte
 This same acord was sworn on euery syde/
 Now fair Constance almighty god þe guyde / 245

Now wolde som men wayten as I gesse 246
 That I schulde tellen al þe puruyauce /
 That þemperour of his gret noblesse /
 Haþ schapen for his doughter dame Constaunce / 249
 wel may men knowe þat so gret ordynaunce
 May no man telle in so litel a clause /
 As was arrayed for so high a cause / 252

Bisschops ben schapen with hir for to wende 253
 lordes ladyes and knightes of renoun
 And oper folk ynowe þis þis is þe ende
 And notefied is purgh out þe toun 256

That euery wight wiþ gret deuocioun
 Schulde preye crist þat he þis mariage
 Receyue in gree and spede þis viage 259

The day is come of hire departyng 260
 I say þe woful day þat þan is come
 That þer may be no lenger tarryyng
 But forþeward þey dresse hem alle & some / 263
 Constance þat with sorwe is ouercome
 Ful pale arist and dresseþ hir to wende /
 For wel sche saugh þer nas non oþer ende 266

Allas what wonder is it/ þough sche wepte [leaf 74, back] 267
 That schal be sent to straunge nacioun
 Fro freendes þat so tenderly hir kepte /
 And to be bounde vndur subieccioun 270
 Of oon sche knew nat his condicioun
 Housbondes ben al goode and han be ȝore
 That knowen wyfes I dar say no more / 273

Fader scene seid þy wrecched child Costaunce 274
 Thy ȝonge doughter fostred vp so softe /
 And ȝe my mooder my souerayn plesaunce
 Ouer al þing outaken crist on lofte / 277
 Constance ȝour child hir recomaundeth ofte
 Vnto ȝour grace / for I schal in to Surre



SIX-TEXT 139

GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 165

I trowe at Troye whan Pirrus brak' þe wal 288
 Or yleon þat' brend Thebes þe Citee
 Ne at Rome for þe harme þurgh hanibal
 That Romayns han venquysshed tymes þre 291
 Nas herd such tender wepyng' for pite
 As in þe Chambur was for hir partyng'
 But forþ sche moot' wheþer sche weep or syng 294

O firste meuyng' cruel firmament 295
 with þi diurnal swough þat' crowdest ay
 And hurlest al fro Est' to Occident
 That' naturelly wold hold anoþer way 298
 Thyn crowdyng' sette þe heuen in such array
 At þe bygynnyng' of þis fiers viage
 That' cruel marc; hap' slayn þis marriage 301

Infortunat ascendent tortuous 302
 Of which þe lordes helples falle allas
 Out' of his angle in to þe derkest' hous
 O . Mari; attegere as in þis caas [leaf 75] 305
 O feble moone vnhappy been þi paas /
 Thou knettest þe þer þou art' nat' receyued
 Ther þou were wel fro þennes artow weyued 308

Inprudent Emperour of Rome allas 309
 was þer no philosopher in al þy toun
 Is no tyme bet' þan oþer in such caas
 Of viage is þer noon eleccioun 312
 Namly to folk' of heigh condicioun
 Nought' whan a roote is of a birthe I-knowe
 Allas we ben to lewed and eek' to slowe / 315

[To Shipe] is brought' þis woful faire mayde / [In a later hand.]
 Solempnely with euery circumstaunce /
 Now Ihū crist' so be wiþ þou sche sayde /
 Ther nys nomor but' far wel fair Custaunce 319

She peyneth hire to make good contenaunce
 And forþ I lete hire sayle in þis manere /
 And torne I wol aȝein to my matiere / 322

The moder of þe Sawdan ful of vices 323
 Aspyed haþ hir sones playn entent/
 how he wol lete his olde sacrifices
 And right' anoon sche for hir counseil sent' 326
 And þey ben come to knowe what' sche ment
 And whan assembled was þis folk' in fere
 Sche sette hir down and sayd as ȝe schal heere / 329

Lordes quod sche ȝe knowen euerichon 330
 how þat' my sone in poynt' is for to lete
 The holy lawes of our alkaron
 ȝe ben goddes messangere makamete / 333
 But' oon avow to grete god I hete
 The lyf' schuld raper out' of my body stert'
 Or makametes law go out' of myn hert' 336

What schal vs tyden of þis newe lawe 337
 But' praldam to oure body and penaunce
 And afterward in helle to be drawe /
 For we reneyed mahound oure creaunce 340
 But' lordes wol ȝe maken assuraunce
 As I schal say assentyng' to my lore

SIX-TEXT 141

GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 167

We schul first feyne ous cristendom to take	351
Cold watir schal nat greue vs but a lite /	
And I schal such a fest and Reuel make /	
That as I trow I schal þe Sowdan quyte	354
For þough his wyf be cristned neuer so white	
Sche schal haue need to waissche away þe rede	
They sche a font of watir wip hir lede	357
O Sowdones root of iniquite	358
Virago þou Semyram þe secounde	
O serpent vnder feminite	
Lyk to þe serpent deep in helle I-bounde	361
O feyned womman alle þat may confounde	
Vertu and Innocence þurgh þy malice /	
Is bred in þe as nest of euery vice	364
O Satan enuyous syn pilke day	365
That þou were chased fro oure heritage	
wel knewest þou to wommen þe olde way	
Thou madest Eue to bryng vs in seruage	368
Thou wolt fordoon þis cristen mariage	
Thyn instrument so weylaway þe while	
Makestow of wommen whan þou wolt bygile	371
This Sawdones whom I þus blame and wary	372
let pryuely hir counseil gon his way	
what schuld I in þis tale lenger tary	
Sche rideþ to þe Soudan on a day	375
And seyð him þat sche wold reney hir lay	
And cristendam of prestes handes fonge	
Repentyng hir sche hethen was so longo	378
Bysechyng him to doon hir þat honour	379
That sche most haue þe cristen men to feste /	
To plesen hem I wil do my labour	[leaf 76]
The sawdan seith I wol do at þour heste	382

And knelyng þankeþ hir of þat requeste
 So glad he was he nyst nat what to seye
 Sche kyst hir sone and hom sche goþ hir weye 385

[PART II.]

Arryued ben þe cristen folk to londe / 386
 In Surry with a gret solempne route
 And hastily þis soudan sent his sonde
 First to his moder and al þe regne aboute 389
 And seyde his wyf was comen out of doute
 And preyed hir for to ride aȝein þe queene
 The honour of his regne to susteine / 392

Gret was þe prees and riche was tharray 393
 Of Surriens and Romayns mette in feere
 The moodur of þe Sowdan riche and gay
 Receyued hir with al so glad a cheere 396
 As eny modir might hir doughter deere
 And to þe nexte Citee þer bysyde
 A softe paas solempnely þay ryde 399

Nought trow I þe triumphe of Iulius 400
 Of which þat lukan makeþ moche bost
 was ryaller ne more curious

The fruyt of þis matier is þat I telle
 whan tyme com men þought it for þe best
 That reuel stynt and men goon to her rest 413

The tyme com þe olde Sowdonesse 414
 Ordeyned haþ þis fest of which I told
 And to þe feste cristen folk hem dresse
 [. no gap in the MS.] 417
 Ther men may fest and realte byholde
 And deyntes mo / þan I can of deuyse
 But al to deere þey bought it ar þey ryse [leaf 76, back] 420

O sodeyn wo þat euer art successour 421
 ¶ To worldly blis spreynð is wiþ bitternesse /
 The ende of oure ioye of oure worldly labour
 wo occupieth þe fyn of oure gladnesse 424
 herken þis counseil for thyn sikernesse
 vpon þyn glade dayes haue in þi mynde
 The vnwar woo þat cometh ay bihynde 427

For schortly for to tellen at o word 428
 The Sawdan and þe cristen euerichone
 Ben al to-hewe and stiked atte bord
 But it were Dame Constaunce allone 431
 This olde Sowdones þis cursed crone
 haþ wiþ hir frendes doon þis cursed dede
 For sche hir self wold al þe contre lede 434

Ne þer was surrien noon / þat was conuerted 435
 That of þe counseil of þe Sawdon woot
 That he nas alto-hewe or he asterted
 And Constaunce haue þey take anon foot-hoot 438
 And in a schippe / steleres god it woot
 They haue hir set. and bad hir lerne to sayle
 Out of Surry aȝeinward to ytaile 441

A certain tresour þat sche þider ladde	442
And soþ to sayn vitaille gret plente	
They haue hir zeuen and clopes eek sche hadde	
And forþ sche sayleþ to þe salte see	445
O my Constaunce ful of benignite	
O Emperoures ȝonge doughter deere	
he þat is Lord of fortun be þi steere	448
Sche blessep hir and with ful pitous voys	449
Vnto þe croys of crist þan seyde sche	
O cler o welful auter holy croys	
Rood of þe lambes blood ful of pite	452
That wissþ þe world fro old iniquite	
Me fro þe feend and fro his clowes keepe	
That day þat I schal drenchen in þe deepe	455
Victorious tre proteccioun of trewe	456
That oonly were worthy for to bere	
That kyng of heuen with his woundes newe	[leaf 77]
The white lamb þat hurt was with a spere	459
Flemer of feendes out of him and here /	
On which þy lymes feithfully extenden	
Me kepe and ȝif me might my lyf to menden	462
Ȝeres and dayes flette þis creature	463
Thurghout þe see of Grece in to þe strayte	

That' euery wight' sauf' he mayster or knaue
 was wiþ þe lioun frete or he asterte
 No wight' but' god þat' he bar in his herte 476

God lust' to schewe his wondrousful miracle 477
 In hir for sche schuld seen his mighty werkes
 Crist' which þat is to euery harm triacle
 By certeyn menes ofte as knowen clerkes 480
 Doth ping' for certeyn ende þat ful derk' is //
 To mannes witt / þat' for our ignoraunce
 Ne can nought' knowe his prudent puryaunce 483

Now sith sche was nat' at þe fest' I-slawe / 484
 who kepte hir fro drenching' in þe see /
 who kepte Ionas in þe fisches mawe
 Til he was spouted vp at Niniue 487
 wel may men knowe it was no wight' but he
 That' kept' þe pepul Ebrayk' fro her drenchyng'
 wiþ drye feet' / þurghout þe see passyng' 490

Who hadde foure spiritz of tempest' 491
 That' power han to noyen land and see
 Boþe norþ and souþ and also west' and Est'
 Anoyeþ neyþer londe / see ne tree / 494
 Soþly þe comaunder of' þat' was he
 That' fro þe tempest' ay þis womman kepte [leaf 77, back]
 As wel when sche awok' as when sche slepte 497

Wher might' þis womman mete and drinke haue / 498
 Thre þer and more / how lasteþ hir vitaille
 who fedde þe Egipecien marie in þe Caue
 Or in desert' no wight' but' crist' saunþ faile 501
 Fyf' þousand folk' / it' was a gret meruaile/
 wiþ loues fyf' and fissesches tuo to feede
 God sent' his foyssoun at' her grete neede 504

Sche dryneth forþ in to oure Ocean 508
 Thurghout oure wilde see til atte last
 vnder an holte þat men nemne can
 For in Northumberland þe wawe hir cast 509
 And in þe sand þe schip styked so fast
 That þennea wold it nouȝt in al a tyde
 The wille of erlat was þat sche schold abyde 511

The Constabl of / þe castel down in fars / 512
 To se þis wrak / and al þe schip he sought
 And fond þis wery woman ful of care
 And fand also þe tresour þat sche brought 515
 In hir language mercy sche brouȝt
 The lif out of her body for to wynne
 hir to delyuer of woo þat sche was Inne / 518

A maner latyn corrupt was hir speche 519
 But algates / þer by sche was vnderstonde
 The constabl whan him lust no longer seehe
 This woful woman brouȝte he to londe / 522
 Sche kneleþ down and thanketh godelen sonde
 But what sche was sche wold no man seye
 For foul he fairs / þough sche scholde deye 525

Sche was sche seyde so maad in þe see 526
 That sche forȝat hir mynde by hire trowþe /

In orisoun wiþ many a bitter teere /
 Til ihū haþ conuerted þurgh his grace
 Dame hermegyld þe Constables wif of þe place 539

In al þe lond no cristen men durst route 540
 Al cristen men ben fled from þat contre
 Thurgh payens þat conquered al a-boute /
 The places of þe north by land and see 543
 To wales fled þe cristianite
 Of olde britouns dwellyng in þis yle /
 Ther was hir refut for þe mene while 546

But/ ȝit nere cristen britouns so exiled 547
 That þer / nere some in here pryuite /
 honoured crist and heþen men bygiled
 And neigh þe Castel such þer dwellid þre 550
 That oon of hem was blynd and might nat se /
 But if it were wiþ eyen of his mynde
 wiþ which men seen after þat þey ben blynde 553

Bright was þe sonne as in someres day 554
 For which þe constable and his wif also
 And Constaunce had take þe righte way
 Toward þe see a forlong wey or two 557
 To pleyen and to Romen to and fro
 And in þat/ walk the blynde men þey mette
 Croked and olde with eyen fast y-schette 560

In name of crist / cryed þis old britoun 561
 Dame hermegyld ȝif me my sight aȝeyn
 This lady wax affrayed of þe soun
 lest þat hir houseband schortly to sayn 564
 wold hir for ihū cristes loue haue slayn
 Til Constaunce made hir bold and bad hir werche
 The wil of crist as douȝter of holy chirche 567

The Constable wax abaissed of þat sight 568
 And sayde what amounteþ al þis fare
 Constaunce answered / sir it is cristes might
 That helpeth folk out of þe feendes snare / 571
 And so ferforþ sche gan hir lay declare/ [leaf 78, back]
 That sche þe Constable er þat it was Eue
 Conuerted and on crist made him bileue 574

This Constable was no þing lord of þe place 575
 Of which I speke þer he Constance fond
 But kept it strongly many a wynter space
 vnder alla kyng of Northumberlond 578
 That was ful wys and worþy of his hond
 Aȝein þe scottes as men may wel heere
 But tourne aȝein I wil to my mateere 581

Satan þat euer vs wayteþ to begile / 582
 Sawe of Constaunce þe persecucioun
 And cast anon how he might quyt hir while /
 And made a ȝong knight þat dwelt in þe toun 585
 Loue hir so hoot of foul affeccioun
 That verrayly him þouȝt he schulde spille
 But he of hire / oones had his wille 588

He wowith hir but it avayleþ nought 589
 Sche wolde do no synne by no weye



And kutte þe prote of hermegild a two /
And leyde þe bloody knyfe by dame Constaunce
And went his way þat god ȝeue him meschaunce 602

Sone after com þis Constable hom agayn 603
And eek' alla þat was kyng' of þat lond
And say his wyf dispitously I-slayn
For which ful oft / he wepte and wrong' his hond 606
And in þe bed þe bloȝy knyfe he fond
By Dame Custaunce alas what' might' he say
For verray woo / hir witt' was al a-way 609

To kyng' Alla was told al þis meschaunce [leaf 79] 610
And eek' þe tyme and wher and eek' þe wyse
That in a schip was founden þis Constaunce
As here bifore ȝe haue herd me deuyse / 613
The kynges hert' of pite gan agrise
whan he saugh so benigne a creature
Falle in disese and in mysauenture 616

For as þe lomb toward his deþ is brought / 617
So stant' þis Innocent' bifore þe kyng'
This false knight' þat hap þis tresoun wrought'
Bereþ hir an hand þat sche hath don þis þing' 620
But' neuer þe les þer was gret' mornyng'
Among' þe people and seyn þey can not gesse
That' sche had doon so gret' a wikkednesse 623

For þey han seyn hir so vertuous 624
And louyng' hermegyld right' as hir lyf
Of þis bar witnessse euerich in þat hous
Sawe he þat slowȝ hermegyld with his knyfe 627
This gentil kyng' hap caught' a gret' motyf'
Of his witnessse and þought' he wold enquire
Deppere in þis cas a troupe to lere 630

- Allas Constaunce þou ne has no champioun 631
 Ne fighte canstow nat' so welaway
 But he þat' for oure redempcioun
 Bonde Sathan and ȝit' liþ þer he lay 634
 So be þy stronge champioun þis day
 For but crist' vpon þe miracle kythe
 withouten gilt' þou schalt' be slayn as swithe 637
- Sche set' hir down on knees and þan sche sayde 638
 Immortal god þat' sauedest' Susanne
 For false blame and þou merciful mayde
 Mary I mene doughter of' seint' Anne 641
 Bifore whos child aungeles syng' Osanne
 If I be gultles of' þis felonye
 My socour be for elles schal I dye 644
- Hauē ȝe not' seye somtyme a pale face 645
 Among' a prees of' him þat' hap' be lad
 Toward his dep' wher him geyneþ no grace /
 And such a colour in his face hap' had [leaf 79, back] 648
 Men mighte knowe his face was so bystad
 Among' alle þe faces in þat route
 So stant Constance and lokeþ hire aboute / 651
- O queenes lyuyng' in prosperite 652
 Duchesses and ȝe ladies euerychon



SIX-TEXT 151
GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 177

And if þis knight wil swere how þat sche /
This womman slowȝ ȝet wol we us avyse
whom þat we wille schal be oure iustise 665

A britoun book I-write wip euaungiles 666
was fette and on þis book/ he swor anoon
Sche gultif was and in þe mene whiles
An hond him smot vpon þe nekke boon 669
That doun he fel anon right at a stoon
And boȝe his yen brast out of his face
In sight of euery body in þat place 672

A vois was herd in general audience 673
And seist þou hast disclaundred gulteles
The doughter of holy chirche in hire presence
Thus hastow doon & ȝit I holde my pees 676
Of þis meruaile agast was al þe prees
As mased folk þey stooden euerychon
For drede of wreche saue Custaunce allon 679

Gret was þe drede and eek þe repentaunce 680
Of hem þat hadden gret suspeccioun
vpon þe sely Innocent Custaunce
And for þis miracle in conclusioun 683
And by Custaunces mediacioun
The kyng and many oþer in þe place
Conuerted was / thanked be cristes grace [100/80] 686

This false knight was slayn for his vntroupe / 687
By Iuggement of Alla hastyly
And ȝit Custaunce hap of his dep gret roupe
And after þis ihus of his mercy 690
Made alla wedde ful solempnely
This holy mayde þat is bright and schene /
And þus hap crist I-maad Constance a queene 693

But who was woful if I schal not lye /	694
Of þis weddyng but Domegild and þo	
The kynges mooder ful of tyrannye	
hir þoughþ hir cursed herte brast a-two	697
Sche wolde nat hir sone had I-do so	
hir þoughþ despyte / þat he schulde take	
So straunge a creature vnto his make	700
M e lust not of þe caf ne of þe stree	701
Make so long a tale as of þe corn	
what schuld I telle of þe realte	
Of mariage / or which cours goþ biforn	704
who bloweth in a trompe or in an horn	
The fruyt of euery tale is for to seye	
They ete & drynk / and daunce / and synge & pleye	707
T hey gon to bed as it was skile & right	708
For þough þat wyfes ben ful holy þinges	
They moste take in pacience a night	
Such maner necessities as ben plesynges	711
To folk that han I-wedded hem wiþ rynges	
And haluendel her holynesse ley a side	
And for þe tyme it may non oþer betyde	714
O n hire he gat a knaue child anoon	715
And to a bisschope & a Constable eeke	



SIX-TEXT 153
GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 179

how þat þis blisful tydyng' is bifalle
And oþer þinges spedful for to seye
he takeþ þe lettre and forþ he goþ his weye 728

This messanger to doon his auantage 729
vnto þe kynges moder he goþ ful swiþe
And salueth hire / fair in his langage
Ma dame quod he 3e may be glad and bliþe 732
And þanke god an hundred þousand siþe
My lady queen haþ child wiþouten doute
To ioie and blis of al þe reame aboute 735

Lo heer þe lettres sealed of þis þing' 736
That I mot' bere with al þe hast' I may
If 3e wole ough't vnto 3oure sone þe kyng'
I am 3oure seruauñt boþe night' and day 739
Doungyld answerde as now þis tyme nay
But here al nyght' I wol þou take þy rest'
To morwen I wil say þe what' me lest' 742

This messenger drank' sadly ale and wyn 743
And stolen were his lettres pryuely
Out' of his box whil he sleep as a swyn
And countrefeet' þey were subtilly 746
Anoþer sche him wroot' ful synfully
vnto þe kyng' direct' of þis matiere
Fro his Constable as 3e schul after heere 749

The lettre spak' þe queen delyuered was 750
Of so orryble and feendly creature
That' in þe castel noon so hardy was
That' eny while dorste þerin endure / 753
The mooder was an Elf by auenture
Bycome by charmes or by sorcerie
And euery man hatip hir companyne 756

- Wo was þis kyng^t whan he þis letter had sein 757
 But^t to no wight^t he told his sorwes sore
 But^t of^t his owen hand he wrot^t agayn .
 welcome þe sond of^t crist^t for eueremore 760
 To me þat^t am now lerned in his lore
 lord welcome be þy lust^t and þy pleasaunce [leaf 81]
 My lust^t I putte al in þyn ordinaunce 763

 Kepeth þis child al be it foul or fair 764
 And eek^t my wyf^t vnto myn hom comyng^t
 Crist^t whan him lust^t may sende me an hair
 More agreable þan þis to my likyng^t 767
 The lettre he selet^t pryuyly wepyng^t
 which to þe messenger he took^t ful sone
 And forþ he goth þer nys no more to done 770

 O messenger fulfild of^t dronkenesse 771
 Strong^t is þy breþ^t þy lymes faltren ay
 And þou bywreyst^t alle sykernesse
 Thy mynde is lorn þou ianglest^t as a Iay 774
 Thy face is torned al in a newe array
 Ther drunkenesse regneth in eny route
 Ther is no counseil hid wipouten doute 777

 O Domegyld I haue non englisch digue 778
 vnto þy malice and þy tyrannye
 And perfor to þe feend I þe resigne
 let^t him endyten of^t þi treccherie 781
 Fy mannyssch fy .o. nay by god I lye
 Fy feendly spirit^t for I dar wel telle
 Though þou here walke þy spirit^t is in helle 784

 This messenger comþ fro þe kyng^t agayn 785
 And at^t þe kinges modres court^t he light^t
 And sche was of^t þis messenger ful fayn
 And pleseh him in al þat^t euer sche might^t 788



SIX-TEXT 155
GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 181

he drank' and wel his gurdel vnderpight'
he slepeþ and he fareþ in his gyse
Al nyght vnto þe sonne gan arise 791

Eft were his *lettres* stolen euerichon 792
And countrefeted *lettres* in þis wise
The kyng' comaundeþ his constable anon
vp peyne of hangyng' of an heiȝ Iustise 795
That' he schulde suffre in no maner wyse
Constaunce in his regne for to abyde
Thre dayes and a quarter of a tyde 798

But' in þe same schip as he hir fond 799
hire and hir ȝonge sone and al hire gere [leaf 81, back]
he schulde putte and crowde fro þe londe
And charge hire þat' sche neuer eft' come þere 802
·O. my Constaunce wel may þy goost' haue fere
And slepyng' in þy drem ben in penaunce
whan Domegyl cast' al þis ordynaunce / 805

This messenger a-morwe whan he awook' 806
vnto þe castel held þe nexte way
And to þe constable he þe *lettre* took'
And whan þat' he þe pitous *lettre* say 809
Ful ofte he seyde alas and welaway
Lord crist' quod he how may þis world endure
So ful of synne is many a creature 812

O mighty god if þat' it be þy wille 813
Seþ þou art' rightful iugge how may þis be /
That' þou wolt' suffre Innocentȝ to spille /
And wikked folk' regne in *prosperite* 816
·O good Constance alas so wo is me
That' I moot' be þy tormentour or deye
On schamful deþ þer is non oþer weye 819

Wepynge bope ȝong' & olde in al þat place 820
 whan þat þe kyng' þis corsed *lettre* sent'
 And Constance with a dedly pale face
 The fayre day toward hir schip sche went 823
 But neuerþeles sche takeþ in good entent
 The wil of *crist'* / and knelyng' on þe grounde
 Sche sayde lord ay welcome be þy sonde 826

He þat me kepte fro þe false blame 827
 whil I was on þe lond amonges ȝou
 He can me kepe from harm & eek' fro schame
 In þe see al þough I se nat' how 830
 As strong' as euer he was he is right' now
 In him trust' I. & in his mooder deere
 That is to me my sayl and eek' my steere / 833

Hir litel child lay wepyng' in hir arm 834
 And knelyng' pitously to him sche sayde /
 Pees litle sone I wol do þe noon harm
 wiþ þat hir kercheft' of hir hed sche brayde 837
 And ouer his litel yȝen sche it layde [leaf 88]
 And in hir arm sche lullith it wel faste
 And vnto heuen hir eyȝen vp sche caste 840

Moder *quod* sche and mayde bright' marie 841

Sop is þat þurgh wommannes eggement



SIX-TEXT 157
GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 183

Thou heuen of refute brighte sterre of day
Rewe on my child þat of þyn gentilnesse /
Rewest on euery synful in destresse 854

O litel child allas what is þi gilt 855
That neuer wroughtest synne as ȝet þar de
why wil þyn harde fader han þe spilt
O. mercy deere and Constable seyde sche 858
And let my litel child here dwelle with þe
And if þou darst not sauē him for blame /
So kys him oones in his fadres name 861

Ther wiþ sche lokēd bakward to þe lond 862
And seyde far wel housbond rewþeles
And vp sche rist and walkeþ down þe stronde
Toward þe schip hir folweþ al þe prees 865
And euer sche preyēþ hir child to hold his pees
And took hir leue and wiþ an holy entent
Sche blesseþ hire and to þe schip sche went 868

Vytailled was þe schip it is no drede 869
Abundauntly for hire ful longe space
And oper necessities þat schulde nede
Sche had ynowȝ heryed be cristēȝ grace 872
For wynd and water almighty god purchase
And bryng hir hom I can no bettre say
But in þe see sche dryueþ forþ hir way 875

[PART III.]

Alla þe kyngt comp hom soon after þis [leaf 82, back] 876
vnto þe Castel of þe which I tolde
And askeþ wher his wyf and his child ys
The Constable gan aboute his herte colde 879

And playnly al þe maner he him tolde
 As ȝe han herd / I can telle it no better
 And schewed þe kynges seal and his letter 882

And seyde lord as ȝe comaunded me 883
 vp peyne of deþ so haue I do certayn
 This messenger tormented was til he
 Moste biknowe and telle it plat and playn · 886
 Fro nyght to night in what place he had layn ·
 And þus by witt/ and subtil enqueriung
 ymagined was by wham þis gan to spryng 889

The hand was knowen þat þe lettre wroot 890
 And al þe venym of þis cursed dede
 But in what wyse certeynly I noot
 Theffect is þis þat alla out of drede 893
 his moder slough as men may pleynly reede /
 For þat sche traytour was to hir ligeaunce
 Thus endeþ olde Domegild wiþ meschaunce 896

The sorwe þat/ þis alla night and day 897
 Makþ for his wyf and for his child also
 Ther is no tonge þat it telle may
 But now I wol vnto Custaunce go 900
 That fleetetþ in þe see in peyne and wo



SIX-TEXT 159
GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 185

Doun fro þe Castel comp þer many a wight 911
To gawren on þis schip and on Constaunce
But schortly fro þe castel on a night
The lordes styward God giue him meschaunce [lea/88] 914
A þeeft þat had reneyed oure creaunce
Com in to schip alone and seyd he scholde
hir lemman be wheþir sche wold or nolde 917

Wo was þis wrecched womman þo bigoon 918
hire childe criep and sche pytously
But blisful mary hilp hir right anon
For wiþ hir strengþe wel and mightily 921
The theef fel ouer boord al sodeinly
And in þe see he drenched for vengauce
And þus hap crist vnwemmed kept Constance 924

O foule lust/ O luxurie lo þin ende / 925
Nought oonly þat þou feyntest mannes mynde
But verrayly þou wolt his body schende
The ende of þyn werk or of þy lustes blynde 928
his compleynyng how many may men fynde
That nought for werk som tyme but for pentent
To doon his synne ben eyþer slayn or schent / 931

How may þis weyke womman han þe strengþe 932
hir to defende aȝein þe renegat
O Goliath vnmesurable of lengþe
how mighte dauid make þe so mate 935
So ȝong and of armure so desolate
how dorst he loke vpon þyn dredful face
wel may men seyn it nas but goddes grace 938

Who ȝaf Iudith corage or hardynesse / 939
To slen him Olefernes in his tent
And to delyueren out þe wrecchednes
The peple of god I say in þis entent 942

That right as good spiryte vigor sent
 To hem and saued hem out of meschaunce /
 So sent he might and vigor to Constaunce 945

Forth goþ hir schip þurghout þe narwe mouth 946
 Of Iubalter and Septe dryuyng ay
 Somtyme west som tyme north and south
 And somtyme Est ful many a wery way 949
 Til cristes mooder blessed be sche ay
 haþ schapen þurgh hir endeles goodnesse
 To make an ende of hir heuynesse [leaf 83, back] 952

Now let vs stynt of Constance but a þrowe 953
 And speke we of / þe Romain Emperour
 That out of Surrye haþ by lettres knowe
 The slaughter of cristen folk and deshonour 956
 Doon to his douȝter by a fals traytour
 I mene þe cursed and wikked sowdenesse
 That at þe fest leet slee bope more and lesse 959

For which þis Emperour haþ sent anoon 960
 his senatours with real ordynaunce
 And oþer lordes got wot many oon
 On surriens to take high vengauce 963
 They brenne / sleen / and bringen hem to meschaunce



SIX-TEXT 161
GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 187

He bryngeþ hir to Rome and to his wyf 974
he ȝaf hir and hir ȝonge sone also
And wiþ þe Senatour lad sche hir lyf
Thus can our lady. bryngen out of woo 977
woful Constance and many anoþer moo
And longe tyme dwelled sche in þat place
In holy werkes. as euer was hir grace / 980

The Senatoures wif hir aunte was 981
But for al þat sche knew hir neuer more
I wol no lenger taryen in þis cas
But to kyng Alla which I spak of ȝore / 984
That for his wyf wepeþ and sikeþ sore /
I wol retorne / and lete I wol Constaunce
vnder þe Senatoures gouernaunce 987

Kyng alla which þat had his mooder slayn 988
vpon a day fel in such repentaunce /
That if I schortly telle schal and playn [leaf 84]
To Rome he comeþ to receyue his penaunce 991
And putte him in þe popes ordynaunce
In heigh and lowe and ihū crist bysought
Forȝef his wikked werkes þat he wrought 994

The fame anon purgh Rome toun is born 995
how alla kyng schal come in pilgrymage
By herberiouz þat wenten him biforn
For which þe Senatour as was vsage 998
Rood him aȝein and many of his lynage
As wel to schewen his magnificence
As to doon eny kyng a reuerence 1001

Gret cheere dop þis noble Senatour 1002
To kyng Alla and he to him also
Euerich of hem dop oþer gret honour
And so bifel þat on a day or two 1005

This Senatour is to kyng^t Alla go
 To fest^t and schortly if I schal not lye
 Constances sone / went in his companye 1008

Som men wold seyn at request^t of Custaunce 1009
 This Senatour haþ lad þis child to feste
 I may not telle euery circumstaunce
 Be as be may þer was he atte leste 1012
 But soth it is right^t at his modres heste
 Byforn hem alle duryng^t þe metes space
 The child stood lokyng^t in þe kynges face 1015

This alla kyng^t haþ of þe child gret^t wonder 1016
 And to þe Senatour he seyð anoon
 whos is þat faire child þat stondeþ 3onder
 I not^t quod he by god and by seynt Ion 1019
 A moder he haþ but fader haþ he non
 That I of woot^t and schortly in a stounde
 he told Alla how þat þis child was founde / 1022

But god woot quod þis senatour also 1023
 So vertuous a lyuer in my lyf^t
 Ne saugh I neuer such as sche nomo
 Of worldly womman mayden or of wyf^t 1026
 I dar wel say sche hadde leuer a knyf^t



SIX-TEXT 163
GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 189

Par fay þought he fantom is in myn heed 1037
I ought to deme of righful Iuggement
That in þe salte see my wyf is deed
And afterward he made þis argument 1040
what woot I wher crist hap hider sent
My wyf by see as wel as he hir sent
To my contre fro þennes þat sche went 1043

And after noon home wiþ þe senatour 1044
Goth alla for to see þis wonder chaunce
This Senatour doþ alla gret honour
And hastely he sent after Custaunce 1047
But trusteþ wel hir luste nat to daunce /
whan þat sche wiste wherfore was þat sonde
vnnethe on hir feet / sche mighte stonde / 1050

Whan alla saugh his wyf sayre he hir grette 1051
And wepte þat it was rewþe to se
For at þe firste look he on hir sette
he knew wel verrelly þat it was sche 1054
And for sorwe as domb sche stant as tre
So was hire herte schett in his distresse
whan sche remembred his vnkyndenesse 1057

Twis sche swowned in his owen sight 1058
he wept and him excuseþ pitously
Now god quod he and alle his halwes bright
So wisly on my soule haue mercy 1061
That of þoure harm as gulteles am I
As is maurice my sone so lyk þoure face
Elles þe feend me fecche out of þis place / 1064

Long was þe sobbyng and þe bitter payne 1065
Or þat here woful herte mighte cesse [lea/86]
Gret was þe pite for to here hem pleyne
Thurgh whiche playnt gan here wo encesse 1068

I pray þou alle my labour to relese
 I may not telle al here sorwe vnto morwe
 I am so wery for to speke of þe sorwe / 1071

But fynally whan þat the sop is wist 1072
 That alla gilteles was of hir woo
 I trowe an hundred tymes þey ben kist
 And such a blys is þer bitwix hem tuo 1075
 That saue þe ioye þat lasteþ eueremo
 Ther is noon lyk þat eny creature
 hap seyn or schal. whil þat þe world may dure 1078

Tho prayde sche hir housbond meekely 1079
 In þe relees of hir pytous pyne
 The he wold preye hir fader specially
 That of his maieste he wold enclyne 1082
 To vouche sauf som tyme with him to dyne
 Sche preyed him eek he schulde by no weye
 Vnto hir fader no word of hir seye 1085

Som men wold seye þat hir child Maurice 1086
 Dof his message vnto þe Emperour
 But as I gesse alla was nat so nyce
 To him þat is so souerayn of honour 1089
 As he þat is of cristes folk þe flour

Sent myn child but it is best to deme



SIX-TEXT 165

GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 191

The morwe cam and alla gan him dresse 1100
And eek^t his wyf þe Emperour for to meete
And for þey ryde in ioye and in gladnesse /
And whan sche saugh hir fader in þe streete 1103
Sche light^t a doun and falleþ him to feete [leaf 85, back]
Fader quod sche þour þonge child Constance
Is now ful clene ou of þour remembraunce 1106

I am þour doughter Custaunce quod sche 1107
That whilom þe haue sent^t vnto Surrye
It^t am I fader þat^t in þe salte see
was put^t alloon and dampned for to dye 1110
Now goode fader mercy I þou crye
Send me no more vnto noon hethenesse
But þanke my lord her of his kyndenesse 1113

Who can þe pytous Ioye telle al 1114
Bitwix hem þre siþ þey be þus I-mette
But of my tale make an ende I schal
The day goþ fast^t I wol no lenger lette 1117
This glade folk^t to dyner þey ben sette
In ioye and blys at mete I let^t hem dwelle
A þousand fold wel more þan I can telle . 1120

This child Maurice was sippen Emperour 1121
I-maad by þe pope and lyued cristenly
To cristes chirche dede he gret^t honour
But I let^t al his story passen by 1124
Of Custaunce is my tale specially
In olde Romain gestes men may fynde
Maurices lyf I bere it nought in mynde 1127

This kyng^t alla whan he his tyme say 1128
with his Constance his holy wyf so swete
To Engelond þey com þe righte way
wher as þey lyue in ioye and in quyetē 1131

But litel whil it last I ȝou biheete :
 Ioy of þis world // for tyme wol not abyde
 Fro day to night it chaungeth as þe tyde 1134

Who lyued euer in such delyt a day 1135
 That him ne mened eyþer his conscience
 Of Ire or talent / or som maner affray
 Enuy or pride or passioun or offence 1138
 I ne say but for þis ende þis sentence
 But litel whil in ioye or in plesaunce
 lasteþ þe blis / of alla with Custaunce 1141

For deth þat takþ of heigh & low his rent [leaf 85] 1142
 whan passed was a ȝeere as I gesse /
 Out of þis worlde / kyng' alla he hent
 For whom Custauns. haþ ful gret heuynesse / 1145
 Now let vs pray. þat god his soule blesse /
 And dame Custaunce fynally to say
 Toward þe toun of Rome goþ hir way 1148

To Rome is come þis nobil creature 1149
 And fynt hir freendes þer boþe hool & sound
 Now is sche skaped al hir auenture
 And whanne sche hir fader had I-founde 1152
 Doun on hir knees falleþ sche to grounde



SIX-TEXT 167
GROUP B. § 2. MAN OF LAW'S END-LINK. Harleian 7334. 193

O^{ur} Ost^r vpon his styrops stood anoon·
And seyde good men herkneth euerychoon·
This was a prifty tale for þe noones
Sir parissh prest^r quod he for goodes boones 1166
Tel out^r a tale / as was þy forward ȝore
I see wel þat ȝe lered men in lore
Can moche good by goddes dignete
The parsoun him answerde ben dicite 1170
what^r eyleþ þe man so synfully to swere
Our Ost^r answerd. O Iankyn be ȝe þere
I smel a loller in þe wynd quod he
Now good men quod our Oste / herkneþ me 1174
[A break of one line in the MS.]
For we schul haue a predicacioun
This loller wolde prechen vs heer som what /
Nay by my fader soule þat^r schal he nat/ 1178
Sayde the sompnour he schal heer nauȝt^r preche
he schal no gospel preche here ne teche [leaf 86, back]
we leuyn alle in þe grete god quod he
He wolde schewen som difficulte 1182
Or springen cokkil in our clene corn
And þerfor ost^r I warne þe byforn
My ioly body schal a tale telle
¶ Here endith þe man of^r lawe his tale.

GROUP D. FRAGMENT V.

§ 1. WIFE OF BATH'S PREAMBLE.

¶ Here bygynneth the prologe of the wyf of Bathe

Experiens þough noon auctorite
 were in þis world. it were ynough for me
 To speke of wo þat is in mariage
 For lordyngs syns I twelf 3er was of age 4
 I thank it god þat is eterne on lyue
 housbondes atte chirch dore. I haue had fyue
 For I so ofte might haue weddid be
 And alle were worpy men in here degre 8
 But me was taught nought longe tyme goon is
 That synnes crist went neuer but onys
 To weddyng in þe Cane of Galile
 That by þe same ensampul taught he me 12
 That I ne weddid schulde be but ones
 Herken such a scharp word for þe nones



Vppon þis noumbre diffinicioun
Men may diuine and glosen vp and doun
But wel I wot wipouten eny lye
God bad vs for to. wax and multiplie 28
That gentil tixt. can I wel vnderstonde
Ek wel I wot he sayd myn housebonde
Schuld lete fader and moder and folwe me [leaf 87]
But of no noumber mencion made he 32
Of Bygamy. or of Octogomye /
why schuld men speken of þat vilonye /
lo hier þe wise kyng Daun Salamon
I trow he hadde wyfes mo þan oon. 36
As wold god it were leful vnto me
To be refreissed half so oft as he
which gift of god had he for alle his wyuys
No man hap such þat in þe world on lyue is 40
God wot þis nobil king as to my wit
The firste night had many a mery fit/
with ech of hem so wel was him on lyue
I-blessid be god þat I haue weddid fyue 44
welcome þe sixte whan þat euer he schal
For sothe I nyl not kepe me chaast in al
whan myn housbond is fro þe world I-gon
Som cristne man schal wedde me anoon 48
For þan papostil saith þat I am fre
To wedde a goddis haf wher so it be
he saith þat to be weddid is no synne
Bet is to be weddid þan to brynne 52
what recchith me what folk sayn viloyne
Of schewith lameth or of Bigamy /
I wot wel abram was an holy man
And Iacob eek as ferforth as I can 56
And ech of hem had wyues mo than tuo
And many another holy man also
whan sawe ȝe in eny maner age
That highe god defendid mariage 60

By expres word I pray ȝow tellith me
 Or wher comaunded he virginite
 I wot as wel as ȝe it is no drede /
 Thapostil whan he spekp of maydenhede 64
 he sayd þat precept þer of had he noon
 Men may counseil a womman to be oon
 But counselyng nys no comaundement
 He put it in our owne Iuggement / 68
 For hadde god comaundid maydenhede / [leaf 87, back]
 Than had he dampnyd weddyng with þe dede
 And certes if þer were no seed I-sowe /
 Virginite · wher-on schuld it growe 72
 Poul ne dorst not comaunde atte lest
 A þing of which his maister ȝaf non hest
 The dart is set vpon virginite
 Cach who-so may who rennith best / let se 76
 But þis word is not taken of euery wight
 But þer as god list ȝiue it of his might/
 I wot wel þat þapostil was a mayde
 But napeles þough þat he wrot or sayde 80
 he wolde þat euery wight were such as he /
 Al nys but counseil vnto virginite
 And for to ben a wyf he ȝaf me leue
 Of indigence. so nys it to repreue 84
 to wedde me if þat my make deye
 withoute excepcioun of bigamy



SIX-TEXT 337
GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. **Harleian 7334.** 197

It likeþ hem to be clene in body and gost
Of myn estate I nyl make no bost
For wel 3e wot a lord in his houshold
He nath not euery vessel ful of gold 100
Som ben of tre and don her lord seruise
God clepeth folk to him in sondry wise
And euery hap of god a propre 3ifte
Som þis som þat as him likith to schifte 104
Virginite is gret perfeccioun
And continens eek wip gret deuocioun
But crist þat of perfeccioun is welle [leaf 88]
Bad nouȝt euery wight schuld go and selle 108
Al þat he had and ȝiue it to þe pore
And in such wise folwe him and his fore /
he spak to hem þat wolde lyue parfytly
But lordyngs by ȝour leue þat am not I 112
I wol bystowe þe flour of myn age /
In þe actes and in þe fruytes of mariage
Tel me also to what conclusioun
were membres maad of generacioun 116
And in what wise was a wight y-wrouȝt
Trustith right wel þay were nouȝt maad for nouȝt
Glose who-so wol and say boþe vp and doun
þat þay were made for purgacioun 120
Oure boþe vryn and þinges smale /
was eek to knowe a felme fro a male
And for non oþer cause say ȝe no
Thexperiens wot wel it is not so / 124
So þat þese clerke ben not with me wrope /
I say þis þat þay makid ben for boþe
þat is to say for office and for ease
Of engendrure þer we god nouȝt displease 128
why schuld men ellis in her bokes sette
That man schal ȝelde to his wif his dette
Now wher-wip schuld he paye his payement
If he ne used his sely instrument 132

Than were þay maad vp a creature
 To purge vryn and eek' for engendrure
 By I say not þat euery wight is holde
 That haþ such harneys as I to ȝow tolde 136
 To gon and vsen hem in engendrure
 Than schuld men take of chastite no cure
 Crist was a mayde and schapen as a man
 And many a seynt sin þat þe world bygan 140
 ȝit lyued þay euer in parfyt charite
 I nyl enuye no virginite
 let hem be bred of pured whete seed
 And let vs wyues eten barly breed 144
 And ȝet wiþ barly bred men telle can [leaf 98, back]
 Oure lord refreisschid many a man
 In such astaat as god haþ cleped ous
 I wil perseuer I am not precious 148
 In wyfhode I wil vse myn instrument
 Als frely as my maker haþ me it sent
 If I be daungerous god ȝiue me sorwe
 Myn housbond schal han it at eue and at morwe 152
 whan þat him list com forth and pay his dette
 An housbond wol I haue I wol not lette /
 which schal be boþe my dettour and my þral
 And haue his tribulacioun wiþ al 156
 vpon his fleissch whil þat I am his wyf
 I haue þe power duryng al my lif

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. **Harleian 7334** 199

Abyd quod sche my tale is not bygonne /
Nay þou schalt drinke of anoþer tonne
Er þat I go schal sauere wors þan ale
And whan þat I haue told þe forþ my tale 172
Of tribulacioun in mariage
I which I am expert/ in al myn age
This is to say my self haþ ben þe whippe
Than might þou chese wheþir þou wilt sippe 176
Of þilke tonne þat I schal abroche
Be war of it er þou to neigh approche
For I schal telle ensamples mo þan ten
who-so þat nyl be war by oþer men 180
By him schal oþer men corrected be
The same wordes writes protholome
Rede in his almagest and tak it þere [leaf 80]
Dame I wold pray 3ow. if þat 3oure wille were 184
Sayde þis pardoner as 3e bigan
Tel forth 3oure tale sparith for no man
Teche vs 3onge men of 3oure practike
Gladly quod sche syns it may 3ow like 188
But þat I pray to al þis companye /
If þat I speke after my fantasie
As takeþ nouȝt agreef of þat I say
For myn entente is nought but/ to play / ¶ Narrat 192
Now sires now wol I telle forth my tale
As euer mote I drinke wyn or ale
I schal say soþ of housbondes þat I hadde
As þre of hem were goode and tuo were badde 196
Tuo of hem were goode riche and olde
Vnnethes mighte þay þe statute holde
In which þat þay were bounden vnto me
3e wot wel what I mene of þis par de 200
As help me god I laugh whan þat I pinke
how pitously on night I made hem swynke /
But by my fay I told of it no stoor
Thay had me 3iue her lond and her tresor 204

Me nedith not no lenger doon diligence
 To wynne her loue or doon hem reuerence
 Thay loued me so wel by god aboute
 That I tolde no deynte of her loue 208
 A wys womman wol bysi hir euer in oon
 To gete hir loue þere sche hath noon
 But synnes I had hem holly in myn hond
 And synnes þay had me ȝeuē al her lond 212
 what schuld I take keep hem for to please
 But it were for my profyt and myn ease /
 I sette hem so on werke by my fay
 That many a night þay songen weylaway 216
 The bacoun was nought fet for hem I trowe
 That som men fecche in Essex an donmowe
 I gouerned hem so wel after my lawe
 That ech of hem ful blisful was and fawe 220
 To bringe me gaye þinges fro þe faire (leaf 88, back)
 þay were ful glad whan I spak to hem faire
 For god it woot I chidde hem spitously
 Now herkenþ how I bar me proprely 224
 ȝe wise wyues þat can vnderstonde
 þus scholde ȝe speke and bere hem wrongt on honde
 For half so boldely can þer no man
 Swere and lye as can a womman 228
 I say not by wyues þat ben wise
 But if it be whan þay ben mysauise
 Lwis a wif if hatt sche can hir good



SIX-TEXT 341
GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. 201

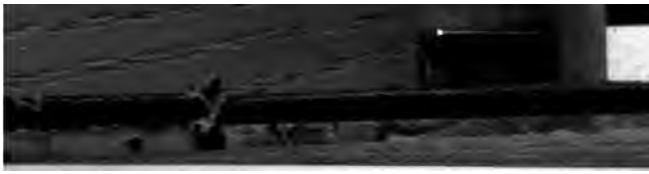
what' rounne 3e wip hir maydenes benedicite
Sir olde lecchour let' pi iapes be
And if I haue a gossib or a frend
wipouten gilt' pou chidest' as a fend 244
If' pat' I walk' and play vnto his hous
pou comest' hom as dronken as a mous
And prechist' on py bench wip euel pree.
pou saist' to me it is a gret' meschief' 248
To wedde a pouer womman for costage /
And if' pat' sche be riche and of' parage
Thanne saist' pou it/ is a tormentrie
To suffre hir pride and hir malencolie 252
And if' pat' sche be fair pou verray knaue
pou saist' pat' euery holour wol hir haue
Sche may no while in chastite abyde
That' is assayled þus on eche syde 256
pou saist' pat' som folk' desire vs for riches
Som for our schap and som for our fairnes
And some for pat' sche can synge and daunce [leaf 90]
And some for gentillesse or daliaunce 260
Som for hir handes and hir armes smale /
Thus goth al to þe deuel by pi tale
Thou saist' men may nought' kepe a castel wal
Hit' may so be biseged ouer al 264
And if' sche be foul. þanne pou saist' pat' sche
Coueitith euery man pat' sche may se /
For as a spaynel sche wol on him lepe
Til pat' sche fynde som man hire to chepe 268
Ne noon so gray a goos goþ in þe lake /
As sayest' pou wol be wipouten make /
And saist' it is an hard þing' for to wolde
Thing' pat' no man wol. his willes holde 272
Thus seistow lorel whan pou gost' to bedde
And pat' no wys man nedith for to wedde /
Ne no man pat' entendip vnto heuene
wip wilde punder dynt and fuyry leuene 276

Mote þi wicked necke be tobroke /
 þou saist þat droppynge hous and eek' smoke /
 And chydynge wyues maken men to fle
 Out of here oughne hous a benedicite 280
 what' eyllith such an old man for to chyde /
 þou seist we wyues woln oure vices hide /
 Til we ben weddid and þan we wil hem schewe
 wel may þat' be a prouerbe of a schrewe 284
 Thou saist þat' assen . oxen and houndes
 þay ben assayed at diuers stoundes
 Basyns lauours eek' er men hem bye
 Spones . stooles . and al such housbondrie 288
 Also pottes clopes and array
 But' folk' of wyues maken non assay
 Til þay ben weddid olde dotard schrewe .
 And þanne saistow we woln oure vices schewe 292
 þou saist also þat' it displeith me
 But' if þat' þou wilt praysen my beaute
 And but' þou pore alway in my face
 And clepe me faire dame in euery place 296
 And but' þou make a fest' on þilke day! [leaf 98, back]
 þat' I was born and make me freisch and gay
 And but' þou do my norice honoure
 And to my chamberer wipinne þy boure 300
 And to my fadres folk' and myn allies
 Thus saistow olde barel ful of lies



Thow schalt not bothe pough þou were wood
Be maister of my body and of my good
That oon þou schalt for-go maugre þin yen
what helpeth it on me tenqueren or espien 316
I trowe þou woldest lokke me in þy chest
Thou scholdist say. wif go wher þe lest
Take þoure disport I nyl lieue no talis
I know þow for a trewe wif dame alis 320
we loueþ no man þat takith keep or charge
wher þat we goon. we loue to be at large
¶ Of alle men I-blessed most he be
þe wise astrologe daun protholome 324
That saith þis prouerbe. in his almagest
Of alle men his wisdom is highest
þat rekkith not who hap þe world in honde
By þis prouerbe. þou schalt vnderstonde / 328
Have þou ynough what þar þe recch or care
How merily þat oper folkes fare
For certes olde dotard wiþ þour leue
þe schul haue queynte right ynough at eue 332
he is to gret a nygard þat wol verne ¶ nota
A man to light a candel at his lanterne
he schal haue neuer þe lasse light par de [lea/91]
Haue þou ynough þe thar not playne þe ¶ nota 336
Thou saist also þat if we make vs gay
with cloþing and with precious array
þat it is peril of our chastite
And ȝit wiþ sorwe þou most enforce þe 340
And say þese wordes in thapostles name
In abytt maad wiþ chastite and schame
þe wommen schuld apparayl þow quod he /
And nought wiþ tressed her. and gay perre / 344
As perles ne with golden cloþis riche
After þy text ne after þin rubriche
I wol nouȝt wirche as moche as a gnat
Thow saist þus þat I was lik a cat 348

But' who-so wolde senge the cattes skyn
 Than wold þe catte . duellen in his In
 And if þe cattes skyn be slyk' and gay
 Sche wol not' duelle in house half a day 352
 But' forth sche wil er eny day be dawet'
 To schewe hir skyn and goon a caterwrawet'
 This is to say if I be gay sir schrewe /
 I wol renne aboute my borel for to schewe 356
 Sir olde fool what' helpith þe to asprien
 þough þou praydest argus wiþ his hundrid yen
 To be my warde corps as he can best'
 In faith he schuld not' kepe me but' if me lest' 360
 3it' coupe I make his berd þough queynte he be
 þou saydest' eek' þat' þer ben þinges þre/
 The whiche þinges troublen al þis erþe
 And þat' no wight' may endure þe ferþe 364
 O leue sire schrewe iñu schorte þy lif'
 3it' prechestow and saist' an hateful wif'
 I-rekened is for oon of þese meschaunces
 Ben þer noon oþer of þy ressemblaunces 368
 þat' 3e may liken 3oure parables vnto
 But' if a cely wyf be oon of þo
 Thow likenest' wommannes loue to helle
 To bareyn lond þer water may not' duelle 372
 Thou likenest' it/ also to wilde fuyr [leaf 91, back]
 The more it brenneth þe more it' hap' desir



SIX-TEXT 345

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. *Harleian* 7334. 205

Ful gultales by goddes swete pyne
For as an hors I couþe boþe bite and whyne
I couþe pleyne and ȝet I was in þe gilt
Or elles I hadde often tyme be spilt 388
who-so first comeþ to þe mylle first grynt
I pleynd first so was oure werre stynt/
Thay were ful glad to excuse hem ful blyue
Of þing þat þay neuer agilt in her lyue 392
And wenchis wold I beren hem on honde
whan þat/ for seek þay might vnnethes stonde
ȝit tykeled I his herte for þat he
wende I had of him so gret/ chierete 396
I swor þat al my walkyng out a nyght
was for to asprie wenchis þat he dight
vnder þat colour had I many a mirthe
For al such witte is ȝeuen vs of birthe 400
Deceipt wepyng. spynnyng. god haþ ȝiue
To wymmen kyndely whil þay may lyue
And þus of o thing I auaunte me /
And þende I haþ þe bet in ech degre 404
By sleight or fors or of som maner þing
As by continuel murmur or chidyng
Namly on bedde hadden þay meschaunce
Ther wold I chide and do hem no plesaunce 408
I wold no lenger in þe bed abyde /
If þat I felt his arm ouer my syde
Til he had maad his raunsoun vnto me [tra/ 92]
Than wold I suffre him doon his nycete 412
And þerfor euery man þis tale telle
wynne who-so may for al is for to selle
wiþ empty hond men may noon haukes lure
For wynnyng wold I al his lust endure 416
And make me a feyned appetyt/
And ȝit in bacoun had I neuer delyt
That made me þat euer I wold hem chyde
For þough þe pope had seten hem bisyde 420

I nold not spare hem at her oughne bord
 For by my troupe I quyt hem word for word
 Als help me verray god omnipotent /
 þough I right now schuld make my testament 424
 I owe hem nought a word þat it nys quitte
 I brought it so aboute by my witte
 þat þay most zeue it vp as for þe best
 Or ellis had we neuer ben in rest 428
 For þough he loket as a grym lyoun
 3it schuld he fayle of his conclusioun
 Than wold I say. now goode leef tak keep
 how mekly lokith wilkyn oure scheep 432
 Com ner my spouse let me ba þy cheke
 3e schulde be al pacient and meke
 And haue a swete spiced consciens
 Sippen 3e preche so of lopes paciens 436
 Suffreth alway syns 3e so wel can preche
 And but 3e do certeyn we schul 3ow teche /
 That it is fair to haue a wyf in pees
 On of vs tuo mot bowe douteles 440
 And sippen man is more resonable
 Than womman is. 3e moste be suffrable
 what aylith 3ow. þus for to grucche and grone
 Is it for 3e wold haue my queynt allone / 444
 why tak it al. lo haue it euery del
 Peter I schrewe 3ow but 3e loue it wel



SIX-TEXT 347

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. 207

how coupe I daunce to an harpe smale
And synge y-wys as eny nightyngale
whan I had dronke a draught of swete wyn
Metillius þe foule cherl þe swyn 460
That with a staf byraft his wyf hir lyf
For sche drank wyn þough I had ben his wif
Ne schuld nouȝt haue daunted me fro drink
And after wyn on venus most I þink 464
For also siker as cold engendrith hayl
A likorous mouth most haue a licorous tail
In wymmen vinolent is no defens
This knowen lecchours by experiens 468
But lord crist whan þat it remembrith me
vpon my ȝouthe and on my iolite
It tikelith me aboute myn herte roote
Vnto þis day it doþ myn herte boote 472
That I haue had my world as in my tyme
But age allas þat al wol enuename
Haþ me hireft my beaute and my pith
Let go far wel. þe deuyl go þer wip 476
The flour is goon þer nis no more to telle
The bran as I best can now mot I selle
But ȝit to be mery wol I fonde /
Now wol I telle of my fourt housbonde 480
I say I had in herte gret despyt
That he of eny oþer had delit
But he was quit/ by god and by seint Ioce
I made him of þe same woode a croce 484
Nought of my body in no foul manere
But certeynly I made folk such chere
That in his owne grees I made him frie [Aag/83]
For anger and for ialousie 488
By god in erþe I was his purgatory
For which I hope his soule be in glory
For god it wot. he sat ful stille and song
whan þat his scho ful bitterly him wrong 492

Ther was no wight sauf god and he þat wist/
 In many wyse how sore I him twist
 I sayde whan I cam fro Ierusalem
 And lith I-graue vnder þe roode bem 496
 Al is his tombe nought so curious
 As was þe sepulcre of him Darius
 which þat appellus wrought so subtily
 It nys but wast to burie him preciously 500
 let him far wel god giue his soule rest
 he is now in his graue and in his chest
 ¶ Now of my fifte housbond wol I telle /
 God let his soule neuer come in helle / 504
 And ȝit was he to me þe moste schrewe /
 That fele I on my ribbes alle on rewe /
 And euer schal vnto myn endyng day
 But in oure bed he was so freisch and gay 508
 And þer with al so wel he coupe me glose /
 whan þat he wolde haue my bele chose /
 That þough he had me bete on euery boon
 he coupe wynne my loue right anoon 512
 I trowe I loued him beste for þat he
 was of his loue daungerous to me
 we wymmen han if þat I schal nouȝt lye
 In þis matier a queynte fantasie 516
 wayte what þyng we may not lightly haue
 Ther after wol we sonnest crie and craue



GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. SIX-TEXT 349
209

wip my gossib duellyngt in oure toun
God haue hir soule. hir name was Alisoun
Sche knew myn herte and my priuite
Bet þan oure parisch prest so mot I the / 532
To hir bywreyed I my counseil al
For had myn housbond pissed on a wal
Or don a þing þat schuld haue cost his lif
To hir and to anoþer worpy wyf 536
And to my neece which I loued wel
I wold haue told his counseil euery del
And so I did ful ofte god it woot
That made his face ofte reed and hoot 540
For verry schame. and blamyd himself þat he /
had told to me so gret a priuete
And so byfel þat oones in a lent
So ofte tyme to my gossib I went 544
For euer ȝit I loued to be gay
And for to walk in march aueril and may
From hous to here sondry talis
þat Iankyn Clerk and my gossib dame alis 548
And I my self in to þe felde went
Myn housbond was at londone al þat lent
I had þe bettir leysir for to pleye
And for to see and eek for to be seye 552
Of lusty folk. what wist I wher my grace
was schapen for to be or in what place
Therefore I made my visitaciouns
To vigiles and to processiouns 556
To prechings eek and to þis pilgrimages
To pleyes miracles and mariages
And wered vpon my scarlet gytes
þese wormes þese moughtes ne þese mytes 560
Vpon my perel fretith hem neuer a deel
And wostow why. for þay were vsed wel
Now wol I telle forþ what happid me [leaf 94]
I say þat in þe felde walkid we 564

350 SIX-TEXT

210 GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334.

Til trewely we had such daliaunce
This Clerk' and I þat of my puruyauunce
I spak' to him and sayde how þat he
If I were wydow schulde wedde me 568
For certeynly I say for no bobaunce
3it was I neuer wipouten purueyaunce
Of mariage ne of no þinges eeke
I hold a mouses hert' not' worþ a leek' 572
That' hap' but' oon hole to starte to
And if þat' faile þan is al I-do
[.
. 576
.
.
. 580
.
.
.
.
. no gap in the MS.] 584
But' now sir let' me se what' I schal sayn
A ha by god I haue my tale agayn
¶ whan þat' my fourþe housbond was on bere
I wept' algate and made a sory cheere 588



SIX-TEXT 351

GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. 211

And I was fourty I schal say þe sothe
 But ȝit I had alway a Coltis tope
 Gattothid I was and þat bycom me wel
 I had þe prynte of seynt Venus sel 604
 [.

 608

 no gap in the MS.] 612
 Myn ascent was taur. and mars þer inne /
 Allas alas þat euer loue was synne
 I folwed ay myn inclinacioun
 By vertu of my constillacioun 616
 That made me þat I coupe nouȝt wiþdrawe /
 My chambre of venus from a good felawe /
 [. 620

 624

 no gap in the MS.]
 what schuld I say but at þe monthis ende [leaf 94, back]
 This ioly clerk I ankyn þat was so heende 628
 Hap weddid me with gret solempnitee
 And to him ȝaf I al þe londe and fee
 That euer was me ȝiue þer bifore
 But aftirward repented me ful sore 632
 he nolde suffre noþing of my list
 By god he smot me oones wiþ his fist
 For I rent oones out of his book a lef
 That of þat strok myn eere wax al deaf 636

Styborn I was as is a leones
 And of my tonge a verray iangleres
 And walk' I wold as I had don biforn
 Fro hous to hous al þough he had it sworn 640
 For which he ofte tyme wolde preche
 And me of olde Romayn gestes teche /
 How he Simplicius gallus left' his wyf'
 And hir forsok' for terme of al his lyf' 644
 Nought' but for open heedid he hir say
 lokyng' out' at' his dore vpon a day
 Anoper Romayn told he me by name
 That' for his wyf' was at' a somer game 648
 wipout' his wityng'. he forsok' hir eeke
 And þanne wold he vpon his book' seeke
 That' ilke prouerbe of Ecclesiaste
 wher he comaundith and forbedith faste 652
 Man schal not' suffre. his wyf' go roule aboute /
 Than wold he say right' þus wipouten doute
 ¶ Who þat' buyldith his hous al of salwes
 And priketh his blynde hors ouer the falwes 656
 And suffrith his wyf'. to go seken halwes
 Is worþy to ben honged on þe galwes
 But' al for nought' I sette nought' an hawe
 Of his prouerbe. ne of his olde sawe 660
 Ne I wolde not' of him corrected be
 I hate him þat' my vices tellith me.
 And so doon mo. god it' wot' þan I.
 This made him wip me wood al outerly 664
 I nolde not' forbere him in no cas [leaf 95]
 Now wol I say ȝow soth by seint' Nicholas
 why þat' I rent' out' of þe book' a leef'
 For which he smot' me þat' I was al def' 668
 he had a book' þat' gladly night' and day
 For his desport' he wolde rede alway
 he clepyd it' Valelye and theofrast'
 At' which book' he lough' alway ful fast' 672



SIX-TEXT 353
GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. **Harleian 7334.** 213

And eek' þay say þer was som tyme at Rome
A clerk' a Cardynal pat' heet seint Ierome
That' made a book' aȝens Iouynyan
In which book' eeke þer was terculan 676
Crisippus tortula and eek' helewys
That' was abbas not' fer fro paris
And eek' þe parablis of' Salamon
Ouydes art' and bourdes many oon 680
And alle þese werē bounde in oo volume
And euery night' and day was his custume
whan he had leysir and vacacioun
From oþer worldes occupacioun 684
To reden in þis book' of' wikked wyues
he knew of' hem mo legendes and lyues
þan ben of' goode wyues in þe bible
For trustith wel it is an impossible 688
That' any clerk' schal speke good of' wyues
But if it be of' holy seintes lyues
Ne of' noon oþer wyfes neuer þe mo
who peyntid þe leoun tel me who 692
By god if' wommen hadde writen stories
As clerkes haue wiþinne her oratories
Thay wold haue write of' men more wickidnes
Than al þe mark' of' Adam may redres 696
These children of' mercury and of' venus
Ben in her werkyng' ful contrarius
Mercury louith wisdom and science
And venus loueth ryot' and dispense 700
And for her diuers disposicioun
Ech fallith in oþeres exaltacioun
And þus god wot' mercury is desolate [leaf 96, back]
In pisses wher venus is exaltate 704
And venus faylith wher Mercury is reysed
Therfor no womman of' clerkes is preised
The clerk' whan he is old and may nouȝt do
Of' venus werkis is not' worþ a scho 708

Than sit he doun and writ in his dotage
 That' wommen can nought' kepe here mariage
 But' now to purpos why I tolde þe
 That' I was beten for a leef' par de 712
 vpon a night' Iankyn þat' was oure sire
 Rad on his book' as he sat' by þe fyre
 Of' Eua first' þat' for hir wikkidnes
 was al mankynde brought' to wrecchednes 716
 [.

 *no gap in the MS.*] 720
 Tho rad he me how Sampson left' his heris
 Slepynge his lemman kut' it' wip hir scheris
 Thurgh which tresoun lost' he boþe his yen
 Tho rad he me if' þat' I schal not' lyen 724
 Of' Ercules and of' his deianyre
 That' caused him to sette himself' on fuyre
 No þing' forþat' he þe care and wo
 þat' Socrates had wip his wyues tuo 728
 How exantipa cast' pisse vpon his heed
 þis seely man sat' stille as he were deed
 he wyped his heed no more durst' he sayn
 But' er þunder stynte þer comeþ rayn 732
 Of' phasipha þat' was þe queen Creete .
 For schrewednes him þought' þe tale sweete .
 Fy spek' no more it' is a grisly þing'
 For her horribil lust' and her likyng' 736
 Of' Clydemystra for hir leccherie
 That' falsly made hir housbond for to dye
 he rad it' with ful good deuocioun
 he told me eek' for what' occasioun 740
 Amphiores at' Thebes left' his lif'
 Myn housbond had a legend of' his lyf'
 Exiphilem þat' for an ouche of' gold
 haþ' prively vnto þe Grekes told 744



wher þat hir housbond hyd him in a place [leaf 96]
 For which he had at thebes sory grace
 Of lyma told he me and of lueye
 Thay boþe made her housbondes for to dye / 748
 That oon for loue · þat' oþer was for hate
 Lyma hir housbond on an euen late
 Empoysond hath. for þat' sche was his fo
 Lucia licorous loued hir housbond so 752
 For þat' he schuld alway vpon hir þink'
 Sche ȝaf him such a maner loue-drink'
 That' he was deed er it was by þe morwe
 And þus algates housbondes had sorwe 756
 Than told he me how oon latumyus
 Compleigned vnto his felaw arrius
 That' in his gardyn grewed such a tre
 On which he sayde how þat' his wyues þre / 760
 Honged hem selfe / for herte despitous
 O leue broþer. quod þis arrious
 ȝif me a plont' of þilke blessid tre
 And in my gardyn schal it plantid be 764
 Of latter date of wyues hap he red
 That' som han slayn her housbondes in her bed
 And let her lecchour dighten al þe night'
 whil þat þe corps lay in þe flor vpright' 768
 And som han dryuen nayles in her brayn
 whiles þay sleepe and þus þey han hem slayn
 Som haue hem ȝiue poysoun in her drink'
 he spak' more harm þan herte may byþynk' 772
 And þer wiþ al he knew mo prouerbes
 þan in þis world þer growen gres or herbes
 Better is quod he thyn habitacioun
 Be with a leoun or a foul dragoun 776
 Than with a womman vsyng' for to chyde
 Better is quod he hihe in þe roof abyde
 Than wiþ a wikked womman down in a hous
 Thay ben so wicked and so contrarious 780

þay haten þat her housbondes louen ay
 He sayd a womman cast hir schame away
 whan sche cast of hir smokt. and forþer mo [leaf 98, back]
 A fair womman but sche be chast also 784
 Is lyk a gold ryngt in a sowes nose
 who wolde wene or who wolde suppose /
 The wo þat in myn herte was and pyne
 And whan I saugh he nolde neuer fyne 788
 To reden on þis cursed bookt al night
 And sodeinly þre leues haue I plight
 Out of þis booke þat he had and eeke
 I with my fist so took him on þe cheeke 792
 That in oure fuyr he fel bakward adoun
 And he vpstert as doþ a wood leoun
 And wiþ his fist he smot me on þe hed
 That in þe floor I lay as I were deed 796
 And whan he saugh so stille þat I lay
 he was agast and wold haue fled away
 Til atte last out of my swown I brayde
 O hastow slayn me false þef I sayde 800
 And for my lond þus hastow mourdrid me
 Er I be deed ȝit wol I kisse þe
 And ner he cam and knelith faire a doun
 And sayde deere suster alisoun 804
 As help me god I schal þe neuer smyte
 That I haue doon it is þiself to wite /
 Forȝine it me and þat I be biseke



SIX-TEXT 357
GROUP D. § 1. WIFE'S PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. 217

And whan I hadde geten vnto me
By maistry al þe souereynete
And þat he sayde myn owne trewe wif
Do as þe list in term of al þy lif 820
kepe þyn honour and kep eek' myn estat [leaf 97]
And after þat day we neuer had debat'
God help me so I was to him as kynde
As eny wyf fro Denmark' vnto Inde 824
And also trewe was he vnto me
I pray to god þat sitte in mageste
So blesse his soule for his mercy deere
Now wol I say my tale if 3e wol heere 828

[No gap in the MS.]

[The Wrangle between the Summoner and Friar.]

¶ The Frere lough when he had herd al þis ¶ Here makith þe
Now dame quod he so haue I ioye or blis frere an interpre-
This is a long' preambel¹ of a tale tacion of þe wyfes
And whan þe Sompnour herd þe frere gale tale /
Lo quod þe sompnour for goddes armes tuo (1 or paramel)
A frer wol entremet' him euermo 832
lo goode men a flie and eek' a frere
woln falle in euery diassehe and matiere 836
what' speket' þou of. perambulacioun
what' ambil. or trot. or pees or go sit doun
Thou lettest' oure disport' in þis matere
3e woltow so sir sompnour quod þe frere 840
Now by my fay I schal er þat I go
Telle of a sompnour such a tale or tuo
That' alle þe folk/ schuln laughen in þis place /
Now ellis frere I byschrew þy face 844
Quod þis Sompnour and I byschrewe me
But / if I telle tales tuo or þre
Of freres er I come to Sydingborne
þat I schal make þin herte for to morne 848

For wel I wot þy paciens is goon
Oure hoste cride pees and þat anoon
And sayde let þe womman telle hir tale /
þe fare as folkes þat dronken ben of ale 852
Do dame tel forth þour tale and þat is best/
Al redy sir quod sche right as þou lest/
If I haue licence of þis worthy frere
þis dame quod he tel forþ and I schal heere 856

[Break of two lines in the MS.]



SIX-TEXT 359
GROUP D. § 2. WIFE OF BATH'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 219

[leaf 97, back]

I N olde dayes of þe kyng ^r arthour	¶ Narrat	
Of which þat ^r britouns speken gret ^r honour		
Al was þis lond fulfilled of fayrie		
The elf ^r queen wiþ hir ioly compaignye		860
Daunced fuloft ^r in many a grene mede		
This was þe old oppynyoun as I rede		
I speke of many hundrid ȝer ago		
But ^r now can no man see noon elues mo		864
For now þe grete charite and prayeres		
Of lymytours and oþer holy freres		
That sechen euery lond and euery streem		
As thik ^r as motis in þe sonne beam		868
Blessynge halles. chambres. kichenes. boures		
Citees. burghes. castels. hihe and toures.		
Thropes. bernes. schepnes. and dayeries		
That makith þat ^r þer ben no fayeries		872
For þer as wont ^r was to walken an elf ^r		
Ther walkith noon. but ^r þe lymytour himself ^r		
In vndermeles and in morwenynges		
And saith his matyns and his holy þinges		876
As he goþ in his lymytacioun		
wommen may go sauify vp and doun		
In euery bussch or vnder euery tre		
þer is non oþer incumbent ^r but/ he /		880
And ne wol but ^r doon hem dishonour		
And so bifel it / þat ^r þis king ^r arthour		
had in his hous a lusty bachelor		
That ^r on a day com rydyng ^r fro ryuer		884

And happed al alone as sche was born
 he saugh a mayde walkyng him byforn
 Of which mayden anon mangre hir heed
 By verray fors byraft hir maydenhed 888
 For such oppressioun was such clamour
 And such pursuyte vnto kyng arthour
 That dampned was þe knyght and schuld be ded
 By cours of lawe and schuld haue lost his heed 892
 Parauenture such was þe statut þo
 But þat þe queen and oþer ladys mo
 So longe preyeden þat þe kyng of grace [leaf 90]
 Til he his lif hap graunted in þe place 896
 And þat him to þe queen al at hir wille
 To chese wethir sche wolde him saue or spille
 The queen thanked þe kyng wip al hir might
 And after þus sche spak vnto þe knight 900
 whan þat sche saugh hir tyme vpon a day
 Thow stondest yet quod he in such array
 þat of þy lyf hastow no sewerte
 I graunte þy lif if þou canst telle me 904
 what þing is it þat wommen most desiren
 Be war and keep þy nek bon fro þe Iren
 And if þou canst not tellen it anon
 3et wol I 3iue þe leue for to goon 908
 A twelf month and a day it for to lere
 An ansvar suffisaunt in þis matiere



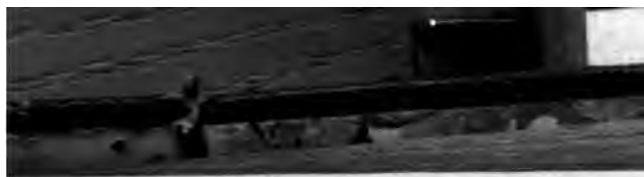
To lerne what þing' wommen louen most
But he ne couþe arryuen in no cost'
wher as he mighte fynde þis matiere
To þese þinges accordyng' in fere 924
Somme sayden womme louen best' richesse
Somme sayde honour and some sayde iolynesse
Somme sayde riche array some sayden lust' on bedde
And ofte tyme to be wydow and wedde 928
Somme sayden oure herte is most' I-eased
whan we ben y-flaterid and y-pleased
He goþ ful neigh þe soth I wil not lye
A man schal wynne vs best' wiþ flaterye 932
And with attendaunce and busynesse [leaf 98, back]
Ben we y-limed boþe more and lesse /
And somme sayen þat' we louen best'
For to be fre and to doon as vs lest' 936
And þat' no man repreue vs of' oure vice
But' say þat' we ben wys and no þing' nyce
For trewely þer is noon of' vs alle
If eny wight' wold claw vs on þe galle / 940
That' we nyl like for he saith vs soþ
Assay and he schal fynd it' þat' so doþ
For be we neuer so vicious wiþinne
we schuln be holde wys and clene of' synne 944
And somme sayn þat' gret' delit' han we
For to be holden stabil and secre /
And in oon purpos stedfastly to duelle /
And nought' bywreye þing' þat' men vs telle / 948
But' þat' tale is not' . worth a rakes stele
Par dy we wymmen . can right' no þing' hele
witnes on myda wil 3e here þe tale /
Ouyd among' his oþer þinges smale 952
Sayde Myda had . vnder his lange heris
Growyng' vpon his heed tuo asses eeris
The whiche vice he hid as he best' might
Ful subtilly fro euery mannes sight 956

That saue his wyf þer wist of þat no mo
 he loued hir most^t. and trusted hir also /
 he prayed hir. þat to no creature
 sche schulde tellen. of his disfigure / 960
 Sche swor him nay for al þis world to wynne
 Sche nolde do þat vilony or synne
 To make hir housbond haue so foul a name
 Sche wold not tel it for hir oughne schame 964
 But natheles hir þoughte þat sche dyde
 That sche so long a counseil scholde hyde
 hir þought it swal. so sore about / hir hert
 That needely som word hir most astert 968
 And sins sche dorst not tel it vn-to man
 Doun to a marreys faste by sche ran
 Til sche cam þer hir herte was on fuyre [leaf 99]
 And as a bytoure bumblyth in þe myre 972
 Sche layd hir mouth vnto þe water doun
 Bywrey me not þou watir with þi soun
 Quod sche to þe I telle it and no mo
 Myn housbond hap long asse eeris tuo 976
 Now is myn hert al hool now is it oute
 I might no lenger kepe it out of doute
 Her may 3e se þeigh we a tyme abyde
 3et out it moot we can no counseil hyde 980
 The remenaunt of þe tale if 3e wil here /
 Redith ovid. and þer 3e mow it leere
 ¶ This knight of which my tale is specially
 whan þat he saugh he might nouȝt come þerby 984
 This is to say what wommen louen most
 wipinne his brest ful sorwful was þe gost/
 But hom he goþ. he might no lenger sojourne
 The day was come þat homward most he torne 988
 And in his way it hapnyd him to ride
 In al his care vnder a forest side
 wher as he saugh vpon a daunce go
 Of ladys four and twenty and 3it mo 992



Toward þis ilke daunce I drough ful 3erne /
In hope þat som wisdom schuld I lerne /
But certeynly er I com fully þere
Vanysshid was þis daunce he nyste where / 996
No creature saugh he þat bar lif
Sauf on þe greene he saugh sittynge a wyf /
A fouler wight þer may no man deuysen
A3ens þe knight þis olde wyf gan ryse 1000
And sayder sir knight heer forth lith no way
Tel me what. 3e seekyn by 3our fay
Par aduventure. it may þe better be /
Thise olde folk can mochil þinge quod sche 1004
My lieue modir quod þis knight certayn
I am but ded but if þat I can sayn
what þinge is it. þat wommen most desire
Couþe 3e me wisse. I wold wel quyt 3our huyre / 1008
Plight me þy trouth. her in myn hond quod sche [199, 64]
The nexte þinge þat I require þe
Thou schalt it doo if it be in þy might
And I wol telle it þe er it be night 1012
haue her my troupe quod þe knight I graunte
Thanne quod sche I dar me wel anaunte
þy lif is sauf for I wol stonde þer by
vpon my lif þe queen wol say as I 1016
let se which is þe proudest of hem alle
þat werith on a couerchief or a calle
þat dar say nay of þinge I schal þe teche
let vs go forth wipouten more speche 1020
Tho rowned sche a pistil in his eere
And bad him to be glad and haue no fere
whan þay ben comen to þe court þis knight
Sayd he had holde. þat day þat he hight 1024
Al redy was his answer as he sayde
Ful many a noble wyf and many a mayde
And many a wydow for þat þay ben wyse
The queen herself sittynge as a Iustise 1028

Assemblid ben his answer for to hiere
 And afterward þis knight was bode appiere
 To euery wight comaundid was cilençe
 And þat þe knight schuld telle in audience 1032
 what þing þat worldly wommen louen best
 ¶ þe knight ne stood not stille as doþ a best
 But to þe questioun anon answerde
 wiþ manly voys þat al the court it herde 1036
 My liege lady generally quod he
 wommen desiren to haue soueraynte
 As wel ouer hir housbond as ouer hir loue
 And for to be in maystry him aboue 1040
 This is þe most desir þough ȝe me kille /
 Doþ as ȝow list I am heer at ȝour wille
 In al þe court ne was þer wyf ne mayde
 Ne wydow þat contraried þat he sayde 1044
 But sayden he. was worpy haue his lif
 And wiþ þat word vp start þat olde wif
 which þat þe knight saugh sittynge on þe grene [leaf 100]
 Mercy quod sche my soueraine lady queene 1048
 Er þat ȝour court departe doþ me right
 I taughte þis answer vnto þe knight
 For which he plichte me his troupe there
 The firste þing þat I wold him requere 1052
 he wold it do if it lay in his might
 Bifore þe court þen pray I þe sir knight



That vnder erthe is graue or lith aboute
But I þy wife. were and eek þy loue
My loue quod he. nay nay. my dampnacioun
Allas þat eny of my nacioun 1068
Schuld euer so foule disparagid be
But/ al for nought. þe ende is þis þat he
Constreigned was. he needes most hir wedde
And takith his wyf and goþ wiþ hir to bedde 1072
¶ Now wolden som men say par aduenture
That for my negligece I do no cure
To telle 3ow þe ioye and tharray
That at þat fest was maad þat ilke day 1076
To which þing schortly answeren I schal
And say þer nas feste ne ioy at al
Ther nas but heuynes and mochil sorwe
For priuely he weddyd hir in a morwe 1080
And alday huddle him. as doþ an oule
So wo was him his wyf loked so foule
Gret was þe wo. þe knight had in his þought
whan he was with his wyf on bedde brought 1084
He walwith and he torneth to and fro [leaf 100, back]
his olde wyf lay smylyng euer mo
And sayd o deere housbond benedicite¹ [1 MS. bñdicite]
Fareth euery knight wiþ his wyf as 3e / 1088
Is þis þe lawe of king arthures hous
Is euery knight of his þus daungerous
I am 3our oughne loue / and 3our wyf
I am sche þat hath sauýd 3our lyf 1092
And certes ne dede I 3ow neuer vnright
why fare 3e þus with me þe firste night
3e fare lik a man þat had left his wit/
what is my gult. for godes loue tel me it 1096
And it schal be amendid if þat I may
Amendid quod þis knight allas nay nay
It wol nought ben amendid neuer mo
Thow art so lopy and so old also 1100

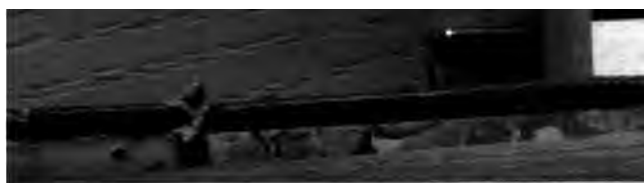
And þerto comen of so lowh a kynde
 That litil wonder is þough I walwe and wynde
 So wolde god myn herte wolde brest'
 Is þis quod sche þe cause of þour vnrest' 1104
 3e certeynly quod he no wonder is
 Now sire quod sche I couþe amende al þis
 If þat me list' er it' were dayes þre /
 So wel 3e mighte bere 3ow to me 1108
 But' for 3e speken of such gentilesse
 As is descendit' out' of old richesse
 Therfor schuld 3e. ben holden gentil men
 Such arrogaunce. is not' worth an hen 1112
 lok who þat' is most' vertuous alway
 Priue and pert' and most' entendip ay
 To do þe gentil dedes þat' he can
 Tak' him for þe grettest' gentil man 1116
 Crist' wol we clayme of him oure gentilesse
 Nought' of oure eldres for our gret' richesse
 For þough þey 3iue vs al her heritage
 For which we clayme to be of high parage 1120
 3it' may þay not' biqueþe for no þing'
 To noon of vs so vertuous lyuyng'
 That' made hem gentil men y-callid be [leaf 101]
 And bad vs folwe hem in such degre 1124
 wel can þe wyse poet' of Florence
 That' hatte Daunt' speke of þis sentence /



SIX-TEXT 367
GROUP D. § 2. WIFE OF BATH'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 227

To don of gentilesce þe fair office
Thay might nought doon no vileny or vice
Tak' fuyr and ber it in þe derkest' hous
Bitwixe þis. and þe mount Cankasous 1140
And let' men schit'. þe dores and go þenne
3it' wol þe fuyr as fair and lighte brenne
As twenty þousand men might' it biholde
his office naturel ay wol it holde 1144
vp peril on my lif til þat' it dye
her / may 3e se wel how þat' gentrye
Is nought' annexid to possessioun
Sithins folk' ne doon her operacioun 1148
Alway as doth þe fuyr lo in his kynde
For god it wot' men may ful often fynde
A lordes sone do schame and vilonye
And he þat' wol haue pris of' his gentrie 1152
For he was boren of' a gentil hous
And had his eldres noble and vertuons
And nyl himselue. doo no gentil dedis
Ne folw his gentil aunceter þat' deed is 1156
he is nought' gentil be he duk' or erl.
For vileyn synful deedes makeþ a cherl.
For gentilnesse nys but' renome
Of þin auncestres for her heigh bounte 1160
which is a straunge þing' to þy persone [leaf 101, back]
Thy gentilesce comeþ fro god alloone
Than comp' oure verray gentilesse of' grace
It' was no þing' biquethe vs wiþ oure place 1164
Thinkeþ how nobil as saith valerius
was þilke tullius hostilius
That' out of' pouert / ros to high noblesse
Redith Senek/. and redith eek/ Boece. 1168
Ther schuln 3e se expresse þat' no dred is
þat' he is gentil þat' doþ gentil dedis
And þerfor lieue housbond I conclude
Al were it that' myn auncetres wer rude 1172

3it may þe highe god and so hope I
 Graunte me grace to lyue vertuously
 Than am I gentil whan þat I bygynne
 To lyue vertuously and weyuen synne 1176
 And þer as 3e of povert' me repreue
 The heighe god on whom þat we bilieue
 In wilful pouert' ches to lese his lif
 And certes euery man . mayden or wif 1180
 May vnderstonde þat Ihe heuen king
 Ne wold not chese . a vicious lyuynge
 Glad pouert' is an honest þing certayn
 This wol Senek' and oþer clerkes sayn 1184
 who þat holt him payd of his pouert'
 I hold him riche . al had he nouȝt a schert'
 he þat coueitith is a pore wight
 For he wold haue þat is not in his might 1188
 But he þat nouȝt hap . ne coueyteth nouȝt/ to haue
 Is riche al pough 3e hold him but a knaue
 Verray pouert' is synne proprely
 Iuuenal saith of pouert' merily 1192
 ¶ The pore man whan he goþ by þe way
 Bifore þe theues he may synge and play
 Pouert' is hateful and as I gesse /
 A ful gret brynger out of busynesse / 1196
 A gret amender eek of Sapiens
 To him þat takith it in paciens
 Pouert' is his al though it come alonge



were in no book^t 3e gentils of^t honour
Sayn þat^t men schuld an old wight doon fauour
And clepe him fader for 3our gentillesse
And certes I schal fynden as I gesse 1212
Than drede 3ow nought^t to ben a cokewold
Now þer þat^t 3e sayn I am foul and old
For filthe and elde also mot^t I the
Ben grete wardeyns vpon chastite / 1216
But^t natheles sith I knowe 3our delyt^t
I schal fulfille 3oure worldly appetyt^t
Chese now quod sche oon of^t þese þinges tweye
To haue me foul and old til þat I deye 1220
And be to 3ow a trewe humble wyf^t
And neuer 3ow displease in al my lyf^t
Or elles 3e wol haue me 3ong^t and fair
And take 3our auenture of^t þe repair 1224
þat^t schal be to 3our hous by cause of^t me
Or in som oþer place may wel be
Now chese 3our seluen whethir þat^t 3ow likith
This knight^t auysith him and sore sikith 1228
But^t atte last^t he sayd in þis manere
My lady and my loue. and my wif so deere
I putte me in 3our wyse gouernaunce
Chesith 3our self which may be most^t pleasaunce 1232
And most^t honour to 3ow and me also
I do no fors þe wheþer of^t þe tuo
For as 3ow likith it^t suffisith me
Than haue I gete of^t 3ow þe maystry quod sche / 1236
Sith I may gouern and chese as me list/ [leaf 102, back]
3e certis wyf^t quod he I hold it best^t
kys me quod sche we ben no lenger wroþe
For by my troupe. I wol be to 3ow boþe 1240
This is to say 3e boþe fair and good
I pray to god þat^t I mot^t sterue wood
But/ I be to 3ow also good and trewe
As euer was wyf^t sippen þe world was newe 1244

And but/ I be to morow as fair to seen
 As eny lady emperesse or queen
 That is bitwixe thest' and eek' þe west'
 Doth by my lyf'. right' euen as 3ow lest' 1248
 Cast' vp þe cortyns and look' what' þis is
 And whan þe knyght' saugh verrayly al þis
 That' sche so fair was and so 3ong' þer to
 For ioye he hent' hir in hir armes tuo 1252
 his herte bathid in a bath of blisse
 A thousand tyme on rowe he gan hir kisse
 And sche obeyed him in euery þing'
 That' mighte doon him pleisauns or likyng' 1256
 And þus þay lyue vnto her lyues end
 In parfyt' ioye and ihū crist' vs sende
 housbondes meke 3onge and freissche on bedde
 And grace to ouerbyde hem þat' we wedde 1260
 And eek' I pray to Ihū schort' her lyues
 That' wil nought' be gouerned after her wyues
 And old and angry nygardes of despense
 God send hem sone verray pestilence / 1264
 ¶ Here endith þe wif' of Bathe hire tale

[No break in the MS.]



GROUP D. § 3. WIFE-FRIAR LINK. **Harleian 7334.** 231 SIX-TEXT 371

¶ Here byggyrneth þe prologe of þe Freres tale

THis worthy lymytour þis noble Frere
he made alway a lourynge cheere
vpon the sompnour. but for honeste /

No vileyns worde. 3it to him spak he 1268

But atte last he sayd vnto þe wyf

Dame quod he. god 3iue 3ow good lyf

3e han her touchid al so mot I the

In scole matier gret difficulte 1272

3e han sayd mochel ping right wel I say [leaf 108]

But dame right as we ryden by þe way

Vs needeþ nouȝt but for to speke of game

And lete auctorites in goddes name 1276

To preching and to scoles of clergie /

But if it like to þis companye /

I wil 3ow of a sompnour telle a game

Par de 3e may wel knowe by þe name 1280

That of a sompnour may no good be sayd

I pray 3ow þat noon of 3ow be euel a-payd

A Sompnour is a renner vp and doun

wiþ maundementȝ for fornicacioun 1284

And is y-bete at euery tounes eende /

Our oste spak / a sir 3e schold been heende /

And curteys as a man of 3our estaat

In company we wol haue no debaat 1288

Telleþ 3our tale and let þe sompnour be

Nay quod þe sompnour let him say to me

what so him list whan it comeþ to my lot

By god I schal him quyten euery grot 1292

I schal him telle which a gret honour

Is to ben a fals flateryng lymytour [Lines 1307-8 follow wrongly here in the Six Texts.]

And his offis I schal him telle I-wis

Our host answerd and sayd þe sompnour þis 1296

And after þis he sayd vnto þe Frere

Telleþ forþ 3our tale my maister deere

[No gap in the MS.]

¶ Narrat.

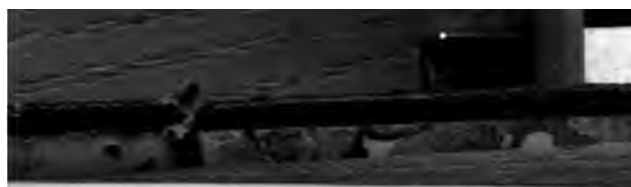
Whilom þer was duellyng^t in my countre
 An erchedeken a man of gret^t degre 1300
 That boldely did execucioun
 In punyschyng^t of fornicacioun
 Of wicchecraft^t and eek^t of Bauderye
 Of diffamacioun and auoutrie / 1304
 Of chirchereues and of testamentes
 Of contractes and of lak^t of sacraments
 And eek^t of many anoþer cryme [These 2 lines are misplaced, as
1291-2, in the Six Texts.]
 which nedip^t not^t to reherse at þis tyme 1308
 Of vsur and of Symony also
 But^t certes lecchours did he grettest^t woo.
 Thay schulde synge if þay were hent^t [leaf 108, back]
 And smale tyþes þay were fouly schent^t 1312
 If eny persoun wold vpon hem pleyne
 Ther might^t astert^t him no pecunial peyne
 For smale tyþes and for smal offrynge
 he made þe poeple pitously to synge 1316
 For er þe bisschop caught^t him in his hook^t
 þay weren in þe archedeknes book^t



SIX-TEXT 373
GROUP D. § 4. PRIAR'S TALE. Harleian 7334 233

For we ben out of here correccioun
Thay haue of vs no iurediccioun
Ne neuer schul to terme of alle her lyues
Peter so been þe wommen of þe styues 1332
Thay beþ I-put out of oure cures
Pees with meschaunce and wiþ mesauentures
þus sayd our host and let him telle his tale /
Now telleþ forþ al þough þe sompnour gale 1336
Ne spareþ nought myn owne maister deere
þis false þeeft þe sompnour quop þe frere ./
Had alway bawdes redy to his hond
As eny hauk to lure in engelond 1340
þat told him al þe secre þat þay knewe
For here acquaintance was not come of newe
þay were his approwours priuely
He took himself a gret profyt þer by 1344
His maister knew nat alway what he wan
wiþoute maundement/ a lewed man
He couþe sompne vp peyne of cristes curs
And þay were glad to fille wel his purs ./ 1348
And make him grete festis atte nale / [leaf 104]
And right as Iudas hadde purses smale /
And was a theef. right such a þeeft was he
his maister had not half his duete 1352
he was if I schal ȝiue him his laude .
A þeeft a sompnour and eek a baude .
And he had wenches at his retenue
That wheþir þat sir Robert or sir hughe 1356
Or Iak or Rauf or who-so þat it were
That lay by hem þay told it in his eere
Thus was þe wenche and he of oon assent
And he wold fecche a feyned maundement 1360
And sompne hem to chapitre boþe tuo
And pyle þe man and let þe wenche go
Than wold he sayn I schal frend for þy sake
Don strike þe out of oure lettres blake 1364

The þar no more as in þis cas trauayle
 I am þy frend þer I þe may awayle
 Certeynly he knew of bribours mo
 Than possible is to telle in ȝeres tuo 1368
 For in þis world nys dogge for þe bowe
 þat can an hurt deer from an hol y-knowe
 Bet þan þis sompnour knew a leccheour
 Or auoutier or ellis a paramour 1372
 And for þat was þe fruyt of al his rent
 Therefore þer on he set al his entent
 And so bifel þat oones on a day
 This sompnour euer wayting on his pray 1376
 Rod forth to sompne a widew and old ribibe
 Feynyng a cause for he wolde bribe
 And happed þat he say bifore him ryde
 A gay ȝeman vnder a forest syde 1380
 A bow he bar and arwes bright and kene
 He had vpon a courtepy of grene
 An hat vpon his heed wiþ frenges blake
 Sir quod þis sompnour heyl and wel ouertake 1384
 welcome quod he and euery good felawe
 whider ridestow vnder þis grene schawe
 Sayde þis ȝiman wiltow fer to day [leaf 104, back]
 This sompnour answerd and sayde nay 1388
 Her faste by quod he is myn entent
 To ryden for to reysen vp a rent



GROUP D. § 4. FRIAR'S TALE. Harleian 7334. SIX-TEXT 375
235

If that þe happe come in to oure schire
Al schal be þin right as þou wolt desire
Graunt mercy quod þis sompnour by my faith /
Euerich in otheres hond his trouthe laith 1404
For to be sworne breþeren til þay deyen
In daliaunce forþ þay ride and pleyen
This Sompnour which þat was as ful of iangles
As ful of venym ben þese wery-angles 1408
And euer enquering vpon euery þing
Broþer quod he wher now is þour dwellyng
Anoþer day if þat I schuld 3ow seeche
This 3iman him answerd in softe speche 1412
Broþer quod he fer in þe norþ contre
wher as I hope somtyme I schal þe se
Er we depart I schal þe so wel wisse
That of myn hous ne schaltow neuer misse 1416
Now broþer quod þis sompnour I 3ow pray
Teche me whil þat we ryden by þe way
Syn þat 3e ben a baily as am I
Som subtilte as tel me faithfully 1420
In myn office. how þat I may wynne.
And spare not for consciens or for synne /
But as my broþer tel me how do 3e
Now by my trouthe brothir myn sayd he / 1424
As I schal telle þe a faithful tale [leaf 105]
My wages ben ful streyt and eek ful smale
My lord to me is streyt and daungerous
And myn office is ful laborous 1428
And þerfor by extorcious I lyue
For soþ I take al þat men wil me giue
Algate by sleighte or by violence
Fro 3er to 3er I wynne my despence 1432
I can no better telle faithfully
Now certes quod þis sompnour so fare I
I spare not to take god it woot
But if it be to heuy or to hoot 1436

what I may gete . in counseil priuely
 No more consciens of þat haue I
 Nere myn extorcions I might not lyuen
 Ne of such iapes I wil not be schriuen 1440
 Stomak ne conscience . know I noon
 I schrew þes schriftesadres euerychoon
 wel be we met by god and by seint Iame
 But leue broþer telle me þy name 1444
 Quod þis sompnour in þis mene while
 This ȝeman gan a litel for to smyle
 Broþir quod he woltow þat I þe telle
 I am a feend my dwellyng is in helle 1448
 And her I ryde about my purchasyng
 To wite wher men wol ȝiue me eny þing
 My purchas is þeffect of al my rent
 loke how þou ridest for þe same entent/ 1452
 To wynne good þou rekkist neuer how
 Right so fare I for ryde I wolde now
 vnto þe workles ende for a pray
 A quod þe sompnour benedicite what ȝe say 1456
 I wende ȝe were a ȝeman trewely
 ȝe han a mannes schap as wel as I
 haue ȝe a figure . þan determinate
 In helle þer ȝe ben in ȝour estate / 1460
 Nay certeynly quod he þer haue we non
 But whan vs likith we can make vs on



SIX-TEXT 377
GROUP D. § 4. FRIAR'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 237

what makith ȝow to haue al þis labour
Ful many a cause lieue sir sompnour
Sayde þis feend. but al þing hath a tyme
þe day is schort and it is passed prime 1476
And ȝit ne wan I no þing in þis day
I wol entent to wynnyng if I may
And not entende oure þinges to declare /
For broþer myn þy wit is al to bare 1480
To vnderstond al þough I told hem þe
For but þou axid. whi laboure we /
For som tyme we ben goddis instrumentes
And menes to don his comaundementes 1484
whan þat him list vpon his creatures
In diuers act. and in diuers figures
wipouten him we haue no might certeyn
If þat him liste. stonde þer ageyn 1488
And som tyme at our prayer haue we leue
Only þe body and not þe soule greue /
witnes on Iope whom we dide ful wo
And somtyme haue we might of boþe tuo 1492
This is to say of body and soule eke
And som tyme be we suffred for to seeke
vpon a man and doon his soule vnrest/
And not his body and al is for þe best 1496
whan he wipstondith oure temptacioun
It is a cause of his sauacioun
Al be it so. it was nought oure entent
he schuld be sauf. but þat we wold him hent 1500
And som tyme we ben seruaunt vnto man [leaf 106]
As to therchebisschope seynt Dunstan
And to thapostolis seruaunt was I
ȝit tel me quod þe sompnour faithfully 1504
Make ȝe ȝow. newe bodies alway
Of elementȝ. þe fend answerde nay
Som tyme we feyne. and somtyme we ryse
wip dede bodies. in ful wonder wyse 1508

And speke renably . and as fair and wel
 As to þe Phitonissa dede Samuel
 And ȝit wol somme say . it was not he
 I do no fors . of ȝour diuinite 1512
 But oon þing warne I þe I wol not iape .
 þou wilt algates wite how we ben schape .
 Thow schalt her afterward my broþer deere
 Com wher þe nedith no þing for to leere 1516
 For thou schalt by þin oughn experience
 Conne in a chayer reden of þis sentence
 Bet þan virgile whils he was on lyue /
 Or Daunt also / now let vs ryde blyue 1520
 For I wol holde company with þe
 Til it be so þat þou forsake me
 Nay quod þe sompnour þat schal nought betyde
 I am a ȝiman þat knowen is ful wyde 1524
 My troupe wol I hold as in þis caas
 For þough þou be þe deuyl Sathanas
 My troupe wol I holde . to þe my broþer
 As I am swore . and ech of vs to oþer 1528
 For to be trewe breþeren in þis caas
 For boþe we goon abouten oure purchas
 Tak þou þi part and þat men wil þe ȝyuen
 And I schal myn þus may we boþe lyuen 1532
 And if eny of us . haue more þan oþer
 Let him be trewe . and part it wip his broþer



As ferforthly as euer wer 3e folid
So moche wo as I haue with 3ow tholid
The deuyll haue al boþe cart. and hors and hay
This sompnour sayde her schal we se play 1548
And ner þe feend he drough as nouȝt ne were
Ful priuely and rouned in his eere
herke my broþer herke by þi faith
Ne herest nought þou. what þe carter saith 1552
hent it anoon. for he haþ ȝiuen it þe
boþe hay and caples and eek his cart parde
¶ Nay quod þe deuyll god wot neuer a del
It is nought his entente trustith wel 1556
Ask it þiself if þou not trowist me
Or ellis stint a while and þou schalt se
This carter thakketh his hors vpon the croupe
And þay bygon to drawen and to stowpe 1560
hayt now quod he ther. Ihu crist ȝow blesse
And al his hondwerk boþe more and lesse
That was wel twicht myn oughne lyard boy
I pray god saue þy body and seint loy 1564
Now is my cart out of þe sloo par de
Lo broþer quod þo feend what told I þe
Her may 3e seen. myn owne deere broþer
The carter spak oon þing. and þought anoper 1568
Let vs go forth. abouten our viage
hier wyne I noþing vpon cariage
whan þat þay comen som what out of toune
This sompnour to his broþir gan to rounne 1572
Brothir quod he. her wonyth an old rebekke
That had almost. as lief to leese hir necke /
As for to ȝiue a peny of hir good
I wolþ pens þough þat sche go wood 1576
Or I wol somone hir to oure office [leaf 107]
And ȝit god wot I know of hir no vice
But for þou canst not as in þis contre
wyne þy cost tak her ensample of me 1580

This sompnour clapped at þe widowes gate
 Com out quod he þou olde virtrate
 I trowe þou hast som frere or prest wip þe
 who clappith þer sayd þis widow benedicite 1584
 God saue þow sir. what is þour swete wille
 I haue quod he. a somonauunce of a bille
 vp payne of cursyng' loke þat þou be
 To morwe biforn our erchedeknes kne 1588
 To answer to þe court of certeyn þinges
 Now quod sche Ihū crist and king' of kinges
 So wisly helpe me as I ne may
 I haue ben seek' and þat ful many a day 1592
 I may not goon so fer quod sche ne ryde
 But I be deed so prikith it in my syde
 May I nat aske a lybel sir Sompnour
 And answer þer. by my procuratour 1596
 To suche þing' as. men wol oppose me
 þis quod þis sompnour. pay anon let se
 Twelf pens to me and I þe wil acquite
 I schal no profyt haue þer-by but lite 1600
 My mayster hath þe profyt and not I
 Com of and let me ryden hastily
 ȝif me my twelf pens I may no lenger tary
 Twelf pens quod sche. now lady seinte mary 1604
 So wisly help me. out of care and synne
 þis wyde world. þough þat I schulde wyne



GROUP D. § 4. PRIAR'S TALE. SIX-TEXT 381
Harleian 7334. 241

I payd at hom for þi correccioun
Thou list quod sche by my sauacioun
Ne was I neuer er now wydow ne wyf
Somound vnto þour court/ in al my lyf 1620
Ne neuer I was but of my body trewe
vnto þe deuel rough and blak of hiewe
þiue I þy body and þe panne also
And whan þe deuyl herd hir curse so 1624
vpon his knees he sayd in þis manere
Now mabely myn owne modir deere
Is þis þour wil in earnest þat/ 3e seye
þe deuel quod he fecche him er he deye 1628
And panne and al but he wol him repente
Nay olde stot þat is not/ myn entente /
Quod þis sompnour to repente me
For eny þing þat I haue had of þe 1632
I wold I had þy smok and euery cloth
Now broþir quod þe deuyl be not wroþ
Thy body and þis panne is myn by right
Thou schalt wiþ me to helle 3it to night 1636
wher þou schalt knowen of our priuete
More þan a maister of diuinite
And wiþ þat word þe foule fend him hente
Body and soule he wiþ þe deuyl wente 1640
wher as þe sompnours han her heritage
And god þat maked after his ymage
Mankynde saue and gyde vs alle and some
And leene þis sompnour good man to bycome 1644
lordyngs I couþ han. told 3ow quod þe frere
had I had leysir for þis sompnour here
After þe text of crist powel and Ion
And of oþer doctours many oon 1648
Such peynes þat our herte might agrise
Al be it so no tonge may deuysel /
Though þat I might a þousand wynter telle
The peyn of þilke cursed hous of helle 1652

But for to kepe vs fro þat cursed place [leaf 108]
 wakip and prayeth ihu for his grace
 So kepe vs fro þe temptour Sathanas
 herknith þis word. beþ war as in þis cas 1656
 The lyoun syt in his awayt alway
 To slen þe Innocent if þat he may
 Disposith 3oure hertes to wipstonde
 The fend þat wolde make 3ow þral and bonde / 1660
 He may not tempte 3ow ouer 3our might
 For crist wol be 3our champioun and knight
 And prayeth þat oure sompnour him repente
 Of his mys dede. er þat þe fend him hente. 1664

¶ Here endith þe frere his tale

[No break in the MS.]



SIX-TEXT 383
GROUP D. § 5. FRIAR-SUMMONER LINK. Harleian 7334. 243

¶ And here begynneth þe sompnour his prologe

This sompnour in his styrop vp he stood
vpon þe Frere his herte was so wood
That lyk' an aspen leef/ he quok' for Ire
lordyngs quod he. but' oon ping' I desire 1668
I 3ow biseke þat' of' 3our curtesye
Syn 3e han herd þis false frere lye
As suffrith me I may my tale telle
This frere bosteth þat' he knowith helle 1672
And god it' wot'. þat' is litil wonder
Freres and feendes been but' litel asonder
For pardy 3e han often tyme herd telle /
how þat' a frere rauyscht' was to helle 1676
In spirit ones by a visioun
And as an aungel. lad him vp and down
To schewen him þe peynes þat' þer were
In al þe place saugh he not' a frere 1680
Of' oþer folk' he saugh ynowe in wo
vnto þis aungel spak' þis frere þo
Now sire quod he han freres such a grace
That' noon of' hem schal comen in þis place 1684
þis quod þis aungil many a mylioun
And vnto Sathanas he lad him down
And now haþ sathanas saith he a tayl
Broder þan of' a Carrik' is þe sayl 1688
hold vp þy tayl þou Sathanas quod he [leaf 106, back]
Schew forth þyn ars and let þe frere se
wher is þe nest' of' freres in þis place
And er þan half' a forlong' way of' space 1692

Right so as bees swarmen out of an hyue	
Out of þe deueles ers þay gonne dryue	
Twenty þousand freres on a route	
And þorough out helle swarmed al aboute	1696
And comen as fast as þay may goon	
And in his ers þay crepen euerich oon ·	
he clappid his tayl agayn and lay ful stille	
This frere whan he loked had his fille	1700
Vpon þe torment of þis sory place	
his spirit god restored of his grace	
vnto his body agayn and he awook	
But napeles for fere ȝit he quook	1704
So was þe deueles ers ȝit in his mynde	
That is his heritage of verray kynde/	
God saue ȝow alle saue þis cursed frere	
My proloug wol I ende in þis manere	1708

[No break in the MS.]



¶ Narrat'

LOrdynge þer is. in Engelond I gesse
A mereschly lond called holdernesse
In which þer went a lymytour aboute
To preche and eek to begge it is no doubte 1712
And so bifel it. on a day þis frere
had preched at a chirch in his manere
And specially abouen euery þing'
Excited he þe poepl in his preching' 1716
To trentals and to ȝiue for goddis sake
wher that men mighten holy soules make
Ther as diuine seruys is honoured
Nought þer as it is wasted and deuoured 1720
Neither it needeþ not for to be ȝiue
As to possessioneres þat mow lyue
Thanked be god in wele and abundaunce
Trentals sayd he delyuereth fro penaunce 1724
her frendes soules as wel eld as ȝonge
þe whanne þat þay hastily ben songe
Nought for to hold a prest iolif and gay [leof 109]
he syngith not but oon masse in a day 1728
Delyuerith out quod he þe soules
Ful hard it is wiþ fleischhok or with oules
To ben y-clawed. or brend or I-bake
Now speed ȝow hastily for cristes sake 1732
And whan þis frere had sayd al his entent
with Qui cum patre. forþ he went
whan folk in chirch had ȝiue him what hem lest'
he went his way no lenger wold he rest 1736

with scrip and pyked staf y-touked hye
 In euery hous and gan to pore and pry
 And beggyd mele or chese or ellis corn
 his felaw had a staf typped with horn 1740
 A payr of tablis al of yuory
 And a poyntel y-polisch't fetisly
 And wroot þe names alway as he stood
 Of alle folk that ȝaf him eny good 1744
 Ascaunce þat he wolde for hem preye
 Ȝif vs a busshel. whet or malt or reye
 A goddes kichil or a trip of chese
 Or elles what ȝow list we may not chese 1748
 A goddes halpeny or a masse peny
 Or ȝif vs of ȝoure braune if ȝe haue eny
 A dagoun of ȝour blanket leeue dame
 Oure suster deer. lo her I write ȝour name 1752
 Bacoun or beef or such þing as we fynde
 A stourdy harlot ay went hem by hynde
 That was her hostis man and bar a sak'
 And what men ȝaf hem layd it on his bak' 1756
 And whan þat he was out atte dore anon
 he planed out þe names euerychoon
 That he biforn had writen in his tablis
 He serued hem wip nyfles and wip fablis 1760
 Nay per þou list þou sompnour sayd þe frere
 Pees quod our host for cristes moder deere
 Tel forþ by tale and spare it not at al



GROUP D. § 6. SUMMONER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 247

haue I vpon þis bench I-fare ful wel
her haue I eten many a mery mel
And fro þe bench he drof away þe cat
And layd a-doun his potent' and his hat 1776
And cek' his scrip and set' him soft a-doun
his felaw was go walkid in þe toun
Forth with his knaue to þe ostelrye /
wher as he schop him þilke night to lye 1780
O deere maister quod þe seeke man
how haue ȝe fare sippe march bygan
I saygh ȝow nouȝt þis fourtenight' or more
God wot quod he labord haue I ful sore 1784
And specially for þy saluacioun
haue I sayd many a precious orisoun
And for myn oþer frendes god hem blesse /
I haue to day ben at' your chirche at' messe 1788
And sayd a sermown after my simple wit
Nought' al after þe text' of holy wryt
For it is hard for ȝow as I suppose
And þerfor wil I teche ȝow ay þe glose 1792
Glosyng' is a ful glorious þing' certayn
For letter sleþ so as we clerkes sayn
þer haue I taught' hem to be chariteable
And spend her good. þer it is resonable 1796
And þer I seigh our dame wher is sche /
ȝond in þe ȝerd I trowe þat' sche be
Sayde þis man. and sche wil come anon
¶ Ey mayster welcome be ȝe by seint' Iohn 1800
Sayde þis wyf' how fare ȝe hertily
þe frere ariseþ vp ful curteysly
And hir embracith in his armes narwe [leaf 110
And kist' hir swete. and chirkith as a sparwe' 1804
with his lippes dame quod he right' wel.
As he þat' is ȝour seruau't' euery del
Thankyd be god þat' ȝow ȝaf soule and lif
ȝit' saugh I not' þis day so fair a wyf' 1808

In al þe chirche god so saue me.
 3e God amend defautes sir quod sche /
 Algates welcome be 3e by my fay
 Graunt' mercy dame þis haue I found alway 1812
 But of 3our grete goodnes by 3oure leue
 I wolde pray 3ow þat 3e 3ow not' greene
 I wil wip Thomas speke a lital þrowe
 These curates ben ful negligent' and slowe 1816
 To grope tendurly a consciences
 In schrif't and preching' is my diligence
 Study in petres wordes and in poules
 And walk' and fische cristen menne soules 1820
 To 3elde Ihu crist' his propre rent
 To spreden his word is al myn entent
 Now by 3our leue o deere sire quod sche
 Chyd him right' wel for seinte trinite 1824
 he is as angry as a pissemyme
 Though þat he haue al þat he can desire
 Though I him wrye on night' and make him warm
 And ouer him lay my leg' oþer myn arm 1828
 he groneth lik' our boor that lith in sty.
 Othir disport' of him right' noon haue I
 I may please him in no maner caas.
 O Thomas Ieo vous dy Thomas Thomas. 1832
 This makþ þe feend. þis moste ben amendid
 Ire is a þing' þat highe god defendid
 And þer of' wold I speke a word or tuo



SIX-TEXT 389
GROUP D. § 6. SUMMONER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 249

My spirit hap his fostryng' on þe bible /
þe body is ay so redy and penyble
To wake þat my stomak' is destroyed
I pray 3ow dame þat 3e be not' anoyed 1848
For I so frendly 3ow my counseil schewe
By I nold not' telle it but a fewe /
Now sir quod sche but o word er I go
My child is deed wipinne pise wykes tuo 1852
Soon after þat 3e went' out' of þis toun
his deth saugh I by reuelacioun
Sayde þis frere at' hoom in oure dortour
I dar wel sayn er þat half' an hour 1856
After his deth. I seigh him born to blisse
In myn auysiou so god me wisse.
So did our sextein. and our fermerere
That' han ben trewe freres many a 3ere 1860
þay may now god be thanked of' his lone
Maken her Iubile. and walk' alloone
But vp I roos and al our couent' eeke
With many a teere trilling' on my cheeke · 1864
Te deum was our song' and no þing' ellis
wipouten noys or clateryng' of' bellis
Saue þat to crist' I sayd an orisoun
Thankyng' him of' my reuelacioun 1868
For sire and dame trustith me right' wel
Our orisouns ben more effectuel
And more we se of' goddis secre þinges
Than borel folk' alpough þat þay ben kinges 1872
we lyue in pouert' and in abstinence
And borel folk' in riches and dispence
Of' mete and drink' and in her ful delyt
we han al þis worldes delit' in despyt' 1876
lazar and Diues lyueden diuersely
And diuers guerdoun hadde þay þerby
who-so wol praye. faste. and be clene. [leaf 111]
And fatte his soule and make his body lene 1880

we faren as saith þapostil cloþ and foode	
Sufficeþ vs . þough þay ben not goode	
The clennes and þe fastyng of vs freres	
Makith þat crist acceptith oure prayeres	1884
lo moyses fourty dayes and fourty night	
Fasted er þat þe highe god of might	
Spak wiþ him in . þe mount of Synay	
with empty wombe fastyng many a day	1888
Receyued he þe lawe þat was writen	
with goddis fynger and holy wel 3e w	
In mount oreb or he had eny speche	
with highe god þat is oure lyues leche	1892
He fastid and was in contemplacioun	
Aron þat had þe temple in gouernacioun	
And eek þe oper prestes euerychoon	
In to þe temple whan þay schulden goon	1896
To preye for þe poeple and doon seruise	
Thay nolden drinken . in no maner wise /	
No drynke which þat dronke might hem make /	
But þer in abstinence prey and wake	1900
lest þat þay dedin . tak heed what I say	
But þay ben sobre þat for þe pepul pray	
war þat I say no mor . for it suffisith	
Oure lord Ihu as oure lore deuysith	1901
3af vs eusampil of fastyng and prayeres	
þefore we mendinaunt; we cely freres	



And chast^t was man in paradis certeyn [leaf 111, back]
But now herk/ thomas. what I schal þe seyn
I ne haue no tixt^t of it as I suppose :
But I schal fynd it in a maner glose / 1920
That specially our swete lord ihc
Spak^t þis by freres whan he sayde þus
Blessed be þay þat pouer in spirit ben
And so forþ in þe gospel 3e may seen 1924
wheþer it be likir oure professioun
Or heris þat swymmen in possessioun
Fy on her pomp and on her glotenye
And on her lewydnesse I hem defye 1928
Me þinkith þay ben lik^t Iouynian
Fat^t as a whal and walken as a swan
Al vinolent^t as botel in þe spence
her prayer is of ful gret^t reuerence 1932
whan þay for soules sayn þe psalm of dauid
lo boef^t þay say. Cor meum eructauit
who folwith cristes gospel and his fore
But we þat humble ben and chast^t and pore 1936
workers of goddes word and auditours
Ther-for right^t as an hauk^t vpon a sours
vpspringeth in to þær right^t so prayeres
Of charitabil and chaste busy freres 1940
Maken her sours to goddis eeres tuo
Thomas thomas so mote I ryde or go
And by þat lord þat clepid is seint lue
Ner þou oure broþer schuldestow neuer þriuē 1944
In oure chapitre pray we day and night^t
To crist^t þat he þe sende hele and might^t
Thy body for to welden hastily
God wot quod he þer-of nought^t feele I. 1948
As help me crist^t as I in fewe 3eeres
haue spendid vpon many diuers freres
Ful many a pound 3it^t fare I neuer þe bet^t
Certeyn my good haue I almost hyset/ 1952

Far wel my gold for it is almost a go	
The frere answerd // O thomas dostow so	
what needith 3ow dyuerse freres seche	[1956]
what needith him þat haþ a þurȝt leche /	1956
To sechen oþir leches in þe toun	
3oure inconstance is 3oure confusioun	
holde 3e þan me or oure couent	
To praye for 3ow insufficient	1960
Thomas þat iape is not worth a myte	
3oure malady is for we haue to lite	
¶ A 3iue þat couent half a quarter otes	
A 3iue þat couent four and twenty grotes	1964
A 3iue þat frere a peny and let him go.	
Nay nay thomas. it may nought be so	
what is a ferthing worth depart in tuelue	
lo ech þing þat is ooned in himselue	1968
Is more strong þan whan it is to-skatrid	
Thomas of me þou schalt not ben y-flatrid	
Thow woldist haue our labour al for nought	
The hihe god þat al this world hath wrought	1972
Saith þat a werkman is worpy his hyre	
Thomas nouȝt of 3our tresor I desire	
For my self. but for that oure couent/	
To pray for 3ow is ay so diligent	1976
And for to buylden cristes holy chirche	
Thomas if 3e wil lerne for to wirche /	
Of buyldyng vp on churches may 3e fynde	

¶ wipinne þin hous be þou no lyoun
 To þy subiects . do noon oppressioun
 Ne make þyn acqueyntis fro þe fle
 And ȝit thomas eftsons I charge þe / 1992
 Be war for hir þat' in þy bosom slepith [leaf 112, back]
 war for þe serpent þat' so priuely crepith
 vnder þe gras and styngith priuely
 Be war my sone and werk' paciently 1996
 For twenty þousend men han lost' her lyues
 For stryuyng' wiþ her lemmans and her wyues .
 Now syns ȝe han so holy and meeke a wif'
 what' nedith ȝow thomas to make strif' 2000
 Ther nys I-wis no serpent' so cruel
 when men trede on his tail ne half' so fel
 As womman is when sche haþ caught' an Ire
 Vengeans is þanne . al þat' þay desire 2004
 Schortly may no man by rym and vers [Spurious] 2004b
 Tellen her thoughtes þay ben so dyuers [„] 2004c
 Ire is a þing' oon þe grete of' seuene
 Abhominable to þe god of' heuene
 And to himself' it is destruccioun
 This euery lewed vicory or parsoun 2008
 Can say how Ire engendrith homicide
 Ire is in soth executour of' pride
 I couþe of' Ire seyn so moche sorwe
 My tale schulde laste til to morwe 2012
 Ire is þe grate of' synne as saith þe wise [Spurious] 2012b
 To fle þer fro ech man schuld him deuyse [„] 2012c
 And þer-for pray I god boþe day and night'
 An Irous man god send him litil might'
 It is greet' harm . and also gret' pite
 To set' an Irous man in high degre 2016
 ¶ whilom þer was an Irous potestate
 As seith senek' þat' duryng' his estaat' /
 vpon a day out/ riden knightes tuo
 And as fortune wolde right' as it' were so 2020
 That' oon of' hem cam home þat' oper nouȝt'
 Anoon þe knight' bifore the iuge is brouȝt'
 That' sayde þus . þou hast' þy felaw slayn
 For which I deme þe to deth certayn 2024

And to anothir knight comaundid he /
 Go lede him to þe deth I charge þe /
 And happed as þay wente by þe weye [leaf 113]
 Toward þe place þer he schulde deye 2028
 The knight com which . men wend hadde be deed
 Than þoughten þay it were þe beste reed
 To lede hem boþe to þe iuge agayn
 Thay sayden lord þe knight hap not slayn 2032
 his felaw lo . heer he stont hool on lyue
 3e schal be deed quod he so mote I þriue
 That is to sayn boþe oon . tuo . and þre
 And to þe firste knyȝt right þus spak he 2036
 I deme þe þou most algate be deed
 Than þoughte þay it were þe beste rede [Spurious] 2037b
 To lede him forþ in to a fair mede [„] 2037c
 And quod þe iuge also þou most lese þin heed
 For þou art cause why þy felaw deyth
 And to þe pridde felaw þus he seith 2040
 Thou hast nought doon þat I comaundid þe
 And þus he let don sle hem alle þre
 Irous Cambises was eek dronkelewe
 And ay delited him to ben a schrewe 2044
 And so bifel a lord of his meigne
 That loued vertues and eek moralite
 Sayd on a day bitwix hem tuo right þus
 A lord is lost if he be vicious 2048
 An Irous man is lik a frentik best [Spurious] 2048b
 In which þer is of wisdom noon arrest [„] 2048c
 And dronkenes is eek a foul record



SIX-TEXT 395

GROUP D. § 6. SUMMONER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 255

And for despyt he dronke moche more [leaf 113, back]
An hundrid part þan he had doon byfore
And right anon þis irous cursid wrecche /
Let þis knightes sone anon biforn him fecche 2064
Comaundyng hem þay schuld biforn him stonde
And sodeinly he took his bowe on honde
And vp þe streng he pulled to his cere
And wip an arwe he slough þe child right þere 2068
Now wherþir haue I a sikur hond or noon
Quod he is al my mynde and might agoon
hath wyn byreuyd me myn eye sight
what schuld I telle þe answer of þe knight 2072
his sone was slayn þer is no more to say
Be war þerfor. wip lories how 3e play
Syngith placebo. and I schal if I can
But if it be. vnto a pore man 2076
To a pore man men schuld his vices telle
But not to a lord þey he schuld go to helle
lo Irous Cirus þilke Percien
how he destruyed þe ryuer of Gysen 2080
For þat an hors of his was dreynt þer inne.
whan þat he wente Babiloyne to wyne
he made þat þe ryuer was so smal
þat wommen mighte wade it ouer al 2084
lo what sayde he þat so wel teche can
Ne be no felaw. to an irous man
Ne with no wood man walke by þe way
lest þe repent I wol no lenger say 2088
Now thomas leue broþer leue þin Ire
Thow schalt me fynde as iust as is a squire
Thyn anger doth þe al to sore smerte
hald not þe deueles knyft alway at þyn herte 2092
But schewe to me al þy confessioun
Nay quod þis syke man by seynt symoun
I haue ben schriuen þis day of my curate
I haue him told holly al myn estate/ 2096

Nedith no more to speken of it saith he /
 But if me list of myn humilite .
 3if me þan of þy good to make our cloyster [leaf 114]
 Quod he for many a muscle and many an oyster 2100
 hap ben oure foode our Cloyster to arreyse
 whan oþer men han ben ful wel at eyse
 And 3if god wot vnnethe þe foundement
 Parformed is ne of oure paupment 2104
 Is nought a tyle 3if wipinne our wones
 By god we owe 3if fourty pound for stones
 Now help Thomas for him þat harewed helle
 Or elles moote we oure bookes selle 2108
 And 3if 3ow lakke oure predicacioun
 Thanne goþ þe world al to destruccioun
 For who-so wold vs fro þe world byreue
 So god me saue Thomas by 3oure leue 2112
 he wolde byreue out of þis world þe sonne
 For who can teche . and werken as we conne
 And þis is not of litel tyme quod he
 But sippen Elye was her or ele 2116
 han freres ben fynde I of record
 In charite I-þanked be oure lord
 Now Thomas help for seynte charite
 A-down he sette him anon on his kne 2120
 This sike man wex welneigh wood for Ire
 he wolde þat þe frere had ben on fuyre



CHANCE B. & G. SCHWARTZ'S TALE. Harleian 7394. SIXTHY 337

That þou depart if so my deere brother
That every freere here as moche as oþer
Thy schaltow swere on þy profession
wipouten fraude or cantillacion 2136
I swere if quod þis freere upon my faith (over the last)
And þer-with his bond in his he hitte
to her myn hand in me schal be no lak
Now þanne þer þyn bond down at my bak 2140
Sayde þis man and grope wel byhynde
Bynethe my buttok þere schaltow fynde
A þing þat I have had in priuete
A þought þis freere þat schal go with me 2144
And down his bond he launched to þe clifte
In hope for to fynde þer a gifte
And whan þis syke man felte þis freere
Aboute his tuel grope þer and heere 2148
Amyd his hond he leet þe freere a fart
Ther is no capul drawyng in a cart
That might haue let a fart of such a soun
The freere vpstart as deth a woold lyoun 2152
A false cherl quod he for godles bones
This hastow in despit don for þe noones
Thou schalt abyge þis fart if þat I may
his meyne which þat herd of þis affray 2156
Com lepard In and chased out þe freere
And forth he goþ wip a foul angry cheere
And fat his felaw þere lay his stoor
he lokid as it were a wylde boor 2160
And grynte with his teep so was he wroth
A stordy paas down to þe court he goth
wher as þer wonyd a man of gret honour
To whom þat he was alway confessour 2164
This worpy man was lord of þat / village
This freere com as he were in a rage
wher þat þis lord sat etyng at his bord
Ynneþe might þe freere speke a word 2168

Til atte last he sayde god ȝow se
 This lord gan loke and sayde benedicite
 What frere Iohn what maner world is þis /
 I se wel. þat som þing is amys 2172
 ȝe loke as þough þe woode were ful of þeuys
 Sit doun anoon and tel me what ȝour greif is
 And it schal ben amendit if þat I may [leaf 115]
 I haue quod he had a despit to day 2176
 God ȝelde ȝow a-doun in ȝoure vilage
 That in þis world is noon so pore a page/
 That he nold haue abhominacioun
 Of þat I haue receyued in ȝoure toun 2180
 And ȝet ne greuith me no þing so sore
 As þat þis elde cherl wiþ lokkes hore
 Blasphemed haþ our holy couent eeke
 Now maister quod þis lord I ȝow biseke 2184
 No maister sir quod he but seruitour
 þough I haue had in scole such honour
 God likith not þat Raby men vs calle
 Neither in market neyther in ȝour large halle 2188
 No fors quod he tellith me al ȝour greef
 þis frere sayd sire an odious meschief
 This day bytid is to myn ordre and to me
 And so þat consequens to ech degre 2192
 Of holy chirche god amend it soone
 Sir quod þe lord ȝe wot what is to doone

Distance now sought to be my confessor



how þat me þynkith quod sche so god me speede
I say a cherl hap doom a cherles deede
what schuld I say god let him neuer þe
His syke heed is full of vanyte 2208
I hold him in a maner frenesye /
Ma dame quod he I-wis I schal not lye
But I in oþir wise may be wreke
I schal defame him ouer al wher I speke 2212
The false blasfememour þat chargid me [leaf 115, back]
To parten þat wil not departed be
To euery man yliche wif meschawnce
The lord sat stille as he were in a traunce 2216
And in his hert he rollid vp and down
How had þis cherl ymaginacioun
So schewe such a probleme to þe frere
Neuer eft er now herd I of such matiere 2220
I trowe þe deuel put it in his mynde
In ars metrik / schal þer no man fynde
Biforn þis day of such a questioun
who schulde make a demonstracioun 2224
That euery man schuld haue a lyk his part
As of a soun or of a sauour of a fart
O nyce proude cherl I schrew his face
lo sires quod þe lord wif harde grace 2228
who euer herde of such a þing er now
To euery man y-like tel me how
It is impossible it may not be
Ey nyce cherl god let him neuer þe 2232
The romblyng of a fart and euery soun
Nis but an aier reuerberacioun
And euer it wastith lyte and lyt away
Ther nys no man can deme by my fay / 2236
If þat it were departed equally
what lo my cherl what lo how schrewedly
vnto my confessour to day he spak
I hold him certainly demoniak 2240

Now etith þour mete and let þe cherl go play /
 Let him go honge himself on deuel way /

[*The Solution of the "Probleme" by the Lord's Squire.*
No break in the MS.]

Now stood þe lordes squier at þe bord
 That carf his mete and herde word by word 2244
 Of al þis þing which þat I of haue sayd
 My lord quod he be ȝe nouȝt euel payd
 I couþe telle for a gowne cloth
 To ȝow sir frere so þat ȝe be not wroth 2248
 How þat þis fart euen / departed schuld be
 Among ȝour couent if I comaunded be
 Tel quod þe lord and þou schalt haue anon [leaf 116]
 A gounne cloþ by god and by seint Iohn 2252
 My lord quod he whan þat þe wedir is fair
 wiþoute wynd or pertourbyng of ayr
 let bring a large whel in to þis halle
 But þat it haue his spokes alle 2256
 Twelf spokes hath a cart whel comunly
 And bring me . xij . freres wit ȝe why
 For prettene is a couent as I gesse /
 ȝour noble confessour her god him blesse 2260
 Schal parfourn vp þe nombre of þis couent
 Thanne schal þay knele down by oon assent



SIX-TEXT 401
GROUP D. § 6. SUMMONER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 261

That equally þe soun of it wol wende /
And eek þe stynk' vnto þe spokes ende
Sawe þat þis worþy man þour confessour
By cause he is a man of gret honour 2276
Schal haue þe firste fruyt as resoun is
The noble vsage of freres is þis
The worthy men of hem first schal be serued
As certeynly he hap it wel deserued 2280
he hath to day taught vs so mochil good
with preching in þe pulpit þer he stood
That I may vouche sauf I say for me
He hadde þe firste smel of fartes þre 2284
And so wold al his couent hardily
he berith him so fair and holily
The lord þe lady and ech man sauf þe frere
Sayde þan Iankyn spak in þis matiere 2288
As wel as euclide or elles protholome [leaf 118, back]
Touchand þe clerk þay sayd þat subtilte
An high wyt made him speken as he spak'
he nas no fool ne no demoniak' / 2292
And Iankyn hap I-wonne a newe goune
My tale is don. we ben almost at tounne.
¶ Here endith the sompnours tale

[No break in the MS.]

GROUP E. FRAGMENT VI.

§ 1. THE CLERK'S HEAD-LINK.

HARLEIAN MS. 7334 (British Museum).

¶ And here bygynneth þe Clerk' of Oxenford prologe

S Ir clerk' of Oxenford our hoste sayde

þe ryde as stille and coy as dop a mayde /
were newe spoused sitting' at a bord

This day ne herd I of þour mouth a word 4

I trowe þe study aboute som sophime

But Salomon saith euery þing' hath tyme

For goddis sake as beth of better cheere

It is no tyme for to stody hiere 8

Tel vs som mery tale by þour fay

For what man is entred vnto play

he moot nedes vnto þat play assent'

But prechith not as freres doon in lent' 12

To make vs for our olde synnes wepe

Ne þat þy tale [1] tale make vs for to slepe 'þy scrutecht out



Als fer as resoun askith hardily
I wil ȝow telle a tale which þat I
lerned at Padowe of a worpy clerk
As prouyd by his wordes and his werk 28
he is now deed and nayled in his chest
Now god ȝiue his soule wel good rest
Frāunces petrark þe laureat poete [leaf 117]
highte þis clerk/. whos rethorique swete 32
Enlummynd al ytail of poetrie
As linian did of philosophie
Or lawue or other art particulere
But deth þat wol not suffre vs duellen heere 36
But as it were a twyncling of an ye
hem boþe haþ slayn and alle schul dye
But forth to telle of this worpy man
That taughte me þis tale as I first bigan 40
I say þat he first with heigh stile enditith
Er he þe body of his tale writith
A proheme in the which descriuith he
The mounde and of Saluces þe contre 44
And spekith of appenyne þe hulles hye
That ben þe boundes of al west lombardye
And of mount vesulus in special
wher as þe poo out of a welle smal 48
Takith his firste springyng and his sours
That estward ay encresceth in his cours
To Emyl-ward to ferard and to venise
The which a long þing were to deuyse 52
And trewely as to my Iuggement
Me thinkith it a þing Impertinent
Saue þat he wold conueyen his matiere
But þis is þe tale which þat ȝe schuln heere 56
¶ Explicit prohemium

[No break in the MS. here, or between the Stanzas following.]

¶ Incipit narrare

Ther is at þe west / ende of ytaile 57

Doun at þe root of vesulus þe colde

A lusty playn abundaunt of vitaille

wher many a tour and toun þou maist byholde.

That foundid were in tyme of fadres olde. 61

And many anothir delitable sight

And Saluces þis noble contray hight 63

A marquys whilom duellid in þat lond 64

As were his worþy eldris him bifore

And obeisaunt ay redy to his hond

were alle his liegis bothe lesse and more [leaf 117, back]

Thus in delyt he lyueth and hath don 3ore 68

Biloued and drad þurgh fauour and fortune

Boþe of his lordes and of his comune 70

Ther with he was as to speke of lynage 71

The gentileste born of lombardy

A fair persone. and strong and 3ong of age

And ful of honour and of curtesie

Discret ynough his contre for to gye 75.

Sauage in some thing he was to blame



	SIX-TEXT 406
GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Harleian 7334.	265
Only þat poynt his poeple bar so sore	85
That flokkel on a day to him þay went	
And oon of hem that wisest was of lore	
Or elles þat þe lord wolde best assent	
That he schuld telle him what his poeple ment	89
Or ellis couþe he schewe wel such matiere	
he to þe marquys sayd as 3e schuln hiere	91
O noble marquys. 3oure humanite	92
Assureth vs and 3iueþ vs hardynesse	
As ofte as tyme is of necessite	
That we to 3ow may telle oure heuynesse	
Acceptith lord now. of 3our necessite	96
That we with pitous hert vnto 3ow playne	
And let 3oure eeris my vois not disdeyne	98
And haue I nought to doon in þis matere	99
More þan anoþer man haþ in þis place /	
3it for as moche as 3e my lord so deere	
han alway schewed me fauour and grace	
I dar þe better ask' of 3ow a space /	103
And audience to asken oure request /	
And 3e my lord to doon right as 3ow lest' [leaf 118]	105
For certes lord so wel vs likith 3ow	106
And al 3our werk' and euer han doon þat we	
Ne couþen not deuysen how	
we mighte lyue more in felicity	
Saue oon þing lord if þat 3our wille be	110
That for to be a weddid man 3ow list /	
Than were 3our peple in souereign hertes rest /	112
Bowith 3our neck'. vnder þat blisful 3ok'	113
Of souereignete. nought' of seruise	
which þat men clepe spousail or wedlok'	
And thenkith lord among 3our þoughtes wise /	

how þat our dayes passe in sondry wyse 117
 For þough we slepe or wake or rome aboute
 Ay flieth þe tyme it wil no man abyde. 119

And though þour grene þouþe floure as þit 120
 In crepith age alway as stille as stoon
 And deth manasith euery age and smyt
 In ech estat for þer ascapith noon
 And as certeyn as as we knowe euerychon 124
 That we schuln deye as vncerteyn we alle
 Ben of þat day þat dep schal on vs falle 126

Acceptith thanne of vs þe trewe entent 127
 That neuer þit/ refusid þoure hest
 And we wil lord if þat þe wil assent
 Chese þow a wyf in schort tyme atte lest
 Born of þe gentilest and þe heighest 131
 Of al þis lond so þat it oughte seme
 honour to god. and þow as we can deme 133

Deliuier vs out of al þis busy drede 134
 And tak a wyf fo hihe goddes sake /
 For if it so bifel as god forbede
 That þurgh þour dep þour lygnage schuld aslake
 And þat a straunge successour schuld take 138
 þour heritage. O. wo were vs on lyue



	SIX-TEXT 408
GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Harleian 7334.	267
But natheles I se of þou þe trewe entent	148
And trust vpon þour witt and haue doon ay	
wherfor of my fre wil I wil assent/ To wedde me as soon as euer I may	
But þer as ȝe haue profred me to day	152
To chese me a wyf I wol relese	
That choys and pray ȝow of þat/ profre cesse /	154
For god it woot þat childer ofte been	155
vnlik her worthy eldris hem bifore	
Bounte comeþ al of god nought of þe streen	
Of which thay ben engendrid and I-bore	
I trust in goddis bounte and þerfore	159
My mariage and myn estat and rest	
I him bytake . he may doon as him lest	161
Let me aloon . in chesyngt of my wif	162
That charge vpon my bak I wil endure	
But I ȝow pray and charge vpon ȝour lyf	
That wyf þat I take ȝe me assure /	
To worschip / whil . þat hir lif may endure	166
In word and werk . boþe heer and euery where /	
As sche an Emperoures doughter were	168
And forthermor þus schul ȝe swer þat ȝe	169
Aȝeins my chois schuln neuer grucche ne stryue	
For sins I schal forgo my liberte	
At ȝour request as euer mot I priue	
Ther as myn hert is set þer wil I wyue	173
And but ȝe wil assent in such manere	
I pray spek no more of þis matiere	175
With hertly wil . þay sworn and assentyn	176
To al þis þing þer sayde no wight nay	
Bysechyng him of grace er þat þay wentyn	
That he wol graunten hem a certeyn day	

Of his spousail as soone as euer he may 180
 For ȝit alway þe peple som what dredde [leaf 119]
 lest that the marquys wolde no wyf wedde 182

He graunted hem a day such as him lest 183
 On which he wolde be weddid sicurly
 And sayd he dede al þis at her requeste
 And pay with humble hert ful buxomly
 knelyng vpon her knees ful reuerently 187
 him þanken alle and þus pay haue an ende
 Of her entent. and hom aȝein pay wende 189

And her vpon he to his officeris 190
 Comaundith for the feste to purueye
 And to his priue knightes and squyeres
 which charge ȝaf as him list on hem leye
 And thay to his comaundement obeye / 194
 And ech of hem doth his diligence
 To doon vnto þe feste reuerence 196

¶ Explicit prima pars.

[No more break in the MS.]

Nought fer fro þilke place honorable 197
 wher as this marquys schop his mariage
 Ther stood a thrope of sighte delitable
 In which þat pore folk of þat vilage
 hadden her bestes and her herburgage / 201



But for to speke of hir vertuous beaute 211
Than was sche oon þe fayrest vnder soune
For porely I-fostered vp was sche
No licorous lust was in his body runne
wel ofter of þe welke þan of þe tonne 213
She drunk and for sche wolde vertu please
Sche knew wel labour but noon ydel ease 217

But þough þis mayden tender were of age *[Marginal note: 218]*
Ȝet in þe brest of her virginite
Ther was enclosed rype and sad corrage
And in gret reuerence and charite
Hir olde pore fader fostred sche / 222
A fewe scheep spynnyng on þe feld sche kept
Sche nolde not ben ydel til sche slept 224

And whan sche com hom sche wolde brynge 225
wortis or oþer herbis tymes ofte
The which sche schred and seth for hir lyuyng
And made hir bed ful hard and no þing softe
And ay sche kept hir fadres lif on lofte 229
with euery obeissance and diligence
That child may do to fadres reuerence 231

Vpon Grisildes þe pore creature 232
Ful ofte sithes þis marquys seth his ye
As he on huntyng rood par aventure
And whan it fel he mighte hir espye
he not with wantoun lokyng of folye 236
his eyzen cast vpon hir but in sad wyse
vpon hir cheer he wold him oft averse 238

Comendyng in his hert hir wommanhede 239
And eek hir vertu passyng any oþer wight
Of so yong age as wel in cheer as dede
For þough þe poeple haue no gret insight

In vertu he considereth aright 243
 Hir bounte and desposed þat he wolde
 wedde hir onoly if euer he wedde scholde 245

The day of weddyng cam but no wight can 246
 Telle what womman it schulde be /
 For which meruayle wondrith many a man
 And sayden whan þay were in priuete
 wol nought our lord ȝit leue his vanite 250
 wol he not wedde allas allas þe while
 why wol he þus himself and vs bigyle 252

But natheles þis marquys hap doon make 253
 Of gemmes set in gold and in asure
 Broches and rynges for Grisildes sake /
 And of hir clothing took he þe mesure [leaf 120]
 By a mayde y-lik to hir of stature 257
 And eek of oþer ornamentes alle /
 That vnto such a weddyng schulde falle / 259

The tyme of vndern of þe same day 260
 Approchith þat þis weddyng schulde be /
 And al þe palys put was in array
 Boþe halle an chambur. ylik here degre
 houses of office stuffid with plente 264
 Ther maystow se of deynteuous vitayle



GROUP E § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. SIX-TEXT 412
271

Grysild of þis god wot ful Innocent / 274

That for hir schapen was al þis array /

To fecche water at a welle is went/

And cometh hom as soone as sche may

For wel sche had herd sayd þat ilke day 278

The marquys schulde wedde and if sche might

Sche wold haue seyen som what of þat sight 280

Sche sayd I wol with oþer maydenes stonde / 281

That ben my felawes . in oure dore and see /

The marquys and þerfore wol I fonde /

To don at hom as soone as it may be

The labour which þat longeth vnto me 285

And þanne may I at leysir hir byholde

And sche þe way in to þe castel holde / 287

And as sche wold ouer þe preischfold goon 288

The marquys cam and gan hir for to calle

And sche set doun her water-pot anoon

Bisides þe preischfold of þis oxe stalle /

And doun vpon hir/ knees . sche gan falle 292

And with sad countenaunce knelith stille

Til sche had herd what was þe lordes wille [entf. 120, back] 294

This poughful marquys spak vnto þis mayde 295

Ful soberly and sayd in þis manere

wher is þour fader Grisildes he sayde

And sche with reuerence and humble cheere

Sayde lord he is al redy heere / 299

And in sche goth wipouten lenger let

And to þe marquys sche hir fader fet 301

He by þe hond þan takith þis olde man 302

And sayde þus . whan he him had on syde /

Ianicula I neither may ne can

lenger þe plesauns of myn herte hyde

If þat ȝe vouche sauf what so betyde / 306
 Thy doughter wil I take er þat I wende
 As for my wyf vnto hir lyues ende / 308

Thow louest me I wot it wel certeyn 309
 And art my faithful liege man I-bore /
 And al þat likith me I dar wel sayn
 It likith þe. and specially perfore
 Tel me þat poynt. as ȝe haue herd bfore 313
 If þat þow wolt vnto þat purpos drawe /
 To take me as for þy · sone in lawe 315

The sodeyn caas þe man astoneyd þo 316
 That reed he wax abaischt and al quakyng
 he stood vnneþe sayd he wordes mo
 But oonly þis. lord quod he my willyng
 Is as ȝe wol aȝenst ȝoure likyng 320
 I wol no þing ȝe be my lord so deere
 Right as ȝow list gouernith þis matiere 322

Ȝit wol I quod þis markys softely 323
 That in þy chambre I and þou and sche /
 haue a collacioun and wostow why
 For I wol aske if it hir wille be
 To be my wyf and reule hir after me 327



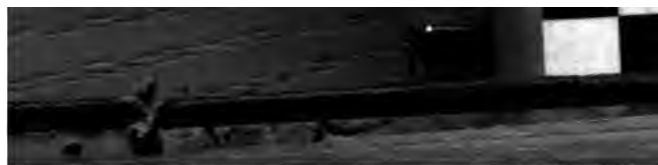
	SIX-TEXT 414
GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Harleian 7334.	273
No wonder is þough þat sche were astoned	337
To seen so gret a gest come in to þat place /	
Sche neuer was to suche gestes woned	
For which sche loked with ful pale face /	
But schortly þis matiere forth to chace	341
These arn þe wordes þat þe marquys sayde /	
To this benigne verray faithful mayde	343
 Grisylde he sayde ȝe schul wel vnderstonde /	344
It liketh to ȝour fader and to me	
That I ȝow wedde and eek it may so stonde	
As I suppose ȝe wil þat it so be /	
But þese demaundes aske I first quod he /	348
That sith it schal be doon in hasty wyse	
wol ȝe assent or elles ȝow auyse /	350
 I say þis be ȝe redy with good hert /	351
To al my lust and þat I frely may	
As me best liste . do ȝow laughe or smert	
And neuer ȝe to gruch it night ne day	
And eek whan I say ȝe ȝe say not nay	355
Neyther by word ne frownyng contenaunce	
Swer þis and here swer I oure alliaunce	357
 Wondryng vpon þis word quakyng for drede	358
Sche sayde lord vndigne and vnworthy	
I am to thilk honour . þat ȝe me bede	
But as ȝe wil ȝour self right so wol I	
And here I swere þat neuer wityngly	362
In werk ne thought I nyl ȝow disobeye	
For to be deed þough me were loth to deye	364
 This is ynough Grisilde myn quod he /	365
And forth goth he wip a ful sobre chere	
Out at þe dore and after þat cam sche	
And to þe pepul he sayd in þis manere .	

This is my wyf quod he þat stondith heere 369
 honoureth hir and loueth hir I þow pray [leaf 121, back]
 who so me loueth þer is no more to say 371

And for þat no þing of hir olde gere 372
 Sche schulde brynge vnto his hous he bad
 That wommen schuld despoilen hir right þere
 Of which þese ladyes were nought ful glad
 To handle hir cloþes wher-in sche was clad 376
 But natheles þis mayde bright of hew
 Fro foot to heed þay schredde han al newe 378

Hir heeres han þay kempt þat lay vntressed 379
 Ful rudely and with hir fyngres smale
 A coroun on hir heed þay han I-dressed
 And set hir ful of nowches gret and smale
 Of hir array what schuld I make a tale / 383
 Vnnethe þe poeple hir knew for hir fairnesse /
 whan sche translated was in such richesse / 385

This marquis hap hir spoused with a ryng 386
 Brought for þe same cause and þan hir sette
 vpon an hors snow-whyte and wel amblyng
 And to his palys er he lenger lette
 with ioyful poeple þat hir ladde and mette 390
 Conueyed hire and þus þe day þay spende



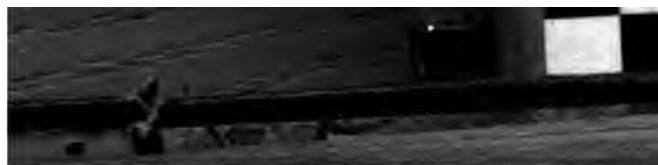
	SIX-TEXT	416
GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Harleian	7334.	275
To euery wight sche waxen is so deere		400
And worschipful pat folk per sche was born		
And from hir burthe knew hir 3er by 3ere		
Vnneth trowed pay but dorst han sworn		
That to Ianicle of which I spak biforn		404
Sche doughter were . for as by coniecture		
Hem þought sche was anoper creature		406
For þough pat euer vertuous was sche		407
Sche was encreased in such excellence	[leaf 122]	
Of thewes goode i-set in high bounte		
And so discret and fair of eloquence		
So benigne and so digne of reuerence		411
And coupe so þe poeples hert embrace		
That ech hir louep þat lokith in hir face		413
Nought onoly of Saluce in þe toun		414
Puplissched was þe bounte of hir name		
But eek byside in many a regioun		
If oon sayd wel anoper sayd þe same		
So sprad of hire heigh bounte þe fame /		418
That men and women as wel 3ong as olde		
Gon to Saluce vpon hir to byholde		420
This walter louly . nay but really		421
weddid with fortunat honestete		
In goddes pees lyueth ful esily		
At home and outward grace ynough hap he		
And for he saugh þat vnder low degre		425
was ofte vertu y-hid þe poeple him helde		
A prudent man and pat is seint ful selde		427
Nought onoly þis Grisildes purgh hit witte		428
Couthe al þe feet of wify humblesse /		
But eek whan þat þe tyme required it		
The comun profyt couthe sche redresse		

Ther nas discord rancour ne heuynesse / 432
 In al þat lond þat sche ne coupe appese /
 And wialy bryng' hem alle in rest' and ese 434
 Though þat hir housbond absent' were anoon 435
 If gentil men or oper of hir contre
 were wroth sche wolde brynge hem at oon
 So wyse and rype wordes hadde sche
 And Iuggement' of so gret' equite 439
 That' sche from heuen sent' was as men wende /
 Poeple to saue and euery wrong' to amende 441
 Nought' longe tyme after þat þis Grialde 442
 was wedded sche a douzter hap I-bore
 Al had hir leuer han had a knaue childe
 Glad was þis marquis and þe folk' þerfore
 For though a mayden child come al byfore / [U 122, 22] 446
 Sche may vnto a knaue child atteigne
 By liklihed and sche nys not' bareigne 448

[No break in the MS.]

¶ Incipit Tercia pars.

Ther fel as fallith many tymes mo 449
 whan þat þis child hap souked but a þrowe
 This marquys in his herte longith so
 Tempte his wyf. hir sadnesse for to knowe
 That he no might out of his herte þrowe 452



		SIX-TEXT 418
GROUP E. § 2. OLERRK'S TALE, Harleian	7334.	277
For which þis marquis wrouȝt in þis manere		463
he com aloone a night þer as sche lay /		
wip sterne face and with ful trouble cheere		
And sayde þus Grisild quod he þat day /		
þat I ȝow took out of ȝour pore array /		467
And putte ȝow in estat of heigh noblesse		
ȝe haue not þat. forgeten as I gesse /		469
I say Grisild þis present dignite		470
In which þat I haue put ȝow as I trowe		
Makith ȝow not. forgetful for to be		
þat I ȝow took in pore estat ful lowe		
For eny wele ȝe moot ȝour selue knowe /		474
Tak heed of euery word þat/ I ȝow say /		
Ther is no wight þat herith it but we tway /		476
Ȝe wot ȝour self. how ȝe comen heere		477
In to þis hous it is nought long ago		
And þough to me þat ȝe be leef and deere		
vnto my gentils ȝe be no þing so		
Thay seyn to hem it is gret schame and wo		481
For to ben subiect/. and ben in seruage /		
To the þat born art of a smal village	[leaf 123]	483
And namely syn þy doughter was I-bore		484
These wordes han þay spoken douteles		
But I desire as I haue doon byfore		
To lyue my lif with hem in rest and pees		
I may not in þis caas be reccheles		488
I moot do with þy doughter for þe best/		
Not as I wolde but as my pepul lest		490
And ȝit god wot þis is ful loth to me		491
But napeles wipoute ȝoure witynge		
wol I not doon. but þis wold I quod he /		
That ȝe to me assent as in þis þing /		

Schew now 3our paciens in 3our wirching' 495
 þat þou me hightest' and swor in 3on village
 That' day þat' maked was oure mariage 497

Whan sche had herd al þis sche nouȝt' ameeuyd 498
 Neyþer in word in cheer or countenaunce
 For as it' semed sche was nought' agreede
 She sayde lord al lith in 3our plesaunce
 My child and I with hertly obeisaunce 502
 Ben 3oures al . and 3e may saue or spille
 3our oughne þing'. werkþ after 3our wille / 504

Ther may no þing' so god my soule saue 505
 liken to 3ow þat' may displesen me
 Ne I desire no þing' for to haue
 Ne drede for to lese saue oonly 3e
 This wil is in myn hert' and ay schal be 509
 No length of tyme or dep may þis deface /
 Ne chaunge my corrage to oþer place / 511

Glad was this marquis of' hir answeyng' 512
 But' 3it' he feyned as he were not' so
 Al dreery was his cheer and his lokyng'
 whan þat' he schold out' of þe Chambre go
 Soon after þis a forlong' way or tuo 516

he pryncely had told al his entent



	SIX-TEXT 420
GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Harleian 7334.	279
Ma dame he sayd ȝe most forȝiue it me	526
Though I do ping'. to which I am constreynit.	
ȝe ben so wys þat ful wel knowe ȝe	
þat lordes hestes mow not ben I-feynit	
Thay mowe wel biwayl it or compleyn it/	530
But men moot neede vnto her lust obeye	
And so wol I þer is no more to seye	532
This child I am comaundid for to take /	533
And spak' no more. but out þe child he hent	
Dispitously and gan a chiere make	
As þough he wold han slayn it er he went	
Grisild moot' al suffer and al consent	537
And as a lamb sche sitteth meeke and stille /	
And let' þis cruel sergeant' doon his wille	539
Suspicious was þe defame of' þis man	540
Suspect' his face. suspect' his word also /	
Suspect' þe tyme. in which he þis bigan	
Allas hir doughter þat she loued so	
Sche wend he wold han slayen it right þo	544
But' napeles sche neyþer weep ne siked	
Conformyng' hir to þat þe marquis liked	546
But' atte last' speke sche bigan	547
And mekely sche to þe sergeant' preyde	
So as he was a worþy gentil man	
That' she most' kisse hir child er þat it deyde	
And on hir arm þis litel child sche leyde	551
wiþ ful sad face. and gan þe child to blesse	
And lullyd it' and after gan it' kesse /	553
And þus sche sayd in hir benigne vois	554
Far wel my child I schal þe neuer see /	
But' sith I þe haue marked wiþ þe croys /	
Of pilke fader blessed mot' þou be	

That for vs deyde vpon a cros of tre 558
 Thy soule litel child . I him bytake (leaf 124)
 For þis night schaltow deyen for my sake / 560

I trowe þat to a norice in þis caas 561
 It had ben hard þis rewthe for to see
 wel might a moder þan haue cryed alas
 But napeles so sad stedefast was sche
 þat she endured al aduersite 565
 And to þe sergeant mekely sche sayde /
 Haue her agayn þour litel þonge mayde 567

Goth now quod sche and doþ my lordes heste 568
 But o þing wil I pray þow of þour grace
 þat but my lord forbede þow atte leste
 Burieth þis litel body in som place
 That bestes ne no briddes it to-race / 572
 But he no word wil to þe purpos say /
 But took þe child and went vpon his way 574

This sergeant com vnto þis lord agayn 575
 And of Grisildes wordes and hir cheere
 He tolde poynt for poynt in schort and playn
 And him presentith with his douȝter deere
 Som what þis lord hath rewthe in his manere 579



SIX-TEXT 422

GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 281

But at Boloyn to his suster deere 589
 That pilke tyme of panik' was Countesse
 He schuld it take and schewe hir pis matiere
 Byseching' her to doon hir busynesse
 This child to fostre in alle gentillesse 593
 And whos child pat it was he bad hir hyde
 From every wight for ought pat mighte bytyde 595
 The sergeant goþ and haþ fulfild pis þing' 596
 But to þis marquys now retourne we [leaf 124, back]
 For now goþ he ful fast ymaginyng'
 If by his wyues cher he mighte se
 Or by hir word apparceyue þat sche 600
 were chaunged. but he hir neuer coupe fynde
 But euer in oon y-like sad and kynde / 602
 As glad as humble as busy in seruise / 603
 And eek' in loue as sche was wont to be
 was sche to him in every maner wyse /
 Ne of hir doughter nouȝt o word spak' sche
 Non accident/ for noon aduersite 607
 was seyn in hir ne neuer hir doughter name
 Ne nempnyd sche. in earnest' ne in game 609

[No break in the MS.]

¶ Incipit. Quarta pars.

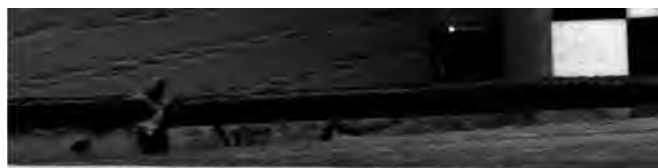
IN þis estaat þer passed ben foure ȝer 610
 Er sche wiþ childe was. but as god wolde
 A knaue child sche bar by þis waltier
 Ful gracious and fair for to biholde
 And whan þat folk it/ to his fader tolde 614
 Nouȝt oonly he. but al his contre merye
 was for þis child and god þay þank' and herie 616
 When it was tuo ȝer old and fro þe brest' 617
 Departed fro his noris vpon a day
 This markys caughte ȝit another lest'

To tempt^t his wif^f 3it^t after if^f he may
 O needles was sche tempted in assay 621
 But weddid men ne knowen no mesure
 whan þat þay fynde . a pacient creature 623

Wyf quod þis marquys 3e han herd er þis 624
 My peple sekly berith oure mariage
 And namly syn . my sone y-boren is
 Now is it^t wors þan euer in al our age
 The murmur sleþ myn hert and my corrage 628
 For to myn eeris comeþ þe vois so smerte
 þat it^t wel neigh destroyed haþ myn herte . 630

Now say þay þus whan wauter is a goon 631
 Than schal þe blood of Ianicula succede
 And ben our lord for oþer haue we noon .
 Suche wordes saith my poeple out/ of drede / [leaf 125]
 wel ought^t I of such murmur taken heede 635
 For certeynly I drede such sentence
 þough þay not pleylnly speke in myn audience / 637

I wolde lyue in pees if^f þat I might^t 638
 wher for I am disposid outrely
 As I his suster seruede by night
 Right so þynk I to serue him priuely
 This warn I 3ou þat 3e not sodeinly 642



	SIX-TEXT 424
GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Harleian 7334	283
3e ben oure lord doth with 3our owne ping'	652
Right' as 3ow list' axith no red of me	
For as I left' at hom al my cloping'	
whan I first' com to 3ow right' so quod sche	
Left' I my wille and my liberte /	656
And took' 3our cloping'. wher for I 3ow preye	
Dop 3oure plesaunce. I wil 3oure lust' obeye	658
And certes if I hadde prescience	659
3our wil to knowe. er 3e 3oure lust' me tolde	
I wold it doon wipoute negligence	
But' now I wot' 3our lust' and what' 3e wolde	
Al 3our plesaunce ferm and stable I holde	663
For wist' I pat' my deth wold don 3ow ease	
Right' gladly wold I deye 3ow to please	665
Deth may make no comparisoun	666
vnto 3our loue and whan þis marquys say	
The constance of' his wyf' he cast' a doun	
His eyzen tuo and wondrith pat' sche may	
In pacience suffre al þis array	670
And forth he goþ with drery countenaunce	
But to his hert' it' was ful gret' plesaunce [leaf 125, back]	672
This Igly sergeaunt in þe same wise	673
That' he hir doughter fette. right' so he	
Or worse if' men worse can deuyse	
hath hent hir sone pat' ful was of' beaute	
And euer in oon so pacient' was sche	677
That' sche no cheere made of' heynesse	
But' kist' hir sone. and after gan him blesse	679
Saue þis sche prayed him if' pat' he mighte	680
her litel sone he wold in corþe graue	
His tendre lymes delicate to sight	
From foules and from bestes him to saue	

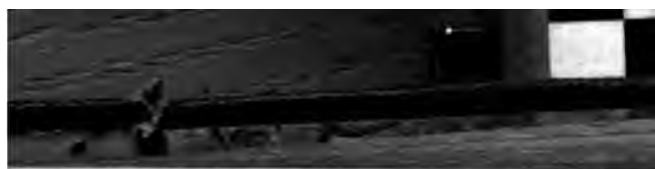
But sche noon answer of him mighte haue 684
 he went his way as him no þing ne rouht
 But to Boloyne he tenderly it brought 686

This marquis wondreth euer þe lenger þe more 687
 vpon hir pacience. and if þat he
 Ne hadde soþly knowen þer bifore
 þat þarfytly hir children loued sche
 he wold haue wend þat of som subtilte 691
 And malice or of cruel corrage
 That sche had suffred þis wiþ sad visage 693

But wel he knew þat next himself certayn 694
 Sche loued hir children best in euery wise
 But now of wommen wold I aske fayn
 If þese assayes mighten not suffice
 what coupe a stourdy housebonde more deuyse 698
 To prove hir wyfhode and her stedefastnesse /
 And he contynuyng euer in stourdynesse 700

But þer ben folk of such condicioun 701
 That whan þay haue a certeyn purpos take
 Thay can nought stynt of her entencioun
 But right as þay were bounden to a stake /
 þay wil not of her firste purpos slake 705

Right so his marquis fullib hab purposed



	SIX-TEXT 426
GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Harleian 7334.	285
For which it' semyd þis þat of hem tuo	715
þer nas but oo wil for as walter lest/ The same plesau'nce was hir lust also And god by thanked al fel for þe best/ Sche schewed wel. for no worldly vnrest'	719
A wyf' as of hir self' no þing' ne scholde wylne in effect'. but' as hir housbond wolde	721
The sclander of walter ofte and wyde spradde That' of a cruel hert' he wikkedly For he a pore womman weddid hadde hath morthrid boþe his children priuely Such murmur was among' hem comunly	726
No wonder is for to þe peples eere Ther com no word. but' þat' þay morthrid were /	728
For which wher as his peple þer byfore had loued him wel þe sclander of his diffame Made hem þat' þay him hatede þefore To ben a mordrer. is an hateful name But' napeles for earnest' or for game	733
he of his cruel purpos nolde stente To tempt' his wyf' was set al his entente	735
Whan þat' his doughter twelfþ ȝer was of age he to þe court' of Rome in suche wise Enformed of his wille sent his message Comaundyng hem. such bulles to deuynse As to his cruel purpos may suffice	740
how þat' þe pope as for his peples reste Bad him to wedde anoþer if' him leste	742
I say he bad þay schulde countrefete The popes bulles makynge' mencion That' he hap' leue his firste wyf' to lete As by þe popes dispensacioun	743

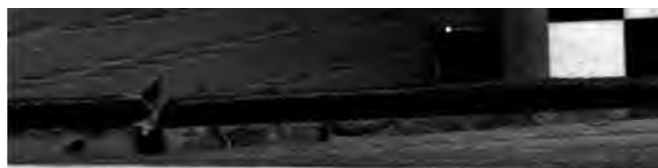
To stynte rancour and discencioun 747
 Bitwix his peple and him þus sayd þe bulle [leaf 126, back]
 The which þay han publisshid atte fulle / 749

The rude poepel as it no wonder is 750
 wende ful wel þat it had be right so
 But whan þese tydynges come to Grisildis
 I deeme þat hir herte was ful wo
 But sche y-like sad for euermo 754
 Disposid was þis humble creature
 Thaduersite of fortun al tendure 756

Abydyng euer his lust and his plesaunce 757
 To whom þat sche was ȝiue hert and al
 As to hir verray worldly suffisaunce
 But shortly if I þis story telle schal
 This marquys writen haþ in special 761
 A letter in which he schewith his entent
 And secrely he to Boloynes it sent 763

To therl of panyk/ which þat hadde þo 764
 weddid his suster prayd he specially
 To brynge hom aȝein his children tuo
 In honorable estaat al openly
 But oon þing he him prayde outerly 768

That he to so myght haue men wold enyowen



GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. **SIX-TEXT 428**
Harleian 7334. 287

Arrayed was toward hir mariage 778
This freisshe may al ful of gemmes clere
hir broþer which þat. seuen ȝer was of age
Arrayed eek. ful freissh in his manere /
And thus in gret noblesse and with glad chere 782
Toward Saluces schapyng her iournay
Fro day to day þay ryden in her way 784

[No break in the MS.]

¶ Incipit pars Quinta.

A Mong' al þis after his wikked vsage [leaf 127] 785
This marquis ȝit his wif to tempte more
To þe vttrest proef of hir corrage
Fully to han experiens and lore
If þat sche were as stedefast as byfore 789
He on a day in open audience
Ful boystously haþ sayd hir þis sentence 791
Certes Grisildes I had ynough plesaunce 792
To haue ȝow to my wif for ȝour goodnesse
And for ȝoure troupe and for ȝour obeissaunce
Nought for ȝour lignage ne for ȝour richesse
But now know I in verray sothfastnesse / 796
That in gret lordschip if I wel auyse /
Ther is gret seruise in sondry wyse / 798
I may not do as euery plough man may 799
My poeple me constreignith for to take
Anoþer wyf and certeyn day by day
And eek þe popes rancour for to slake
Consentith it þat dar I vndertake 803
And trewely þus moche I wol ȝow say
My newe wif is comyng by þe way 805
Be strong of hert and voyde anon hir place 806
And þilke dower þat ȝe broughten me
Tak it agayn I graunt it of my grace

Retourneth to ȝour fadres hous quod he
 No man may alway haue prosperite 810
 with euen hert I rede ȝow endure
 The strok of fortune or of aduenture 812

And sche agayn answerd in pacience 813
 My lord quod sche I wot and wist/ alway
 how þat bitwixe ȝour magnificence
 And my pouerte no wight can ne may
 Make comparisoun it is no nay 817
 ¶ I. ne held me neuer digne in no manere
 To ben ȝour wyf ne ȝit ȝour Chamberere 819

And in pis hous þer ȝe me lady made / 820
 The highe god take I for my witnesse
 And al so wisly he my soule glade
 I neuer huld me lady ne maistresse / [leaf 127, back]
 But humble seruaunt to ȝour worthinesse 824
 And euer schal whil þat/ my lyf may dure
 Abouen euery worldly creature 826

That ȝe so longe of ȝour benignite 827
 han holden me in honour and nobleȝe
 wher as I was not worthy for to be
 That þonk I god and ȝow to whom I preȝe
 Forȝeld it ȝow þer is more to seȝe 831



		SIX-TEXT 480
GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Harleian 7334.		289
And of 3our newe wif. god of his grace	841	
So graunte 3ow. wele and prosperite		
For I wol gladly 3elden hir my place		
I which pat I was blisful wont to be		
For sith it liketh 3ow my lord quod sche	845	
That whilom were al myn hertes reste		
That I schal gon. I wil go whan 3ow leste	847	
But þer as 3e profre me such dowayre /	848	
As I ferst brought. it is wel in my mynde		
It were my wrecchid clopes no þing faire		
þe whiche to me were hard now for to fynde		
O goode god. how gentil and how kynde	852	
3e semed by 3our speche and 3our visage		
That day þat makid was our mariage	854	
But sop is sayd algate I fynd it trewe /	855	
For in effect. it/ proued is on me		
loue is nought old. as whan þat it is newe/		
But certes lord for noon aduersite /		
To deyen in þe caas it schal not be /	859	
þat euer in word or werk I schal repente		
That I 3ow 3af myn hert in hol entente	[leaf 128] 861	
My lord 3e wot þat in my fadres place	862	
3e dede me strippe out of my pore wede		
And richely me cladden of 3our grace		
To 3ow brought I nought elles out of drede		
But faith and mekenes and maydenhede /	866	
And her agayn my cloþyng I restore		
And eek my weddyng ryng for euermore	868	
The remenant of 3our jewels redy be /	869	
wipin 3our chambur dore dar I saufly sayn		
Naked out of my fadres hous quod sche /		
I com and naked moot I torne agayn		

Al þour pleissauus . wold I fulfille fayn 873
 But 3iþ I hope it be not þoure entent
 That I smocles out of þour chambre went 875

3e coupe not doon so dishonest a þing 876
 þat þilke wombe in which þour children leye
 Schulde byforn þe poeple in my walkyng
 Be seye al bare wherfore I 3ow pray
 let me not lik a worm go by þe way / 880
 Remembre 3ow myn oughne lord so deere /
 I was 3our wyf . þough I vnworþy were 882

Wherfor in guerdoun of my maydenhede 883
 which þat I brought and nought agayn I bere
 As voucheth sauf . as 3eue me to my meede
 Such a smok as I was wont to were
 That I þer with may wrye þe wombe of here / 887
 þat was 3our wif and here take I my leue
 Of 3ow myn oughne lord . lest I 3ow greue 889

The smok quod he þat þou hast on þy bak 890
 let it be stille and ber it forþ wiþ þe
 But wel vnnethes þilke word he spak
 But went his way for routhe and for pite
 Byforn þe folk hir seluen strippith sche / 894



	SIX-TEXT 432
GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Harleian 7334.	291
For out of doute þis olde þore man	904
was euer in suspect of hir mariage	
For euer he deemed sith þat it bigan	
That whan þe lord fulfilled had his corrage	
him wolde þinke þat it were disparage	908
To his estate. so lowe for to light	
And voyden hire as sone as euer he might	910
Agayns his doughter hastily quod he	911
For he by noyse of folk knew hir comyngt	
And wiþ hir olde cote as it might be /	
he couered hir ful sorwfully wepyng	
But on hir body might he it nouȝt bringe	915
For rude was þe cloth. and sche mor of age	
By deyes fele. þan hir mariage	917
Thus with hir fader for a certeyn space	918
Dwellith þis flour of wifly pacience	
That neyther by her wordes ne by hir face	
Byforn þe folk nor eek in her absence	
Ne schewed sche that hir was doon offence	922
Ne of hir highe astaāt no remembraunce	
Ne hadde sche. as by hir countenaunce	924
No wonder is for in hir gret estate	925
hir gost was euer in playn humilite	
Ne tender mouth noon herte delicate	
Ne pompe. ne semblant of realte	
But ful of pacient benignite	929
Discrete and prideles ay honorable /	
And to hir housbond euer meke and stable	931
Men speke of Iob. and most for his humblesse /	932
As clerkes whan hem lust can wel endite	
Namely of men. but as in sothfastnesse	
pough clerkes prayse women but a lite	

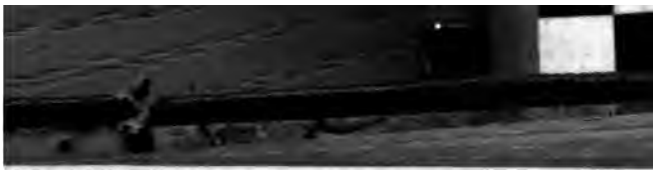
þer can no man in humblesse him acqyte 936
 As wommen can . ne can be half so trewe [leaf 129]
 As wommen ben . but it be falle of newe 938

[No break in the MS.]

Fro boloyne is þis erl of panik y-come 939
 Of which þe fame vp sprong to more and lasse
 And to þe poeples eeres alle and some
 was couth eek þat a newe marquisesse
 he wip him brought in such pomp and richesse 943
 That neuer was þer seyn with mannes ye
 So noble array in al west lombardye 945

The marquys which þat schoop and knew al þis 946
 Er þat þis erl was come sent his message /
 After þilk cely pore Grisildis
 And sche wip humble hert and good visage
 Not with so swollen hert in hir corrage 950
 Cam at his hest . and on hir knees hir sette
 And reuerently and wyfly sche him grette 952

Grisild quod he . my wil is outrely 953
 This mayden þat schal weddid be to me
 Receyued be to morwe as really
 As it possible is in myn hous to be
 And eek þat euery wight in his degre 957



		SIX-TEXT 434
GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. Harleian 7334.		293
Nought' oonly lord pat' I am glad quod sche /		967
To don þour lust'. but' I desire also /		
þow for to serue and plesse in my degre		
wipoute feynyng' and schal euer mo		
Ne neuer for no wele ne for no wo		971
Ne schal þe gost' wipinne myn herte stente /		
To loue þow best' wip al my trewe entent		973
And wip þat' word sche gan þe hous to dight		974
And tables for to sette and beddes make	[leaf 128, back]	
And peyned hir to doon al þat' sche might		
Preying' þe chamberers for goddes sake		
To hasten hem and faste swepe and schake		978
And sche þe moste seruisable of alle /		
hap euery chamber arrayed and his halle /		980
Abouten vndern gan þis lord alight		981
þat' with him brought þese noble children tweye		
For which þe peple ran to se þat' sight'		
Of her array so richely biseye		
And þan at' erst' amonges hem þay seye		985
That' walter was no forþ þough that' him lest		
To chaunge his wyf'. for it was for þe best' /		987
For sche is fairer. as þay demen alle /		988
Than is Grisild and more tender of age		
And fairer fruyt' bitwen hem schulde falle		
And more plesaunt' for hir high lynage		
hir broþer eek'. so fair was of visage		992
That' hem to seen þe peple hap caught' plesaunce		
Comending' now þe marquys gouernaunce		994
O stormy poeple. vnsad and euer vntrewe		995
And vndiscret' and chaungyng' as a fane		
Desyryng' euer in rombel þat is newe		
For lik' þe moone ay wax ȝe and wane		

Ay ful of clappyng' dere ynough a Iane 999
 3oure doom is fals 3our constaunce yuel preuith
 A ful gret' fool is he that on 3ow leeuith 1001

Thus sayde saad folk in þat Citee 1002
 whan þat þe poeple gased vp and down
 For þay were glad right' of þe nouelte
 To han a newe lady of her toun
 No more of þis now make I mencion 1006
 But to Grisildes agayn wol I me dresse
 And telle hir constance and hir busynesse / 1008

Ful busy was grisild in euery þing' 1009
 That to þe feste was appertinent
 Right' nought' was sche abaissht' of hir cloþing'
 Though it were ruyde. and som del eek' torent
 But wiþ glad cheer to þe 3ate is sche went [leaf 120] 1013
 with oþer folk' to griete þe marquisesse
 And after þat' doth forth hir busynesse / 1015

With so glad chier his gestes sche receyueth 1016
 And so connyngly euerich in his degre /
 That no defeaute no man aparceyueth
 But ay þay wondren what' sche mighte be
 That in so pouer array was for to se 1020



Grisylde quod he as it were in his play 1030
how likith þe my wif and hir beaute
Right wel my lord quod sche for in good fay

A fairer saugh I neuer noon þan sche
I pray to god giue hir prosperite 1034
And so hope I. þat he wol to ȝow sende
Plesaunce ynough vnto ȝour lyues ende / 1036

On þing warn I ȝow and biseke also / 1037
That ȝe ne prike wip no tormentynge
þis tendre mayden as ȝe haue do mo
For sche is fostrid in hir norischinge
More tendrely and to my supposynge / 1041
Sche couþe not aduersite endure
As couþe a pore fostrid creature 1043

And whan þis walter saugh hir pacience 1044
hir glade cheer and no malice at al
And he so oft had doon to hir offence
And sche ay sad. and constant as a wal
Continuynge euer hir Innocence oueral 1048
This sturdy marquys gan his herte dresse
To Rewen vpon hir wyfly stedefastnesse / 1050

This is ynough Grisilde myn quod he [leaf 130, back] 1051
Be now no more agast ne yuel apayed
I haue thy faith and þy benignite
As wel as euer womman was assayed
In gret estate and propreliche arrayed 1055
Now knowe I dere wyf þy stedefastnesse
And hir in armes took and gan hir kesse 1057

And sche for wonder took of it no kepe 1058
Sche herde not what þing he to hir sayde
Sche ferd as sche had stert out of a sleepe
Til sche out of hir masidnesse abrayde

Grisild quod he by god þat for vs deyde 1062
 Thou art my wyf ne noon oþer I haue
 Ne neuer had as god my soule saue 1064

This is my doughter which þou hast supposed 1065
 To be my wif þat oþer faithfully
 Schal be myn heir as I haue ay purposed
 Thow bar hem in þy body trewely
 At Boloyne haue I kept hem priuely 1069
 Tak hem agayn for now maistow not seye
 That þou hast lorn noon of þy children tweye 1071

And folk þat oþer weyes han seyde of me 1072
 I warn hem wel þat I haue doon þis deede
 For no malice ne for no cruelte
 But for tassaye in þe þy wommanhede
 And not to slen my children god forbede 1076
 But for to kepe hem priuely and stille
 Til I þy purpos knowe and al þy wille 1078

Whan sche þis herd a swoned down sche fallith 1079
 For pitous ioy. and after her swownyng
 Sche bothe hir ȝonge children to hir callith
 And in hir armes pitously wepyng
 Embraseth hem and tenderly kysyng 1083
 Enl lik a moder with hir salte teris

O tender deere. 3onge children myne 1093
 3oure woful moder wende stedefastly
 That cruel houndes or som foul vermyne
 had eten 3ow but god of his mercy
 And 3our benigne fader tenderly 1097
 hath doon 3ow kept and in þat same stounde
 Al sodeinly sche swapped down to grounde / 1099

And in hir swough so sadly holdith sche 1100
 hir children tuo. whan sche gan hem tembrace
 That with gret sleight and gret difficulte
 The children from her am þay gonne arace
 O many a teer. o many a pitous face. 1104
 Doun ran of hem þat stoden hir bisyde
 Vnnethe aboute hir mighte þay abyde 1106

Waltier hir gladith and hir sorwe slakith 1107
 Sche rysith vp abaissed from hir traunce
 And euery wight hir ioy and feste makith
 Til sche hath caught agayn hir continaunce
 wauter hir doth so faithfully plesaunce 1111
 That it was daynte for to see þe cheere
 Bitwix hem tuo. now þay be met in feere 1113

These ladys whan þat þay her tyme say 1114
 han taken hir and in to chambre goon
 And strippen hir. out of hir rude array
 And in a cloth of gold þat brighte schon
 with a coroun of many a riche stoon 1118
 vpon hir heed þay in to halle hir brought
 And þer sche was honoured as hir ought 1120

Thus hath þis pitous day a blisful ende 1121
 For euery man and womman doth his might
 This day in mirth and revel to despende
 Til on þe welken schon þe sterres bright

For more solempne in euery mannes sight 1125

This feste was and gretter of costage [leaf 131, back]

Than was þe reuel of hir mariage / 1127

Ful many a ȝer in heigh prosperite 1128

lyuen þese tuo in concord and in rest

And richeliche his doughter married he

vnto a lord on of þe worthiest

Of al ytaile and þanne in pees and rest 1132

His wyues fader in his court he kepith

Til þat þe soule out of his body crepith 1134

His sone succedith in his heritage 1135

In rest and pees. after his fader day

And fortunat. was eek in mariage

Al put he not his wyf in gret assay

This world is not so strong it is no nay 1139

As it hap ben in olde tymes ȝore

And herknith what þis auctor saith þefore 1141

This story is sayd nat for þat wyues scholde 1142

Eolwe Grisild. as in humilite

For it were importable þough þay wolde

But for þat euery wight in his degre

Schulde be constant. in aduersite 1146

As was Grisild. therefore Petrarch writeth



GROUP E. § 2. CLERK'S TALE. SIX-TEXT 440
Harleian 7334. 299

And suffrith vs as for our exercise 1156
wip scharpe scourges of aduersite
Ful ofte to be bete in sondry wise
Nought for to knowe oure wille for certes he
Er we were born. knew al our frelte 1160
And for oure best is al his gouernaunce
Leet vs þanne lyue in vertuous suffraunce 1162

But oo word lordes herkneth er I go 1163
It were ful hard to fynde now a dayes [Joc/132]
As Grisildes in al a toun þre or tuo
For if þat þay were put to such assayes
The gold of hem haþ now so badde alayes 1167
with bras þat þough þe coyn be fair at ye
hit wolde raþer brest in tuo þan plye 1169

For which heer for þe wyues loue of bathe 1170
whos lyf and alle of hir secte god meyntene
In high maistry and elles were it scathe
I wil with lusty herte freisch and grene
Say 3ow a song to glade. 3ow I wene 1174
And lat vs stynt of earnestful matiere
herknith my song. þat saith in þis manere / 1176

[No break in the MS.]

¶ Lenvoye. de Chaucer.

G Risild is deed and eek hir pacience 1177
And bothe at oones buried in Itayle
For whiche I crye in open audience / 1179
No weddid man so hardy be to assayle
his wyues pacience in hope to fynde
Grisildes for in certeyn he schal fayl 1182

O noble wyues ful of heigh prudence /	1183
let noon humilite 3our tonges nayle	
Ne lat no clerk haue cause or diligence	1185
To write of 3ow a story of such meruayle /	
As of Grisildes pacience and kynde	
Lest Chichiuauche 3ow swolwe in hir entraile	1188
Folwith Ecco þat holdith no silence	1189
But euer answereth at þe countretayle	
Bep nouȝt bydaffed for 3our Innocence	1191
But scharply tak on 3ow þe gouernayle	
Empryntith wel þis lessoun in 3our mynde	
For comun profyt sith it may auayle	1194
3e archewyues stondith at defens	1195
Syn 3e ben strong as is a greet Chamayle	
Ne suffre not þat men 3ow don offens	1197
And sclendre wydewes felle as in batayle	
Beth egre as is a Tyger 3ond in Inde	
Ay clappith as a mylle I 3ow counsaile	1200
Ne drede hem not. do hem no reuerence [leaf 122, back]	1201
For þough þin housbond armed be in mayle	
The arwes of þy crabbid eloquence	1203
Schal perse his brest and eek his aduentayle /	
In gelousy I rede eek þou him bynde	
And þou schalt make him couche as doth a quayle	1206



¶ here bygynneth þe prolōge of þe marchaundis tale.

WEpyng^t and wailyng^t care and oþer sorwe
I knowe ynough boþe on euen & on morwe
Quod þe marchaund. and so doon oþer mo
That weddid ben I trowe þat^t it be so 1216
For wel I woot^t it^t fareth so with me
I haue a wyf^t. þe worste þat^t may be
For þough þe feend to hir y-coupled were
Sche wold him ouer macche I dar wel swere 1220
what^t schuld I 3ow reherse in special
hir high malice. sche is a schrewe at^t al
Ther is a long^t and a large difference
Betwix Grisildes grete pacience 1224
And of my wyf^t þe passyng^t cruelte
were I vnbounden also mot I the
I wolde neuer eft^t come in þe snare
we weddid men lyue in sorwe and care 1228
Assay who-so wil and he schal fynde /
That^t I say soth by seint Thomas of Inde
As for þe more part^t. I say not alle
God schilde þat^t it scholde so byfalle / 1232
A good *sir* host^t. I haue y-weddid be
Thise monthes tuo and more not par de
And 3it^t I trowe he þat^t al his lyue
wyfes haþ ben þough þat^t men wold him riue 1236
vnto þe hert^t ne coupe in no manere /
Tellen so moche sorwe as I now heere [leaf 133]
Coupe telle of my wyfes cursednesse /
No quod our ost^t: marchaunt^t so god 3ow blesse 1240
Sin 3e so moche knowen of þat^t art
Ful hertily tellith vs a part^t
Gladly quod he of myn oughne sore
For sory hert^t I telle may na more 1244

[No gap in the MS.]

¶ Narrat

Whilom þer was duellyng in lombardy
 A worpy knight þat born was of pany
 In which he lyued in gret prosperite
 And fourty ȝer. a wifes man was he 1248
 And folwed ay his bodily delyt
 On wommen. ther was his appetyt
 As doon þese fooles þat/ ben seculere
 And whan þat he was passed fourty ȝere 1252
 were it for holyness or for dotage
 I can not say. but such a gret corrage
 hadde þis knight. to ben a weddid man
 That day and night. he doþ al þat he can 1256
 Taspys wher þat he mighte weddid be
 Praying our lord to graunte him þat he
 Might oones knowen of þat blisful lif
 þat is bitwix an housbond and his wyf 1260
 And for to lyue vnder þat holy bond
 with which god first. man to womman bond



SIX-TEXT 444
GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 303

And lede his lyf in mirthe and in solace
wher as þese bachileres synge allas
whan þay fynde eny aduersite
In loue which is but childe vanite [leaf 133, back] 1276
And trewely it sit wel to be so
That bachilers haue ofte peyne and wo
On brutil ground þay bulde brutelnesse /
þay fynde whan þay wene sikernesse 1280
Thay lyue but as a brid oper as a best
In liberte and vnder noon arrest
Ther as a weddid man in his estate
lyuith his lif busily and ordinate 1284
vnder þe 3ok' of mariage I-bounde
wel may his herte in ioie and blisse abounde /
For who can be so buxom as a wyf /
who is so trewe and eek' so ententyf 1288
To kepe him seek and hool as is his make
For wele or woo sche wol him not forsake /
Sche is not wery him to loue and serue
Theigh þat he lay bedred. til þat he sterue 1292
And 3et' som clerkes seyn it is not so
Of whiche theofrast' is oon of þo
what fors pough theofrast'. liste lye
Ne take no wif quod he for housbondrye 1296
As for to spare in houshold þy dispense
A trewe seruaunt doth more diligence
þy good to kepe þan þin oughne wif /
For sche wol clayme half part in al hir lif 1300
And if þat þou be seek so god me saue
þyne verray frendes or a trewe kuaue
wol kepe þe bet' þan sche þat waytith ay
After þy good and hath doon many day 1304
And if þat þou take a wif be war
Of oon peril. which declare I ne dar.
This entent and an hundrid siþe wors
writith þis Mas ther god his bones curs 1308

wel may þe sike man wayle and wepe
 Ther as þer is no wyf þe hous to kepe
 I warne þe if wisly þou wilt wirche
 loue wel þy wyf as crist doth his chirche 1384
 If þou louest þiself þou louest þy wyf /
 No man hatith his fleisch but in his lif /
 he fostrith it and þerfore warne I þe
 Cherish þy wif. or þou schalt neuer the 1388
 housbond & wif what men iape or pleye
 Of worldly folk holden þe righte weye [Long 125]
 Thay ben so knyht þer may noon harm bytyde
 And nameliche vpon þe wyues syde 1392
 For which þis Ianuary of which I tolde
 Considered hath Inwith his dayes olde /
 The lusty lif the vertuons quiete
 That is in mariage hony-swete 1396
 ¶ And for his frendes on a day he sent
 To tellen hem theeffect of his entent
 wiþ face sad. he hap hem this tale told
 he sayde frendes I am hoor and old 1400
 And almost god woot at my pittes brinke
 vpon my soule som what most I þynke
 I haue my body folily dispendid
 Blessed be god that I schal be amendid 1404
 For I wil be certeyn a weddid man
 And þat anoon in al þe hast I can



SIX-TEXT 448

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 307

Sche schal not passe · sixtene ȝer certayn
Old fleisch and ȝong' fleisch þat wold I haue ful fayn
Bet' is quod he a pyk' þan a pikereth
And bet' þan olde boef is tendre vel 1420
I wil no womman twenty ȝer of age
It nys but bene straw and gret' forage
And eek' þese olde wydewes god it woot'
They can so moche craft' of wades boot 1424
So moche broken harm whan þat hem list'
That' wip hem schuld I neuer lyuen in rest'
For sondry scolis maken subtil clerkes
womman of many a skile half a clerk' is [leaf 155, back] 1428
But' certeyn a ȝong' þing' may men gye
Right' as men may warm wax with hondes plye
wher for I say ȝow plenerly in a clause
I wil noon old wyf' han right' for þat' cause 1432
For if' so were I hadde so meschaunce
þat' I in hir coupe haue no plesaunce
Than schuld I lede my lyf' in aduoutrie
And go streight' to þe deuel whan I dye. 1436
Ne children schuld I noon vpon hir geten
ȝet' were me leuer houndes had me eten
þan þat' myn heritage schulde falle
In straunge hond and þus I telle ȝow alle 1440
I doute not. I wot' þe cause why
Men scholde wedde. and forþermor woot I
Ther spekith many man of' mariage
That' wot' nomore of it þan wot' my page 1444
For whiche causes. man schuld take a wyf'
If' he ne may not' chast' be by his lif'
Take him a wif' with gret' deuocioun
By cause of lawful procreacioun 1448
Of' children to þonour of' god aboute
And not' oonly for paramour and for loue.
And for þay schulde leccherye eschiewe
And ȝeld oure dettes whan þat it is due 1452

Or for þat ilk' man schulde helpen oþer
 In meschief' as suster schal to þe broþer
 And lyue in chastite ful heuenly
 But' sires by þour leue þat am not I 1456
 For by þanked I dar make anaunt
 I fele my lemys stark' and suffisaunt
 To doon al þat' a man bilongeth vnto
 I wot' my selue best' what' I may do 1460
 ¶ Though I be hoor I fare as doþ a tree *Note*
 That' blossemith er þat' þe fruyt' I-waxe be
 A blossemy tre is neither drye ne deed
 I fele me no-wher hoor but' on myn heed 1464
 Myn herte and my lymes ben as greene.
 As laurer þurgh þe ȝeer is for to seene *af 136]*
 And synnes ȝe han herd al myn entent
 I pray ȝow to my wille ȝe assent' 1468
 Dinerse men dinersly him tolde
 Of mariage many ensamples olde
 Some blamed him some praised it' certayn
 But' atte laste schortly for to sayn 1472
 As alday fallith altercacioun
 Bitwixe frendes in despitesoun
 Ther fel a strif' bitwen his bretheren tuo *Note*
 Of which þat' oon was clepid Placebo 1476
 Iustinus soþly cleped was þat' oþer
 Placebo sayde .o. Ianuary broþer
 Ful litel need had ȝe my lord so deere
 Counseil to axe of' eny þat' is heere 1480
 But' þat' ȝe ben so ful of' sapience
 That' ȝow ne likith for ȝour heigh prudence /
 To wayue fro þe word of' Salamon
 This word said he vnto vs euerychoon 1484
 werk' / al þing' by counsail þus sayd he /
 And þanne schaltow nought' repente þe
 But' þough þat' Salamon speke such a word
 Myu owne deere broþer and my lord 1488

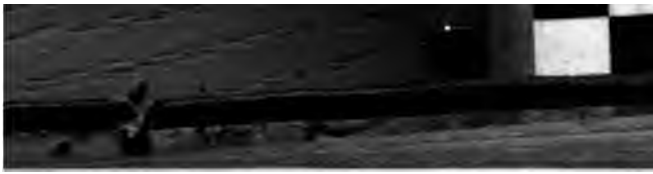


SIX-TEXT 450

GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 309

So wisly god bring' my soule at ese and rest
I holde 3our oughne counseil is þe best/
For broþer myn of me tak' þis motif
I haue now ben a court' man al my lyf 1492
And god wot þough. þat I vnworþy be
I haue standen in ful gret degre
Abouten lordes in ful gret estat
3it' had I neuer with noon of hem debaat 1496
I neuer hem contraried trewely
I wot wel þat my lord can more þan I
what þat he saith I hold it ferm and stable
I say þe same or elles þing' semblable 1500
A ful gret' fool is eny counselour note
þat seruith any lord of high honour
þat dar presume or oones þenken it /
That' his counseil schuld passe his lordes wit' [*U¹³⁶, bk*] 1504
Nay lordes ben no fooles by my fay
3e haue 3our self' y-spoken heer to day
So heigh sentens so holly and so wel
þat I consente and conferme euery del 1508
3our wordes alle. and 3oure oppinioun
By god þer is no man in al þis toun
Ne in ytaile coupe better haue sayd
Crist' holdith him of þis ful wel a-payd 1512
And trewely it' is an heigh corrage
Of any man þat stopen is in age /
To take a 3ong' wyf by my fader kyn
3our herte hongith on a ioly pyn 1516
Doth now in þis matier right' as 3ow lest
For fynally I hold it' for þe best
Iustinus þat ay stille sat' and herde /
Right in þis wise he to placebo answerde / 1520
Now brother myn be pacient' I 3ow pray
Syns 3e haue sayd. and herknith what I say
Senec' amonges oþer wordes wyse
Saith þat a man aught' him wel auyse 1524

To whom he ȝiueþ his lond or his catel
 And syns I aught' auyse me right' wel
 To whom I ȝiue my good away fro me
 wel more I aught' avised for to be 1528
 To whom I ȝiue my body for alwey
 I warn ȝow wel. it' is no childes pley
 To take a wyf wiþoute avisement'
 Men most' enquire þis is myn assent 1532
 wher sche be wys or sobre or dronkelewe
 Or proud or oþer way a schrewe
 A chyder or a wastour of þy good
 Or riche or pore or elles man is wood 1536
 Al be it so þat no man fynde schal
 Noon in þis world þat' trottith hool in al
 Neyther man ne best' such as man can denyse
 But' natheles it aught' ynough suffise 1540
 wiþ any wyf if' so were þat' sche hadde
 Mo goode thewes þan hir vices badde [100/187]
 And al þis askith leyser to enquire
 For god woot' I. haue weped many a tere 1544
 Ful priuely syns I haue had a wyf
 Prayse who so wil a weddid mannes lif
 Certes I fynd in it but' cost' and care
 And obseruaunce of alle blisses bare 1548
 And ȝit god woot' myn neighebour aboute
 And namely of wommen many a route



SIX-TEXT 452
GROUP K. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 311

To haue his wif' alloone trustith me
þe schul not please hir fully 3eres þre
This is to say to doon hir ful plesaunce
A wyf' axith ful many an obseruaunce 1564
I pray 3ow þat 3e be not euel apayd
wel quod þis Ianuary and hastow sayd
Straw for þy senec' and for þy prouerbis
I coueyte nought' a panyer ful of herbes 1568
Of scole termes wiser men þan þow /
As I haue sayd assenten her right' now
Vnto my purpose . placebo what' say 3e
I say it is a cursed man quod he / 1572
That' lettith matrimoigne sicurly
And with þat word þay rysen vp sodeinly
And ben assented fully þat' he scholde
Be weddid whan him lust' . and wher he wolde 1576
The fantasy . and þe curious busynesse
Fro day to day . gan in þe soule impresse
Of Ianuary aboute his mariage
Many a fair schap and many a fair visage [lea/137, back] 1580
Ther passith þorugh his herte night' by night
As who so took' a mirroure polissched bright'
And set' it' in a comun market place
Than schuld he se . many a figure pace 1584
By his mirour and in þe same wise
Gan Ianuary in his þought' deuyse
Of maydens which þat' duellid him bisyde
he wist' not' where þat' he might' abyde 1588
For þough þat' oon haue a beaute in hir face
Anoper stant' so in þe poeples grace
For hir sadnesse and hir benignite
That' of þe poeple grettest' vois had sche 1592
And som were riche and hadde badde name
But' napeles bitwix earnest' and game
he atte last/ appoynted him anoon
And let' al oper fro his herte goon 1596

And ches hir of his oughne auctorite
 For loue is blynd al day and may not se/.
 And whan he was in to bedde brought
 He purtrayed in his hert and in his þought 1600
 Hir freische beaute and hir age tendre
 Hir myddel smal hir armes long and sclendre
 Hir wise gouernaunce hir gentillesse /
 Hir wommanly beryngt and hir sadnesse 1604
 And whan þat he on hir was condescendid
 him þought his chois mighte nought ben amendid
 For whan þat he himself concludid hadde
 Him þough ech oþer mannes wyf so badde 1608
 That impossible it were to repplie
 Agayn his choys þis was his fantasie
 his frendes sent he to at his instaunce
 And prayed hem to doon him þat plesaunce 1612
 That hastily þay wolde to him come
 he wold abrigge her labour alle and some
 Nedith no more for him to gon ne ryde
 he was appoynted þer he wold abyde / 1616
 Placebo cam and eek his frendes soone /
 And althirfirst. he bad hem alle a boone [leaf 185]
 That noon of hem noon argumentis make /
 Agayn þe purpos. which þat he had take 1620
 which purpos was plesaunt to god sayd he /
 And verray ground of his prosperite



SIX-TEXT 454
GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 313

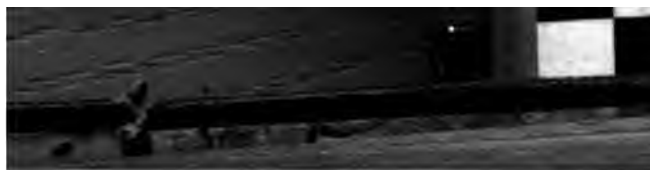
For þan he sayd his spirit was at ease
Than is quod he no þing may me displease /
Saue oon þing prikkith in my conscience /
The which I wil reherse in þour presence 1636
I haue herd sayd quod he ful þore ago
Ther may no man haue parfyt blisses tuo
This is to say in erthe and eek in heuene
For þough he kepe him fro þe synnes seuene / 1640
And eek from ylk a braunche of pilke tre
þit is þer so parfely felicitye
And so gret ease and lust in mariage
That euer I am agast now in myn age 1644
That I schal lede now so mery a lyf
So delicat wipoute wo and stryf
That I schal haue myn heuen in erthe heere
For sith þat verrey heuen is bought so deere 1648
with tribulacioun and gret penaunce
how schuld I þanne þat liue in such plesaunce
As alle wedded men doon with her wyues
Come to blisse ther crist eterne on lyue is 1652
This is my drede and ȝe my breþeren tweye
Assoilith me þis questioun I ȝow preye
Iustinus which þat hated his folye
Answerd anon right in his iaperie [leaf 128, back] 1656
And for he wold his longe tale abrigge
he wolde noon auctorite alegge
But sayde sir. so ther be noon obstacle
Oþer þan þis god of his high miracle 1660
And of his mercy may so for ȝow wirche
That er ȝe haue þour rightes of holy chirche
ȝe may repente of weddid mannes lyf
In which ȝe sayn þer is no wo ne stryf 1664
And elles god forbede but he sente
A weddid man grace him to repente
wel ofte rather þan a sengle man
And þerfor sire þe beste reed I 1668

Dispaire 3ow noughit but haue in 3oure memorie	
Paraduenture she may be 3our purgatorie	
Sche may be goddes mene and goddes whippe	nota
Than schal 3our soule vp to heuen skippe	1672
Swyfter þan doþ an arwe out of a bowe	
I hope to god her after 3e shuln knowe	
That þer nys noon so gret felicite	
In mariage ne neuermor schal be	1676
þat 3ou schal lette of 3our sauacioun	
So þat 3e use as skile is and resoun	
The lustes of 3our wyf attemperely	
And þat 3e please hir not to amorously	1680
And þat 3e kepe 3ow eek from oþer synne	
My tale is doon . for my witt is þynne	
Beþ not agast her of my broþer deere /	
But let vs waden out of þis matiere	1684
The wif of Bathe ift 3e han vnderstonde	
Of mariage which 3e han now on honde	
Declared hath ful wel in lital space	
Fareth now wel god haue 3ow in his grace	1688
And with þat word þis Iustinus and his broþer	
Han tak her leue and ech of hem of oþer	
And whan þay saugh þat i most needis be	
Thay wroughten so by sleight and wys trets	1692
That sche þis mayden which þat/ Mayus highit	
As hastily as euer sche might	[leaf 180]



In wisdom and in trowth of mariage
And sayd his orisouns as is vsage /
And crouched hem and bad god schuld hem blesse /
And made al secur ynowgh with holinesse 1708
Thus ben þay weddid wiþ Solempnite
And atte fest sittith he and sche
with othir worþy folk vpon the deys
Al ful of ioy and blis is that paleys 1712
And of Instrumentz and of vitaile
The moste deinteous of ytaile
Biforn hem stood such Instruments of soun
That Orpheus ne of Thebes Amphion 1716
Ne maden neuer such a melodye
At euery cours ther cam loud menstralcy
That neuer tromped Ioab for to heere
Ne he Theodomas ȝit half so cleere / 1720
And Thebes whan the cite was in doute
Bachus þe wyn hem schenchith al aboute
And venus laughith vpon euery wight
For Ianuary was bycome hir knight / 1724
And wolde bothe assayen his corrage /
In liberte and eek / in mariage
And with hir fuyrbrond in hir hond aboute
Daunceth bifore þe bryde and al þe route 1728
And certeynly I dar right wel say þis
Imeneus þat god of weddyng is
Seigh neuer his lif so mery a weddid man
holde þy pees thow poete marcian [leaf 130, back] 1732
That writest vs. þat ilke weddyng merye
Of hir philologie and he mercurie
And of þe songes that the muses songe
To smal is boþe þy penne and eek þy tonge 1736
For to descriue of þis mariage
whan tender ȝouthes haþ weddid stoupyng age
Ther is such mirthe. þat it may not be write
Assaieth it ȝour self þan may ȝe wyte 1740

If þat I lye or noon in þis mateere
 Mayus þat sit with so benigne a cheere /
 Hir to bihold it / semed fayerye /
 Queen ester loked neuer with such an ye 1744
 On assure so meke a look' hap' sche
 I may not' 3ow' deuyse al hir beaute
 But thus moche of hir beaute telle I may
 That' sche was lyk' þe brighte morw of may 1748
 Fulfild of alle beaute and plesaunce
 This Ianuary is rauyscht' in a traunce
 At' euery tyme he lokith on hir face
 But' in his hert' he gan hir to manace 1752
 That' he þat' night' in armes wold hir streyne
 Harder þan euer paris did Eleyne
 But' natheles 3it had he gret' pite
 That' pilke night offenden hir most' he / 1756
 And þought' allas .o. tendre creature
 Now wolde god 3e mighte wel endure
 Al my corrage. it' is so scharp and keene
 I am agast' 3e schul it not' susteene 1760
 For god forbede þat' I dede al my might
 Now wolde god þat' it were woxe night
 And þat' þe night' wold stonden euermo
 I wold þat' al þis poeple were a go 1764
 And fynally he doth al his labour
 As he best' mighte sauynge his honour



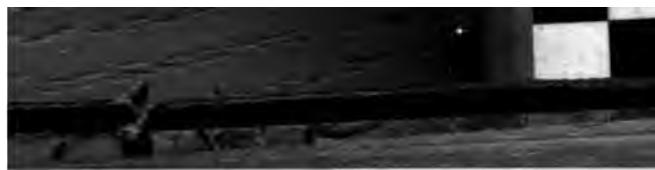
So sore hap venus hurt him wip hir brond
As þat sche bar it daunsyng in hir hond
And to his bed he went him hastily
No more of him as at þis tyme telle I 1780
But þer I lete him now his wo compleyne
Til freisshe may wol rewen on his peyne /
O perilous fuyr þat in þe bed-straw bredith Auctor
O famuler fo þat his seruice bedith 1784
O seruauñt traitour false homly hewe
lyk to þe nedder in bosom vntrewe /
God schild vs alle from þour acquaintance /
O Ianuary dronken in plesaunce 1788
Of mariage se how þy damyan
Thyn oughne squier and þy borne man
Entendith for to do þe vilonye /
God graunte þe þin homly fo espye 1792
For in þis world nys worse pestilence /
Than homly foo . alday in þy presence
Parfourmed hap þe sonne his ark diourne
No lenger may þe body of him soiourne 1796
On thorisonte . as in latitude
Night with his mantel þat is derk and rude
Gan ouersprede themesperie aboute
For which departed is þe route 1800
Fro Ianuary with þank on euery side /
hoom to her hous lustily þay ryde
wher as þay doon her þinges as hem leste
And whan þay seigh her tyme þay goon to reste / 1804
Soone after þat . þis hasty Ianuarie
wold go to bed . he wold no lenger tarie
he drinkith ypocras clarre and vernage /
Of spices hote to encre his corrage [leaf 160, back] 1808
And many a letuary had he ful fyn
Such as þe cursed monk daun Constantin
Hath writen in his book de coitu
To ete hem alle he nas no ping eschieu 1812

And to his priue frendes þus sayd he
 For goddes loue as soon as it may be
 let voyden al þis hous in curteys wise
 And þay han doon right as he wold deuyse 1816
 Men drinken and þe trauers drawe anoon
 The bruyd was brought abedde as stille as stoon
 And whan þe bed was with þe prest I-blessid
 Out of þe chambre hap euery wight him dressed 1820
 And Ianuary hap fast/ in armes take/
 His freisshe may / his paradys his make
 He lullith hir he kissith hir ful ofte
 with pikke bristlis on his berd vnsofte 1824
 lik to þe skyn of houndfisch scharp as brere
 For he was schauē al newe in his manere
 He rubbith hir about hir tendre face
 And sayde þus allas I mot trespass 1828
 To ȝow my spouse. and ȝow gretly offende /
 Er tyme come þat I wol doun descende
 But napeles considerith þis quod he
 Ther nys no werkman what so euer he be 1832
 þat may bope werke wel and hastily
 This wol be doon at leysir parfitly
 It is no fors how longe þat we pleye
 In trewe wedlock coupled be we tweye 1836
 And blessed be þe ȝok þat we ben Inn
 For in actes we mow do no synne



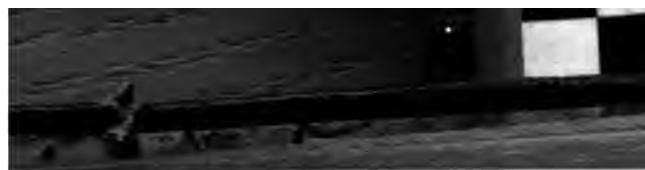
The slakke skyn about his nekke slakeþ
whil þat he song. so chaunteþ he and craketh
But god wot what þat may þought in hir hert /
whan sche him saugh vp sittynge in his schert 1852
In his night cappe and with his nekke lene
Sche prayseith nought his pleyng worth a bene
Than sayd he þus my reste wol I take
Now day is come I may no lenger wake 1856
And doun he layd his heed and sleep til prime
And afterward whan þat he saugh his tyme
Vp riseth Ianuary but freissche may
Holdith hir chamber vnto þe fourþe day 1860
As vsage is of wyues for þe best
For euery labour som tyme moot haue rest
Or elles longe may he not endure
This is to say. no lyues creature 1864
Be it. fisch or brid. or best or man
Now wol I speke of woful damyan
That languyssh for loue as ȝe schuln here
Therefore I speke to him in þis manere 1868
¶ I say. O sely damyan allas Auctor
Answers to my demaunde as in þis caas
how schaltow to þy lady freissche may
Telle þy woo. sche wol alway say nay 1872
Eek if þou speke sche wol þy woo bywrewe
God be þin help I can no better seye
This seke damyan in venus fuyr
So brennith þat he deyeth for desir 1876
For which he put his lyf in aduenture
No lenger might he in þis wo endure
But priuely a penner gan he borwe
And in a letter wrot he al his sorwe 1880
In maner of a compleynt or of a lay
vnto his faire freissche lady may
And in a purs of silk heng on his schert
he hap it put and layd it at his hert [leaf 141, back] 1884

¶ The moone þat' anoon was þilke day That' Ianuary had weddid freische may In tuo of taure was in to Cancre gliden So long' hath mayus in hir chambre abiden	1888
As custom is vnto þese nobles alle A bryde schal not' eten in þe halle Til dayes foure. or þre dayes atte lest' I-passed ben. þan let' hir go to þe fest'	1892
The fourthe day complet fro noon to noon whan þat' þe heighe masse was I-doon In halle sitte. þis Ianuary and may. As freisch as is þe bryghte someres day	1896
And so bifelle þat' þis goode man Remembrid him vpon þis Damyan And sayde seinte mary how may þis be That' Damyan entendith not' to me	1900
Is he ay seek' or how may þis bityde his squiers which þat' stoode þer bisyde. Excusid him by cause of' his syknesse which letted him to doon his busynesse	1904
Noon oþer cause mighte make him tarie That' me forthinkith quod þis Ianuarie he is a gentil squyer by my troupe If' þat' he deyde it' were harm and routhe	1908
he is as wys discret' and eek' secre As any man I wot' of' his degre	



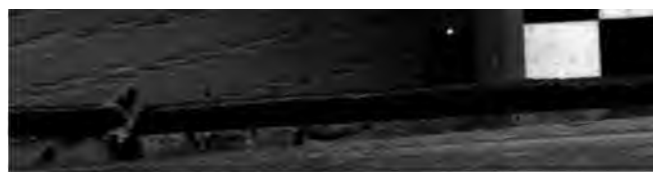
At after-mete 3e wip 3our wommen alle /
whan 3e han ben in chambre out of þis halle [leaf 142]
That alle 3e goo to se þis Damyan
Doth him desport. he is a gentil man 1924
And tellith him þat I wil him visite
Haue I no þing. but rested me a lyte /
And spedith 3ow faste for I wol abyde
Til þat 3e slepe faste by my syde 1928
And with þat word. he gan vnto him calle
A squier þat was marchal of his halle
And told him certeyn þinges what he wolde
This freissche may hath streight hir wey I-holde 1932
wip alle hir wommen vnto Damyan
Doun by þe beddes syde sat sche þan
Comfortyng him as goodly as sche may
This damyan whan þat his tyme he say 1936
In secre wise his purs and eek his bille /
In which þat he. I-writen had his wille
Hap put in to hir hond wipouten more
Saue þat he siketh wonder deepe and sore 1940
And softly to hir right þus sayd he /
Mercy and þat 3e not discouer me
For I am deed if þat þis þing discouered be
þis purs in hir bosom hud had sche 1944
And went hir way 3e gete no more of me
But vnto Ianuary comen is sche
þat on his beddes syde sit ful softe /
And takith hir and kissith hir ful ofte 1948
And layd him doun to slepe and þat anoon
Sche feyned hir as þat sche moste goon
Ther as 3e woot þat euery wight moot/ neede
And whan sche of þis bille hap taken heede / 1952
Sche rent i al to cloutes atte laste
And in to þe priuy softly it cast/
who studieth now but faire freissche may
A-doun by olde Ianuary sche lay 1956

That slepith til þat . þe coughe hap him awaked
 Anoon he prayde stripen hir al naked
 he wold of hir he sayd haue som plesauce
 hir clothis dede him he sayde som grevaunce [1912, 19] 1960
 And sche obeieþ be hir lief or loth
 But lest that precious folk be with me wroth
 how þat he wroughte . I dar not telle
 Or wheþir it semed him paradys or helle 1964
 But here I lete hem werken in her wise
 Til euensongt rong and þan þay most arise
 wheþir it be by desteny or aduenture
 were it by influence or by nature 1968
 Or by constellacioun þat in such estate
 The heuen stood þat tyme fortunate
 As for to putte a bulle of venus werkis
 For alle þing hath tyme as seyn þese clerkis 1972
 To eny womman for to gete hir loue
 I can not say but grete god aboue /
 þat knowith þat noon acte is causeles
 He deme of al . for I wil holde my pees 1976
 But soth is þis how þat þis freishe may
 hath take such impressioun þat day
 Of pite of þis sike damyan
 That from hir herte sche ne dryue can 1980
 The remembraunce for to doon him ease /
 Certeyn bought sche . whom þat þis þing displease



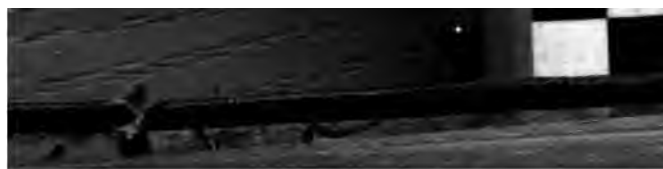
And hem reioyssen in her cruel pride
And rekken nouȝt to ben an homicide
¶ This gentil may fulfillid of pite
Right of hir hond a letter maked sche / 1996
In which sche grauntith him hir verray grace
Ther lakkid nought but oonly day and place [leaf 148]
wher þat sche might vnto his lust suffice
For it schal be right as he wol deuyse 2000
And whan sche saugh hir tyme vpon a day
To visite þis damyan goþ May
And subtilly þis lettre doun sche thruste
Vnder his pylow. rede it if him luste 2004
Sche takith him by þe hond and hard him twiste
So secrely þat no wight of hit wiste
And bad him be al hool and forþ sche wente
To Ianuary whan þat he for hir sente 2008
vp ryseth Damyan þe nexte morwe
Al passed was his siknes and his sorwe /
He kembith him. he pruneth him and pyketh
he doth al þat vnto his lady likith 2012
And eek to Ianuary he goth as lowe /
As euer did a dogge for þe bowe /
He is so plesaunt vnto euery man
For craft is al. who so þat do it can 2016
That euery wight is fayn to speke him good
And fully in his lady grace he stood
Thus lete I damyan about his neede
And in my tale forth I wol procede 2020
Some clerkes holden þat felicite
Stant in delit and þerfor certeyn he
This noble Ianuary with al his might
In honest wise as longith to a knight 2024
Schop him to lyue ful deliciously
his housyng his array as honestly
To his degre was maked as a kynges
Amonges oþer of his honest þinges 2028

he made a gardyn walled al wip stoon
 So fair a Gardyn wot I no wher noon
 For out of doute I verrelly suppose
 That he þat wroot þe romauns of þe Rose 2032
 Ne coupe of hit þe beaute wel deuyse
 Ne Pirapus ne might not wel suffise
 Though he be god of gardyns for to telle /
 The beaute of þe gardyn and þe welle [leaf 143, back] 2036
 That stood vnder a laurer alway greene
 Ful ofte tyme he pluto and his queene
 Preserpina and al þe fayerie
 Desporten hem and maken melodye 2040
 Aboute þat welle and daunced as men tolde
 This noble knight þis Ianuary þe olde
 Such deynte hap in it to walk and pleye
 That he wold no wight suffre bere þe keye 2044
 Saue he himself for of þe smale wyket
 he bar alway of siluer a smal cliket
 wip which whan þat him list he it vnschette
 And whan he wolde pay his wyf hir dette / 2048
 In somer sesoun þider wold he go
 And may his wyf and no wight but þay tuo
 And þinges which . þat weren not doon in bedde
 he in þe gardyn parformed hem and spedde 2052
 And in þis wise many a mery day
 lyued þis Ianuary and freische may



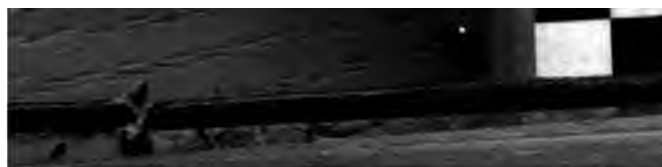
why hastow Ianuary þus deceyued
That haddist him for þy fulle frend receyued
And now þou hast byreft him boþe his yen
For sorw of which desireth he to dyen 2068
Allas þis noble Ianuary fre
Amyd his lust and his prosperite
Is woxe blynd and þat al sodeynly
he wepeth and he weyleth pitously 2072
And þer with al þe fuyr of Ialousye
lest þat his wif schuld falle in som folye [leaf 144]
So brent his herte. þat he wolde fayn
That som man boþe hir and him had slayn 2076
For neyþer after his deth nor in his lyf
Ne wold he þat sche were loue ne wyf
But euer lyue as wydow in clothes blake /
Soul as þe turtil þat lost haþ hir make 2080
But atte last after a moneth or tweye
his sorwe gan aswage soþ to seye
For whan he wist it may noon oþer be /
he paciently took his aduersite 2084
Saue out of doute he may not forgoon
That he nas Ialous euermore in oon
which Ialousie it was so outrageous
That neyþer in halle. ne in noon oþer hous 2088
Ne in noon oþer place neuer þe mo
he nolde suffre hir to ryde or go
But if þat he had hond on hir alway
For which ful ofte wepeth freische may 2092
That loueth Damyan so benignely
That sche moot outhur deyen sodeinly
Or elles sche moot han him as hir lest
She waytith whan hir herte wolde brest 2096
vpon þat oþer syde Damyan
Bicomen is þe sorwfulleste man
That euer was for neyther night ne day
Ne might he speke a word wip fressche may 2100

As to his purpos of no such matiere
 But if þat Ianuary most it heere
 That had an hond vpon hir euermo
 But napeles by writyng to and fro 2104
 And priue signes wist he what sche ment/
 And sche knew eek þe fyn of his entent
 ¶ O Ianuary what might it þe auaille
 If þou might see . as fer as schippes saile 2108
 For as good is . blynd deceyued be /
 As to be deceyued whan a man may see
 Lo argus which þat had an hundred eyen
 For al þat euer he couþe poure or prien [leaf 144, back] 2112
 3et was he blent as god wot so ben moo
 That weneth wisly þat it be nought so
 Passe ouer is an ease I say no more
 This freissche may þat I spak of so 3ore 2116
 In warm wex hath emprynted þe cliket
 That Ianuary bar of þe smale wiket/
 with which in to his gardyn ofte he went
 And damyan þat knew al his entent 2120
 The cliket counterfeted priuely
 Ther nys no more to say but hastily
 Som wonder by þis cliket schal betyde
 which 3e schal heeren if 3e wol abyde 2124
 ¶ O noble Ouyde wel soth saistow god woot
 what sleight is it/ þough it be long & hoot



That in a morwe vnto þis may saith he /
Rys vp my wif. my loue. my lady fre /
The turtlis vois. is herd my douue swete
The wynter is goon. with his raynes wete 2140
Come forth now-with. þin eyȝen columbine
how fairer ben þy brestes þan is þe wyne
The gardyn is enclosed al aboute
Com forth my swete spouse out of doute 2144
Thow hast me wounded in myn hert. o. wyf
No spot of þe knew I in al my lif /
Com forth and let vs / take oure desport /
I ches þe for my wyf and my comfort 2148
Such olde lewed wordes vsed he /
On damyan a signe made sche [leaf 145]
That he schuld go. biforn with his cliket
This damyan þan haþ opened þe wiket 2152
And in he stert and þat in such manere /
That no wight. it mighte see nor heere
And stille he seet vnder a bussch anoon
This Ianuary is blynd as is a stoon 2156
with Mayus in his hond and no wight mo
In to his freische gardyn is ago
And clappid to þe wiket sodeinly
Now wyf quod he her nys but ȝe and I 2160
þat art þe creature þat I best loue
For by þat lord þat sit in heuen aboue
leuer ich had to dyen on a knyf
Than þe offende deere trewe wyf 2164
For goddes sake þenk how I þe chees
Nought for no coueytise douteles
But oonly for þe loue I had to þe
And þough þat I be old and may not se 2168
Beeth trewe to me and I wol telle ȝow why
Thre þinges certes schul ȝe wynne þer by
First loue of crist and to ȝour self honour
And al myn heritage toun and tour 2172

I ȝiue it ȝow makith chartres as ȝow leste
 This schal ben doon to morw er sonne reste
 So wialy god my soule bringe in blisse
 I pray ȝow first in couenaunt ȝe me kisse 2176
 And þough þat I be ialous wyf me nought
 ȝe ben so deep emprynted in my þoughȝt
 þat whan þat I considre ȝour beaute
 And þer wiþ al þe vnlikly eelde of me 2180
 I may nought certes þough I schulde dye
 Forbere to ben out of ȝour companye
 For verray loue þis is wiþouten doute
 Now kisse me wyf and let vs Rome aboute 2184
 This freissche may whan sche his worde herde
 Benignely to Ianuary answerde /
 But first and forward sche bigan to wepe
 I haue quod sche a soule for to kepe [leaf 145, back] 2188
 As wel as ȝe and also myn honour
 And of my wifhod þilke tendre flour
 which þat I haue ensured in ȝour hond
 whan þat þe prest to ȝow my body bond 2192
 wherfor I wil answer in þis manere
 By þe leue of ȝow my lord so deere
 I pray to god þat neuer dawe þe day
 That I ne sterue as foule as woman may 2196
 If euer I do to my kyn þat schame
 Or elles I empaire so my name



GROUP E. § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 329

SIX-TEXT 470

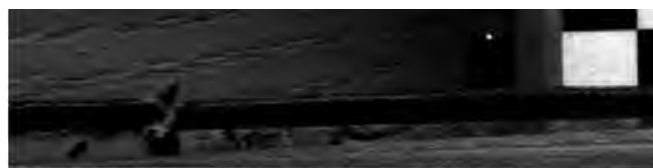
And wiþ hir fyngres signes made sche	
That damyan schuld clymb vpon a tre	note
That charged was with fruyt/ and vp he went/	
For verrayly he knew al hir entent'	2212
And euery signe þat sche couthe make	
wel bet þan Ianuary hir oughne make	
For in a letter sche had told him al	
Of þis matier how he worche shal	2216
And þus I lete him sitte vpon þe pirie	
And Ianuary and may romynge mirye	
¶ Bright was þe day and bliew þe firmament	
Phebus hap of gold his stremes down I-sent	2220
To gladen euery flour with his warmnesse	
he was þat tyme in gemmes as I gesse	
But litel fro his declinacioun	
Of Caker. Ioues exaltacioun	2224
And so bifel þat brighte morwen tyde	
That in þat gardyn in þe ferther syde /	[leaf 146]
Pluto that is kyng of fayerye	
And many a lady in his compaignie	2228
Folwyng his wif þe queene preserpine	
Ech after oþer. as right as a lyne	
whil þat sche gadred floures in þe mede	
In claudian 3e may þe story rede	2232
how in þis grisly carte he hir fette	
This king of fayry þan adoun him sette /	
vpon a bench of turues freish and greene	
And right anoon þus sayd he to his queene /	2236
¶ My wyf quod he þer may no wight say nay	
Theexperiens so preueth euery day	
The tresoun which þat womman doth to man	
Ten hundrid þousand. tellen I can	2240
Notable of þour vntrouth and brutelnesse	
O. Salamon wys and richest of richesse /	
Fulfuld of Sapiens. and of worldly glorie /	
Ful worpy ben þy wordes to memorie	2244

To euery wight þat wit and resoun can
 Thus praysith he ȝit þe bounte of man
 Among' a þousand men ȝit fond I con
 But of wommen alle fond I noon 2248
 Thus saith þe king þat knoweth ȝour wikkednesse
 And Ihc filius Sirac / as I gesse /
 Ne spekith of ȝow but selde reuerence
 A . wilde fuyr and corrupt pestilence 2252
 So falle vpon ȝour bodies ȝit to night
 Ne se ȝe not þis honorable knight
 By cause alas þat he is blynd and old
 his owne man schal make him cokewold 2256
 loo wher he sitt. þe lecchour in þe tre
 Now wol I graunten of my maieste /
 Unto þis olde blinde worþy knight
 þat he schal haue aȝein his eyȝen sight 2260
 whan þat his wyf wol do him vilonye
 Than schal he knowe al her harlotrye
 Boþe in reproef of her and oþer mo
 ȝe schal quod preserpine and wol ȝe so [leaf 146, back] 2264
 Now by my modres sires soule I swere
 That I schal ȝiue hir suffisaunt answere /
 And alle wommen after for hir sake
 That þough þay be in any gult I-take 2268
 with face bold þay schul hemself excuse
 And bere hem doun þat wolde hem accuse



wommen ful trewe . ful good and vertuous
witnesses on hem þat duelle in cristes hous
with martirdom þay proued her constaunce
The romayn gestes eek make remembraunce 2284
Of many a verray trewe wyf also .
But sire be nought wrath al be it so
Though þat he sayd he fond no good womman
I pray þow tak þe sentens of þe man 2288
he mente þus þat in souereign bounte
Nis noon but god þat sit in trinite
Ey for verrey god þat nys but oon
what make þe so moche of Salamon 2292
what þough he made a temple goddes hous
what þough he were riche and glorious
So made he eek a temple of fals godis
How might he do a þing þat more forbod is 2296
Par de als fair as þe his name emplastre
he was a lecchour and an ydolastre
And in his eelde he verraily god forsook
And if god ne had as saip þe book 2300
I spared him for his fadres sake he scholde
Haue left his regne raper þan he wolde [leaf 147]
I sette right nought of þe vilonye
That þe of women write a boterflie 2304
I am a womman needes most I speke
Or elles swelle til myn herte breke
For syn sche sayd þat we ben iangleresses
As euer hool I moote brouke my tresses 2308
I schal not spare for no curtesye /
To speke him harm þat wold vs vilonye
Dame quod þis pluto be no lenger wroth
I þiue it vp but/ sith I swere myn oth 2312
That I wil graunte him his sight agein
My word schal stonde I warne þow certeyn
I am a kyng it sit me nought to lye
And I quod sche a queen of faierie 2316

hir answer schal sche haue I vndertake
 Let vs no mo wordes her-of make
 For soth I wol no lenger 3ow contrarie
 ∴ Now let vs turne agayn to Ianuarye 2320
 That in þis gardyn with þis faire may
 Syngeþ ful merier þan þe papiniay
 3ow loue I best and schal and oþer noon
 So long about þe aleys is he goon 2324
 Til he was come agaynes þilke pirie
 wher as þis damyan sittith ful mirye
 On heigh among þe freische leeys greene
 This freische may þat is so bright and scheene 2328
 Gan for to syke and sayd allas my syde
 Now sir quod sche for ought þat may bityde
 I most han of þe peres þat I see
 Or I moot dye so sore longith me 2332
 To eten of þe smale peris greene
 Help for hir loue þat is of heuen queene
 I telle 3ow wel a womman in my plyt
 May haue to fruyt so gret an appetyt 2336
 þat sche may deyen. but sche it haue
 Allas quod he þat I nad heer a knaue
 That couthe clymbe allas allas quod he
 For I am blynd. 3e sire no fors quod sche [leaf 147, back] 2340
 But wolde 3e vouche sauf for goddes sake
 The piry inwith 3our armes for to take
 For wel I woot þat 3e maye truste me

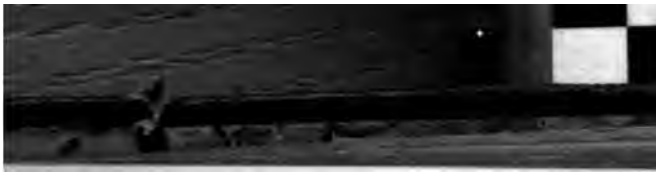


SIX-TEXT 474

GROUP E § 4. MERCHANT'S TALE. Harleian 7334 333

Gan pullen vp þe smok' and in he throng	
And whan þat' pluto /saugh þis grete wrong'	
To Ianuary he ȝaf his sight' agayn	
[.	2336
. no gap in the MS.]	
Ne was þer neuer man of þing' so fayn	
But on his wif his þought' was euermo	
Vp to þe tree he kest' his eyzen tuo /	2360
And seigh þat' damyan his wyf had dressid	
In which maner it may not' ben expressid	
But if I wolde speke vncurteisly	
And vp he ȝaf a roryng' and a cry	2364
As doth þe moder whan þe child schal dye	
Out. help. alas. harrow. he gan to crie	
O stronge lady stoure what dos þow	
And sche answerith sire what' eylith ȝow	2368
haue paciens and resoun in ȝour mynde	
I haue ȝow holpen on boþe ȝour eyen blynde	
vp peril of my soule I schal not' lyen	
As me was taught' to hele with ȝour yen	2372
was noþing' bet'. for to make ȝow see	
Than stroggle wiþ a man vpon a tree	
God woot I dede it in ful good entent	
Stroggle quod he! ȝe algaþ' in it went	2376
God ȝiue ȝow boþe on schames doth to dyen	
He swyued þe. I saugh it wiþ myn yen	
And elles be I honged by þe hale	
Than is quod sche medicine fals	(100/100) 2380
For certeynly if þat' ȝe mighten see	
ȝe wold not' say tho wordes vnto me	
ȝe han som glymayng' and no parfyt sight'	
I se quod he as wel as euer I might'	2384
Thankid be god wiþ boþe myn yen tuo	
And by my trouth me þought' he did þe so	
ȝe. mase. mase. goode sire quod sche	
This þank' haue I for I haue maad ȝow see	2388

Allas quod sche þat' euer I was so kynde
 Now dame quod he let' al passe out of mynde
 Com down my leef' and if I haue myssayd
 God help me so as I am euel appayd 2392
 But by my fader soule I wende haue seyn
 how þat' þis damyan had by þe leyn
 And þat' þy smok' had layn vpon þy brest
 3e sire quod sche 3e may wene as 3ow lest/ 2396
 But sire a man þat' wakith out of his slep
 He may not sodeynly wel take keep
 vpon a þing' ne seen it' parfytyl
 Til þat' he be adawed verrayly 2400
 Right' so a man þat' long' hap blynd I-be
 Ne may not sodeynly so wel I-se
 First' whan þe sight' is newe comen agayn
 As he þat' hap a day or tuo I-sayn 2404
 Til þat' 3our sight' y-stablid be a while
 þer may ful many a sighte 3ow bigile
 Beþ war I pray 3ow for by heuen king'
 Ful many man wenith for to se a þing' 2408
 And it' is al anoþer þan it/ semeth
 he þat' mys conceyueth he mys demeth
 And wiþ þat' word sche leep down fro þe tre
 This Ianuary who is glad but he 2412
 he kissith hir and clippith hir ful ofte
 And on hir wombe he strokith hir ful ofte



SIX-TEXT 476
GROUP E. § 5. MERCHANT'S END-LINK. Harleian 7334. 335

Ey goddes mercy sayd our hoste þo
Now such a wyf I pray god keep me fro 2420
lo whiche sleighes and subtilitees
In wommen ben for ay as busy as bees
Ben þay vs seely men for to desceyue
And from a soth. euer wol þay weyue 2424
By this marchaundes tale it proueth wel
But douteles as trewe as eny steel
I haue a wyf þough þat sche pore be
But of hir tonge a labbyng schrewe is sche 2428
And ȝit sche hath an heep of vices mo
Ther-of no fors let alle such þinges go
But wite ȝe what in counseil be it seyð
Me rewith sore I am vnto hir teyd 2432
And if I scholde reken euery vice
which þat sche hath I-wis I were to nyce
And cause why. it schuld reported be
And told to hir of som of þis meyne 2436
Of whom it needith not for to declare
Syn wommen connen oute such chaffare
And eek my witte suffisith nought þerto
To tellen al wherfor my tale is do 2440

[No gap in the MS.]

GROUP F. FRAGMENT VII.

§ 1. THE SQUIRE'S HEAD-LINK.

HARLEIAN MS. 7334 (British Museum).

¶ Sir Squier com forþ. if þat þour wille be
 And say vs a tale for certes þe
 Connen þer-on as moche as ony man
 ¶ Nay sire quod he. but I wil say as I can 4
 wiþ herty wil. for I wil not rebelle
 Against þour wille. a tale wil I telle
 Hauē me excused if þat I speke amys
 My wil is good. and þerto my tale is this. 8

¶ Her endith þe prologe

[No break in the MS.]



¶ And her bygynneth þe Squyeres tale

AT Sarray in þe lond of Tartary [leaf 149]
Ther dwelled a kyng^t þat^t werryed russy
Thurgh which þer deyed many a doughty man
This nobil kyng^t was cleped Cambynskan 12
which in his tyme was of so gret^t renoun
That^t þer^t nas nowher in no regioun
So excellent a lord in alle þing^t /
Him lakked nought^t þat^t longed to a kyng 16
As of þe secte of which þat^t he was born
he kept^t his lawe. to which he was sworn
And þerto he was hardy wys and riche /
And pitous and Iust^t alway yliche 20
Soth of his word benign and honourable
Of his corage as eny centre stable
þong^t freisch and strong^t in armes desirous
As eny bachiler of al his hous 24
A fair person he was and fortunat^t
And kepte so wel his real estat
That^t þer was no wher such a ryal man
This noble kyng^t þis tartre þis Cambynskan 28
hadde tuo sones by Elcheta his wyf^t
Of which þe eldest/ highte Algaryf^t
That^t oper was I-cleped Samballo
A doughter^t had þis worthi king^t also 32
That^t þongest^t was and highte Canace
But^t for to telle þou al hir beaute
It^t lith not^t on my tong^t ne my connyng^t
I dar^t nouȝt^t vndertake so heigh a þing^t 36

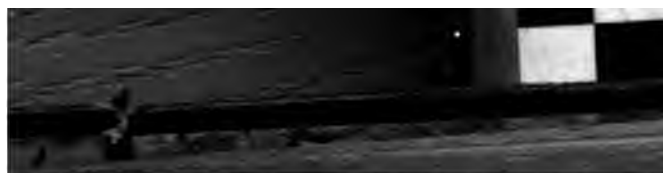
Myn englissh eek' is insufficient
 he moste be a Rethor excellent
 That coup his colours longyng' for þat' art'
 If he schold hir discryue in eny part 40
 I am non such I mot' speke as I can
 And so bifel it' þat' þis Cambynskan
 hap twenty wynter born his dyademe
 As he was wont fro 3er to 3er I deme 44
 he leet' þe fest' of his natiuite :
 Don cryen þurgh Sarray his Cite
 The last' Idus of march after þe 3eer [leaf 119, back]
 Phebus þe sonne was Ioly and cleer 48
 For he was neigh his exaltacioun
 In marc3 face and in his mansioun
 In aries þe colerik' þe hote signe
 Ful lusty was the wedir and benigne 52
 For which þe foules a3ein þe sonne scheene
 what' for þe sesoun & for þe 3onge greene
 Ful lowde song' in here affecciouns
 hem semed haue geten hem protecciouns 56
 A3ens þe swerd of wynter kene and cold
 This Cambynskan of which I haue told
 In royal vesture sittynge on his deys
 with dyadem ful heigh in his paleys 60
 And held his fest'. solempne and so rich
 That in þis worlde was þer noon it' liche



GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. SIX-TEXT 481 339

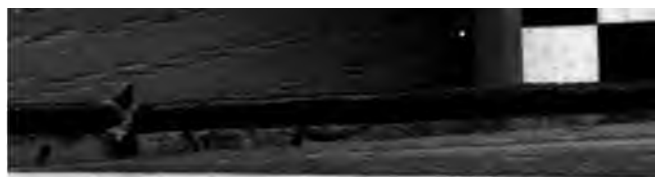
I wol not tarien þou for it is pryme
And for it is no fruyt but los of tyme
vnto my purpos. I wol haue my recours
That so bifelle after þe þridde cours 76
whil þat þe kyng^s sit þus in his nobleye
herkyng^s his mynstrales her þinges pleye
Byforn him atte boord deliciously
In atte halle dore al sodeynly 80
Ther com a knight vpon a steed of bras
And in his hond a brod myrour of glas
Vpon his thomb he had of gold a ryng^s
And by his side a naked swerd hangyng^s 84
And vp he rideth to þe heyghe bord [leaf 150]
In al þe halle ne was þer spoke a word
For meruayl of þis knight^s him to byholde
Ful besily þey wayten zong^s and olde 88
This straunge knight^s þat cam þus sodeynly
Al armed sauf^s his heed ful richely:
Salued the kyng^s and queen and lordes alle
By ordre as þey seten in to halle / 92
with so heigh reuerens and obseruaunce
As wel in speche as in contynauce /
That Ewen with his olde curtesye
They he come aȝein out^s of fayrye 96
Ne couþe him nouȝt amende wiþ no word
And after þis biforn þe highe bord
he with a manly vois sayd his message
After þe forme vsed in his langage 100
wiþouten vice of sillabil or letter
And for his tale schulde seme þe better
Accordaunt^s to his wordes was his cheere
As techeth art^s of speche hem þat it leere 104
Al be it þat I can nat sowne his style
Ne can nat clymben ouer so heigh a style /
ȝit say I þis as to comun entent
Thus moche amounteth al þat euer^s he ment^s 108

If it so be þat I haue it in mynde /
 ¶ he sayd þe kyng of Arraby and yynde
 My liege lord on þis solemne day
 Saluteth þou as he best can or may 112
 he sendeth þou in honour of þour feste
 By me þat am redy at al his heste
 This steede of bras þat esily and wel
 That can in the space of o day naturel 116
 This is to say in four an twenty houres
 wher-so þou lust / in droughþe or in schoures
 Beren þour body in to euery place
 To which þour herte wilneþ for to pace 120
 wiþouten wem of þou purgh foul and fair
 Or if þou lust to flee as heiþ in þair
 As doþ an egle whan him list to sore [leaf 150, back]
 This same steede schal bere þou euermore / 124
 wiþoute harm til þe be þer þou leste
 Though þat þe slepen on his bak or reste
 And torne aȝein with wryping of a pyn
 he þat it wrought cowþe ful many a gyn 128
 he wayted many a constellacioun
 Er he had do þis operacioun
 And knew ful many a seal and many a bond
 ¶ This mirour eek þat I haue in myn hond 132
 hap such a mighte / þat men may in it see
 when þer schal falle eny aduersite



3our excellente doughter þat' is heere
¶ The vertu of þis ryng' and 3e wol heere:
Is þis / þat' who. so lust it for to were
vpon hir thomb / or in hir purs to bere 148
Ther is no foul / þat' fleeth vnder þe heuen
That' schal vnderstonden his steuen.
And know his menyng' openly and pleyn
and answer him in his langage a3eyn 152
And euery gras. þat' groweþ vpon roote
Sche schal eek' know / to whom it' wol do boote
Al be his woundes neuer so deep and wyde
¶ This naked swerd þat' hangeþ by my syde 156
Such vertu hath þat' what man þat' it' smyte
Thurghout' his armur it wol kerue and byte
were it as pikke as a braunched ook'
And what' man is I-wounded with þe strook' 160
Schal neuer be hool / til þat' 3ou lust' of grace (leaf 151)
To strok' him wiþ þe plat' in þilke place:
Ther he is hurt'. þis is as moche to seyn
3e moote with þe platte swerd a3ein 164
Stroke him in þe wound and it' wol close /
This is þe verray soth wiþouten glose /
It' failleth nought' whil it is in 3our hold
And whan þis knight' þus had his tale told 168
he rit out' of þe halle and doun he light'
his steede which þat' schon as sonne bright'
Stant' in þe court' as stille as eny stoon
This knight' is to his chambre lad anon . 172
he is vnarmed and to mete I-sett'
This present; ben ful richely I-fett'
This is to sayn, the swerd and the myrrour
And born anon vnto þe highe tour 176
with certain officers ordeynd þerfore
And vnto Canace þe ryng' is bore:
Solempnely ther sche syt' atte table
But' sikerly wiþouten eny fable 180

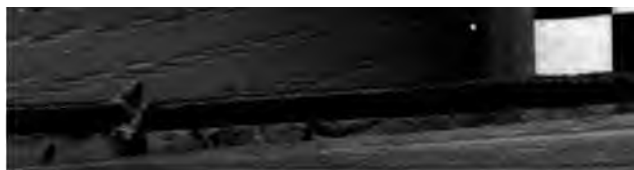
The hors of bras þat may nat be remewed
 It stant as it were to the ground I-glewed
 Ther may no man out of þe place it dryue
 For noon engyn of wyndyng or polyue 184
 And cause why for þey can nouȝt þe craft
 And þerfor in the place þei haue it laft
 Til þat þe knight haþ taught hem þe manere
 To voyden him as ȝe schul after heere 188
 Greet was þe pres þat swarmed to and fro
 To gauren on þis hors þat stondeþ so
 For it so wyd was and so brod and long
 So wel proporcioned to be strong 192
 Right as it were a steed of lumbardye
 Ther-to so horsly and so quyke of ye
 As it a gentyl poyleys courser were
 For certes fro his tayl vnto his eere 196
 Nature ne art ne couþe him nouȝt amende
 In no degre as al þe poeple wende
 But euermore her moste wonder was [leaf 181, back]
 How þat it couþe goon and was of bras 200
 It was of fayry as þe poeple semed
 Diuerse peple . diuersly þey demed
 As many hedes as many wittes been
 They murmured as doþ a swarm of been 204
 And made skiles after her fantasies
 Rehersyng of þe olde poetries



GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. SIX-TEXT 485
Harleian 7334. 343

And sayde it lyth for it is rapier lik'
An apparence maad by som magik'
As Iogelours pleyen at' pis festes grete
Of sondry þoughtes þus þey Iangle and trete 220
As lewed peple demeth comunly
Of þinges þat ben maad more subtily
Than þey can in her lewednes comprehende
They deemen gladly to the badder ende 224
And som of hem wondred of þe mirroure
That' born was vp in to þe maister tour
How men might' in hit suche þinges se
Anoper answerd and sayd it might' wel be 228
Naturelly by composiciouns
Of angels and of heigh reflexiouns
And sayde þat' in Rome was such oon
They speeke of al-ceyt' and Vitilyon 232
Of aristotle / þat' writen in her lyues
Of queynte myrroures and prospectyues
As knowen þey þat' han her bokes herd
And oper folk' haue wondred on þe swerd 236
That' wolde passe þorughout' euery þing' [leaf 152]
And fel in speche of Thelophus þe kyng'
And of achilles for his queynte spere
For he coupe with hit' boþe hele and dere 240
Right' in such wyse as men may wiþ þe swerd
Of which right' now 3e haue 3our seluen herd
They speeken of sondry hardyng' of metal
And speken of medicines þer wiþ al 244
And how and whan it schulde harded be /
which is vnknowe / algaþ' vnto me /
Tho speeken þey of Canacees ryng'
And seyden alle / þat' such a wonder þing' 248
Of craft' of rynges herd þey neuer noon
Sauf þat' he moyses and kyng' Salamon
Had a name of connyng' in such art'
Thus seyen þe peple on euery part' 252

But napeles som seiden þat it was /
 wonder þing^t to make of ferne glas /
 And ȝit^t is glas nouȝt^t like aisschen of^t ferne
 But for þey han I-knowen it^t so ferne 256
 Therfor cesseth her ianglyng^t and her wonder
 And sore wondred som of^t cause of^t ponder
 On ebbe and flood on gossomer and on myst^t
 And on alle þing^t til þat þe cause is wist^t 260
 Thus Ianglen þey and demen and deuyse
 Til þat þe kyng^t gan fro his bord arise
Phebus hath lost^t þe angel merydyonal
 And ȝit^t/ ascendyng^t was a best^t roial 264
 The gentil lyoun wiþ his adryan
 whan þat þis gentil kyng^t þis Cambynskan
 Ros fro his bord þer as he sat^t ful hye
 Biforn him goth ful lowde menstralcye 268
 Til he cam to his chambre of^t Parementȝ
 Ther as þer were diuers instrumentȝ
 That^t is y-like an heuen for to heere
 ¶ Now dauncen lusty Venus children deere 272
 For in þe fissch. her lady sat^t ful heyȝe
 And lokep on hem with a frendly eyȝe /
 This noble kyng^t is set^t vpon his trone /
 This straunge knight is fet to him ful sone [leaf 152, back] 276
 And in the daunce he gan with Canace /
 her is þe reuel and þe iolyte



GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 345

SIX-TEXT 487

A say no more but in þis Iolynesse /
I lete hem til men to soþer hem dresse
The styward byt þe spices for to hye
And eek þe wyn in al þis melodye 292
Thes vschers and þes squyers ben agon
The spices and þe wyn is come anon
They eet and drank and whan þis had an ende /
vnto þe temple as resoun was þey wende / 296
The seruise doon þey and soupen al by day
what needeth þou to rehersen her array
Ech man wot wel þat a kynges feste
hath plente to þe lest and to the meste 300
And deyntees mo þan ben in my knowyng
And after souper goþ þis noble kyng
To see þis hors of bras wiþ al his route
Of lordes and of ladyes al aboute / 304
Swich wondryng was þer on þis hors of bras
That seth þis grete siege of troye was /
Ther as men wondred on an hors also
Ne was þer such a wondryng as was þo 308
But fynally þe kyng asked þe knight
The vertu of þis courser and þe might
And prayd him tellen of his gouernaunce
The hors anon gan for to trippe and daunce 312
whan þe knight leyd hand vpon his rayne
And sayde sir þer is nomore to sayne [leaf 106]
But whan þou lust to ryde any where /
þe moote trille a pyn stant in his ere 316
which I schal telle þou bitwen vs two
þe moste nempne him to what place also
Or what countre þou luste for to ryde
And whan þe come þer þou lust abyde 320
Bid him descende and trille anoper pynne
For þer in lith þe fet of al þe gynne /
And he wol doun descend and do þour wille
And in þat place he wol abyde stille 324

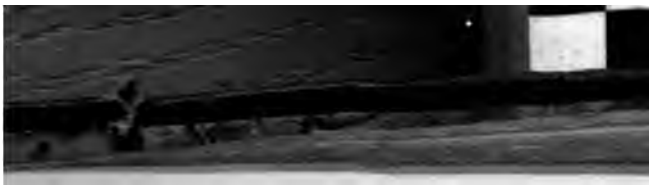
Though al þe world had þe contrary swore
 he schal nat' thennes be I-þrowe ne bore
 Or if þou lust' to bid him þennes goon
 Trille þis pyn and he wol vanyssh anoon 328
 Out' of þe sight' of euery maner wight'
 And come aȝein. be it' by day or night'
 whan þat' þou lust' to clepen him aȝayn
 In such a gyse as I schal ȝow sayn 332
 Bitwixe ȝou and me and þerfor soone
 Byd whan ȝou lust' þer nys nomor to doone
 Enformed when þe kyng' was of þe knight'
 And had conceyued in his wit' aright' 336
 The maner of þe forme and al þis þing'
 Ful glad and bliþ þis noble doughty kyng'
 Repeyryng' to his reuel as biforn
 The bridel is vnto þe tour I-born 340
 And kept' among' his Iewels leef' and deere
 The hors vanyscht' I not' in what manere
 Out' of her sight' ȝe get' nomore of me
 But' þus I lete him in his iolite 344
 This Cambinskan his lordes festeyng'
 Til wel neigh þe day bigan to spryng'
 Explicit' prima pars //

[No break in the MS.]

Incipit secunda pars

here dremes schul not now be told for me
 Ful were here heedes of fumosite
 That causeþ drem of which þer is no charge /
 They slepen til it was prime large / 360
 The moste part but it were Canace
 Sche was ful mesurable as wommen be
 For of hir fader haþ sche take hir leue
 To go to reste soon after it was eue / 364
 hir luste not appalled for to be
 Ne on þe morwe vnfestly for to se /
 And kept hir firste sleep and þan awook
 For such a Ioye sche in herte took 368
 Boþe of hir queynte ryng and hir myrroure
 That twenty tyme chaunged hire colour
 And in hire sleep right for impressioun
 Of hir myrroure sche had a visioun 372
 wher-for er þat þe sonne vp gan glyde /
 Sche cleped vpon her maistresse beside /
 And sayde þat hire luste for to ryse
 These olde wommen þat ben gladly wise 376
 As is here maystresse answered hir anoon
 And sayd madame whider wold ȝe goon
 Thus erly for folk ben alle in reste /
 I wil quod sche aryse for me leste 380
 No lenger for to slepe and walke aboute
 hir maistres clepeth wommen a gret route /
 And vp þey risen a ten oþer a twelue
 vp ryseþ fresshe Canace hir selue 384
 As rody and bright as is þe ȝonge sonne
 That in þe Ram is ten degrees I-ronne
 Non heiler was he¹ whan sche redy was [¹ *first*, 'sche']
 And forth sche walked esily a pas 388
 Arayed after þe lusty sesoun soote [*leaf 154*]
 lightly for to play and walke on foote
 Nought but wiþ fyue or six of hir meyne
 And a trench fer in þe park goþ sche / 392

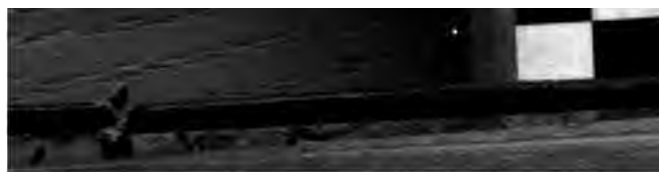
The vapour which þat of þe erthe glod
 Makeþ þe sonne seme rody and sot
 But napeles it was so fair a sight
 That it made alle here hertes for to light 396
 what for þe sesoun what for þe mornynge
 And for þe foules þat sche herde syng
 For right anon sche wiste what þey ment
 Right by here song and knew al here entent / 400
 ¶ The knotte why þat euery tale is told
 If that it be taryed til lust be cold
 Of hem þat han hit after herkned ȝore
 The sauour passeth euer lenger þe more 404
 For fulsomnes of þe prolixite
 And by þis same resoun thinketh me
 I schulde to þe knotte condescende /
 And make of hir walkyng sone an ende · 408
 A-myddes a tree for-druye as whit as chalk
 As Canace was pleyng in hir walk
 There sat a faukoun ouer hir heed ful hye
 þat with a pitous vois bigan to crye 412
 I-beten hadde sche hir self so pitoualy
 That al the woode resowned of hire cry
 wip boþe hir wynges to þe reede blood
 Ran endelong þe tree þer as sche stood 416
 And euer in oon sche cried and schryght
 And wip hir bek hir selue so sche pight



GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. **SIX-TEXT 491**
Harleian 7334 349

Of fremde lond and euer as sche stood
Sche swowned now and now for lak' of blood
Til wel neigh sche falleþ fro þe tre
This faire kynges doughter Canace 432
That' on hir fynger bar þe queynte ryng'
Thurgh which sche vnderstood wel euery þing'
That' eny foul may in his lydne sayn
And coupe answer him in his lydne agayn 436
hap vnderstonde what' þe faukoun seyde
And wel neigh almost' for rewthe sche deyde
And to þe tree sche goth ful hastily
And on þis faukoun lokeþ pitously 440
And held hir lappe a-brod for wel sche wist'
The faukoun moste falle fro þe twist'
whan þat it swowned next' for lak' of blood
A long while to wayten hir sche stood 444
Til atte last' sche spak' in þis manere
Vnto þe hauk' as 3e schul after heere
¶ what' is þe cause if it be for to telle
That 3e ben in þat' furyaH peyne of helle 448
Quod Canace vnto þis hauk' aboue
Is þis for sorwe of deth or elles loue
For as I trowe þis ben causes tuo
That' causen most' a gentil herte wo 452
Of oþer harm it needeþ nouȝt' to speke
For 3e 3our self' vpon 3our self' awreke
which þat' preueþ wel þat' either Ire or drede
Mote ben enchesoun of 3our cruel dede 456
Sith þat' I see noon oþer wight' 3ou chace
For loue of god so doþ 3our selue grace
Or what ben 3our helpe for west' ner Este
Ne saugh I neuer er now no bryd ne beste 460
That' ferde with himself' so pitously
3e sle me with 3our sorwe so verrily
I haue of 3ou so gret' compassioun
For goddes loue com fro þe tree a doun 464

And as I am a kynges doughter trewe [leaf 155]
 If þat I verrayly þe cause knewe
 Of þour diseſe if it lay in my might
 I wold amenden it if þat I might 468
 Als wiſly help me grete god of kynde
 And herbes ſchal I right ynowe fynde
 To helen with þour hurtes haſtly
 Tho ſchright þis faukoun more pitouſly 472
 Than euer ſche did and fil to ground anon
 And lay a-ſwowne deed as eny ſtoon
 Til Canace hath in hir lap y-take
 vnto þat tyme ſche gan of ſwowne ſlake / 476
 And after þat ſche gan of ſwown abreyde
 Right in hir haukes lydne thus ſche ſeyde
 That pite renneth ſone in gentil hert
 Felyng' his ſimilitude in peynes ſmerte 480
 Is proued alday as men may ſee
 As wel by werk' as by auctorite
 For gentil herte kepeth gentilleſſe /
 I ſee wel þat þe haue on my diſtreſſe 484
 Compaſſioun my faire Canace
 Of verray wommanly benignite /
 That nature in þour principles haþ ſet
 But noon hope for to fare þe bet 488
 But for to obeye vnto þour herte fre
 And for to make othere war by me



SIX-TEXT 493
GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. **Harleian 7334.** 351

So tendrely that noþing^e eyled me /
I wiste not^e / what^e was aduersite
Til I couþe flee ful heigh vnder þe sky [leaf 155, back]
Tho dwelled a tercelet^e me faste by 504
That semed welles of alle gentillesse
Al were he ful of tresoun and falsnesse
It was I-wrapped vnder humble cheere
And vnder heewe of troupe in such manere 508
Vnder plesaunce and vnder besy peyne
That no wight^e wende þat he couþe feyne
So deep in greyn he deyed his colours
Right^e as a serpent hut^e him vnder floures 512
Til he may see his tyme for to byte
Right^e so þis god of loue, þis ypocrite
Dop^e so his sermonys and his obseruaunce/
vnder subtil colour and aqueyntaunce 516
That sowneth vnto gentillesse of loue
As in a thombe is al þe faire aboute
And vnder is þe corps whiche þat^e ȝe wot
Such as was þis Ipocrite boþe cold and hot 520
And in this wise he serued his entent
That^e sauf^e þe feend noon wiste what he ment
Til he so long^e had weped and compleyned
And many a ȝeer his seruice to me feyned 524
Til þat^e myn hert to pitous and to nyce
Al Innocent of^e his crouned malice
For-fered of^e his deth as þoughte me
vpon his othes and his sewerte 528
Graunted him loue vpon þis condicioun
That^e euermo myn honour and my renoun
were saued boþe pryuy and apert
This is to sayn þat^e after his desert 532
I ȝaf^e him al myn hert^e and al my þought
god woot^e and he þat^e oper weye nought
And took^e his hert^e in chaunge of myn for ay
But soþ^e is sayd go siþens many a day 536

A trew wight and a theef þenketh nouȝt oon
 And when he saugh þe þyng so fer I-goön
 That I graunted him fully my loue /
 In such a wyse as I haue sayd aboue / 540
 And ȝeuen him my trewe hert as fre [leaf 156]
 As he swor he ȝaf his herte to me /
 Anon þis Tigre ful of doublenesse
 Fil on his knees with so gret deuoutenesse 544
 wiþ high reuerence and as by his chere
 So lyk a gentil louer of manere
 So rauysched as it semede for Ioye
 That neuer Iason ne Parys of Troye 548
 Iason certes ne noon oþer man
 Siþ lameth was þat alþer first bygan
 To louen two as writen folk biforn
 Ne neuer siþ þe firste man was born 552
 Ne coupe man by twenty þousand part
 Contrefete þe sophemes of his art
 Ne were worþy to vnbokel his galoche
 Ther doublenes of feynyng schold approche 556
 Ne so coupe þankyn a knight as he did me
 His maner was an heuen fur to see
 To eny womman were sche neuer so wys
 So peynteth he and kembeth poynt deuys 560
 As wel his wordes as his continuaunce
 And I so loued him for his obeisaunce



SIX-TEXT 495

GROUP F. § 2. SQUIRE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 353

As him god woot ne neuer schal nomo
 This laste lenger þan a ȝeer or two
 That I supposed of him nought but good
 But fynally atte laste þus it stood 576
 That fortune wolde þat he moste twynne
 Out of þe place which þat I was inne
 wher me was wo it is no questioun / [leaf 156, back]
 I can nat make of it descripcioun 580
 For o þing dar I telle boldely
 I know what is þe peyne of deth þerby
 which harm I felt for he ne mighte byleue
 So on a day of me he took his leue 584
 So sorwful eek þat I went verrayly
 That he had feled als moche as I
 whan þat I herd him speke and saugh his hewe
 But napeles I þought he was vntrewe 588
 And eek þat he schulde repire aȝeyn
 wiþinne a litel while soþ to seyn
 And resoun wold eek þat he moste go : for his honour
 Wher-for I wold not ben aȝein his honour [spurious] 592
 Than I made vertu of necessite
 And took it wel seþens it moste be
 As I best might I had for him my sorwe
 And took him by þe hand seint Iohn to borwe 596
 And sayde þus / lo I am ȝour al
 Beþ such as I haue be to ȝou and schal
 what he answerd it needeþ nat to reherse
 who can best say þan he, who can do werse // 600
 whan he haþ al wel sayd þan haþ he doon
 Therfor bihoueþ him a ful long spoon
 That schal ete wiþ a feend þus herd I say
 So atte last he moste forþ his way 604
 And forth he fleeth til he cam þer him leste
 whan it cam him to purpos for to reste
 I trow he hadde þilke text in mynde
 That alle þing reþeyryng to his kynde 608

Gladep himself þus sey men as I gesse
 Men louen of kynde newefangilnesse
 As briddes doon þat men in cage feede
 For þeigh þou night and day take of hem heede 612
 And straw her cage faire and soft as silk
 And ȝeue hem sugre hony breed and mylk
 ȝet right anon as his dore is vppe
 he with his feet wil sporne down his cuppe 616

And to þe wode

[Eight leaves are here missing from the MS.]



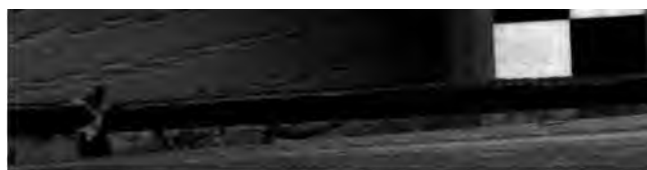
GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 355

SIX-TEXT 514

[*Brit. Mus. Harl. 7334 begins again, leaf 157.*]

lasse þan a þousand pound he wolde nought haue 1224
Ne gladly for þat somme he wolde not goon
Aurilius wiþ blisful hert anoon
Answerde þus. fy on a þousand pound
This wyde world which þat men say is round 1228
I wold it giue if I were lord of it/
This bargeyn is ful dryue for we ben knyht
þe schal be payed trewly by my troupe /
But lokeþ now for necligence or slouþe 1232
þe tarie vs heer no lenger þan to morwe /
Nay quod þis clerk haue her my faith to borwe
To bed is goon aurilius whan him leste
And wel neigh al night he had his reste 1236

what for his labour and his hope of blisse
 His woful hert of penaunce had a lisse /
 vpon þe morwe whan þat it was day
 To breteigne take þei þe righte way 1240
 Aurilius and þis magicien bisyde
 And ben descendid þer þay wol abyde
 And þis was as þese bookes me remembre
 The colde frosty seisoyn of Decembre 1244
 Phebus wax old and hewed lyk' latoun
 That in his hoote declinacioun
 Schon as þe burned gold with stremes bright
 But now in Capricorn a-down he light 1248
 wher as he schon ful pale I dar wel sayn
 The bitter frostes with þe sleet and rayn
 Destroyed hap þe grene in euery 3erd
 Ianus sit by þe fuyr wiþ double berd 1252
 And drynkeþ of his bugle horn þe wyn
 Biforn him stont þe braun of toskid swyn
 And Nowel criep euery lusty man
 Aurilius in al þat euer he can 1256
 Dop to his maister chier and reuerence
 And peyneþ him to doon his diligence
 To bringen him out of his peynes smerte
 Or wiþ a swerd þat he wold slytte his herte 1260
 This subtil clerk such roupe had of þis man
 That night and day he spedep him þat he can [leaf 157, back]



GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 357

SIX-TEXT 516

His tables tollitanes forþ he brought
Ful wel corrected ne þer lakked nought
Neiper his collect ne his expans yeeres
Ne his rootes ne his oper geeres / 1276
As ben his centris & his argumentis
And his proporcionels conuenientis
For her equaciouns in euery þing /
And by his pre speeres in his worching 1280
he knew ful wel how for alluath was schoue
For þe heed of þilk fixe aries aboute
That in þe fourþe speere considred is
Ful subtilly he calkild al þis 1284
whan he had founde his firste mancioun
He knew þe remenaunt by proporcioun
And knew þe arisyng of þis moone wel
And in whos face and terme and euery del 1288
And knew ful wel þe moones mancioun
Acordaunt to his operacioun
And knew also his other obseruaunces
For suche illusiouns and suche meschaunces 1292
As hethen folk vsed in þilke dayes
For which no lenger maked he delayes
But þurgh his magik for a wike or tweye
It semed þat þe rokkes were aweye 1296
Aurilius which ȝet displayred is
wher he schal haue his loue or fare amys
Awayteþ night and day on þis miracle
And whan he knew þat þer was noon obstacle [1297 158] 1300
That voyded were þese rokkes euerich oon
Doun to his maistres feet he fel anon
And sayd I wrecched woful aurilius
Thanke ȝou lord and my lady Venus 1304
That me han holpe fro my cares colde /
And to þe temple his way forþ he haþ holde
wher as he knew he schold his lady se
And whan he saugh his tyme anon right he 1308

with dredful hert and with ful humble cheere

Salued hap his owne lady deere

My souerayn lady quod þis woful man

whom I most drede and loue as I can 1312

And lopest were of al þis world displese /

Nere it þat I for 3ou haue such desese /

That I most deye her at 3oure foot auoon

Nought wold I telle how me is wo bygoon 1316

But certes ouper most I dye or pleyne

3e sleen me gulteles for verrey peyne

But of my dep þough þat 3e haue no roupe

Auyseth 3ow or þat 3e breke 3our troupe 1320

Repenteþ 3ow for þilke god aboue

3e me sleen by cause þat I 3ou loue

For madame wel 3e woot what/ 3e han hight

Nat þat I chalenge eny þing of right 1324

Of 3ow my souerayn lady but 3oure grace

But in a gardyn 3onde at such a place

3e wot right wel what 3e byhighte me

And in myn hond 3our troupe plichte 3e 1328

To loue me best god woot/ 3e sayde so

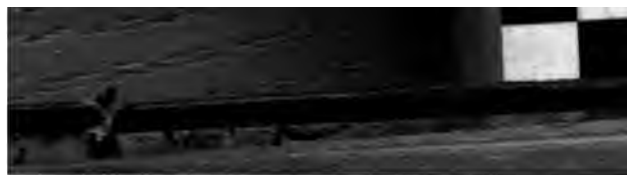
Al be þat I vnworthy am þerto

Ma dame I speke it for thonour of 3ow

More þan to saue myn hertes lif right now 1332

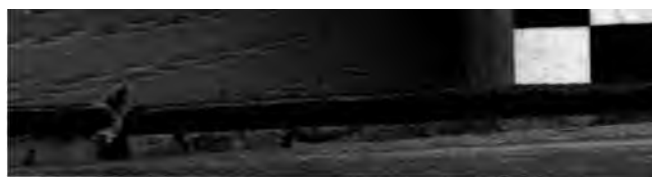
I haue do so as 3e comaunded me

And if 3e vouche sauf 3e may go se



It is agayns þe proces of nature
And hom sche goþ a sorwful creature
For verray fere vnneþe may sche go
Sche wepeþ wayleþ al a day or tuo 1348
And swowneþ þat it rouþe was to see
But why it was to no wight tolde sche
For out of toune was goon aruegarius
But to hir self sche spak/ and sayde þus 1352
wip face pale and with ful sorwful chiere
In hir compleynt as ȝe schul after hiere
¶ Allas quod sche on þe fortune I pleyne
That vnwar, wrapped me hast, in þy cheyne 1356
Fro which tescape woot I no socour
Saue oonly dep or elles dishonour
Oon of þese tuo bihoueth me to chese /
But napeles ȝet haue I leuer leese 1360
My lif þan of my body to haue schame
Or knowe my-selue fals or lese my name /
And with my dep I may be quyt I-wys
Hath þer not many a noble wyf er þis / 1364
And many a mayden slayn hir-self allas
Raper þan with her body doon trespas /
ȝis certeynly lo stories beren witnes
whan pritty tirauntȝ ful of cursednes 1368
hadde slayn phidon in athenes atte fest
Thay comaunded his doughtres to arest
And bryngen hem biforn hem in despit
And naked to fulfille her foule delyt 1372
In her fadres blood þey made hem daunce
vpon þe paument god ȝeue hem meschaunce
For which þese woful maydens ful of drede
Raper þan þey wolde lese her maydenhede [leaf 150] 1376
They priuely ben-stert in to a welle /
And drenched hemselfen as þe bookes telle
¶ They of mecene leet enquire and seeke /
Of lacidomye fifty maydenes eke / 1380

On which þay wolden doon her lecherie
 But was þer noon of al þat companye
 was slayn and wiþ a good entente
 Ches rapier for to deye þan to assente 1384
 To ben oppressed of hir maydenhede
 why schuld I þan to deyen ben in drede
 ¶ Lo eek þe Tyraunt/ aristoclides
 That loued a mayden heet Stimphalides 1388
 whan þat hir father slayn was on a night
 vnto dyanes temple goþ sche right
 And hent þe ymage in hir hondes tuo
 Fro which ymage wold sche neuer go 1392
 No wight might of hit/ hir hondes race
 Til sche was slayn right in þe selue place
 Now siþ þat maydens hadde such despit
 To ben defouled with mannes foul delit 1396
 wel aught a wif rather herself to sle
 Than be defouled as it thenkeþ me
 ¶ what schal I seyn of hasdrubaldes wyf
 That at Cartage byraft hir-self þe lyf 1400
 For whan sche saugh þat Romayns wan þe toun
 Sche took hir children alle and skipte a doun
 In to þe fuyr and ches rapier to deye
 Than eny romayn dide hir vilonye 1404
 ¶ Haþ nought lucesse slayn herself allas
 At Rome whanne sche oppressid was

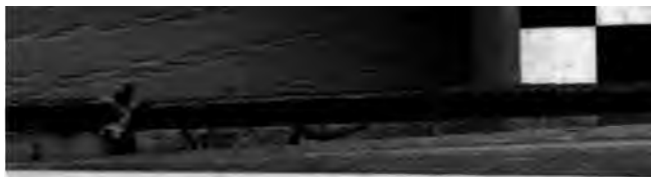


SIX-TEXT 520

GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 361

And seyde my body atte leste way
Ther schal no wight defoulen if I may
what schold I mo ensamples her of sayn
Seppen so many han hemseluen slayn 1420
wel raper þan þey wolde defouled be /
I wol conclude þat it is best for me
To slen myself þan be defouled þus
I wol be trewe vnto aruegarius 1424
Or rather sle myself in som manere
As dede Democionis douȝter deere
By cause sche wolde nought defouled be /
O cedasus it is ful gret pite 1428
To reden how þy doughteren dyed allas
That slowe herself for suche maner caas
As gret a pite was it or wel more
The theban mayden þat for nichonore 1432
hir-seluen slough right for such maner wo
Anoper Theban mayden dede right so
For oon of macidone had hir oppressed
Sche with hire deȝ maydenhede redressed 1436
what schal I sayn of Niceratis wif
That for such caas biraft hir self hir lyf
how trewe eek was cito alcebiades
his loue. þat rather to dyen ches 1440
Than for to suffre his body vnburied be
Lo which a wif was alceste quod sche
what saiþ omer of good penolope
Al grece knoweþ of hir chastite 1444
Par di of laodomya is writen þus
That whan out of Troye was Protheselaus
No lenger wol sche lyue after his day
The same of noble porcia telle I may 1448
wijoute brutes kynde sche myȝt not lyue
To whom sche had al hool hir herte ȝyue
The parfyȝt wyfhod of artemesye
honoured is purgh al þe Barbarie [leaf 100] 1452

O thena queen þy wify chastite
 To alle wyues may a mirour be
 [. . . no gap in the MS.: these lines are
 . . . known only in the Ellesmere MS.] 1456
 Thus playned Dorigen a day or tweye
 Purposyng^t euer þat sche wolde deye
 But napeles vpon þe thridde night^t
 hom cam arueragus þis worþy knight^t 1460
 And asked hir why þat sche wept so sore /
 And sche gan wepe euer lenger þe more
 Allas quod sche þat euer was I born
 Thus haue I sayd quod sche þus haue I sworn 1464
 And told him al as ȝe han herd biforn
 It nedep nought^t reherse it you no more
 ¶ This housbond wiþ glad chiere in good wise
 Answerd and sayde as I schal ȝou deuyse 1468
 Is þer aught^t elles Dorigen but þis
 Nay nay quod sche god me so rede & wis
 This is to moche and it were goddes wille
 ȝe wyf quod he let slepe þat may be stille 1472
 It may be wel peraunter ȝet^t to day
 ȝe schal ȝour troupe holden by my fay
 For god so wisly haue mercy on me
 I hadde wel leuer I-stekid for to be 1476
 For verray loue which I to ȝou haue /
 But if ȝe scholde ȝour troupe kepe and saue



GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 363

SIX-TEXT 522

And bryngeþ hir to such a place anoon
Thay take her leue and on her way þey gon
But þay ne wiste why sche þider went
He nolde no wight tellen his entent [leaf 160, back] 1492

[.
.
.
. 1496

. . . . no gap in the MS.: these lines are
. . . . known only in the Ellesmere MS.]

This squyer which þat hight aurelius
On dorigen þat was so amorous 1500

Of aduenture happed hire to mete
Amyd þe toun right in þe quyke strete
As sche was boun to goon þe wey forþ-right
Toward þe Gardyn þer as sche had hight 1504

And he was to þe gardynward also /
For wel he spyed whan sche wolde go
Out of hir hous to eny maner place
But þus þay mette of aduenture or grace 1508

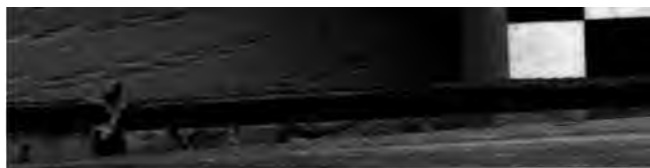
And he salueth hir with glad entent
And askith hire whiderward sche went/
And sche answered half as sche were mad
vnto þe gardyn as myn housbond bad 1512

My troupe for to holde allas allas
Aurilius gan wondren on þis caas
And in his hert had gret compassioun
Of hire and of hir lamentacioun 1516

And of Arueragus þe worþy knight
That bad hir hold al þat sche hadde hight
So loþ him was his wif schuld breke hir troupe
And in his hert he caught of this gret roupe 1520

Consideryng þe best on euery syde
That fro his lust ȝet were him leuer abyde
Than doon so high a cheerlissch wrecchednesse
Agayns fraunchis of alle gentilesce 1524

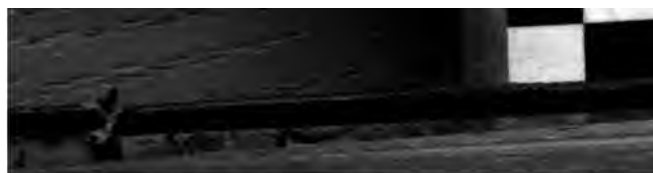
For which in fewe wordes sayd he þus
 Madame saith to 3our lord arueragus
 That siþ I se his grete gentillesse
 To 3ou. and eek I se wel 3our distresse 1528
 That him were leuer haue schame and þat were rouþe /
 Than 3e to me schulde breke 3oure troupe
 I haue wel leuer euer to suffre woo
 Than I departe þe loue bytwix 3ow tuo 1532
 I 3ow relese madame in to 3our hond
 Quyt euery seurement and euery bond
 That 3e han maad to me as her biforn
 Sith pilke tyme which þat 3e were born [leaf 161] 1536
 My troupe I plight I schal 3ow neuer repreue
 Of no byhest and her I take my leue
 As of þe trewest and þe beste wif
 That euer 3it I knew in al my lyf 1540
 But euery wyf be war of hir byhest
 On Dorigen remembreþ atte lest
 Thus can a squyer doon a gentil dede
 As wel as can a knyght wiþouten drede 1544
 Sche þankeþ him vpon hir knees al bare /
 And hoom vnto hir housbond is sche fare /
 And told him al as 3e han herd me sayd
 And be 3e siker he was so wel a-payd 1548
 That it were impossible me to write
 what schuld I lenger of þis caas endite



SIX-TEXT 524
GROUP F. § 4. FRANKLIN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 365

vnto þis philosophre how schal I doo
I se no more but þat I am for-doo
Myn heritage moot I needes selle /
And ben a begger her may I not duelle 1564
And schamen al my kynrede in þis place
But I of him may gete better grace
But napeles I wol of him assay
At certeyn dayes 3eer by 3er to pay 1568
And þanke him of his grete curtesye
My troupe wol I kepe I wol nouȝt lye
with herte soor he goþ vn to his cofre
And broughte gold vnto þis philosophre 1572
The value of fyf hundred pound I gesse
And him bysecheth of his gentilesce [leaf 161, back]
To graunte him dayes of þe remenaunt
And sayde maister I dar wel make auaunt 1576
I fayled neuer of my troupe as 3it
For sikerly my dettes schal be quyt
Towardes 3ow how þat euer I fare
To goon a begge in my kurtil bare 1580
But wolde 3e vouche sauf vpon seurtē
Tuo 3er or þre for to respite me
Than were I wel for elles most I selle
Myn heritage þer is nomore to telle 1584
¶ þis philosophre sobrelly answerde /
And seyde þus whan he þese wordes herde
Haue I not holden couenaunt vnto þe :
3is certes wel and trewely quod he / 1588
Hastow nouȝt had þy lady as þe liketh
No no quod he and sorwfully he sikeþ
what was þe cause tel me if þou can
Aurilius his tale anoon bygan 1592
And told him al as 3e han herd bifore
It needeþ nat to 3ou rehearse it more
he sayde arueragus of gentilesse
had leuer dye in sorwe and in distresse 1596

Than þat his wyf were of hir troupe fals
 The sorwe of Dorigen he tolde him als
 how loþ hir was to ben a wikked wikked wyf
 And þat sche leuer had han lost hir lyf 1600
 And þat hir troupe sche swor þurgh Innocence
 Sche neuer erst hadde herd speke of apparence
 That made me han of hir so gret pyte
 By cause hir housebond sente hir to me 1604
 And right as frely sent I hir to him agayn
 þis is al and som þer is no more to sayn
 The philosopher answerde leue broþer
 Euerich of 3ow dede gentilly to oþer 1608
 Thow art a squyer and he is a knight
 But god forbede for his blisful might
 But if a clerk couþe doon as gentil dede
 As wel as eny of 3ou it is no drede [leaf 160] 1612
 Sire I relese þe þy þousond pound
 As þou right now were crope out of þe ground
 Ne neuer er now ne haddeþ knowen me
 For sire I wol not take a peny of þe 1616
 For al my craft ne nought for my tranayle /
 Thou hast y-payd wel for my vitayle /
 It is ynough and far wel haue good day
 And took his hors and forþ he goþ his way 1620
 ¶ Lordynges þis questioun wolde I axe now /
 which was þe moste free as þinketh 3ow



SIX-TEXT 527
GROUP G. § 1. SECOND NUN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 367

¶ And here bygynneth þe Secounde Nounes tale /

[No gap in the MS.]

[THE PROEM.]

(1)

THe minister and þe norice vnto vices 1
which þat men clepe in englisch ydelnesse /
The porter at þe gates is of delicis
To eschiewe and by her contrary hire oppresse
That is to say by leful besynesse / 5
wel oughte we to do al oure entente
Lest þat þe fend purgh ydelnesse vs hente / 7

(2)

For he þat wip his þousand cordes slye / 8
Continuelly vs wayteth to byclappe/
whan he may man in ydelnes espye /
He can so lightly cacche him in his trappe /
Til þat a man be hent right by þe lappe / 12
He is nouȝt war þe fend hap him in honde /
wel oughte we wirche and ydelnes wipstonde / 14

(3)

And þough men dredde neuer for to deye 15
3et seen men wel by resoun douteles
That ydelnes is roten sloggardy
Of which þer comeþ neuer good encres
And sin þat slouþ her holdeþ in a lees 19
Only to sleep and for to ete and drynke
And to deuoure al þat oþer swynke 21

(4)

And for to put vs from such ydelne	22
That cause is of so gret confusioun	
I hane her donn my faithful busynes	[<i>Aug 1188, b. 100</i>]
After þe legende in tormalacioun	
Right of þis glorious lif and passioun	26
Thou with þi garlond wrought wiþ rose and lylye	
The mene I mayde and martir cecilie	28

(5)

And þou þat flour of virgines art alle / <i>Immense et marie</i>	29
Of whom þat Bernard lust so wel to write /	
To þe at my bygynnyng first I calle	
Thou comfort of vs wrecches do me endite	
Thy maydenes deþ þat whan þurgh hire merite	33
Theternal lif and of þe feend victorie	
As man may after reden in hir storie	35

(6)

Thou mayde and moder doughter of þi sone /	36
Thou welle of mercy synful soules cure	
In whom þat god of bountes chees to wone	
Thou humble and hegh ouer euery creature	
Thou noblest so ferforþ oure nature	40
That no disleyn þe maker had of kynde /	



(8)

Assembled is in þy magnificence 50
with mercy goodnes and with such pitee
That þou þat art þe sounne of excellence
But oonly helpist hem þat prayen þe
But often tyme of þy benignite 54
Ful frely er þat men þin help biseche
Thou gost biforn and art her lyfes leche / 56

(9)

Now help þou meke and blisful faire mayde / 57
Me flemed wrecche in þis desert of galle
Thenk on þe womman canace þat sayde
That whelpes ete some of þe crommes alle
That from her lordes table ben I-falle / 61
And þough þat I vnworthy sone of Eue [leaf 163]
Be synful / ȝett accepte my bileue 63

(10)

And for þat faith is deth wipouten werkis 64
So for to werken ȝiue me witt and space /
That I be quit fro þennes þat most derk is
O þou þat art so fair and ful of grace /
Be myn aduocat in þat hihe place / 68
Ther as wipouten ende is songe Osanne
Thou cristes moder douȝter deere of Anne 70

(11)

And of þi light my soule in prisoun light 71
That troubled is by þe contagioun
Of my body and also by þe wight
Of euerich lust and fals affeccioun
O heuen of refuyt O sauacioun 75
Of hem þat ben in sorwe and in destresse /
Now help for to my werk I wil me dresse / 77

(12)

3et pray I 3ou þat reden þat I write /	78
Forȝeue me þat I doo no diligence	
This ilke story subtilly to endite	
For boþe haue I þe wordes and sentence	
Of him þat at þe seintes reuerence	82
The story wroot and folwen hir legende /	
And pray 3ow þat 3e wol my werk amende /	84

(13) [THE TALE.]

Firſt wol I 3ow þe name of ſeint Cecile	85
Expoune as men may in hir ſtory ſe /	
It is to ſay on engliſch heuenes lilie	
For pure chaſtenesse of virginite	
Or for ſche witneſſe hadde of honeſte	89
And grene of conſcience and of good fame /	
The ſoote ſauour lilie was her name	91

(14)

Or cecile is to ſay þe way of blynde /	92
For ſche enſample was by way of techynge	
Or elles Cecily as I writen fynde	
Is ioyned by a maner of conioynynge	
Of heuen and lya and here in figuryng	96
The heuen is ſette for þought of holynesse /	



SIX-TEXT 531
GROUP G. § 1. SECOND NUN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 371

(16)

For leos peple in englissh is to say 106
And righ as men may in þe heuen see
The sonne and moone and sterres euery way
Right so men gostly in þis mayden free
Seen of faip þe magnanimité / 110
And eek þe clernes hool of sapience
And sondry werkes bright of excellence 112

(17)

And right so as þese filosofres wryte 113
That heuen is swyft and round and eek brennyng
Right so was faire Cecily þe whyte
Ful swyft and besy euer in good werkynge /
And round and hool in good perseuerynge 117
And brennyng euer in charite ful bright
Now haue I ȝow declared what sche hight 119

(18)

This mayden bright Cecilie as hir lyf saip 120
was comen of Romainys and of noble kynde /
And from hir cradel vp fostred in þe faip
Of crist and bar his gospel in hir mynde
Sche neuer cessed as I writen fynde 124
Of hire prayer and god to loue and drede
Byseching him to kepe hir maydenhede 126

(19)

And whan þis mayde schuld vnto a man. 127
Y-wedded be. þat was ful ȝong of age
which þat I-cleped was walirian
And day was comen of hir mariage
Sche ful deuout and humble in hir currage 131
vnder hir robe of gold þat sat ful faire
Hadde next hir fleissch I-clad hir in an heire 133

(20)

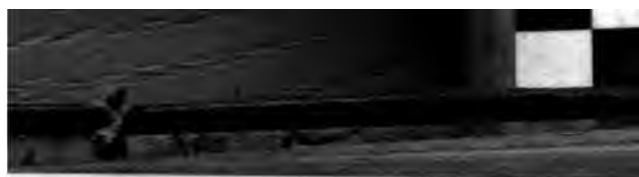
And whil þe organs made melodie /	134
To god alloon in herte þus sang' sche /	
O lord my soule and eek' my body gye	
Vnwemmed . lest' þat I confounded be /	
And for his loue þat deyde vpon a tre	[1em/ 164] 138
Euery secound or þridde day sche faste	
Ay biddynge in hire orisouns ful faste /	140

(21)

The nyght cam and to bedde most' sche goon	141
with hir housbond as oft' is þe manere	
And priuely to him sche sayde anoon	
O swete and wel biloued spouse deere /	
Ther is a counseil and 3e wold it heere /	145
which þat' right fayn I wold vnto 3ou saye	
So that' 3e swere 3e schul it not' bywraye	147

(22)

Valirian gan fast/ vnto hir swere	148
That' for no caas ne þing' þat' mighte be	
he scholde neuer mo bywrewe hire	
And þanne at' erst' þus sayde sche	
I haue an aungel which þat' loueþ me	152
That' wiþ gret' loue wher so I wake or slepe	



(24)

Valirian corrected as god wolde / 162
Answerde agayn if I schal truste þe /
Let me þat aungel se and him biholde
And if þat it a verray aungel be /
Than wol I doon as þou hast prayed me 166
And if þou loue anoper man forsoþe
Right wiþ þis sward þan wol I slee þou boþe / 168

(25)

Cecilie answerd anoon right in þis wise 169
If þat þow list þe aungel schul ȝe see
So that ȝe trowe on crist and þou baptise
God forþ to Via apia quod sche /
That fro þis toun ne stant but myles þre 173
And to þe pore folkes þat þer duelle
Saith hem right þus. as þat I schal þou telle / 175

(26)

Telle hem I cecilie. þow vnto hem sent 176
To schewen þow þe good vrbán þe olde / [leaf 164, back]
For secre needes and for good entente /
And whan þat ȝe seint vrbán han byholde /
Tel him þe wordes which þat I to þow tolde / 180
And whan þat he haþ purged þou fro synne
Than schul ȝe se þat aungel er ȝe twynne / 182

(27)

Valirian is to þe place y-goon 183
And right as him was taught by his lernynge
He fond þis holy old vrbán anoon
Among þe seyntes buriels lotynge
And he anoon wiþoute tarynge 187
Did his message and whan þat he it tolde
vrbán for ioie his handes gan vp holde 189

(28)

The teres from his eyzen let he falle	190
Almyȝty lord O. ihū crist' quod he /	
Sower of chaste counseil herde of vs alle	
The fruyt' of pilke seed of chastite	
That þou hast sowe to Cecilie tak' to þe	194
loo lik' a busy bee wipouten gyle /	
The serueþ ay þin owne þral Cecile	196

(29)

For pilke spouse þat sche took' right' now	197
Ful lyk' a fers lyoun sche sendeþ here	
As meek' as euer was eny lamb to ȝow	
And wip þat word anon þer gan appere /	
An old man clad in white cloþes clere	201
That had a book' wip lettres of gold in honde /	
And gan to-forn Valirian to stonde /	203

(30)

Valirian as deed fyl doun for drede	204
whan he him say / and he him vp hente þo	
And on his book' right' þus he gan to rede /	
O lord. o feith oon god wipouten mo	
On cristendom and oon fader of alle also	208
Abouen alle and ouer alle euery where	



GROUP G. § 1. SECOND NUN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. SIX-TEXT 535 375

(32)

Valirian goþ home and firt Cecilie 218
wipinne his chambre with an aungel stonde /
This aungel had of Roses and of lillie
Corounes tuo þe which he bar in honde
And first to Cecilie as I vnderstonde [leaf 165] 222
he 3af þat oon and after can he take /
That oþer to valerian hir make 224

(33)

Wip body clene and wip vnwemmed þought 225
kepeþ ay wel þese corounes þre
Fro paradys to 3ou I haue hem brought
Ne neuer moo ne schul þey roten be
Ne leese here soote sauour trusteþ me 229
Ne neuer wight schal seen hem wip his ye
But/ he be chast and hate vilonye 231

(34)

And þou valirian for þou so soone 232
Assentedist to good counseil also
Say what þe list and þou schalt haue þi boone
I haue a broþer quod Valirian þo
That in þis world I loue no man so 236
I pray 3ow þat my broþer may haue grace
To knowe þe troupe as I doo in þis place 238

(35)

The aungel sayde god liketh þy request 239
And bope with þe palme of martirdom
þe schullen come vnto his blisful feste /
And with þat word tiburce his broþer com
And whan þat he þe sauour vndernom 243
which þat þe roses and þe lilies cast
wipinne hir hert/ he gan to wondre fast / 245

(36)

And sayde I wendre þis tyme of þe ȝer 246
 whennes þat soote sauour cometh so
 Of Rose and lilies þat I smelle her
 For þough I had hem in myn hondes tuo
 The sauour might in me no depper go 250
 The swete smel þat in myn hert I fynde
 Hath chaunged me al in anoþer kynde 252

(37)

Valirian sayd tuo corouns haue we 253
 Snow whyt and rose reed þat schinen cleere /
 whiche þat þine eyzen han no might to see /
 And þou smellest hem þurgh my prayere
 So schalt þou seen hem my lieue broþere deere 257
 If so be þou wilt wiþouten slouþe
 Bilieuen aright and knowen verray trouthe / 259

(38)

Tyburce answerde says þou þus to me [leaf 165, back] 260
 In soþenes or in drem I herkne þis
 In dremes quod valirian han we be
 Vnto þis tyme broþer myn I-wys
 As now at erst in troupe oure duellyng is 264
 how wost þou þis quod tyburce and in what wise



SIX-TEXT 537
GROUP G. § 1. SECOND NUN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 377

(40)

The palme of martirdom for to receyue /	274
Seynt Cecilie fulfilled of goddes gifte	
The world and eek hir chamber gan sche weyue /	
witnes tyburces and Cecilies schrifte	
To whiche god of his bounte wolde schifte	278
Corounes tuo of floures wel smellynge	
And made his aungel home þe croune brynge	280

(41)

The mayde hap brought þis men to blisse aboue /	281
The world hap wist what it is worþ certeyn .	
Deuocioun of chastite to loue	
Tho schewed him Cecilie al open and pleyn	
That alle ydoles nys but þing in veyn	285
For þay ben doumbe and þerto þey ben deue	
And chargeþ him his ydoles for to leue	287

(42)

Who so troweþ not þis a best he is	288
Quod tyburce if þat I schal not lye	
And sche gan kisse his brest þat herde þis	
And was ful glad he couþe trouþe espye	
This day I take þe for myn allye	292
Sayde þis blisful faire mayde deere /	
And after þat sche sayde as ȝe may heere	294

(43)

Lo right so as þe loue of crist/ quod sche	295
Made me þy brotheres wyf right in þat wyse	
Anoon for myn allye heer take I þe /	
Sin þat þou wilt thyne ydoles despise	[100/100]
Go with þi broþer now and þe baptise	299
And make þe clene so þat þou mowe biholde	
The aungeles face of which þy broþer tolde	301

(44)

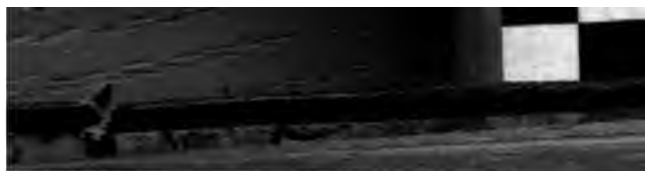
Tyburce answerde and sayde broþer dere/ 302
 First tel me whider I schal and to what man
 To whom quod he / com forth with good cheere /
 I wol þe lede vnto þe pope vrbā
 Til vrbā broþer myn quod valirian 306
 Quod tyburce wilt þou me þider lede /
 Me þenkeþ þat it were a wonder dede / 308

(45)

Ne menist þou nat vrbā quod he þo 309
 That is so ofte dampned to be deed
 And woneþ in hales alway to and fro
 And dar nouȝt oones putte forþ his heed
 Men schold him brenne in a fuyr so reed 313
 If he were founde or if men might him spye
 And we also to bere him companye 315

(46)

And whil we seken þilke diuinite 316
 That is I-hyd in heuen priuely
 Algate I-brent in þis world schal we be
 To whom Cecilie answerde bodyly
 Men mighten wel and skilfully 320
 This lyf to lese myn oughne dere brother



SIX-TEXT 539
GROUP G. § 1. SECOND NUN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 379

(48)

By word and miracle hihe goddes sone 330
whan he was in pis world declared heere /
That þer was oþer lyf þer men may wone /
To whom answerde Tyburce of suster deere
Ne seydest þou right now in þis manere 334
Ther nys but oo god. o .lord. in soþfastnesse
And now of þre how maystow bere witnesse [G 166, 22] 336

(49)

That schal I telle quod sche er þat I go 337
Right as a man haþ sapiences þre
Memorie eyen and intellect also
So in oo being in diuinite
Thre persones may þer right wel be 341
Tho gan sche him ful besily to preche /
Of cristes come and of his peynes teche / 343

(50)

And many pointes of his passioun 344
how goddes sone in pis world was wiþholde
To doon mankynde pleyn remissioun
That was I-bounde in synne and cares colde /
Al þis þing sche vnto Tyburce tolde / 348
And after þis thiburce in good entente
wiþ valirian to pope vrbau he wente / 350

(51)

That þanked god and wiþ glad hert and light 351
he cristened him and made him in þat place /
Parfyt in his lernynge goddes knyght
And after þis thiburce gat such grace /
That euery day he say in tyme and space / 355
The aungel of god and euery maner boone /
That he god asked / it were sped ful soone 357

32.

It were ful hard by wite for to sayne 338
how many wronges he for hem wroughte
But now last to tellen schort and playne -
The sorowful of þe town of Rome hem soughte
And hem byten alwiche þe prefect broughte 363
which hem apposed and knew alle here entente
And to þe ymage of Iherus hem sette 364

(53)

And saide who-so wil not sacrifice 365
Swope of his heed þis my sentence heere
Anon þese martires þat I þou deuyse
Oon maximus þat was an officere /
Of þe prefectes and his counsellere / 369
hem hent. and whan he forþ þe seyntes ladde
him self he wept for pite þat he hadde / 371

(54)

Whan maximus had herd þe seintes lore 372
he gat him of his tormentoures leue
And bad hem to his hous wipouten more [leaf 167]
And with her preching' er þat it were eue
Thay gonne fro þe tormentoures to reue 376
And fro maxime and fro his folk' echoone



(56)

3e han forsoþe y-doon a greet batayle / 386
3oure cours is doon 3oure faith han 3e conserved
Gop to þe coroun of lyf þat may not fayle /
The rightful iugge which þat 3e han serued
Schal 3eue it 3ow as 3e han it deserued 390
And whan þis þing was sayd as I deuyse
Men ladde hem forþ to doon þe sacrifice / 392

(57)

But/ whan þey were to þe place y-brouȝt 393
To telle schortly þe conclusioun
They nolde encense ne sacrifice right nough
But on her knees þey setten hem adoun
wiþ humble hert and sad deuocioun 397
And leften boþe her heedes in þe place
here soules wenten to þe king of grace / 399

(58)

This maximus þat say þis king betyde / 400
wiþ pitous teeres tolde it anoon right
That he here soules saugh to heuen glyde
with aungels ful of clernes and of light
And with his word conuerted many a wight 404
For which almachius dede him so bete
with whippes of leed til he his lif gan lete / 406

(59)

Cecilie him took and buried him anoon 407
By Thiburce and valirian softly
wipinne hire berieng place vnder þe stoon
And after þis almachius hastily
Bad his ministres fecchen openly 411
Cecilie. so þat sche might in his presence [leaf 167, b. rect]
Doon sacrifice and Iubiter encense / 413

(60)

But þat connected at hir wise love 414
 weþen ful sure and rakel ful credence
 Unto hir word and cryden more and more
 Crist goddes sone wipouen difference
 Is verray god þis is al our sentence 418
 That hit so good a seruour him to serue
 This with our this we browen þough we sterue 420

(61)

Almachins þat herd of þis doynge 421
 Bad fetchen Cecilie þat he might hir se
 And alþer first to þis was his axinge
 what maner womman art þou quod he
 I am a gentil womman born quod sche 425
 I axe þe quod he though þe is grene
 Of þi religioun and of þi bylene / 427

(62)

3e han bygonne þour questioun folily 428
 Quod sche þat wolden tuo answers conclude /
 In oo demaunde 3e axen lewedly
 Almachie answerde to þat similitude
 Of whens comest þin answering so rude 432
 Of whens quod sche whan sche was I-freyned



SIX-TEXT 543

GROUP G. § 1. SECOND NUN'S TALE. Harleian 7394. 383

(64)

Ful wrongfully bygan þou quod he /	442
And ȝet in wrong is þy perseueraunce	
wostow nough how oure mighty princes fre	
han þus comaunded and maad ordinaunce	
That euery cristen wight schal haue penaunce /	446
But if þat he his cristendom wipseye	
And goon al quyt if he wil it reneye /	448

(65)

¶ Ȝoure princes erre as Ȝoure nobleye doþ	449
Quoþ þo Cecilie and with a wood sentence /	[leaf 100]
Ȝe make vs gulty and it is nouȝt soþ	
For Ȝe þat knowen wel oure Innocence	
For as moche as we doon reuerence /	453
To crist and for we bere a cristen name	
Ȝe putten on vs a crym and eek a blame /	455

(66)

But we þat knowen þilke name so	456
For vertuous we may it not wipseye	
Almache sayde cheese oon of þese tuo	
Do sacrifice and cristendom reneye	
þat þou mow now eschapen by þat weye	460
At which þe holy blisful faire mayde /	
Gan for to laughe and to þe Iugge sayde /	462

(67)

O Iugge confus in þis nycete	463
wilt þou þat I refuse Innocence	
To make me a wikked wight quod sche /	
lo he dissimuleþ heer in audience	
he starith and woodith in his aduertence	467
To whom almachius sayde vnsely wrecche /	
Ne wostow nouȝt how fer my might may strecche	469

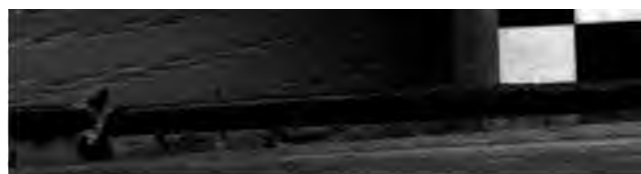
~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..

... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..
... ..





SIX-TEXT 545
GROUP G. § 1. SECOND NUN'S TALK. **Harleian 7334.** 385

(72)

Ther lakketh no þing to þin outer eyen	498
That þou art blynd for þing þat we seen alle	
That it is stoon þat men may wel aspien /	
That ilke stoon a god þou wilt it calle /	
I rede þe let þin hond vpon it falle /	502
And tast it wel and stoon þou schalt it fynde	
Sip þat þou seest / not wiþ þin eyzen blynde	504

(73)

IT is a schame þat þe poeple schal	505
So scorne þe and laughe at þi folye /	
For comunly men woot it wel ouer al	
That mighty god is in his heuen hye	
And þese ymages wel þou mayst espie	509
To þe ne to hemself may nought profyte	
For in effect. þey ben nouȝt worþ a myte	511

(74)

Thise wordes and such oþer sayde sche	512
And he wax wroþ and bad men schold hir lede	
hom to hir hous / and in hir hous quod he /	
Brenne hir right in a bath of flammes rede /	
And as he bad right so was doon þe dede /	516
For in a bath þay gonne hir faste schetten	
And nyȝt and day great fuyr þey vnder betten	518

(75)

The longe nyȝt and eek a day also	519
For al þe fuyr and eek þe bapes hete	
Sche sat al cold and felte of no woo	
Hit made hir not. oon drope for to swete	
But in þat bath hir lif sche moste lete	523
For he almachius with ful wikke entente	
To sleen hir in þe baþ his sondes sente	525

(76)

Thre strokes in þe nek he smot hir þo	[leaf 100]	526
The tormentour but for no maner chaunce /		
he might nouȝt smyte hir faire necke a-tuo /		
And for þer was þat tyme an ordinaunce		
That no man scholde do man such penaunce		530
The ferþe strok to smyten softe or sore /		
This tormentour ne dorste do no more /		532

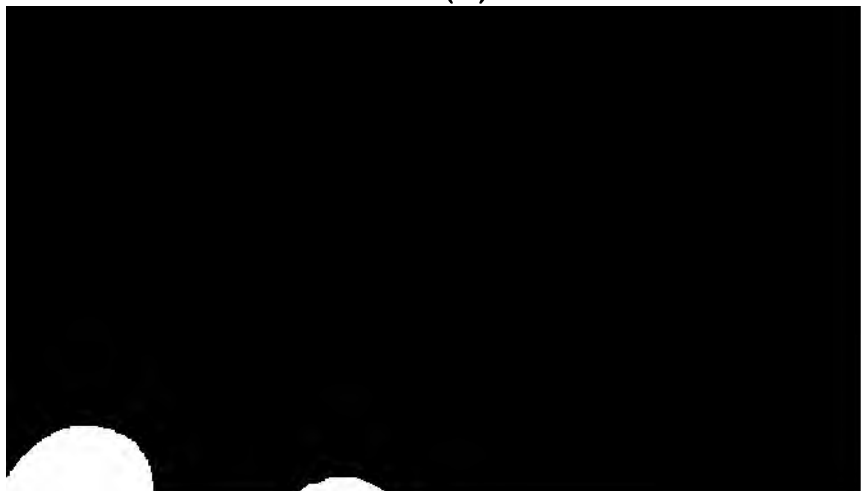
(77)

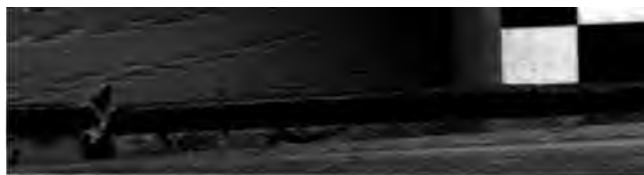
But half deed with hir nekke coruen there		533
he laft hir lye and on his way he went		
The cristen folk which þat about hir were /		
wiþ scheetes han þe body ful faire y-hent		
þre dayes lyued sche in þis torment		537
And neuer cessed hem þe faith to teche /		
That sche had suffred hem sche gan to preche		539

(78)

And hem sche ȝaf hir moebles and hir þing		540
And to þe pope Vrban bytook hem þo /		
And sayd I axe þis of heuen kyng		
To haue respit þre dayes and no mo		
To recomende to ȝow er þat I go		544
These soules lo and þat I mighte do wirche		
heer of myn hous perpetuelly a chirche		546

(79)





SIX-TEXT 547
GROUP G. § 2. 2nd NUN-CAN.-YEO. LINK. **Harleian 7334.** 387

And here bygynneth þe tale of þe Chanouns ȝeman

¶ prologus

Whan ended was þe lif/ of seynt Cecile

Er we fully had riden fyue myle

At/ Boughtoun vnder blee vs gan atake

A man þat cloped was in clopes blake 557

And vnder þat he had a whit surplice

his hakeney þat was a pomely grice

So swete þat it wonder was to se

It semed he hadde priked myles þre / 561

The hors eek þat his ȝyman rood vpon [leaf 100, back]

So swette þat vnneþes might he goon

Aboute þe peytrel stood þe foom ful hye

he was of foom as flekked as a pye 565

A male tweyfold on his croper lay

It semed þat he caried litel array

And light for somer rood þis worþy man

And in myn herte wondren I bigan 569

what þat he was til þat I vnderstood

how þat his cloke was sowed vnto his hood

For which whan I long had auysed me /

I demed him som chanoun for to be 573

his hat heng at his bak down by a laas

For he had riden more þan trot or paas /

He had I-pryked lik as he were wood

A cloote leef he had vnder his hood 577

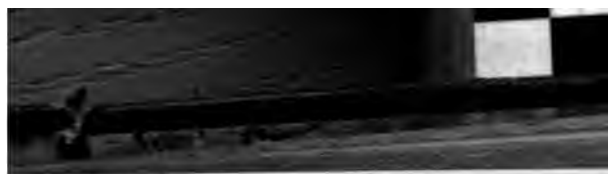
For swoot and for to kepe his heed from hete

But it was ioye for to se him swete

His forhed dropped as a stillatorie

were ful of plantayn and of peritorie 581

And whanne þat he was com he gan to crie
 God saue quod he þis ioly compaignye/
 Fast haue I priked quod he for ȝour sake /
 By cause þat I wolde ȝou atake 585
 To ryden in þis mery compaignye /
 his ȝeman eek was ful of curtesye /
 He seid sires now in þe morwe tyde /
 Out of ȝour ostelry I saugh ȝou ryde / 589
 And warned heer my lord and my souerayn
 which þat to ryden with ȝow is ful fayn
 For his desport/ he loueth daliaunce
 Frend for þy warnyng god ȝeue þe good chaunce 593
 Sayde oure host for certes it wolde seme
 Thy lord were wys and so I may wel deme
 he is ful iocound also dar I leye
 Can he ought telle a mery tale or tweye 597
 with which he glade may þis compaignye
 who sire my lord / ȝe ȝe / wiþoute lye /
 He can of merthe and eek of Iolite [leaf 170]
 Not but ynough also sir trusteþ me 601
 And ȝe him knewe / as wel as do I
 ȝe wolde wonder how wel and þriftily
 he couþe werke and þat in sondry wise
 he haþ take on him many sondry emprise / 605
 which were ful hard for eny þat is heere
 To bringe aboute but þay of him it leere /
 As homely as he ryt amonges ȝow
 If ȝe him knewe it wolde be ȝoure prow 609
 ȝe nolde nought forȝon his aqueyntaunce
 For moche good I dar lay in balaunce
 Al þat haue in my possessioun
 he is a man of heigh discressioun 613
 I warne ȝow wel he is a passyng man
 ¶ wel quod our oost/ I pray þe tel me þan
 Is he a clerk / or noon tel what he is
 Nay he is gretter þan a clerk I-wis 617



Sayde þe ȝyman and in wordes fewe /
Ost' and of his craft somewhat I wil ȝou schewe
I say my lord can such subtilite
But al his craft ȝe may nought wite of me / 621
And somewhat helpe I ȝit to his worchyng
That al þis ground on which we ben ridyng
Til þat we comen to Caunterbury toun
he couþe al clene turnen vp so down 625
And paue it al of siluer and of gold
And whan þis ȝeman hadde þus I-told
vnto oure oost' / he seyde benedicite
This is wonder merueylous to me 629
Syn þat þis lord is of so heigh prudence
By cause of which men schuld him reuerence /
That of his worship rekkeþ he so lite
his ouer slop it is not worþ a myte 633
As in effect/ to him so mot / I go
It is al bawdy and to-tore also
why is þi lord so slottisch I þe preye
And is of power better clopis to beye / 637
If þat his dede accorde with þy speche / [leaf 170, back]
Telle me þat and þat I þe biseche /
¶ why quod þis ȝyman / wher-to axe ȝe me
God help me so for he schal neuer þe 641
But I wol nought avowe þat I say
And þerfor kep it secre I ȝou pray
he is to wys in faith as I bileue
That at is ouer-don it wil nouȝt preue / 645
a right. as clerkes sein it is a vice
wherfore in þat I holde him lewed and nyce
For whan a man haþ ouer greet a witte,
Ful ofte him happeth to mysven itte 649
So doth my lord and þat me greueþ sore
God it amende I can say now nomore
Ther-of no fors good ȝeman quod oure Ost'
Syn of þe connyng of þi lord þou wost' 653

Tel how he doþ I pray þe hertily
 Sin þat he is so crafty and so sly
 wher duellen ȝe if it to telle be
 In þe subarbes of a toun quod he / 657
 lurking in hirnes and in lanes blynde
 wher as þese robbours and þeues by kynde /
 holden here prive ferful residence
 As þay þat dor nouȝt schewen her presence / 661
 So faren we if I schal say þe soþe
 Now quod oure ost ȝit let me talke toþe
 why artow discoloured on þy face
 Peter quod he god ȝiue it harde grace 665
 I am so vsed in þe fuyr to blowe
 That it haþ chaunged my colour I trowe
 I am not wont in no mirour to prie
 But swynke sore and lerne to multiplie 669
 we blondren euer and pouren in þe fuyr
 And for al þat we faile of oure desir
 For euer we lacken oure conclusioun
 To moche folk we ben illusioun 673
 And borwe gold be it a pound or tuo
 Or ten or twelue or many *sommes* mo
 And make hem wenen atte leste weye [lea/ 171]
 That of a pound we conne make tweye 677
 ȝit is it fals and ay we han good hope
 It for to doon and after it we grope /
 But þat science is so for vs bifore



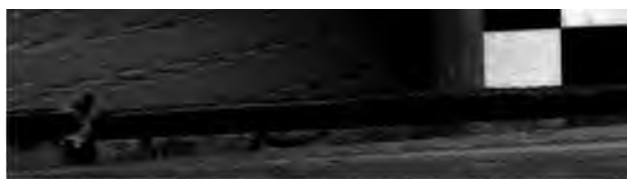
By cause of þat / he gan so neigh to drawe
his ȝeman þat he herde al his sawe /
And þus he sayd vnto his ȝeman þo
Hold now þi pees and spek' no wordes mo 693
For if þou do þou schalt it deere abyē
Thow sclaudrest me here in þis companye
And eek discouerest þat þou schuldest hide
Ȝe quod oure ost tel on what so bytyde 697
Of alle þis thretyng' recche þe nought a myte
In faip quod he no more do I but lite
And whan þis chanoun seið it wold not be
But his ȝeman wold telle his priuete 701
He fledde a way for verray sorwe and schame
A quod þis ȝeman her schal arise game
Al þat I can anoon now wol I telle
Sin he is goon þe foule feend him quelle 705
For neuer her after wol I wiþ him meete
For peny ne for pound I wol byheete
he þat me broughte first vnto þat game
Er þat he deye sorwe haue he and schame 709
For it is earnest to me by my fayth
That fele I wel what so eny man saith
And ȝet for al my smert and al my greef
For al my sorwe and labour and mescheef 713
I coupe neuer leue it in no wise [leaf 171, back]
Now wolde god my wyt mighte suffise
To tellen al þat longeþ to þat art/
But napeles ȝet wil I telle ȝou part 717
Sin þat my lord is goon I wol nought spare
Such þing' al þat I knowe I wol declare

[No break in the MS.]

[*THE PREAMBLE.*]

¶ Narrat

With þis Chanoun I duelled haue seuen 3er
 And of his science am I neuer þe ner 721
 Al þat I hadde I haue lost þer by
 And god wot/ so haþ many mo þan I /
 Ther I was wont to be right freisch and gay
 Of cloping and of oþer good array / 725
 Now may I were an hose vpon myn heed
 And where my colour was boþe freissch and reed
 Now it is wan and of a leden hewe
 who-so it vseþ sore schal he rewe 729
 And of my swynk 3et blended is myn ye
 Lo such anauntage it is to multiplie
 That slydyng science had me made so bare /
 That I haue no good wher þat euer I fare 733
 And 3it I am endetted so þer by
 Of gold I haue borwed trewely
 That whil I lyue I schal it quite neuer
 lat euery man be war by me for euer 737
 what maner man þat castþ him perto
 If he continue I holde his þrift I-do
 For so help me god þer by schal he not wyne
 But empte his purs and make his wittes þynne 741
 And whan he þurgh his madnes and folye /
 Haþ lost his owne good in ieupardie /
 Than he exciteþ oþer men þer-to
 To leese her good as he himself haþ do 745
 For vnto schrewes ioye it is and ese /
 To haue here felawes in peyne and desese /



Thus was I oones lerned of a clerk /
Of þat no charge I wol speke of oure werk 749
whan we ben þer as we schul exercise
Oure eluyssh craft we seme wonder wyse
Oure termes ben so clergeal and queynte / [leaf 173]
I blowe þe fuyr til þat/ myn herte feynte / 753
what schulde I telle ech proporcioun
Of þinges which þat we werke vp and doun
As an fyue or six ounces may wel be /
Of silner or som oper quantite 757
And besy me to telle 3ow þe names
Of Orpiment brent bones yren squames
That in to poudre grounden ben ful smal
And in an erthen pot/ how þat put is al 761
And salt y-put in and also paupere
Biforn these poudres þat I speke of heere
And wel I-couered wip a lamp of glas /
And of moche oper þing what þat þer was 765
And of þe pot. and glas enlutyng
That of þe aier mighte passe no þing
And of þe esy fuyr and smert also
which þat was maad and of þe care and wo 769
That we hadde in oure matiers sublymynge
And amalgamyng and calcenynge
Of quyksiluer y-clept mercury crude /
For alle oure sleighites we can nought conclude / 773
Oure orpiment and sublyment mercurie
Oure grounde litarge / eek on þe porfurye
Of ech of þese of ounces a certayn
Nat helpeþ vs oure labour is in vayn 777
Ne eek oure spirites ascencioun
Ne eek our matiers þat lyn al fix a doun
Mowe in oure werkyng vs no þing auayle
For lost is al oure labour and trauayle 781
And al þe cost on twenty deuelway
Is lost also which we vpon it lay

Ther is also ful many anoþer þing
 That is to oure craft appertenynge 785
 Though I by ordre hem here reherse ne can
 By cause þat I am a lewed man
 Ȝet wil I telle hem as þey come to mynde /
 Though I ne conne nought sette hem in her kynde / 789
 As bol armoniak verdegres boras [leaf 172, back]
 And sondry vessels maad of erþe and glas
 Oure vrinals and oure descensories
 Viols Croslets. and sublimatories 793
 Concurbitis and alembikes eke
 And oþere suche deere ynough a leeke
 Nat needith it to rehersen hem alle
 watres rubisynge and boles galle 797
 Arsnek Sal armoniak and brimstoon
 And herbes coupe I telle eek many oon
 As Egrimoigne Valirian and lunarie,
 And oþer suche if þat me list to tarie / 801
 Oure lampes brennyng boþe night and day
 To bringe aboute oure craft if þat we may
 Oure fournies¹ eek of Calcinacioun [1 or fourmes]
 And of watres albificacioun 805
 Vnslekke lym salt and glayre of an ey
 Poudres dyuers aissches dong pisse and cley
 Cered poketts. Sal petre vitriole
 And dyuers fuyres maad of woode and cole / 809
 Salt tartre. alcale and salt preparati



The foure spiritz and þe bodies seuen
By ordre as ofte herd I my lord neuen 821
The firste spirit quyksiluer called is
The secound orpiment þe þridde I-wis
Sal armoniac. and þe ferþe bremstoon
The bodies seuen eek lo hem heer anoon 825
Sol gold is and luna siluer we þrepe
Mars yren. Mercurie quyksiluer we clepe
Saturnus leed and Iubiter is tyn [leaf 173]
And Venus coper by my fader kyn 829
This cursed craft who so wol excercise
he schal no good han þat may him suffise /
For al þe good he spendeþ þer aboute
he lese schal þer of haue I no doute / 833
who-so þat list/ outen his folye
let him come forþ and lerne multiplie
And euery man that haþ ought in his cofre
Let him appiere and wexe a filosofre 837
Ascauns þat craft is so light to lere /
Nay nay god wot al be he monk or frere
Prest Chanoun or eny oþer wight
Though he sit at his book boþe day and night 841
In lernyng of þis eluysch nice lore
Al is in vayn and parde moche more
Is to lerne a lewed man þis subtilte
Fy spek not þerof. for it it wil not be 845
Al couþe he letterure or couþe he noon
As in effect he schal fynd it al oon
For boþe tuo by my sauacioun
Concluden in multiplicacioun 849
I-liche wel whan þay han al y-do /
This is to sayn þay fayle boþe tuo
3et forȝat I to moche rehersayle
Of watres corosif and of lymayle 853
And of bodyes mollificacioun
And also of here enduracioun

Oyles ablucio~~un~~ and metal fusible /
 To tellen al wold passen eny bible 857
 That owher is wherfore as for þe best
 Of alle þese names now wil I me rest!
 For as I trowe I haue þow told ynowe
 To reyse a feend al loke he neuer so rowe / 861
 A nay let be þy philosophre stoon
 Elixir clept. we sechen fast echoon
 For had we him þan were we syker ynough
 But vnto god of heuen I make avow 865
 For al oure craft whan we han al y-do [leaf 173, back]
 And al oure sleight he wol not come vs to
 He haþ I-made vs spende moche good
 For sorwe of which almost we wexen wood 869
 But þat good hope crepeþ in oure hert
 Supposing euer þough we sore smerte /
 To ben relieued by him afterward
 Supposing and hope is scharp and hard 873
 I warne þou wel it is to seken euer
 That future temps haþ made men disseuere
 In trust þerof from al þat euer þey hadde /
 Ȝet of þat art þay conne nouȝt wexe sadde / 877
 For vnto hem it is a bitter swete
 So semeþ it for nad þay but a scheete
 which þay mighte wrappe hem in a night
 And a bak to walke Inne by day light 881
 They wolde hem selle and spenden on his craft



GROUP G. § 3. CAN.-YEOM. PREAMBLE. **SIX-TEXT 557**
Harleian 7334. 397

And if a man wol aske hem priuely
why þay ben clofed so vnþriftily 893
Right anon þay rounen in his eere /
And say if þat þay espied were
Men wold hem slee by cause of here science
Lo þus þis folk' bytrayen Innocence 897
Passe ouer þis I go my tale vnto
Er þan þe pot' be on þe fuyr y-do
Of metals with a certeyn quantite
My lord hem tempred and no man but he 901
Now he is goon I dar say boldly
For as men sayn he can doon craftily
Algate I wot wel he haþ such a name [leaf 174]
And 3et ful ofte he renneþ in blame 905
¶ And wite 3e how ful ofte it happeþ so
The pot' tobrekeþ and far wel al is goo
These metals been of so gret violence /
Oure walles may not' make hem resistance 909
But if þay were wrought of lym and stoon
Thay persen so and þurgh þe wal þay goon
And some of hem synken in to þe grounde/
Thus haue we lost' by tymes many a pounde 913
And some are skatered al þe floor aboute
Some lepe in to þe roof wipouten doute
Though þat þe feend nought in oure sight him schewe /
I trowe þat he wip vs be þat schrewe / 917
In helle wher þat he is lord and sire
Nis þer no more woo ne anger ne Ire /
whan þat oure pot' is broke as I haue sayd
Euery man chyt and halt him euel a payd 921
Som sayd it was long on þe fuyr-makyng
Some sayde nay it was on þe blowyng
Than was I ferd for þat was myn office /
Straw quod þe þridde / 3e been lewed and nyce 925
It was nou3t tempred as it oughte be /
Nay quod þe ferþe stynt and herkne me /

By cause oure fuyr was nought y-maad of Beech
 That is þe cause and oþer noon so þeech 929
 I can not telle wher-on it was long
 But wel I woot gret stryf is vs among
 What quod my lord þer is no more to doone /
 Of þese periles I wol be war eft soone / 933
 I am right siker þat þe pot was crased
 Be as be may be ȝe no þing amased
 As vsage is let swoope þe floor as swipe
 Pluk vp ȝour hertes and beȝ glad and blipe 937
 The mullok on an heep I-swoped was
 And on þe floor y-cast a caneuas
 And al þis mulloc in a syue I-þrowe /
 And sifted and y-plukked many a þrowe 941
 Par de quod oon somewhat of oure metal [leaf 174, back]
 ȝet is þer heer þough þat we haue nought al
 And þough þis þing myshapped hap a now
 An oþer tyme it may be wel ynow 945
 Vs moste putte oure good in aduenture
 A marchaun / par de may not ay endure
 Trusteþ me wel in his prosperite
 Somtyme his good is drowned in þe see / 949
 And som tyme comeþ it sauf vn-to þe londe /
 Pees quod my lord þe nexte tyme I wol fonde /
 To bringe oure craft al in an oþer plyte
 And but I do sire let me haue þe wyte 953

That was defaute in som whatt wel I woot



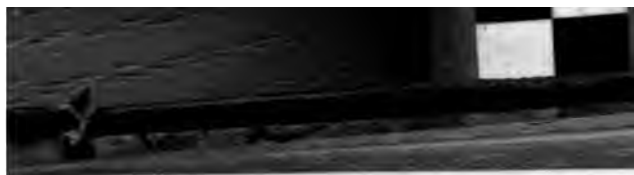
SIX-TEXT 559
GROUP G. § 3. CAN.-YEOM. PREAMBLE. Harleian 7334. 399

Ne euery appel þat is fair at ye
Ne is not good what so men clappe or crye 965
Right so lo fareth it amonges vs
He þat semeth wisest by Iesus
Is most fool whan it/ cometh to þe preef
And he þat semeth trewest is a þeef 969
That schul ȝe knowe er þa I fro ȝow wende /
By þat I of my tale haue maad an ende /

[No break in the MS.]

[*THE TALE.*]

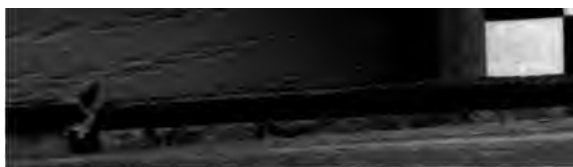
Ther is a chanoun of religioun	
Amonges vs wold infecte al a toun	973
Though it as gret were as was Ninieue	
Rome alisaundre troye and oþer þre /	
his sleight and his infinite falsnesse /	
Ther couþe no man writen as I gesse	977
Though þat he mighte lyuen a þousand ȝeer	
Of al þis world of falsheed nys his peer	
For in his termes he wol him so wynde	[<i>leaf 178</i>]
And speke his wordes in so sleygh a kynde	981
whan he comune schal wiþ eny wight	
That he wil make him dote anon right	
But it a feend be as himseluen is	
Ful many a man hath he bygiled er this	985
And wol if þat he lyue may a while /	
And ȝet men ryde and goon ful many a myle /	
Him for to seeke and haue his aqueintaunce /	
Nought knowyng of his false gouernaunce	989



SIX-TEXT 561
GROUP G. § 4. CAN.'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 401

This tale was not oonly told for 3ow
But 'eek' for oþer moo 3e woot' wel how 1001
That' among' criste apostles twelue /
Ther was no traytour but' Iudas himselue
Than why schulde þe remenaunt haue a blame
That gultes were by 3ow I say þe same 1005
Saue oonly þis if' ye wol herkene me
If' any Iudas in 3oure couent' be
Remewe him by tyme I 3ow rede /
If' schame or los may causen eny drede / 1009
And beþ no þing' displeȝed I 3ou pray
But' in þis caas herkenep what' I say ¶ Narrat
IN londoun was a prest' an annueler
That' þer In duelled hadde many a 3er 1013
which was so plesaunt' and so seruisable /
Vnto þe wyf' wher as he was at table
That' sche wolde suffre him no þing' for to pay
For bord ne cloping' went' he neuer so gay 1017
And spendyng' siluer had he right' ynough [*leaf 175, back*]
Ther-of' no force I wol procede as now
And telle forþ my tale of' þe chanoun
That' brought' þis prest' to confusioun 1021
This false chanoun cam vpon a day
Vnto þe prestes chambre wher he lay
Biseching' him to lene him a certeyn
Of' gold and he wold quyt' hit' him ageyn 1025
Lene me a mark' quod he but' dayes þre /
And at' my day I wil it quyte þe /
And if' so be þat þou fynde me fals
Anoþer day hong' me vp by þe hals 1029
This prest' him took' a mark' and þat' as swithe
And þis Chanoun him þankid ofte sipe
And took' his leue and wente forþ his wey
And atte þridde day brought' his money / 1033
And to þe prest' he took' þis gold agayn
wher-of' þis prest' was wonder glad and fayn

Certes quod he no þing' annoyep me
 To lene a man a noble or tuo or þre/ 1037
 Or what' þing/ were in my possessioun
 whan he so trewe is of' condicioun
 That' in no wise he breke wol his day
 To such a man I can neuer say nay 1041
 what' quod þis chanoun schold I be vntrewe?
 Nay þat' were þing' I-fallen of' þe newe /
 Troupe is a þing' þat' I wol euer kepe /
 Vnto þat' day in which þat' I schal crepe 1045
 In to my graue and elles god forbede /
 Bilicueþ þis as siker as þour crede /
 God þank' I and in good tyme be it' sayd
 That' þer was neuer man zet' euel a-payd 1049
 For gold ne siluer þat' he to me lent
 Ne neuer falshed in myn hert' I ment
 And sire quod he now of' my priuete
 Syn þe so goodlich haue be vnto me 1053
 And kyþed to me so gret' gentilesce
 Som-what' to quyte wiþ þoure kyndenesse
 I wil þow schewe and if' þow lust/ to lere [leaf 176]
 [¹I wil þow teche pleylnly the manere¹] [²—¹ is a later hand.] 1057
 how I kan werken in philosophie
 Takith good heed. þe schul seen wel at' ye
 That' I wol doon a maystry er I go
 þe quod þe prest'. þe sire and wol þe so 1061

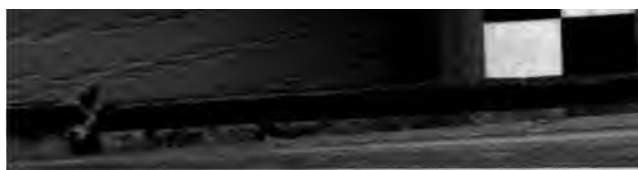


SIX-TEXT 563

GROUP G. § 4. CAN.'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 403

How cristes poeple he may to meschief bringe
God kepe vs from his fals dissimilynge / 1073
what wiste þis prest/ wiþ whom þat he delte
Ne of his harm comyng' he no þing' felte
O seely prest'. o sely Innocent /
wiþ coueytise anoon þou schalt' be blent/ 1077
O graceles ful blynd is þy conceyt
No þing' art' þou war of þe deceyt'
which þat þis fox I-schapen hap to þe
his wily wrenches y-wis þou maist' not' fle 1081
wherfor to go to þe conclusioun
That referreth to þy confusioun
Vnhappy man anoon I wil me hie /
To tellen þin vnwite and þy folye / 1085
And eek' þe falsnesse of þat' oþer wrecche /
Als ferforþ as my connyng' wol stretche /
This Chanoun was my lord 3e wolde weene
Sire ost' in faith and by þe heuen queene / 1089
It' was anoþer chanoun and not' he
That can an hundred fold more subtilte
he hath bitrayed folkes many tyme /
Of his falnes it dullith me to ryme 1093
Euer when I speke of his falshede / [leu' 176, ba. k]
For schame of him my cheekes wexen reede/
Algates þay bygynne for to glowe /
For reednes haue I noon rizt/ wel I knowe / 1097
In my visage for fumes diuerse
Of metals which 3e han me herd reherse
Consumed and wasted han my reednesse
Now tak' heed of þis chanouns cursednesse / 1101
Sir quod he to þe prest' let' 3our man goon
For quyk' siluer þat/ we it hadde anoon
And let' him bringe ounces tuo or thre /
And whan he comeþ as faste schul 3e see / 1105
A wonder þing' which 3e saugh' neuer er þis
Sire quod þe prest' it schal be doon I-wis

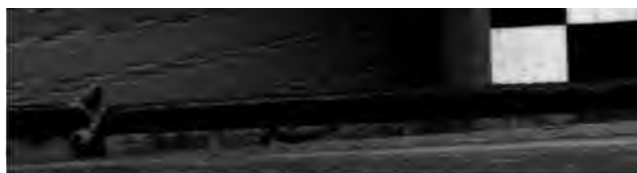
He bad his seruaunt fecche him his þinges
 And he al redy wax at his biddynges 1109
 And went him forth and com anoon agayu
 wiþ þis quyk' siluer schortly for to sayn /
 And took þese ounces þre to þe chanoun
 And he it layde faire and wel a down 1113
 And bad þe seruaunt coles for to bringe
 That/ he anoon might go to his werkynge
 The coles right anoon weren I-fett'
 And þis chanoun took out a croselett' 1117
 Out of his bosom and schewed it þe prest
 This instrument quod he which þat þou sest
 Tak' in þin hond and put þiself þer inne /
 Of þis quyksiluer an vnce and her bygynne 1121
 In þe name of crist to wax a philosophre /
 Ther ben ful fewe whiche þat I wol profre
 To schewe hem þus moche of my science
 For 3e schul seen heer by experience 1125
 That þis quiksiluer I wol mortifye
 Right in 3oure sight anoon wiþouten lye /
 And make it as good siluer and as fyn
 As þer is any in 3oure purs or myn 1129
 Or elles wher and make it malleable /
 And elles holdeth me fals and vnable /
 Amonges folk for euer to appeere / [leaf 177]
 I haue a powder heer þat cost me deere 1133



SIX-TEXT 565
GROUP G. § 4. CAN.'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 405

This prest/ at þis cursed chanouns biddynge
Vppon þe fuyr anoon sette þis þing 1145
And blew þe fuyr and busied him ful fast/
And þis chanoun in to þe croslet cast
A pouder noot I wher-of þat it was
I-maad ouper of chalk ouper of glas 1149
Or som what elles was nouȝt worþ a flye
To blynde wiþ þis prest and bad him hye
These coles for to couchen al aboue:
The croislet/. for in tokenyng I þe loue 1153
Quod þis chanoun þin oughne handes tuo
Schal wirche al þing which þat schal be do
Graunt mercy quod þe prest and was ful glad
And couchede coles as þe chanoun bad 1157
And whil he besy was. þis feendly wrecche
This false chanoun þe foule feend him fecche
Out of his bosom took a bechen cole
In which ful subtilly was maad an hole / 1161
And þer-In put was of siluer lymayle /
And vnce and stopped was wiþoute fayle
This hole with wex to kepe þe lymail In /
And vnderstondith þat þis false gyn 1165
was not maad þer but it was maad bifore
And oper þinges I schal telle more /
Her afterward which þat he with him brought
Er he com þere to bigyle him he þought / 1169
And so he dede er þay wente atwynne [leaf 177, back]
Til he had torned him couþe he nought blynne /
It dulleþ me whan þat I of him speke /
On his falshede fayn wold I me wreke / 1173
If I wist how but he is heer and þere
he is so variant he byt no where /
But takeþ heed now sires for goddes loue
He took his cole of which I spak aboue / 1177
And in his hond he bar it priuely
And whiles þe preste couched bysily

The coles as I tolde ȝow er þis
 This chanoun sayde freend ȝe doon amys 1181
 This is not couched as it oughte be
 But soone I schal amenden it quod he /
 Now let me melle þer with but a while /
 For of ȝow haue I pitee by seint Gile 1185
 ȝe been right hoot / I se wel how ȝe swete
 haue heer a cloþ and wype a-way þe wete
 And whiles þat þis prest him wyped haas
 This chanoun took his cole I schrewe his faas 1189
 And layd it abouen on þe mydward
 Of þe croslet / and blew wel afterward
 Til þat þe coles gonne faste brenne
 Now ȝeue vs drinke quod þe chanoun þenne / 1193
 Als swiþe al schal be wel I vndertake
 Sitte we doun and let vs mery make /
 And whan þe chanouns bechene cole /
 was brent al þe lymail out of þe hole 1197
 In to þe crosselet anon fel a doun
 And so it moste needes by resoun
 Sins it so euen aboue couched was
 But þer of wist þe prest no þing alas 1201
 He demed alle þe colis I-liche goode
 For of þe sleight he no þing vnderstood
 And whan þis alcamister saugh his tyme
 Rys vp sire prest quod he and stonde byme 1205



But go with þou and come wiþ þou agayn
The chambur dore schortly for to sayn 1217
Thay opened and schette and wente forþ here weye
And forth with hem þey caryed þe keye /
And comen agayn wiþouten eny delay /
what schuld I tary al þe longe day 1221
he took þe chalk/ and schop it in þe wise /
Of an Ingot as I schal þow deuyse /
I say he took out of his oughne sleeue
A teyne of siluer euel mot he cheeue 1225
which þat was but an vnce of wight
And takeþ heed now of his cursed slight
he schop his Ingot/ in lengþe and in brede /
Of þis teyne wiþouten eny drede 1229
So sleighly þat þe prest it nought aspyde
And in his sleeue agayn he gan it hyde /
And fro þe fuyr he took vp his mateere /
And in to þe Ingot put it with mery cheere / 1233
And in to þe watir vessel he it cast
whan þat him list and bad þis prest as fast
Loke what þer is put in þin hond and grope
Thou fynde þer siluer schalt as I hope / 1237
what deuel of helle schold it elles be /
Schaunyng of siluer siluer is par de
He putte in his hond and tok vp a teyne
Of siluer fyn and glad in euery veyne : 1241
was þis prest whan he saugh it was so
Goddess blessyng and his modres also
And alle halwes haue 3e sire chanoun
Seyde þe prest and I her malisoun 1245
But and 3e vouche sauþ to teche me [leaf 178, back]
This nobil craft and þis subtilite
I wil be þoure in al þat euer I may
Quod þis chanoun 3et wol I make assay 1249
The secound tyme þat 3e mow taken heede
And ben expert of þis and in þour neede

Anoþer day ȝour self in myn absence	
This discipline and þis crafty science	1253
Let take another vnce quod he þo	
Of quyksiluer wipouten wordes mo	
And do þer with as ȝe haue doon er þis	
wip þat oþer which now siluer is	1257
The prest him busyeth in al þat he can	
To doon as þis chanoun þis cursed man	
Comaunded him and faste blew þe fuyr	
For to come to theffect of his desyr	1261
And þis chanoun right in þe mene while	
Al redy was þis prest eft to bygile	
And for a countenaunce in his hond bar	
An holow stikke tak keep and be war	1265
In þende of which an vnce and no more	
Of siluer lymail put was as bifore	
was in his cole and stopped wip wex wel	
For to kepe in his linail euery del	1269
And whil þe prest/ was in his besynesse	
This chanoun with his stikke gan him dresse /	
To him anoon and his pouder cast In	
As he dede er þe deucl out of his skyn	1273
him torne I pray to god for his falshede	
For he was euer fals in oth and deede	
And wip þis stikke alone þe croslet	
That was ordeyned wip þat false get	1277



And to þe chanoun he profred eft soone
Body and good 3e quod þe chanoun soone / 1289
Though pore I be crafty þou schalt me fynde /
I warne þe 3et is þer more byhynde
Is þer any copere her Inne quod he
3e sir quod þis prest I trowe þer be 1293
Ell's go bye som and þat as swithe
Now goode sire go forth þy way and hythe
he went/ his way and with þis copere cam
And þis chanoun it in his hondes nam 1297
And of that copere weyed out but an ounce
Al to simple is my tongue to pronounce
The minister and of his witt þe doublenesse /
Of þis chanoun roote of cursednesse 1301
he semed frendly to hem þat knew him nought
But he was fendly bope in werk and þought
It werieþ me to telle of his falsnesse /
And napeles 3it wol I it expresse 1305
To þat entent men may be war þer by
And for noon oþer cause trewely /
he put þis vnce of copere in þe croslet
And on þe fuyr als swithe he hap it set 1309
And cast in powder and made þe prest/ to blowe
And in his worching for to stoupe lowe
As he dede er and al nas but a iape
Right as him list þe prest he made his ape / 1313
And afterward in þe ingot he it cast
And in þe panne putte it atte last/
Of water and in he put his owne hond
And in his sleeue as 3e byforenhond 1317
herde me telle he had a siluer teyne
he sleyghly took it out þis cursed heyne
Vnwitynge þis prest of his false craft/
And in þe pannes botme he hap it laft 1321
And in þe water rumbleþ to and fro
And wonder priuely took vp also [leaf 179, back]

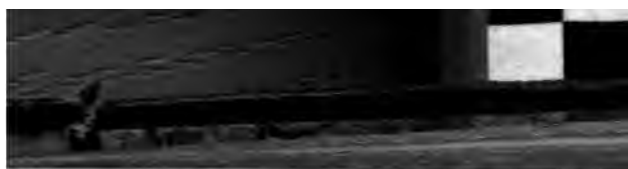
The copur teyne nought knowyng' þis prest'
 And hidde it and hent' him by þe brest/ 1325
 And to him spak' and þus sayde in his game
 Stoupeth a-doun by god 3e ben to blame
 helpeþ me now as I dede 3ow whil er
 Put' in 3our hond and loke what is þer 1329
 This prest' took' vp þis siluer teyne anoon
 And þanne sayde þe chanoun let vs goon
 wip þese þre teynes whiche þat' we han wrought'
 To som goldsmyth and wite if it be ought' 1333
 For by my faith I nolde for myn hood
 But' if þey were siluer fyn and good
 And þat' as swiþe proued schal it be
 Vnto þe goldsmith wip þese teynes þre 1337
 Thay went' and putte þese teynes in assay
 To fuyr and hamer might' no man say nay
 But' þay were as hem oughte be
 This sotted prest' who was gladder þan he // 1341
 was neuer brid gladder agayn þe day
 Ne nightyngale in þe sesoun of' may
 was neuer noon þat' liste better to synge /
 Ne lady lustier in carolynges 1345
 And for to speke of' loue and wommanhede
 Ne knyght' in armes doon an hardy deede/
 To stonde in grace of' his lady deere
 Than hadde þis prest' þis craft' for to lere 1349



SIX-TEXT 571
GROUP G. § 4. CAN.'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 411

Sire at a word if þat 3e lust it haue
3e schul pay fourty pound so god me saue / [leaf 180] 1361
And nere þe frendschipe þat 3e dede er þis
To me. 3e schulde paye more I-wys
This prest þe somme of fourty pound anon
Of nobles fette and took hem euerychoon 1365
To þis chanoun for þis ilk receyt
Al his werkyng nas but fraude and deceyt/
Sire prest he seyde I kepe haue no loos
Of my craft for I wold it kept were cloos 1369
And as 3e loueth me kepeþ it secre
For and men knewe / al my sotilte
By god men wolden haue so gret enuye
To me by cause of my philosophie 1373
I schulde be deed þer were noon oþer weye
God it forbede quop þe prest what seye
3et had I leuer spenden al þe good
which þat I haue and elles wax I wood 1377
Than þat 3e schulde falle in such meschief
For 3our good wil sir haue 3e right good preef
Quop þe chanoun and far wel graunt mercy
he went his way and neuer þe prest him sey 1381
After þis day and whan þat þis prest scholde /
Maken assay at such tyme as he wolde /
Of þis receyt far wel it wold not be /
lo þus byiaped and bygilt was he 1385
Thus makeþ he his introduccioun
To bringe folk to here destruccioun
Considereth sires how þat in ech astaaf
Bitwixe men and gold þer is debaat 1389
So ferforth þat vnneþe þer is noon
This multiplying blent so many oon
That in good faith I trowe þat it be /
The cause grettest of which akarsete 1393
Philosophres spoken so mistyly
In þis craft þat men conne not come þer by

For any witt þat men han now on dayes
 They may wel chiteren as doon þese iayes 1397
 And in here termes sette lust and peyne
 But to her purpos schul þay neuer atteyne [*leaf 180, back*]
 A man may lightly lerne if he haue ought
 To multiplie and bringe his good to nought 1401
 Lo such a lucre is in þis lusty game/
 A mannes mirþe it wol torne in to grame /
 And empte also grete and heuy purses
 And make folk to purchace curses 1405
 Of hem þat han her good þer-to I-lent
 O fy for schame þay þat haue be brent
 Allas can þay not fle þe fuyres hete
 3e þat it vsen I rede 3e it lete 1409
 lest 3e lesen al for bet þan neuer is late
 Neuer to priue were to long a date /
 Though 3e prolle ay 3e schul it neuer fynde
 3e ben as bolde as is bayard þe blynde 1413
 That blundreþ forþ and peril casteth noon
 he is as bold to renne a-gayn a stoon
 As for to go bysides in þe wey /
 So fare 3e þat multiplie I sey 1417
 If þat 3oure y3en can nought seen aright
 loke þat 3oure mynde lakke nought his sight
 For þough 3e loke neuer so brode and stare /
 3e schul nought wynne vpon þat chaffare / 1421



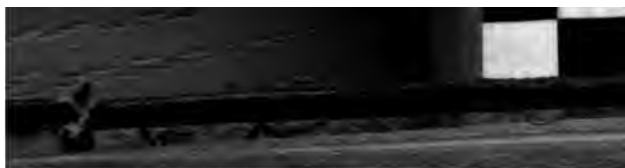
SIX-TEXT 573

GROUP G. § 4. CAN.'S-YEOMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 413

But hit be with his broþer knowleching
how þat he which þat first sayd þis þing 1433
Of philosophres fader was hermes
he saip how þe dragoun douteles
he dyep nought but if þat he be slayn
wiþ his broþer and þat is for to sayn [leaf 181] 1437
By þe dragoun mercury and noon oþer
he vnderstood and brimstoon be his broþer
That out of sol and luna were I-drawe
And þefore sayde he take heed to my sawe / 1441
Let no man besy him þis art to seche /
But þat he thentencioun and speche /
Of philosophres vnderstonde can
And if he do he is a lewed man 1445
For þis sciens and þis connyng quod he
Is of þe secre of secretz par de
Also þer was a disciple of plato
That on a tyme sayde his maister to 1449
As his book somer wil bere witnesse
And þis was his demaunde in sothfastnesse /
Tel me þe name of þe priue stoon
And plato answered vnto him anoon 1453
Take þe stoon þat titanos men name /
which is þat quod he magnasia is þe same
Sayde plato 3e sire and is it þus
This ignotus per ignotius 1457
what is magnasia good sir I 3ou pray
It is a water þat is maad I say
Of elementes foure quod plato
Telle me þe rooche good sire quod he þo 1461
Of þat water if it be 3our wille
Nay nay quod plato certeyn þat I nylle
The philosophres sworn were euerich oon
That thay scholde discouere it vnto man noon 1465
Ne in no book it write in no manere /
For vnto crist it is so leef and deere

That he wil not þat it discouered be /
 But wher it likeþ to his deite / 1469
 Man to enspire and eek for to defende
 whom þat him likeþ lo þis is þe ende
 Than conclude I þus syn god of heuene /
 Ne wol not þat þe philosophres neuene / 1473
 how þat a man schal come vnto þis stoon
 I rede as for þe beste let it goon [leaf 121, back]
 For who-so makeþ god his aduersarie
 As for to werke eny þing in contrarie 1477
 Vnto his wil certes neuer schal he þrine
 Though þat he multiplie terme of al his lyue
 And þer a poynt for ended is my tale
 God send euery trewe man boote of his bale / 1481
 ¶ Here endeth þe chanouns ȝeman his tale

[No break in the MS.]



SIX-TEXT 303
GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 415

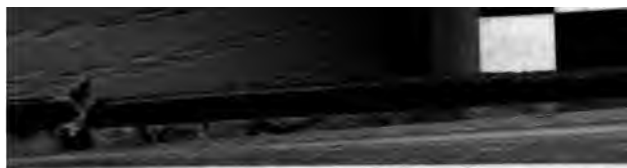
GROUP C. FRAGMENT IV.

§ 1. THE DOCTOR'S TALE.

HARLEIAN MS. 7334 (British Museum).

¶ And here bygynneth þe tale of þe Doctor of of phisik'
Ther was as telleþ Thitus lyuius 1
A knight þat cleped was virginieus
Fulfilde of honours and of worpines
And stronge of frendes and of gret riches 4
A doughter he hadde by his wyf
And neuer ne hadde he mo in al his lyf
Fair was þis mayde in excellent beaute
Above euery wight that men may se 8
For nature haþ wiþ souereyn diligence
I-formed hir in so gret excellence
As þough sche wolde say lo I nature
þus can I forme and peynte a creature 12
whan þat/ me lust who can me counterfete
Pigmalion nouȝt þough he alwey forge and bete /
Or graue or peynte for I dar wel sayn
appollus ȝepherus schulde wirche in vayn 16
To graue or paynte or forge & bete
If þay presumed me to counterfete
For he þat is þe former principal
haþ maad me his viker general 20
To forme and peynte erþely creature
Right as me lust al þing is in my cure
Vnder þe moone þat may wane and waxe
And for my werke noþing wol I axe 24

My lord and I ben fully at accord
 I made hir to be worschip of my lord
 So do I alle myn oþer creatures
 what colour þat þay been or what figures / 28
 Thus semeþ me þat nature wolde say
 This mayde was of age twelf þer and tway *[leaf 152r]*
 In which þat nature hap suche delite
 For right as sche can peynte a lili white 32
 And roly a rose right with such peynture
 Sche peynted hap þis noble creature
 Er sche was born vpon her limes fre
 were als bright as such colour schulde be 36
 And phebus deyed hadde hire tresses grete
 I-lyk to be stremes of his borned hete
 And if þat excellent was hir beaute
 A þousand fold more vertuous was sche 40
 And hire ne lakkeþ no condicioun
 That is to preyse as by discrecioun
 As wel in body as goost chaste was sche
 For which sche floured in virginite 44
 with alle humilite and abstinence
 with alle attemperaunce and pacience
 with mesure eek and beryng of array
 Discret sche was in answeyng alway 48
 Though sche were wis pallas dar I sayn
 hir facound eek ful wommanly and playn



And of hir oughne vertu vnconstreigned
Sche hap ful ofte tyme hire seek' y-feyned
For þat sche wolde fleen þe companye
wher likly was to treten of folye 64
As is at festes reuelles and at daunces
That ben occasiouns of daliaunces
Such þinges maken children for to be /
To soone rype and bold. as men may se / [leaf 182, back] 68
which is ful perilous and hap ben 3ore
For al to soone may sche lerne lore
Of boldenesse whan sche is a wyf
And 3e maystresses in 3oure olde lyf 72
That lordes doughtres han in gouernaunce
Ne takeþ of my word no displesaunce /
Things þat ben set in gouernynge
Of lordes dou3tres conly for tuo þinges / 76
Ouper for 3e han kept 3our honeste
Oþer elles for 3e han falle in frelete
And knowe wel y-nough þe olde daunce
And conne forsake fully meschaunce 80
For euermo perfore for cristes sake /
kepeþ wel þo þat 3e vndertake
A þeof of venesoun þat hap forlaft
his licorousnease and al his theues craft 84
Can kepe a forest best of eny man
Now kepe hir wel for and 3e wil 3e can
loke wel to no vice 3e assent
lest 3e be dampned for 3our wikked entent 88
For who-so dop a traytour is certayn
And takeþ keep of þat þat sche schal sayn
Of al tresoun souereyn pestilence
Is whan a wight bytrayeth Innocence 92
3e fadres and 3e modres eek also
Though 3e han children be it oon or mo
3oure is þe charge of al her sufferance
whiles pay be vnder 3our gouernaunce / 96

Beth war þat by ensample of þoure lyuyng
 Ouper by neggligence in chastisyng
 That þay ne perische for I dar wel seye
 If þat þay doon þe schul ful sore abeye 100
 vnder a schepherd softe and negligent
 The wolf haþ many a schep and lamb torent
 Sufficeþ oon ensample now as here
 For I moot turne aȝein to my matiere 104
 This mayde of which I telle my tale expresse
 So kept hir self hir neded no maystresse [leaf 183]
 For in hir lyuyng maydens mighte rede
 As in a book euery good word and dede / 108
 That longeþ vnto a mayden vertuous
 Sche was so prudent and so bounteous
 For þe which out sprong on euery syde /
 Boþe of hir beaute and bounte wyde 112
 That þurgh þe lond þay praysed hir ilkoone /
 That louede vertu saue enuye alloone /
 That sory is of oþer mennes wele /
 And glad is of his sorwe and vnhele 116
 The doctor made þis descripcioun
 This mayde wente vpon a day in to þe toun
 Toward þe temple with hir moder deere
 As is of ȝonge maydenes þe manere 120
 Now was þer a Iustice in þe toun
 That governour was of þat Regioun



GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. Harleian 7334. SIX-TEXT 307
419

For certes by no fors ne by no meede
him þought' he was not able for to speede /
For sche was strong' of frendes and eek' sche
Conformed was in such souerayn bounte 136
That' wel he wist' he might' hir neuer wynne
As for to make hir with hir body synne
For which wiþ gret' deliberacioun
he sent after a clerk' was in þe toun 140
The which he knew for subtil and for bold
This Iuge vnto þe clerk' his tale hap' told
In secre wyse and made him to assure
He schulde telle it to no creature [leaf 183, back] 144
And if he dede he schulde lese his heed
whan þat' assented was þis cursed reed
Glad was the Iuge and made glad cheere /
And ȝaf him ȝiftes precious and deere / 148
whan schapen was al þis conspiracye /
Fro poynt to poynt' how þat his lecherie
Parformed scholde be ful subtilly
As ȝe schul here afterward openly / 152
hom goþ þis clerk' þat' highte Claudius
This false Iuge þat' highte apius
So was his name for it is no fable
But knowen for a storial þing' notable 156
The sentence of hit' soþ is out of doute
This false iugge goþ now fast' abouté /
To hasten his delit' al þat' he may /
And so bifel soone after on a day 160
This false Iuge as telleþ vs þe story
As he was wont sat' in his consistory
And ȝaf his domes vpon sondry caas
This false clerk' com forth a ful good paas 164
And saide lord if þat it be ȝour wille
As doþ me right' vpon þis pitous bille
In which I pleyne vpon virgilius
And if he wile seyn it is nouȝt' þus 168

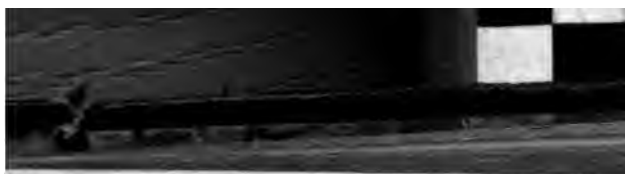
I wil proue hit and fynde good witesse
 That soþ is þat my bulle wol expresse /
 The Iuge answerd of þis in his absence
 I may not ȝiue diffinityf sentence 172
 let do him calle and I wol gladly hie
 Thou schalt haue alle right and no wrong heere
 Virginius com to wite þe Iugges wille /
 And right anon was red þis cursed bille 176
 The sentence of hit was as ȝe schul heere
 ¶ To ȝow my lord sire apius so deere
 Scheweþ ȝoure pore seruaunt Claudius
 how þat a knight called Virginius 180
 Aȝeins þe lawe aȝens alle equyte /
 holdeth expresse aȝeinst þe wille of me [180/184]
 My seruaunt which þat my thral is by right
 which fro myn hous was stolen on a night 184
 whiles sche was ful ȝong þat wol I preue
 By witesse lord so þat ȝe ȝow not greue
 Sche is nought his douȝter what so he say
 wherfore to ȝow my lord þe Iugge I pray 188
 ȝelde me my þraht if þat it be ȝour wille
 lo þis was al þe sentence of þe bille
 Virgineus gan vpon þe clerk byholde
 But hastily er he his tale tolde 192
 he wolde haue proued it as schold a knight
 And eek by witnessyng of many a wight
 That al was fals þat he sayde his aduersarie



GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. Harleian 7334. SIX-TEXT 309.
421

Moste by force his deere douȝter ȝiuen
Vnto þe Iuge in lecchery to lyuen
he goþ him hom and sette him in his halle /
And leet' anoon his deere douȝter calle / 208
And wiþ a face deed as aisschen colde
vpon hir humble face he gan byholde
with fadres pite stiking' þorugh his herte
Al wolde he from his purpos not conuerte / 212
Doughter quod he *virginea* by þy name
Ther ben tuo weyes eyþer deþ or schame
That þou most' suffre alas þat I was bore
For neuer þou deseruedest' wherfore 216
To deyen with a swerd or with a knyft'
O deere doughter ender of' my lif'
which I haue fostred vp with such plesaunce ·
That' þou nere oute of' my remembraunce [*leaf 184, back*] 220
O doughter which . þat art my laste wo
And in þis lif' my laste ioye also
O gemme of' chastite in pacience
Tak' þou þy deth for þis is my sentence 224
For loue and not' for hate þou most' be deed
My pitous hond mot' smyten of' þin heed
Allas þat' euer apius þe say
Thus hap' he falsly iugged þe to day 228
And told hir al þe caas as ȝe bifore
han herd . it nedeth nought' to telle it more
Mercy deere fader quod þis mayde
And with þat' word sche boþe hir armes layde / 232
Aboute his nekke as sche was wont to doo
The teeres brast' out' of' hir eyȝen tuo
And sayde goode fader schal I dye
Is ther no grace is þer no remedye 236
No certeyn deere doughter myn quod he /
Than ȝeue me leue fader myn quod sche /
My deþ for to compleyne a litel space /
For þar dy Ieffa ȝaf' his douȝter grace 240

For to compleyne er he hir slough allas
 And God it woot' no þing' was hir trespas
 But þat' sche ran hir fader first/ to se
 To welcome him with gret' solempnite 244
 And with þat' word a swoun sche fel anoon /
 And after whan hir swownyng' was agoon
 Sche riseþ vp and to hir fader sayde /
 Blessed be god þat' I schal deye a mayde / 248
 3eue me my deth er þat' I haue a schame
 Do with 3our child 3our wille a goddes name
 And with þat' word sche prayed him ful ofte
 That' wiþ his swerd he schulde smyte hir softe 252
 And wiþ þat' word on swoune doun sche fel
 hir fader with ful sorwful hert' and fel
 hir heed of' smoot' and by þe top it hente
 And to þe Iuge bigan it' to presente 256
 As he sat' in his doom in concistory
 whan the Iuge it say as saip the story [leaf 155]
 he bad take him and honge him faste
 But' right' anoon alle þe poeple in þraste / 260
 To saue þe knight' for rouþe and for pite
 For knowen was þe fals iniquite /
 The poeple anoon had suspect' in þis þing'
 By moner of' þis clerkes chalengyng' 264
 That' it was by thassent' of' apius
 That' wiste wel þat' he was leccherous



GROUP C. § 1. DOCTOR'S TALE. **SIX-TEXT 311** / **Harleian 7334. 423**

Her may men se how synne hath his merite
Be war for no man woot how god wol smyte /
In no degre ne in which maner wise
The worm of conscience wol arise 280
Of wicked lyf pough it so pryue be
That no man woot of it but god and he
wher þat he be lewed man or lered
He not how soone þat he may be afered 284
Therefore I rede ȝow this counseil take
Forsakith synne / er synne yow forsake
¶ Here endeth þe Doctor of phisique his tale

[*No break in the MS.*]

¶ And here bygynneth þe prologe of the Pardoner /

Owre ost gan swere as he were wood
 harrow quod he by nayles and by blood 288
 This was a cursed þef a fals Iustice

As schendful dep̄ as herte can deuise
 So falle vpon his body and his boones
 The deuel I bykenne him al at oones 292

Allas to deere boughte sche hir beaute
 wherfore I say þat alle men may se [leaf 185, back]

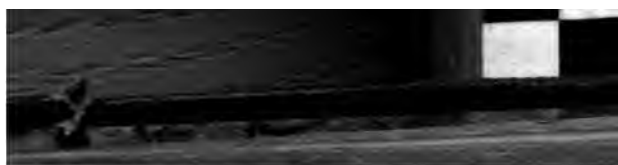
That ȝiftes of fortune or of nature /
 Ben cause of deth of many a creature / 296
 hir beaute was hir dep̄ I dar wel sayn

Allas so pitously as he was slayn
 [.]
 no gap in the MS.] 300

But trewely myn owne maister deere
 This was a pitous tale for to heere
 But napeles pas ouer þis is no fors
 I pray to god to saue þi gentil corps 304

[.]
 no gap in the MS.]

And enery boist ful of bi letuarie



BIX-TEXT 313

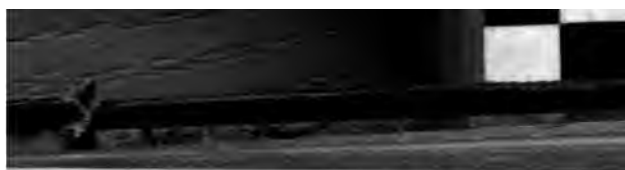
GROUP C. § 2. DOCTOR-PARDONER LINK. Harleian 7334. 425

Myn hert is brost. for pite of þat mayde
Thow pardoner þou belamy he sayde /
Tel vs a tale for þou canst many oon
It schal be doon quod he and þat anoon 320
But first quod he her at þis ale stake /
I wil first drynke and hyt on a cake
But right anoon þe gentils gan to cris
Nay let him tellen vs no ribaudye 324
Tel vs som moral þing þat we may leere /
Gladly quod he and sayde as ȝe schal heere
But in þe cuppe wil I me beþinke
vpon some honest tale whil I drinke / 328

[No break in the MS.]

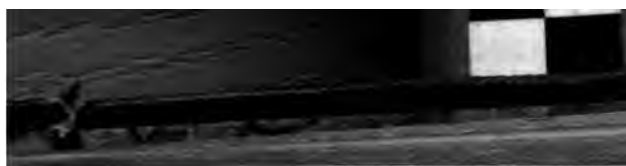
¶ Narrat

L Ordyns quod he in chirche whan I preche
 I peyne me to haue an hauteyn speche /
 And ryng^t it out as lowd as doþ a belle
 For I can al by rote þat I telle 332
 My teeme is alway oon and euer was
 Radix omnium malorum est Cupiditas
 First I pronounce whennes þat I come
 And þanne my bulles schewe I alle and some [leaf 186] 336
 Oure liege lordes seal vpon my patent
 That schewe I first my body to warent/
 That no man be so hardy prest ne clerk
 Me to destourbe of cristes holy werk 340
 And after þat þan tel I forth my tales
 Bulles of popes and of Cardynaes /
 Of patriarkes and of bisshops I schewe
 And in latyn speke I wordes fewe / 344
 To sauore with my predicacioun
 And for to stere hem to deuocioun
 Thanne schewe I forth my longe cristal steenes



And it is hool anoon and forþer-more
Of pokkes and of scabbe and euery sore /
Schal euery scheep be hool þat of þis wellle
That drynketh a draught tak' heed eek' what I telle 360
If þat þe goode man þat þe beest oweþ
wol euery wike er þat þe cok' him croweþ
Fastynge drynke / of þis wellle a draught'
As þilke holy Iew oure eldres taught' 364
His beestes and his stoor schal multiplie
And sires also it kelith Ialousie
For þough a man be ful in ialous rage
let' make wiþ þis water his potage 368
And neuer schal he more his wyf' mys trist
þough he þe soþ of hir defaute wist'
Al hadde sche take prestes tuo or þre
her is a meteyn eek' þat ȝe may see 372
he þat' his honde put' in þis metayn
he schal haue multiplying' of grayn [leaf 186, back]
whan he haþ sowen . be it whete or otes
So þat ȝe offre pans or elles grootes 376
And men and wommen oon þing' warne I ȝow
If eny wight' be in þis chirche now
That' haþ doon synne orrible þat he
Dar nought' for schame of it schryuen be 380
Or ony womman be sche ȝong' or old
That' hath y-maad hir housbond cokewold
which folk' schal haue no power ne grace
To offre to my relikes in þis place 384
And who so fint' him out' of suche blame
Thay wol come vp and offre in goddes name
And I assoile hem by þe auctorite
which þat' by bulle . was I-graunted me 388
By þis gaude haue I wonne euery ȝeer
An hundred mark' syn I was pardonere
I stonde lik' a clerk' in my pulpit
And whan þe lewed poeple is doun I-set' 392

I preche so as ȝe haue herd bifore
 And telle hem an hondred lapes more
 Than peyne I me to strecche forþ my necke
 And est and west vpon þe poeple I bekke 396
 As doþ a dowfe syttyng' on a berne
 Myn hondes and my tonge goon so ȝerne
 That' it is ioye to se my busynesse
 Of auarice and of such cursednesse 400
 Is al my preching' for to make hem fre
 To ȝeue here pans and namely vnto me
 For myn entent' is nought' but for to wynne
 And no ping' for correccioun of synne 404
 I rekke neuer. when þay ben I-beryed
 Though þat' here soules gone a blakeberyed
 For certes many a predicacioun
 Comeþ ofte tyme of euel entencioun 408
 Som for plesauns of folk' and flaterie
 To ben auaunced by ypocrisie
 And som for veine gloir and som for hate
 For whan I dar not' oper weys debate [leaf 187] 412
 Than wil I styng'e him with my tonge smerte
 In preching' so þat he schal not' astert'
 To be diffamed falsly if þat' he
 haþ trespass't to my breþeren or to me 416
 For þough I telle not' his propre name
 Men schal wel knowe þat it is þe same /

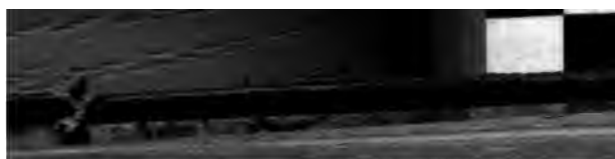


But though my self be gulty in þe synne
þit can I make oþer folk to twynne /
From auarice and soone to repent
But þat/ is not my principal entent 432
I preche no þing but for coueitise
Of þis matier it ought Inough suffice
Than telle I hem ensamples many oon
Of olde þinges longe tyme agoon 436
For lewed poeple louen tales olde
which þinges can þay wel report and holde /
what trowe ȝe whiles I may preche
And wyne gold and siluer for I teche 440
That I wil lyue in pouert wilfully
Nay nay I þought it/ neuer trewly
For I wol preche and begge in sondry londes
I wil do no labour wip myn hondes 444
Ne make basketis and lyue þer by
By cause I wil nought begge ydelly
I wol noon of thapostles counterfete
I wol haue money. wolles chese and whete / 448
Al were it ȝeuen of þe prestes page
Of of þe porest wydow in a village [leaf 157, back]
And schold hir children sterue for famyn
Nay I wol drinke licour of þe wyn 452
And haue a ioly wenche in euery toun
But herkneþ lordynges my conclusioun
Ȝoure likyng is. þat I schal telle a tale
Now haue I dronk a draught of corny ale / 456
By god I hope I schal telle ȝow a þing
That schal by resoun be at ȝour liking
For þough myself be a ful vicious man
A moral tale ȝit I ȝow telle can 460
which I am wont to preche for to wyne.
Now hold ȝour pees my tale I wol byginne

[Partial break of one line in the MS.]

¶ Narrat

IN Flaundres whilom was a companye /
 Of 3onge folkes þat haunted folye 464
 As ryot' hasard stywes and tauernes
 wher as wip lutes harpes and gyternes
 Thay daunce and play at dees boþe day & night
 And ete also and drynk ouer her might' 468
 Thurgh which þay doon þe deuyl sacrifice
 wipinne þe deuyles temple in cursed wise
 By superfluite abhominable
 her othes been so greet and so dampnable 472
 That it is grisly for to hieere hem swere
 Our blisful lordes body þay totere
 hem þoughte Iewes rent' him nouȝt y-nough
 And ech of hem at operes synne lough 476
 And right' anoon þer come tombesteris
 [.
 *no gap in the MS.*]
 Whiche þat ben verray þe deuyles officeres 480

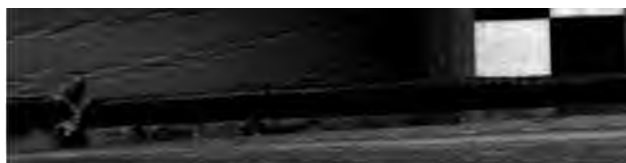


whan he of wyn was repleet at his fest [100/100]
Right at his oughne table ȝaf his hest
To sle þe baptist Iohn ful gilteles
Seneca seiþ a good word douteles 492
he seiþ he can no difference fynde
Bituyx a man þat is out of his mynde
And a man þe which is dronkelewe
But þat woodnes fallen in a schrewe 496
Perseuereth lenger þan doth dronkennesse
O glotonye ful of corsidnesse
O cause first of oure confusioun
O original of oure dampnacioun 500
Til crist had bought out wiþ his blood agayn
lo how dere schortly for to sayn
Abought was first/ þis cursed felonye
Corupt was al þis world for glotonye 504
Adam our fader and his wyf also
Fro paradys to labour and to wo
were dryuen for þat vice it is no drede
For whils þat adam fasted as I rede 508
he was in paradis and whan þat he
Est of þe fruyt defendit of a tre
he was out cast to wo and in-to peyne
O glotony. wel ought vs on þe pleyne 512
O. wist a man how many maladyes
Folwith of excesse and of glotonyes
he wolde be þe more mesurable
Of his diete sittynge at his table 516
Allas þe schorte þrote þe tendre moup
Makeþ þat Est. West. north and south
In erþe in watir in ayer man to swynke
To gete a sely glotoun mete and drynke. 520
Of þis matier o poul wel canstow trete
Mete vnto wombe and wombe vnto mete
Schal god destroyen boþe as powel seiþ
Allas a foul þing is it by my faiþ 524

Quam diu letinauit adam
in paradysio fuit comedit
et electus est statim duxit
uxorem &c.

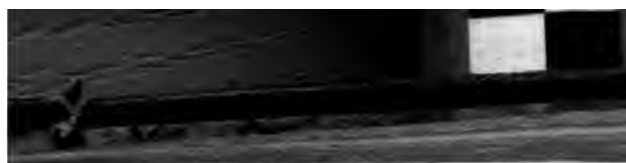
Ecca ventris & venter
ecce deus autem hunc
& illum destruet &c.

To say þis word / and fouler is þe dede
 whan men so drynke / of þe whyt and rede *Ad philippense
capitulu 3^o*
 That of his þrote he makip his priue *[leaf 189, back]*
 Thurgh þilke cursed superfluite 538
 Thapostil wepyng saip ful pitously
 Ther walkith many of which 3ou told haue I
 I say it now wepyng wip pitous vois
 Thay are enemys of cristes croys / 532
 Of which þe ende is deth wombe is her god
 O wombe / o bely. o stynkyng is þi cod
 Fulfild of dong / and of corrupcioun
 At eyþer ende of þe foul is þe soun 536
 how gret cost / and labour is þe to fynde /
 These cokes how þey stamp and streyn and grynde /
 And torne substaunce in to accident
 To fulfille / þy licorous talent 540
 Out of þe harde boones gete þay
 The mary for þay caste nouȝt away
 That may go þurgh þe golet softe and soote
 Of spicery and leuys bark and roote 544
 Schal ben his sauce maad to his delyt/
 To make him haue a newe appetit
 But certes he þat haunteþ suche delices
 Is deed þer whiles þat he lyueþ in vices 548
 A licorous þing is wyn and dronkenesse
 Is ful of stryuyng and of wrecchednesse



He can no counsell kepe it is no drede
Ne keep 3ow from þe white and from þe rede
Namely fro þe white wyn of leepe
That is to selle in Fleetstreet or in Chepe 564
This wyn of Spayne crepith subtilly [100/180]
In oþer wynes growyng faste by
Of which þer riseth such fumosite /
That whan a man hath dronke draughtes þre / 568
And weneth þat he be at hom in Chepe
He is in Spayne right at þe toun of lepe /
Nought at þe Rochel ne at Burdeaux toun
And þanne wol þai say Sampson Sampson . 572
But herken lordyngs o word I 3ou pray /
That alle þe souerayn actes dar I say
Of victories in þe olde testament
That þorough þe verray god omnipotent 576
were doon in abstinence and in prayere /
Lokith þe bible and þer 3e may it hier
Loke atthila þe grete conquerour
Deyd in his sleep with schame and dishonour 580
Bleedyng ay at his nose in dronkenesse /
A captayn schuld ay lyue in sobrenesse
And ouer al this aryse 3ow right wel
what was comaunded vnto lamuel 584
Nought samuel but lamuel say I
Redith þe bible and fyndeþ expresly
Of wyn 3euyng / to hem þat han Iustice
No more of þis for it may wel suffice 588
And now I haue I-spoke of glotonye /
Now wil I 3ow defende hazardrye
¶ Hasard is verray moder of lesynges
And of deceipt of cursed forsweringes 592
BlaspHEME of crist manslaughter and wast also /
Of catel and of tyme . forther mo .
It is reproef and contrair to honour
For to be halde a comun hasardour 596

And euer þe heyer he is of astaāt
 The more is he holden desolaāt
 If þat a prince vse hasardrie
 In alle gouernance and policie 600
 He is as by comun opinioun
 Holde þe lasse in reputacioun
 Stilbon þat was I-holde a wis embasitour [leaf 180, back]
 was sent in to Corinthe with gret honour 604
 Fro lacidome to make hir alliaunce
 And whan him cam him happede par chaunce /
 That alle þe grettest þat were of þat lond /
 Playing atte hasard he hem fond 608
 For which as soone as it mighte be
 He stal him hoom aȝein to his contre
 And saide ther I nyl nouȝt lese my name
 I nyl not take on me so gret diffame 612
 ȝow for to allie vnto noon hasardoures /
 Sendeth operwise embasitoures
 For by my troupe me were leuer dye
 Than I ȝow scholde / to hasardours allye / 616
 For ȝe þat ben so glorious in honoures
 Schal not allie ȝow with hasardoures
 As by my wil / ne as by my trete
 This wise philosophre þus sayd he 620
 lo eek þat þe king Demetrius
 The king of Parthes as þe saith vs
 South his a wise dore oft gold in assayn



SIX-TEXT 323

GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. **Harleian 7334** 435

The hyhe god forbad sweryng' at al /
witnes on Mathew but in special
Of sweryng' saith þe holy Ieremye
Thou schalt say soth þin opes and not lye 636
And swere in doom and eek' in rightwisnes
But ydel sweryng' is a cursednes
Bihold and se þer in þe firste table
Of hihe goddes heste honorable / 640
How þat þe secounde heste is this [leaf 190]
Tak' not in ydel ne his name amys
Lo he rather forbedith such sweryng'
Than homicide or many a corsed þing' 644
I say as by order þus it stondith
This knoweth he þat þe hestes vnderstondeth
how þat þe second hest' of god is that
And forþermore I wol þe telle a plat' 648
The vegance schal not parte fro his hous
That' of his othes is outrageous
By goddes precious hert' and by his nayles
And by þe blood of crist' þat/ is in hayles 652
Seuen is my chaunce and also cink' and tray
By goddis armes and þou falsly play
This daggere schal þurgh þin herte goo
This fruyt' comeþ of þe bicchid boones tuo 656
Forswering' Ire / falsnes homicide /
Now for þe loue of crist' þat for vs dyde
leueth þoure othis boþe gret' and smale
But sires now wol I telle forþ my tale 660
These riotours þre / of which I þou telle
longe erst' þan prime rong' eny belle
were set hem in a tauern for to drynke
And as þay sat þay herd a belle clinke 664
Biforn a corps was caried to þe graue
That' oon of hem gan calle vnto his knaue
Go bet' quop he and axe redily
what' corps is þat passeth her forþ by 668

And loke þou report his name wel
 Sire quod he but þat nedep neuer a del
 It was me told er ȝe com heer tuo houres
 He was par dy an old felaw of ȝoures 672
 And sodeinly he was I-slayn to night
 Fordronk' as he sat on his bench vpright
 Ther com a priue thef men clepen deth
 That in þis contre al þe peple sleth 676
 And with his spere he smot his hert a tuo
 And went his way wipoute wordes mo
 he hap a þousand slayn þis pestilence [leaf 120, back]
 And maister er ȝe come in his presence / 680
 Me þinkeþ þat it is ful necessarie /
 For to be war of such an aduersarie
 Beþ redy for to meete him euermore
 Thus taughte me my dame I say nomore 684
 By seinte mary sayde þe tauerner
 The child saiþ soþ for he hap slayn þis ȝeer
 Hens ouer a myle wipinne a gret village
 Boþe man and womman. child and page 688
 I trowe his habitacioun be þere
 To ben auysed gret wisdom it were
 Er þat he dede a man þat dishonour
 ȝe goddis armes quod þis ryottour 692
 Is it such peril with him for to meete /
 I schal him secke by way and eek by strete

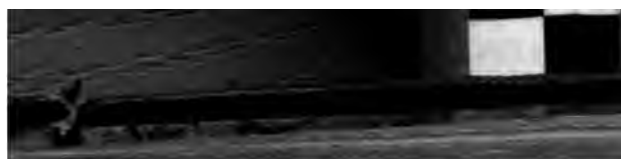


GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 437

SIX-TEXT 325

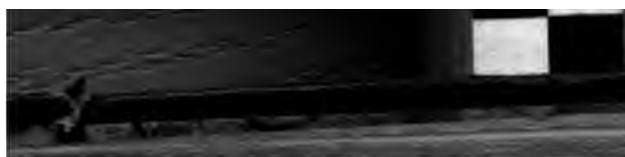
And vp þai startyn al dronke in þis rage /
And forþ þai goon towardes þat' village
Of which þe tauerner haþ spoke biforn
And many a grisly oth þan han þay sworn 708
And cristes blessed body þay torent
Deth schal be deed if þat' þay may him hent
Right as þay wolde haue torned ouer a style
whan þai han goon nought fully a myle 712
An old man and a pore with hem mette
This olde man ful mekely hem grette /
And saide þus lordynges god 3ow so
The proudest of þe ryotoures þre 716
Answerd aȝein. what carle wiþ meschaunce¹ [leaf 191]
why artow al forwrapped saue þi face [1 A blank line is in MS
after l. 717 and 718.]
whi lyuest þou in so gret an age
This olde man gan loke on his visage 720
And saide þus for þat I can not fynde /
A man þough þat I walke in to Inde
Neiþer in Cite noon ne in village
That wol chaunge his ȝouþe for myn age 724
And þefore moot I haue myn age stille /
As longe tyme as it is goddes wille
And deth allas ne wil not haue my lif
Thus walk I lik a resteles caytif 728
And on þe ground which is my modres gate
I knokke with my staf erly and late
And saye leue moder let me In
Lo how I wane fleisch. and blood and skyn 732
Allas whan schuln my boones ben at rest
Moder with ȝow wil I chaunge my chest/
That in my chamber. longe tyme haþ be
ȝe for an haire clout/ to wrap in me 736
But ȝet to me sche wil not do þat grace
For which ful pale and welkid is my face
But sires to ȝow. it is no curtesye
To speke vnto an old man vilonye 740

But he trespas in word or elles dede
 In holy writ 3e may 3our self wel rede
 A3ens an old man hoor vpon his hede
 3e schold arise wherefor I 3ow rede / 744
 Ne doth vnto an old man more harm now
 Na more þan 3e wolde men dede to 3ow!
 In age. if þat 3e may so long abyde
 And god be with 3ou / wher so 3e go or ryde 748
 I moot go þider as I haue to goo
 Nay olde cherl by god thou schalt not so
 Sayde þat oþer hasardour anoon
 Thou partist nouȝt so lightly by seint Iohn 752
 Thou spak' right' now of þat traytour dep [leaf 191, back]
 That in þis contre alle oure frendes sleþ
 Haue her my trouþ as þou art' his aspye /
 Tel wher he is or elles þou schalt dye / 756
 By god and by þat holy sacrament/
 For sobly þou art' oon of' his assent
 To schewe vs 3onge folk þe false theef
 Now sires þan if þat 3ow be so leef 760
 To fynde dep torn vp þis croked way
 For in þat groue I laft' him by my fay
 Vnder a tree and þer he wil abyde
 Ne for 3our bost' he nyl him no þing' hyde 764
 Se 3e þat ook' right' þer 3e schuln him fynde
 God saue 3ow þat bought' aȝein mankynde



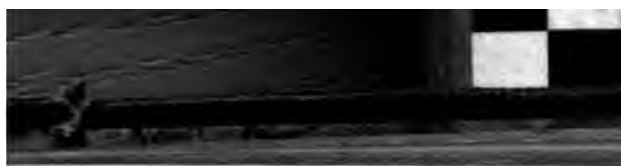
Breperen takeþ keep what I schal say
My witte is gret þough þat I bourde and play
This tresour hap fortune to vs þiuen
In mirth and iolyte our lif to lyuen 780
And lightly as it comth so wil we spende
Ey goddis precious dignite who wende
To day þat we schuld haue so fair a grace
But might þis gold be caried fro þis place 784
Hom to myn hous or ellis vnto þoures
For wel I wot þat þis gold is nouȝt oures
Than were we. in heyh felicitye
But trewely by day it may not be 788
Men wolde say þat we were þenes stronge /
And for oure tresour doon vs for to honge
This tresour moste caried be by night [leaf 198]
As wysly and as slely as it might 792
wherfore I rede þat cut among vs alle
Be drawe and let se wher þe cut wil falle
He þat hap þe cut wiþ herte bliþe/
Schal renne to þe toun and þat ful swithe 796
To bring vs bred and wyn ful priuely
And tuo of vs schal kepe subtilly
This tresour wel and if he wil not tarie
whan it is night we wol þis tresour carie 800
By oon assent þer as vs likeþ best/
That oon of hem þe cut/ brought in his fest/
And bad hem drawe and loke wher it wil falle
And it fel on þe ȝongest of hem alle / 804
And forþ toward þe toun he went anoon
And al so soone as he was agoon
That oon of hem. spak vnto þat oþer
Thow wost/ wel þat þou art my sworne broþer 808
Thy profyt wol I. telle þe anoon
Thow wost wel þat our felaw is a-goon
And her is gold and þat ful gret plente
That schal departed be among vs þre / 812

But napeles if I can schape it so
 That is departed were bitwix vs tuo
 had I not been a frendes torn to þe /
 That oþer answerd I not how þat may be/ 816
 he wot wel þat þe gold is wiþ vs tway
 what schuld we þan do what schuld we say
 Schal it be counsaill sayde þe ferste schrewe
 And I schal telle þe in wordes fewe / 820
 what we schul don and bringe it wel aboute
 I gounte quod þat oþer wiþoute doute
 That by my troupe I wil þe nought bywray
 Now quod þe first þou wost wel we ben tway 824
 And two of vs schuld strengre be þan oon
 leſt whanne he is sett and þat anon
 Arys as þou woldest with him pleye
 And I schal ryf him thurgh þe sydes tweye 828
 whils þou strogelest wiþ him as in game (leaf 192, back)
 And with þi dagger loke þou do þe same
 And þan schal al þe gold departed be
 My dere frend bitwixe þe and me 832
 Than may we oure lustes fulfille
 And play at dees right at our owne wille
 And þus accorded ben þese schrewes twayn
 To sle þe þridde . as ȝe herd me sayn 836
 This ȝongest/ which þat wente to þe toun
 Ful fast in hert/ he rollith vp and doun



For þis witterly. was his entent
To slen hem boþe and neuer to repent/
And forth he goþ no lenger wold he tary
In to þe toun vnto a potecary / 852
And prayde him þat he him wolde selle
Som poysoun þat he might his rattis quelle
And eek þer was a polkat in his hawe /
As he sayde his capouns had I-slawe / 856
And said he wold him wreke if þat he might
On vermyn þat destroyed him by night
Thapotecary answerd and þou schalt haue
A þing þat also god my soule saue 860
In al þis world þer nys no creature
That ete or dronk had of þis confecture
Nought but þe mountaunce of a corn of whete
That he ne schuld his lif anoon forlete / 864
þe sterue he schal and þat in lasse while
Than þou wilt goon a paas not but a myle /
The poysoun is so strong and violent [leaf 193]
This cursed man haþ in his hond I-hent 868
This poysoun in a box & sins he ran
In to þe nexte stret vnto a man
And borwed him large botels þre
And in þe two his poysoun poured he 872
The þrid he keped clene for his drynke
For al þe night he schop him for to swynke
In caryng the gold out of þat place
And whan þis riotour with sory grace 876
had fillid with wyn his botels þre
To his felaws aȝein repaireth he
what nedith it to sermoun it more
For right as þay had cast/ his deth bifore 880
Right so þay han him slayn and þat anoon
And whan þis was I-doon þan spak þat oon
Now let vs drynk and sitte and make vs mery
And sippen we wil his body bery 884

And afterward it happed hem par cas
 To take þe botel þer þe poysoun was
 And drank' and ȝaf his felaw drink' also
 For which þay sterued boþe tuo 888
 But certes I suppose þat' amycen
 wrot' neuer in Canoun ne in non fen
 Mo wonder sorwes of empoisonyng'
 Thus hadde þese wrecches tuo here endyng' 892
 Thus endid been þese homicides tuo
 And eek' þe fals empoysoner also /
 O cursed synne ful of cursednesse
 O traytorous homicidy o wikkednesse 896
 O glotony luxurie and hasardrye /
 Thou blasphemour of crist' with vilanye
 And opes grete of vsage and of pride
 Allas mankynde how may it bytyde 900
 Ther to þy creatour which þat' þe wrought'
 And wiþ his precious herte blood þe bought'
 Thou art' so fals and so vnkynde allas
 Now good men god forȝeue ȝow ȝour trespas 904
 And ware ȝow fro þe synne of auarice [leaf 198, back]
 Myn holy pardoun may ȝou alle warice
 So þat' ȝe offren noblis or starlinges
 Or elles siluer spones broches or rynges 908
 Bowiþ ȝour hedes vnder þis holy bulle
 Comeþ forþ ȝe wyues and offreþ ȝour wolle



SIX-TEXT 331
GROUP C. § 4. PARDONER'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 443

As fair as eny man in Engelond
which were me I-zeue by popes hond
If eny of 3ow wol of deuocioun
Offren and haue myn absolucioun 924
Cometh forth anon knelith her a-doun
And 3e schul haue here my pardoun
Or elles takith pardoun as 3e wende
Al newe and freissch at euery townes ende 928
So þat 3e offren alway new and newe /
Nobles and pens which þat ben good and trewe /
It is an honour to euery þat is heer
That may haue a suffisaunt pardoner 932
Tassoile 3ow in contre as 3e ryde
For auentures which þat may bytyde
For paraunter þer may falle oon or tuo
Doun of his hors and breke his nekke a-tuo 936
loke such a seurete is to 3ou alle
That I am in 3our felaschip I-falle
That may assoyle 3ou boþe more and lasse
whan þat þe soule schal fro þe body passe 940
I rede þat oure hoste schal bygynne
For he is most enuolipid in synne
Com forþ sire ost and offer first anoon [leaf 194]
And þou schalt kisse þe reliquis euerichoon 944
3e for a grote vnboele þi purs
Nay nay quod he þan haue I cristes curs
let be quod he it schal not be so theech
Thou woldest make me kisse þin olde breech 948
And swere it were a relik of a seynt
Though it were wiþ þi foundement depeynt
But by þe cros which þat seynt heleyn fond
I wold I had þy coylons in myn hond 952
In stede of reliks or of seintuary /
let cut hem of I wol help hem to cary
Thay schul be schryned in an hogges tord
This pardoner answerde nat o word 956

So wroþ he was he wolde no word say	
Now quod oure host I wol no lenger play	
wiþ þe ne with noon oþer angry man	
But right anon þis worthy knight bygan	960
whan þat he saugh þat al þe peple lough	
No more of þis for it is right ynough	
Sir pardoner be glad and mery of cheere	
And 3e sir host þat ben to me so deere	964
I pray 3ow þat 3e kisse þe pardoner	
And pardoner I pray 3ow draweþ 3ow ner	
And as we dede let vs laugh and play	
Anoon þay kisse and riden forþ her way /	968
¶ Here endeth þe pardoneres tale	

[*No break in the MS.*]



SIX-TEXT 168
GROUP B. § 4. SHIPMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 445

GROUP B. (β. FRAGMENT IIL)

§ 4. THE SHIPMAN'S TALE.

¶ Here bygynneth þe Schipman his tale/

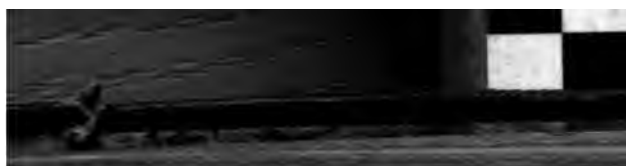
A Marchaunt whilom dwelled at seint Denys
That riche was for which men hild him wys
A wyf he had of excellent beaute
And companable and reuerent was sche
which is a þing þat causeth more despenche
Than worth is al þe cher and reuerence 1196
That men doon hem at festes or at daunces
Such salutaciouns and continuaunces
Passeth as doþ þe schadow on a wal
But wo is him þat paye moot for al 1200
The sely housbond alगत moste pay [leaf 194, back]
He most vs cloþe . in ful good array
Al for his oughne worschip richely
In which array we daunce iolily 1204
And if þat he may not parauenture
Or elles wil not/ such dispens endure
But þynkeþ it is wasted and I-lost
Than moot anoþer paye for oure cost 1208
Or lene vs gold and þat is perilous
The worþy marchaunt huld a noble hous/
For which he hadde alday gret repair
For his largesce and for his wyf was fair 1212
what wonder is but herkneþ to my tale
Amonges al þese gestes gret and smale /
Ther was a monk a fair man and a bold
I trowe þritty wynter he was old 1216
That euer in oon was drawyng to þat place /
This 3onge monk þat was so fair of face

Aqueynted was so wiþ þe goode man
 Siþ þat her firste knowleche bygan 1220
 That in his hous as familier was he /
 As it possibil is a frend to be
 And for as mochil as þis goode man
 And eek þis monk of which þat I bygan 1224
 were boþe tuo I-born in oon village /
 The monk him claymeth as for cosynage
 And he aȝein he saith nat oones nay
 But was as glad þer of as foul of day 1228
 For to his hert it was a gret plesaunce /
 Thus ben þay knyht wiþ eterne alliaunce
 And ilk of hem gan oþer to assure /
 Of broþerhed whil þat her lif may dure 1232
 Fre was daun Iohn and manly of despence /
 As in þat hous and ful of diligence
 To do plesaunce and also gret costage
 He nought forȝat to ȝeue þe leste page 1236
 In al þat hous but after her degre /
 He ȝaf þe lord and sippen þe meyne /
 whan þat he com som maner honest þing [Lan/195]
 For which þay were as glad of his comyng 1240
 As foul is fayn. whan þat þe sonne vpriseþ
 No mor of þis as now for it suffiseþ
 But so bifel þis marchaunt on a day /
 Schop him to make redy his array / 1244



And eek' an officer out/ for to ryde /
To se her graunges and her bernys wyde / 1256
And vnto seint denys he comeþ anon
who was so welcome as my lord dan Iohn
Oure deere cosyn ful of curtesie /
with him brought' he a Iubbe of maluesie 1260
And eek/ anoper ful of wyn vernage
And volantyn as ay was his vsage
And þus I lete hem ete and drynk' and play
This marchaunt and þis monk' a day or tway 1264
The pridde day þis marchaund vp he riseth
And on his needes sadly him auyseth
And vp in to his countour hous goþ he
To rekyn wip himself as wel may be / 1268
Of þilke ȝer how þat' it with him stood
And how þat' he dispended had his good
And if þat' he encrested were or noon
His bookes and his bagges many oon 1272
He haþ byforn him on his counter bord
For riche was his tresor and his hord
For which ful fast' his countour dore he schette
And eek' he wolde no man schold him lette 1276
Of his accomptes for þe mene tyme / [leaf 195, back]
And þus he sat' til it was passed prime
Dan Iohn was risen in þe morn also
And in the gardyn walkith to and fro 1280
And haþ his þinges said ful curteisly
This good wyf com walkyng' ful priuely
In to a gardyn þer he walkeþ softe
And him salueþ as sche haþ doon ful ofte 1284
A mayde child com in hir compaignie
which as hir list' sche may gouerne and gye
For ȝit' vnder þe ȝerde was þe mayde
O dere cosyn myn dan Iohn sche sayde 1288
what' ayleþ ȝow so rape to arise
Nece quod he it aught' ynough suffice

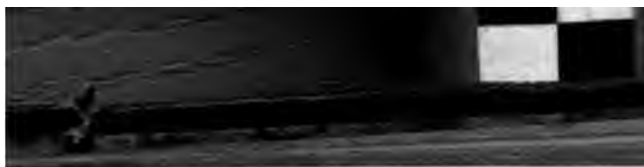
Fyue houres for to slepe a night
 But it were for eny old palled wight 1292
 As ben þese weddid men þat lye and dare
 As in a forme liþ a very hare
 were al forstraught with houndes gret and smale
 But dere nece why be ȝe so pale / 1296
 I trowe certis þat oure goode man
 hath on ȝow laborid sith þe night bygan
 That ȝow were nede to resten hastiliche
 And with þat word he lowgh ful meriliche 1300
 And of his owne þought he was al reed
 This faire wyf bygan to schake hir heed
 And sayde þus ȝe god wot al quod sche /
 Nay cosyn myn it stant not so wiþ me 1304
 For by þat god þat ȝaf me soule and lif
 In al þe reme of Fraunce is þer no wif
 That lasse lust haþ to þat sory play
 For I may synge / allas and waylaway 1308
 That I was born but to no wight quod sche
 Dar I not telle how it stont wiþ me
 Wherfor I pink out of þis lond to wende
 Or elles of my self to make an ende 1312
 So ful am I of drede and eek of care
 This monk bygan vpon þis wif to stare
 And sayd allas my nece god forbede [Long 190]
 That ȝe for eny sorw or eny drede / 1316



Ne schal I neuer for to go to helle /
Bywreye word. of þing^t þat^t ȝe me telle 1328
Not for no cosynage ne alliaunce
But verrayly for loue and affiaunce
Thus ben þay sworn and her-vpon I-kist^t
And ilk^t of hem told oþer what^t hem list^t 1332
Cosyn quod sche if^t þat^t I had a space /
As I haue noon and namly in þis place
Then wold I telle a legend of my lyf^t
what^t I haue suffred siþ I was a wyf^t 1336
wiþ myn housbond þough he be ȝour cosyn
Nay quod þis monk^t by god and seint martyn
He is no more cosyn vnto me
Than is þis leef^t þat^t hongep on þe tre 1340
I clepid him so by seint Denis of Fraunce
To haue þe more cause of acqueyntaunce
Of ȝow which I haue loued specially
Abouen alle wommen sikerly 1344
This swere I ȝow on my professioun
Tellith ȝoure greef^t lest^t þat^t he come a doun
And hasteth ȝow and goþ ȝour way anon
My deere loue quod sche. O dan Iohā 1348
Ful leef^t me were þis counseil to hyde
But out it moot^t it may no more abyde
Myn housbond is to me þe worste man
That^t euer was siþþe þe world bigan 1352
But siþ I am a wif it sit nought^t me [leaf 196, back]
To telle eny wight of oure priuete
[. no gap in the MS.]
God schilde I scholde telle it for his grace / 1356
A wyf ne schal not^t say of hir housbonde
But al honour as I can vnderstonde
Saue vnto ȝow þus moche telle I schal
As help me god he is not^t worþ at al 1360
In no degre þe valieu of a flie
But ȝit me greueth most^t his nigardye

And wel þe wot þat wymmen naturelly
 Desiren sixe þinges as wel as I 1364
 They wolde þat here housbondes scholde be
 hardy and wys and riche and fre /
 And buxom to his wyf and freisch on bedde
 But by þe lord þat for vs alle bledde 1368
 For his honour my seluen to array
 A sonday next comyng' ȝit most' I pay
 An hundred frank' or elles I am lorn'
 ȝit were me leuer þat I were vnborn' 1372
 Than me were doon a sclaunder or vilenye ·
 And if myn housbond eek' might it espie
 I ner but lost' and þerfor I ȝow pray
 [. 1376

 *no gap in the MS.*]
 For a certein day I wol ȝow pay 1380
 And do to ȝow what' pleasaunce and seruise
 That' I may do right' as ȝou list deuyse
 And but I do god take on me vengeaunce
 As foul as hadde Geneloun of Fraunce 1384
 This gentil monk' answard in þis manere
 Now trewely myn owne lady deere /
 I haue on ȝow so gret' pite and reuthe /
 That I ȝow swere and plichte ȝow my treuþe 1388



GROUP B. § 4. SHIPMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 451

SIX-TEXT 174

And forþ sche goth as ioly as a pye /
And bad þe cookes þat þai schold hem hye / 1400
So þat men myghte dyne and þat anoon
vp to hir housbond þis wif is goon
And knokkeþ at / his dore boldely
Qy la quod he. peter it am I 1404
Quod sche how longe sire wol 3e fast
how longe tyme wol 3e reken and cast
3our sommes and 3our bokes and 3our þinges /
The deucl haue part of alle such rekenynges 1408
3e haue I-nough par dy of goddes sonde /
Com down to day and let 3our bagges stonde
Ne be 3e not aschamed that Daun Iohn
Schal al day fastyng þus elenge goon 1412
what let vs hiere masse and gowe dyne
wif quod þis man litel canstow diuine
The curious besynesse þat we haue
For of vs chapmen so god me saue 1416
And by þat lord that cleped is seint Iue
Scarsly among twelue two schuln þriue
Continuelly lastyng in to her age
we may wel make cheer and good visage 1420
And dryue forth þe world as it may be
And kepen our estat in priuete
Til we be deed or elles þat we play
A pilgrimage or goon out of þe way 1424
And þerfor haue I / gret necessite
Vpon þis queynte world to auyse me
For euermor we moste stond in drede
Of hap and fortun / in our chapmanhede 1428
To Flaundres to morw at day
And come agayn as soone as I may
For which my deere wif I þe byseeke
And be to euery wight buxom and meeke 1432
And for to kepe oure good be curious
And honestly gouerne wel our hous

[leaf 197, back]

Thou hast ynough in euery maner wise
 That to a thrifty housbond may suffice 1436
 The lakkeþ noon array ne no vitaille
 Of siluer in þy purs þou mayst not faile
 And with þat word his contour dore he schitte
 And doun he goþ no lenger wold he lette 1440
 And hastily a masse was þer sayd
 And spedily þe tables were I-layd
 And to þe dyner faste þay hem spedde /
 And rychely þis Chapman þe monk fedde / 1444
 And after dyner daun Iohn sobrelly
 This chapman took on part and priuely /
 Sayd him þus. cosyn it stondeth so
 That wel I se to brigges wol ȝe go / 1448
 God and seint austyn spede ȝou and gyde /
 I pray ȝow cosyn wisly þat ȝe ryde
 Gouverneth ȝow also of ȝour diete
 Al temperelly and namely in þis hete 1452
 Bitwix vs tuo nedeth no straunge fare
 Far wel cosyn. god schilde ȝou fro care
 If eny þing þer be by day or night
 If it lay in my power and my might 1456
 That ȝe wil me comaunde in eny wise
 It schal be doon right as ȝe wol deuyse /
 O thing er þat ȝe goon if it might be /
 I wolde pray ȝow for to lene me 1460

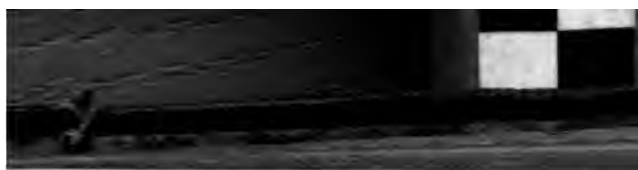


SIX-TEXT 176

GROUP B. § 4. SHIPMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 453

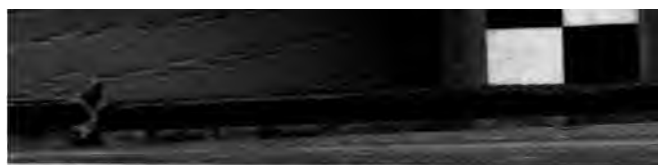
This noble marchaunt gentilly anoon
Answerd and sayde. O cosyn daun Iohn [leaf 198] 1472
Now sikerly pis is a smal request
My gold is 3oures whanne þat 3ow lest/
And nought onoly gold but my chaffare /
Tak' what 3ow liste / god schilde 3e spare 1476
But oon þing is 3e know it wel ynough
Of chapmen þat her money is here plough
we may creaunce whils we haue a name
But goldes for to be it is no game 1480
Pay it agayn whan it liþ in 3our ese /
After my might ful fayn wold I 3ow plesse /
This hundred frankes he fet forth anoon
And priuely he took hem to daun Iohn 1484
No wight in al pis world wist of pis loone
Sauyng' þe marchaund and dan Iohn alloone
Thay drynke & speke and rome a while and play
Til þat dan Iohn rydeþ to his abbay 1488
The morwe cam and forth þe marchaund rideth
To Flaundres-ward his prentis wel him gydeth
Til þat/ he cam to Brigges merily
Now goth pis marchaund faste and busily 1492
Aboute his neede and bieth and creaunceth
He neither pleyeth atte dys ne daunceþ
But as a marchaund schortly for to telle
he lad his lyf / and þer I let him duelle 1496
The sonday next þe marchaund is agoon
To seint denys I-come is daun Iohn
with croune and berd al freisch and newe I-schaue
In al þe hous þer nas so litel a knaue 1500
Ne no wight elles þat he nas ful fayn
For þat my lord dan Iohn was come agayn
And schortly to þe poynte for to gon
This faire wif acordith with dan Iohn 1504
That for þese hundred frank' he schuld al night
Haue hir in his armes bolt/ vpright

And þis acord þarformed was in dede /
 In mirth al night a bisy lif þay lede / 1508
 Til it was day þat dan Iohā went his way
 And bad þe meigne far wel haue good day [leaf 150, back]
 For noon of hem ne no wight in þe toun
 Hath of dan Iohā right noon suspeccioun 1512
 And forth he rideth hom to his abbay
 Or wher him list / no more of him I say /
 ¶ This marchaund whan þat endid was þe faire
 To seynt denys. he gan to repeire / 1516
 And with his wif he makeþ fest and cheere
 And tellith hir þat chaffar is so deere
 That needes most he make a cheuisaunce
 For he was bounde in a reconisaunce 1520
 To paye twenty þousand scheldes anoon
 For which þis marchaund is to paris goon
 To borwe of certeyn frendes þat he hadde /
 A certein frankes and some with him he ladde / 1524
 And whan þat he was come in to þe toun
 For gret chiertee and gret affeccioun
 Vnto Dan Iohā he first goth him to play
 Nought for to borwe of him no kyn monay 1528
 But for to wite and se of his wel fare
 And for to telle him of his chaffare
 As frendes doon whan þay ben met in fere
 Dan Iohā him maketh fest and mery cheere 1532



For 3e so kyndely þis oþer day
lente me gold and as I can and may 1544
I þanke 3ow by god and by seint Iame /
But napeles I took it to oure dame
3oure wif þe same gold aȝein
vpon 3our bench. sche wot it wel certeyn [leaf 199] 1548
By certain toknes þat I can hir telle
Now by 3our leue I may no lenger duelle
Oure abbot wol out of toun anon
And in his compaignye moot I goon 1552
Grete wel oure dame my nece swete
And far wel dere cosyn til þat we meete
This marchaund which þat was boþe war and wys /
Creaunced hap and payed eek in parys/ 1556
To certeyn lombardes redy in her hond
This somme of gold and took of hem his bond
And hom he goþ a mery as a popin iay
For wel he knew he stood in such array 1560
That needes most he wyne in such viage
A þousand frankes aboue al his costage
His wyf redy mette him at þe gate
As sche was wont of old usage algate 1564
And al þat night in mirþe þay ben sette
For he was riche and clerly out of dette
whan it was day þis marchaund gan embrace
his wyf al newe and kist hir on hir face 1568
And vp he goth and maked it ful tough
No more quod sche by god 3e haue ynough
And wantounly with him sche lay and playde
Till atte laste þus þis marchaund sayde 1572
By god quod he I am a litel wroþ
with 3ow my wyf alþough it be me loth
And wite 3e why by god as þat I gesse
3e han I-maad a maner straungenesse / 1576
Bitwixe me and my cosyn dan Iohn
3e schold haue warned me er I had goon

That he 3ow had an hundred frankes payd
 By redy tokne and huld him euel appayd 1580
 For þat I to him spak' of cheuysaunce
 Me semed so as by his countenaunce
 But napeles by god of heuen king'
 I þoughe nought' to axe him no þing' 1584
 I pray þe wif do no more so
 Tel me alway er þat I fro þe go [leaf 199, back]
 If eny dettour haue in myn absence
 I-payd þe lest' in þy negligence 1588
 I may him axe a þing' þat he haþ payd
 This wyf was not' affered ne affrayed
 But holly sche sayde and þat' anoon
 Mary I diffy þat' false monk' dan Iohn 1592
 I kepe not' of his tokenes neuer a del
 he took' me a certeyn gold/ þat' wot' I wel
 what' euel thedom on his monkes snowte/
 For god it wot' I wende wiþoute doute 1596
 That' he had 3eue it me by cause of 3ow
 To do þer with myn honour and my prow
 For cosynage and eek' for bele cheer
 That' he haþ had ful ofte tyme heer 1600
 But synnes þat' I stonde in þis disioynt
 I wol answer 3ow schortly to þe poynt
 3e han mo slakke dettours þan am I
 For I wol pay 3ow wel and redily 1604



SIX-TEXT 180

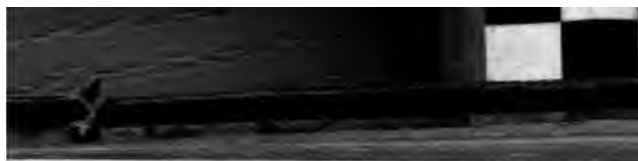
GROUP B. § 4. SHIPMAN'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 457

Forȝeue it me myn owne spouse deere /
Turne hiderward and make better cheere 1616
This marchaund saugh noon oþer remedy
And for to chide. it nas but folý
Siþ þat þe þing may not amendid be /
wif he sayde / and I forȝiue it þe 1620
But by þi lif ne be no more so large
keep better my good þis ȝiue I þe in charge
Thus endeþ now my tale and god vs sende
Talyng' ynough vnto our lyues ende / Amen / 1624

[Foot of page. No other break in the MS.]

WEL sayd by corpus boones quod oure host' [1608/200]
 Now longe mot' þou sayle by þe cost'
 Sir gentil maister gentil mariner
 God giue þe monk' a þousand last' quadeȝer 1628
 haha felaws be war for such a iape
 The monk' put' in þe mannes hood an ape
 And in his wyues eek' by seint' austyn
 Draweþ no monkes more vnto ȝour In 1632
 But' now pasouer and let' vs loke aboute
 who schal telle first' of al þis route /
 Anoper tale / and wiþ þat' wiþ þat' word he sayde /
 As curteisly as it had ben a mayde / 1636
 My lady prioresse by ȝour leue
 So þat' I wist' I scholde ȝow not greue
 I wolde deme þat' ȝe telle scholde
 A tale next' if so were þat' ȝe wolde / 1640
 Now wol ȝe vouche sauf' my lady deere /
 Gladly quod sche / and sayd in þis manere

[Break of one line in the MS.]



[THE PROEM.]

O Lord oure lord þy name how merueylous ¶ *Domine domi-*
Is in þis large world I-sprad quod sche *nus noster.*
For noughȝ oonly þy laude precious

Parformed is by men of heih degre
But by mouthes of children þy bounte ¶ *Ex ore infantium* 1647
Parformed is on oure brest soukyng
Som tyme schewe þay þin heriyng 1649

[*No stanza-breaks in the MS.*]

Wherfore in laude as I best can or may 1650
Of þe and of þy white lily flour
which þat þe bar and is a mayde alway
To telle a story I wil do my labour
Noughȝ þat I may encesce þoure honour 1654
For sche hir silf / is honour and roote
Of bounte next hir sone and soules boote/ 1656

O modir mayde. O mayde mooder fre / 1657
O bussȝ vnbrent/ brennyng in Moises sight/
That rauysshedest / doun fro þe deite
Thurgh þin humblesse þe gost þat in þe alight
Of whos vertu he in þin herte pigȝ 1661
Conceyued was þe fadres sapience [*leaf 200, back*]
help me to telle it in þy reuerence 1663

Lady þi bounte and þy magnificence 1664
Thy vertu and þi gret humilite
Ther may no tonge expres in no science
For som tyme lady er men pray to þe /
Thow gost biforn of þy benignite 1668
And getist vs þe light þurgh þy prayere /
To gyden vs þe way to þy sone sone so deere/ 1670

My connyngt is to weyk' o blisful queene 1671
 For to declare þy grete worþinesse
 That I may not þis in my wyt susteene
 But as a child of twelf' month old or lesse
 Than can vnnethes eny word expresse 1675
 Right so fare I and þerfor I 3ou pray
 Endith my song þat I schal of 3ow say 1677

[A break of one line in the MS.]

[THE TALE.]

THer was in acy in a greet' Citee 1678
 Amonges cristen folk' a Iewerye
 Susteyned by a lord of þat' contre
 For foul vsure and lucre of felonye /
 Hatelful to crist' and to his compaignye / 1682
 And þurgh þe strete men might' ride and wende /
 For it' was fre and open at' euerich ende 1684

 A litel scole of' cristen folk' þer stood 1685
 Doun at þe forþer ende in which þer were
 Children an heep ycomen of' cristes blood
 That lered in þat' scole 3er by 3ere
 Such maner doctrine as men vsed þere 1689



GROUP B. § 6. PRIORESS'S TALE. **SIX-TEXT 184**
Harleian 7334 461

Thus hap þis widow hir litel child I-taught 1699
Oure blisful lady cristes moder deere
To worschip ay and he forȝat it nought
For cely child wil alway soone leere

But ay whan I remembre of þis matiere 1703
Seint Nicholas stont euer in my presence
For he so ȝong to crist dede reuerence 1705

This litil child his litel book lernynge 1706
As he sat in þe scole at his primere
He O alma redemptoris herde synge/
As children lerned her antiphonere
And as he durst he drough hem ner and neere 1710
And herkned euer þe wordes and þe note
Til he þe firste vers coupe al by rote 1712

Nought wist he what þis latyn was to say / 1713
For he so ȝong and tender was of age
But on a day his felaw gan he pray /
To expounne him þe song in his langage/
Or telle him what þis song was in vsage / 1717
This prayd he him to construe and declare
Ful often tyme vpon his knees bare / 1719

His felaw which þat elder was þan he 1720
Answerd him þus. þis song I. haue herd seye
was maked of our blisful lady fre
Hire to saluen and eek hire to preye
To ben our help and socour whan we deye 1724
I can no more expounne in this matere
I lerne song I can no more gramer 1726

And is þis song I-maad in reuerence 1727
Of cristes moder sayde þis Innocent
Now certes I wol do my diligence
To conne it al er cristemasse be went

Though þat I for my primer schal be schent / 1731
 And schal be betyn þries in an hour
 I wol it conne cure lady to honoure 1733

His felaw taught him homward prinely 1734
 From day by day til he coupe it by rote
 And þan he song it wel and boklely [leaf 281, back]
 Twyes on þe day it passed þurgh his þrote
 From word to word accordyng to þe note 1738
 To scoleward and homward whan he went
 On cristes moder was set al his entent 1740

As I haue sayd þurghout þe Iewrye 1741
 This litel child as he cam to and fro
 Ful merily þan wold he synge and crie /
 O alma Redemptoris euer mo
 The swetnes hap his herte persed so 1745
 Of cristes moder that to hir to pray
 he can not stynt of syngyng by þe way / 1747

Oure firste foo þe serpent Sathanas 1748
 That hath in Iewes hert his waspis nest
 Vpswal and sayde / o ebreik peple allas
 Is þis a þing to 3ow þat is honest
 That such a boy schal walken as him lest 1752



GROUP B. § 6. PRIORESS'S TALE. Harleian 7334. SIX-TEXT 186
463

I say in a wardrobe þay him þrew 1762
wher as the Iewes purgen her entraile
O cursed folk' O herodes al newe
what' may þour euyll entente þou auaille
Morthur wol out certeyn it wil nought' faile 1766
And namly þer þonour of god schuld sprede
The blood out criep on þour cursed dede / 1768

O martir soudit to Virginite 1769
Now maystow synge folowyng' euer in oon
The white lomb celestial quod sche /
Of which þe grete euaungelist' seint' Iohn
In pathmos wroot' which seith þat þay goon 1773
Bifore þe lamb and synge a song' al newe [leaf 202] 1775
That' neuer fleischly wommen þay knewe

This pore widowe wayteþ al þis night' 1776
After þis litel child but he cometh nought'
For which as soone as it' was dayes light'
with face pale in drede and busy þought'
Sche haþ at scole and elles-wher him sought' 1780
Til fynally sche gan of hem aspye
That' he was last/ seyn in þe Iewerie 1782

With moodres pite in hir brest' enclosed 1783
Sche goþ as sche were half' out' of hir mynde
To euery place wher sche haþ supposed
By liklihedre hir child for to fynde
And euer on cristes mooder meke and kynde 1787
Sche cried and atte laste þus sche wrought'
Among' þe cursed Iewes sche him sought' 1789

Sche freyned and sche prayed pitously 1790
To euery Iew þat dwelled in þat place
To telle hir if hir child wente þer by
Thay sayden nay but Ihū of his grace

þat in hir þoughȝ wiþinne a litel space 1794
 That in þat place after hir sone sche cryde
 wher as he was cast in a put besyde / 1796

O grete god þat performedist þin laude 1797
 by mouth of Innocent; lo here þy might
 This gemme of chastite þis emeraude
 And eek of martirdom þe ruby bright
 Ther he with þrote I-kut lay vpright 1801
 He. Alma redemptoris gan to synge
 So lowde þat al þe place bigan to ryng 1803

The cristen folk þat þurgh þe strete went/ 1804
 In comen for to wonder vpon þis þing
 And hastily for the prouost þay sent
 He cam anon wiþoute taryng
 And heriede crist þat is of heuen kyng 1808
 And eek his moder honour of mankynde
 And after þat þe Iewes let he bynde 1810

This child with pitous lamentacioun 1811
 vp taken was syngyng his song alway [to 1798, back]
 And with honour of gret processioun
 Thay caried him vnto þe next abbay
 His modir swownyng by þe beere lay 1815



SIX-TEXT 188

GROUP B. § 6. PRIORESS'S TALE. **Harleian 7334.** 465

Vpon his beere ay lith þis Innocent 1825
 Biforn þe chief auter whiles þe masse last'
 And after þat þabbot with his couent'
 Hap sped him for to burie him ful fast'
 And whan þay halywater on him cast' 1829
 3et spak' þis child. whan spreynde was þe water
 And song' O alma redemptoris mater 1831

This abbot which þat was an holy man 1832
 As monkes ben or elles oughte be
 This 3onge child to coniure he bigan
 And sayd O deere child I halse þe
 In vertu of þe holy trinite 1836
 Tel me what is þy cause for to synge
 Sith þat þy throte is kit at' my semynge 1838

My prote is kit vnto my nekke boon 1839
 Sayde þis child and as by way of kynde
 I schulde han ben deed long' tyme a goon
 But Ihu crist as 3e in bookes fynde
 wol þat' his glorie laste and be in mynde 1843
 And for þe worschip of his moder deere
 3et may I synge. O alma lowde and cleere 1845

This welle of mercy cristes moder swete 1846
 I loued alway as after my connynge
 And whan þat I my lyf schulde leete
 To me sche cam and bad me for to synge
 This antym verrailly in my deyinge [leaf 208] 1850
 As 3e haue herd and whan þat I had songe
 Me þought' sche layde a grayn vnder my tonge 1852

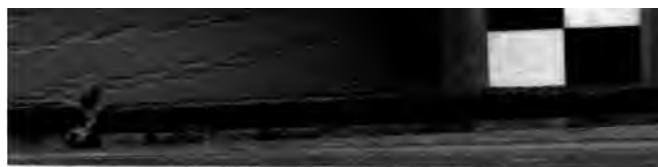
Wherfor I synge and synge moot certeyne 1853
 In honour of þat blisful mayden fre
 Til fro my tonge taken is þe greyne
 And after þat þus saide sche to me

My litil child now wil I fecche þe 1857
 whan þat þe grayn is fro þi tonge I-take
 Be nought' agast' I wol þe nought' forsake 1859

This holy monk' this abbot' him mene I 1860
 His tonge out caught' and took' away þe greyn
 And he ȝaf vp þe gost' ful softly
 And whan þe abbot' hath þis wonder seyn
 His salte teres striken down as reyn 1864
 And gruf' he fel a doun vnto þe grounde
 And stille he lay as he had ben y-bounde 1866

The couent eek' lay on þe paupment' 1867
 wepyng' and herying' cristes moder deere
 And after þat þay rise and forþ þay went'
 And took' away þis martir fro his beere /
 In a tombe of' marble stoones cleere 1871
 Enclosed þay þis litil body sweete
 Ther he is now god leue vs for to meete 1873

O ȝonge hughe of' lyncofn slayn also 1874
 wip' cursed iewes as it is notable /
 For it nys but a litel while ago
 Pray eek' for vs we synful folk' vnstable
 That' of' his mercy god so merciable 1878
 On vs his grete mercy multiplie



SIX-TEXT 190
GROUP B. § 7. PRIORESS-THOPAS LINK. Harleian 7334. 467

- W^han sayd was þis miracle euery man 1881
As sober was þat wonder was to se
Til þat oure host to iape bigan
And þan at erst/ he loked vpon me
And sayde þus what man art þou quod he 1885
Thou lokest as þou woldest fynde an hare
For euer vpon þe ground I se þe stare / 1887
- Approche ner and loke merily [leaf 208, back] 1888
Now ware þou sires and let þis man haue space
He in þe wast is schape as wel as I
This were a popet in an arm to embrace
For any womman smal and fair of face / 1892
He semeth eluisch by his countenaunce
For vnto no wight doth he daliaunce 1894
- Say now som what sins other folk han said 1895
Telle vs a tale and þat of mirthe anon
host quod I ne beþ nought euel apayd
For other tale certes can I noon
But of a rym I lerned ȝore agoon 1899
Ȝe þat is good quod he now schul we heere
Som deynte þing me þinketh by his cheere 1901

[Break of 1 line in the MS.]

[No stanza-gaps are in the MS., and no lines are inset.]

[The First Fit.]

L Esteneþ lordyngs . in good entent	
And I wol telle verrayment	
Of myrthe and solas	1904
Of a knyght was fair and gent	
In batail and in tornament	
His name was sir Thopas	1907
I-bore he was in fer conntre	
In Flaundres al byþonde þe æ	
At Poperyng in þe place	1910
His fader was a man ful fro	
And lord he was of þat contre	
As it was goddes grace	1913
Sir Thopas wax a doughty swayn	
whyt was his face as payndemayn	
His lippes reed as Rose /	1916



SIX-TEXT 192
GROUP B. § 8. SIR THOPAS. Harleian 7334. 469

He coupe hunt at wilde deer
And ride on haukyng for ryuer
with gray goshawk on honde 1928
Therto he was a good archeer
Of wrastelyng was noon his peer
Ther eny Ram schal stonde / 1931

Ful many mayde bright in bour
pay mourne for him paramour
whan hem were bet to slepe 1934
But he was chast and no lecchour
And sweet as is þe brembre flour
That bereþ þe reede heepe / 1937

And so it fel vpon a day
For soþ as I ȝow telle may /
Sir Thopas wold out ryde 1940
he worth vpon his steede gray
And in his hond a launcegay
A long sword by his syde 1943

he priketh þurgh a fair forest/
Ther In is many a wilde best/
ȝe boþe buk / and hare 1946
And as he prikeþ north and Est
I tel it ȝow hym had almost
Bityd a sory care 1949

Ther springen herbes greet and smale
The licorys and þe Cetewale /
And many a clow gilofre 1952
And notemuge to put in ale
wheþir it be moist or stale
Or for to lay in cofre 1955

The briddes synge it is no nay
 The sperhawk and þe popiniay
 That ioye it was to heere 1958
 The þrostilcok' maad eek' his lay
 The woode dowue vpon þe spray
 So song' ful lowde and cleere 1961

Sir Thopas fel in loue-longing'
 when that he herde þe briddes synge [leaf 204, back]
 And priked as he were wood 1964
 His faire steede in his prikyng
 So swette þat men might' him wrynge
 His sydes were al blood 1967

Sir Thopas eek' so wery was
 For priking' on þe softe gras
 So feers was his corrage 1970
 That' doun he layd him in þe place
 To make his steede som solace
 And ȝaf' him good forage 1973

O seinte Mary benedicite
 what' cylith þis loue at me
 To bynde me so sore 1976
 My dremed al this night' par de



GROUP B. § 8. SIR THOPAS. SIX-TEXT 194
Harleian 7334. 471

In to his sadil he clomb anoon
And priked ouer stile and stoon
 An elf queen for to spye 1989
Til he so longe hap ryden and goon
That he fond in a priue woon
 The contre of fairye 1992
 ¶ So wylde [as part of l. 1992]
For in þat contre was þer noon :
[. no gap in the MS.]
 Neither wif ne childe [as part of l. 1994] 1996

Til þat þer cam a greet geaunt/
his name was sir Olifaunt
 A perilous man of dede 1999
he swar child by Termagaunt
For if þou prike out of myn haunt
 Anoon I slee þe 2002
 with my mace [as part of l. 2002]
heer is þe queen of fayerie
with harp . and lute and Symphonye
 dwellyng in þis place [as part of l. 2005] 2006

The child sayd also mote I the [leaf 205]
To morwe wil I meete with þe
 whan I haue myn armure 2009
And ȝit I hope þar ma fay
That þou schalt with þis launcegay
 Abyen it ful soure 2012
 ¶ þy mawe [as part of l. 2012]
Schal I persyn if þat I may
Er it be fully prime of day
 For heer schalt þou be slawe 2016

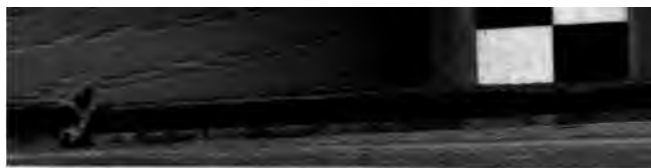
Sir thopas drough on bak' ful fast'
 This geaunt' at' him stoonas cast' /
 Out' of a fell staf' slynge 2019

But' faire eschapeþ child thopas
 And al it' was þurgh goddis gras
 And þurgh his berynge / 2022

3et' lesteneth lordynges to my tale /
 Merier þan þe nightyngale /
 I wol 3ow rounne 2025
 how *sir* thopas wiþ sides smale /
 Prikyng e ouer hul and dale
 Is come ageyn to tounne 2028

his mery men comaunded he
 To make him boþe game and gle
 For needes most' he fight' 2031
 with a geaunt' with heedes þre
 For paramours and iolite
 Of' oon þat schon ful bright 2034

Do come he sayde my mynstrales
 And gestours for to telle tales
 Anoon in myn armynge 2037
 Of Romaunces þat ben reales



GROUP B. § 8. SIR THOPAS. Harleian 7334. 473

SIX-TEXT 196

He dede next his white leere
Of cloth of lake whyt and cleere

A brech and eek a schert 2049

And next his schert an aketoun

And ouer þat an haberioun

For persyng of his hert 2052

And ouer þat a fyn hauberk

was al I-wrought of Iewes werk

Ful strong it was of plate 2055

And ouer þat his cote-armour

As whyt as is a lily flour

In which he wold debate 2058

his scheld was al of gold so red

And þer inne was a bores heed

A charbocle by his syde / 2061

And ther he swor on ale and bred

How þat þe geaunt schal be deed

Bytyde what bytyde / 2064

His iambeux were of quirboily

His swerdes schethe of yuory

His helm of latoun bright 2067

His sadel was of rowel boon

His bridel as þe sonne schon

Or as þe moone light 2070

his spere was of Cipres

That bodeth werre and no ping pees

The heed ful scharp I-grounde / 2073

His steede was al dappul gray

Hit goth an ambel in þe way /

Ful softely and rounde 2076

¶ In londe [In line 2076]

lo lordes heer is a fyt

· If 3e wil eny more of it

To telle it wol I fonde 2080

[No break in the MS.]

[The Second Fit.]

N Ow hold 3our mouth for charite
Boþe knight and lady fre

And herkneþ to my spelle 2083

Of batail and of chivalry

And of ladys loue drewery [leaf 206]

Anoon I wol 3ow telle / 2086

Men speken of Romauns of pris

Of horn child and of ypotis

Of Beuys and sir Gy 2089

Of sir libeaux and pleyn damour

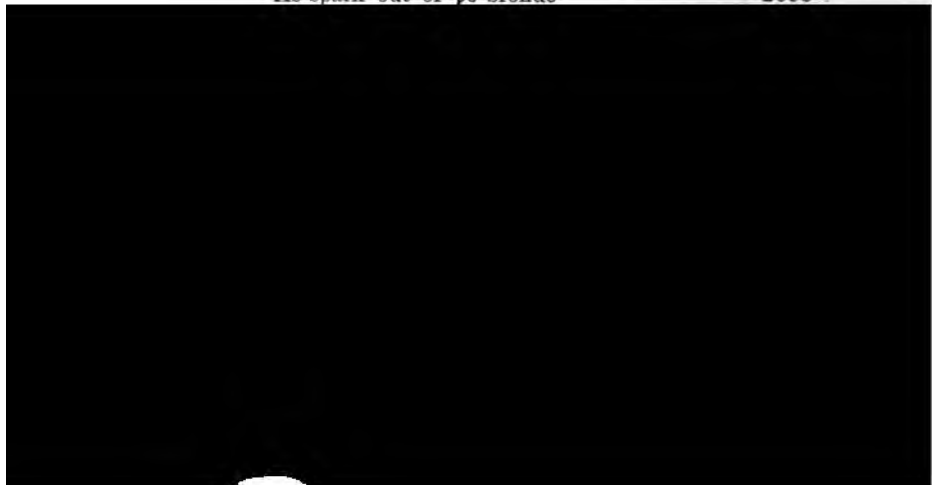
But sir thopas bereþ þe flour

Of real Chivalry 2092

His goode steede he bistrood

And forth vpon his way he glood

As spark out of þe bronde 2095





SIX-TEXT 198
GROUP B. § 8. SIR THOMAS. Harleian 7334. 475

Himself drank water of þe welle

As dede þe knight of pertinelle /

So worthy vnder wede

2107

[. no gap in the MS.]

NO mor of þis for goddes dignite
 Quod our hoste / for þou makest me
 So very of þy verrey lewednesse
 That al so wisly god my soule blesse / 2112
 Myn eeres aken for þy drasty speche
 Now such a rym þe deuel I byteche
 This may wel be rym dogerel quop he
 why so quod I why wilt þou lette me 2116
 More of my tale þan anoþer man
 Syn þat it is þe beste rym þat I can
 By god quod he for plainly at o word
 þy drasty rymyng' is not worth a tord 2120
 þou dost nought elles but despendist tyme
 Sir at o word þou schalt no lenger ryme
 let se wher þou canst tellen ought in gest
 Or telle in prose som what atte lest [leaf 206, back] 2124
 In which þer be so merthe or doctrine
 Gladly quod I by goddes swete pyne /
 I wol 3ow telle a litel þing' in prose
 That oughte like 3ow as I suppose / 2128



For some of hem sayn more and some lesse /
whan þay his pitous passioun expresse / 2140
I mene of mark' mathew luk' and Iohn
But' douteles her sentence is al oon
Therfor lordynges alle I 3ow biseche
If 3ow þink' þat I varye as in my speche 2144
As þus þough þat I telle som what' more
Of prouerbes þan I haue herd bifore
Comprehended in þis litel tretys here /
To enforcen with þeffect' of my matiere 2148
And þough I not' þe same wordes say
As 3e haue herd / 3it' to 3ow alle I pray
Blameþ me nought for in my sentence
Schul 3e no wher fynde difference 2152
Fro þe sentence of þis tretys lite
After þe which þis litil tale I wryte
And þerfor herkenþ what' I schal say
And let' me tellen al my tale I pray 2156

[*Break of 5 lines in the MS.*]

[There are no line-numbers or paragraph-breaks in the MS. Tyrnkitt's breaks are kept here, as they were in the Six-Text, to prevent slight differences in the Texts throwing out many lines.]

[leaf 207]

[2157] **A** 3ong^r man called Melibeus mighty and riche
bygat vpon his wif þat called was prudens. a
doughter: which þat called was Sophie //
[2158] Vpon a day byfel þat for his desport he
is went in to þe felde him to / play. [2159] his
wif and his douzter eek hap he laft in-with his hous of
which þe dores were fast I-schitte. [2160] þre of his
olde foos han it espyed. and setten laddres to þe walles
of his hous and by þe wyndowes ben entred [2161] and
beetyn his wyf and woundid his douzter wiþ fyue
mortal woundes in fyue sondry places [2162] þat is to
sayn in here feet in here hondes in here eeres in here
nose and in here mouth and lafte her for deed and
went away

[2163] ¶ whan Melibeus retourned was in to his
hous and seigh al þis meschief he lik a man mad
rendyng his clopes gan wepe and crie.



hire wepyng¹ to stinte [2169] ¶ For which resoun pis noble wif prudens suffred hir housbonde for to wepe and crie / as for a certeyn space. [2170] and whan sche seigh hir tyme: sche sayd him in pis wise ¶ Allas my lord quod sche why make ȝe ȝoure self for to be lik¹ a fool. [2171] For soþe it apperteyneth not to a wys man to make such sorwe. [2172] ȝoure douȝter wif þe grace of god schal warischte be and eschape. [2173] and al were it so þat sche right now were deed: ȝe ne oughte nouȝt as for hir deþ ȝoure silf destroye [2174] ¶ Senec saip. þe wise man schal not take to gret discomfort for þe deth of his children: [2175] but certes he schulde suffren it in pacience as wel as he abydeþ þe deþ of his owne persone

[2176] ¶ This melibeus answerde anon & sayde ¶ what man quod he schuld of his wepyng stynte þat hap a cause for to wepe [2177] ¶ Ihū crist ¶ Qualiter ihu christus fleuit propter mortem lazari
oure lord himself wepte for þe deth of lazarus his frend [2178] ¶ Prudens answerde Certes wel I wot/ attemperel wepyng¹ is no þing defended to him þat sorwful is. amonges folk in sorwe. But it is raper graunted him to wepe / [2179] þe apostel poule vnto þe Romayns writeþ. A man schal reioyce with hem þat maken ioye / And wepe with such folk as wepen [2180] ¶ But þough attemperel ¹wepyng¹ be graunted: Outrageous [leaf 207, back]
wepyng¹ certes is defended // [2181] Mesure of wepyng¹ be conserued. after þe lore of crist þat techeth vs senec [2182] ¶ whan þat þi frend is deed quod he: let nought þin yen to moyste ben of teres ne to moche drye ¶ Al þough the teeres come out of þine eyȝen: let he not falle [2183] ¶ And whan þou hast forȝon þy frend: do diligence to gete anoþer frende ¶ And pis is more wisdom þan to wepe for þy frend which þat þou hast lorn. For þer in is no boote [2184] ¶ And þerfore if ȝe gouerne ȝow by sapience put away sorwe out of ȝoure hert [2185] ¶ Remembreth ȝow þat Ihesu Sirac saip

¶ A man þat is ioyous and glad in herte: it him conserueth florisching in his age ¶ But soþly sorweful herte makeþ his boones drye [2186] ¶ he saiþ eek þus. þat sorwe in herte sleþ ful many a man [2187] ¶ Salamon saiþ þat right as motthes in schepes flees annoyeth þe clothes. and þe smale wormes to þe tre: Right / so annoyeth sorwe to þe herte [2188] ¶ wherefore vs oughte as wel in þe deþ of oure children as in þe losse of oure goodes temporales haue pacience

[2189] ¶ Remembreth ȝow vpon þe pacien Iop ¶ whan he hadde lost his children and his temporal substance and in his body endured and receyued ful many a greuous tribulacioun: ȝit sayde he þus [2190] ¶ Oure lord it/ sent/ vnto me Oure lord it haþ raft fro me. Right so as oure lord wil: riȝt so be it doon ¶ I-blessed be þe name of oure lord [2191] To þese forsayde þinges answerith Melibeus vnto his wif Prudens Alle þine wordes ben soþ quod he and þerto profytable ¶ But soþly myn herte is so troubled wiþ þis sorwe: þat I noot/ what to doone [2192] ¶ Let calle quod prudence þy trewe frendes alle and þy linage whiche þat ben trewe & wise. telleth hem ȝoure greuaunce and herken what þay say in counseilynge. and ȝow gouerne after here sentence. [2193] ¶ Salomon saith ¶ werke al þi þing: by counseil and þe þar neuer rewe

[2194] ¶ þan by þe counseil of his wyf prudens



[2199] and by þe maner of his speche: it semed þat in ¹herte he bar a cruel Ire redy to do vengeance vpon his foos. and sodeynly desirede þat þe werre schulde bygyne. [2200] but natheles ȝit axed he her counseil in þis matier. [2201] ¶ A Sirurgien by licens and assent of suche as were wyse vp roos and to melibeus sayde as ȝe may hie

[2202] ¶ Sire quod he as to vs Sirurgiens appartieneth þat we do to euery wight þe beste þat we can wher as we ben withholde and to oure pacient þat we do no damage [2203] ¶ wherfore it happeþ many tyme and ofte þat whan tweye han euerich wounded oþer: oo. same surgien heleþ hem boþe. [2204] where vnto oure art it is not perteyned to norische werre ne parties to supporte: [2205] but certes as to warisching of ȝoure douȝter al be it so þat sche perilously be woundid: we schullen do so tentyf besynes fro day to night þat with þe grace of god sche schal be hool and sound als soone as it is possible [2206] ¶ Almost right in þe same wise þe phisiciens answerden: saue þat þay sayden a fewe wordes more [2207] ¶ That ryght as maladies ben cured by her contraries: Right so schal men warissch werre by vengeance [2208] ¶ His neyhe-boures ful of enuye his feyned freendes þat semede reconsiled his flatereres [2209] maden semblaunt of wepyng and appaired and aggregated moche of þis matiere in preisying gretly melibe of might. of power of Riches. and of frendes despisinge þe power of his aduersaries [2210] and sayden outerly þat he anon schulde wreke him on his aduersaries be bygynginge of werre

[2211] vp roos þanne an aduocate þat was wys. by leue and by counseil of oþere þat were wise and sayde / [2212] ¶ Lordynges. þe needes for whiche we ben assemblit in þis place is ful heuy þing and an heigh matier [2213] by cause of þe wrong & of þe wikkednes þat haþ ben doon and eek of þe grete damages þat

in tyme comyng ben possible to falle for þe same
 [2214] and eek by cause of þe grete riches and
 power of þe parties bothe [2215] for þe which resonns
 it were a ful gret peril to erren in these materes [2216]
 ¶ wherfore melibeus þis is oure sentence ¶ we counseile
 þow abouen alle þinges þat riȝt anon þou do
 diligence in kepyng of þy body in such a
 wyse þat þou ne wante noon espye ne wacche þy body
 for to saue [2217] ¶ And after þat we counseile þat in
 þin hous þou sette sufficiant garnisoun So þat þay may
 as wel þy body as þin hous defende [2218] ¶ But certes
 for to moeue werre ne sodeynly for to do vengeance
 we may not deme in so litel tyme þat it were profit-
 able [2219] ¶ wherfore we axen leysir ¹ and a space
 [. . .] in þis caas to demen [2220] ¶ For þe comune
 prouerbe saiþ þis ¶ he þat soone demep soone schal
 repente [2221] ¶ And eek men sayn þat þilke Iuge is
 wys þat soone vnderstondep a matier and Iuggeþ by
 leysir. [2222] ¶ For al be it so þat / alle taryinge is anoyful
 algates it is no reproef in ȝeuynge of Iuggement. ne of
 ve[n]gaunce takyng whan it is suffisaunt and resonable
 [2223] and þat schewed oure lord ihū crist by en-
 sample ¶ For whan þat þe womman þat was I-take in
 aduoutrie was brouȝt in his presence to knowen what
 schulde be doon of hir persone Al be it þat he wist
 him self what þat he wolde answerē ȝit wolde he



pat þay ben freische and newe ¶ And with lowde vois þay cryde. werre. werre.

[2227] ¶ Vproos þo oon of þese olde wise and with his hond made countenaunce þat men schulde holde hem stille and ȝiuen him audience [2228] ¶ lordyngs quod he ther is ful many a man þat crieth werre werre wot ful lital what werre amounteth. [2229] werre at his bygypanyng haþ so greet and entre and so large þat euery wight may entre whan him likeþ and lightly fynde werre [2230] ¶ But certes what ende schal falle þerof? it is not lightly to knowe [2231] For soþly whan þat werre is oones bygonne? þer is ful many a child vnborn of his mooder þat schal sterue ȝong by cause of þilke werre or elles lyue in sorwe and deye in wrecchidnes [2232] ¶ & þefore er þat eny werre be bygonne. men moste haue gret counseil and gret deliberacioun. [2233] ¶ And whan þis olde man wende to enforce his tale by resouns wel neigh alle at oones bygonne þay to rise for to breke his tale and beden him fulofte his wordes to abrigge. [2234] For soþly he þat precheþ to hem that liste not to heere his wordes his sermoun hem anoyeth [2235] ¶ For Ihesus Sirac saith þat wepyng in musik is a noyous ping. þis is to say ¶ As moche anayleþ to speke tofore folk/ to whiche his speche annoyeth? as it is to synge byfore hem whiche þat wepith [2236] ¹ ¶ And whan þis wise man saugh him wanted audience? al schamefast he sette him doun agayn [2237] ¶ For Salamon saith. ther as þou may haue noon audience? enforce þe not to speke [2238] ¶ I se wel quod þis wise man þat þe comune prouerbe is soþ ¶ That good counseil wantith whan it is most needs

[2239] ¶ ȝit hadde þis melibeus in his counseil many folk þat priuely in his eere han counseled him certain þinges and counseled him þe contrarie in general audience

[2240] ¶ whan melibeus hadde herd ȝet þe grettest

party of his counseil were accorded þat he schulde make
 werre. Anoon he consented to here counseilyng and fully
 affermed here sentence [2241] ¶ Thanne dame Prudence
 whan þat sche saugh þat hir housbonde schop him
 to wreke him of his enemyes and to gynne werre: Sche
 in ful humble wise whan sche saugh hire tyme sayde
 him þese wordes [2242] ¶ My lord quod sche I þow
 biseche as hertily as I dar and kan ne haste þow nought to
 faste and for alle guerdouns as þeue me audience
 [2243] ¶ For Peres Alfons saith ¶ who þat doþ to
 þe ouþer good or harm: haste þe nought to quytten him. For
 in þis wise þy freend wil abyde: and þin enemy schal
 þe lenger lyue in drede [2244] ¶ The prouerbe saith ¶ he
 hastith wel þat wisly can abyde and in wikked haste
 is no profyt

[2245] ¶ This melibeus answerde vn to his wyf prudens
 ¶ I purpose not quod he to werke by þy counseil for
 many causes and resouns ¶ For certes euery wight wolde
 holde me þanne a fool [2246] ¶ þis is to sayn ¶ If I
 for þy counseil wolde chaunge þinges þat
 affermed ben by so many wise: [2247] I say
 þat alle wommen be wikked and noon good
 of hem alle ¶ For of a þousand men saith Salomon
 I fond oon good man: But certes of alle wommen good
 womman fond I neuer noon [2248] ¶ And also certes if I
 gouernede me by þy counseil it schulde seme that I hadde



knowe and þis ne may not be [2252] [.

.

. [2253]

.

.

. *no gap in the MS.*]

[2254] whan dame Prudence ful debonerly and
with gret pacience hadde herd al þat hir housbonde
liked for to seye ¶ Than axed sche of him licence ¹for to
speke and sayde in þis wise [2255] ¶ My lord quod sche
as to þoure firste resoun certes it may lightly be
answered. For I say it is no folý to chaunge
counsel whan þe þing/ is chaungid. For elles whan
þe þing¹ semeþ oþerwise þan it was biforn
[2256] And moreouer I say þough þat¹ 3e han
sworn and I-hight to parforme þoure emprise And
napeles 3e wayue to parforme þilke same emprise
by iuste cause men schulde not say þefore þat/ 3e were
a lyere ne forsworn [2257] For þe book/ seiþ þat¹ þe
wise man makeþ no lesyng¹ whan he torneth his corrage to
þe better [2258] ¶ And al be it so þat þoure emprise be
establid and ordeyned by gret multitude of poeple¹ 3it
thar 3e not accomplise þilke same ordinaunce but 3ou like /
[2259] For þe trouþe of þing¹ and þe profyt¹ ben
rather founde in fewe folk¹ þat¹ ben wise and ful of
resoun þan by gret multitude of folk¹ þat¹ euery man
crieth and clatereþ what¹ þat him likeþ soþely
such multitude is not honest¹ [2260] ¶ An to þe secounde
resoun wher as 3e sayn þat alle wommen ben wikke¹
Saue þoure grace. Certis 3e despise alle wommen in þis
wise and þat alle despysith seiþ þe book /
[2261] And senec saith who-so wil haue Sapi-
ence schal no man despraye but he schal gladly teche þe
science þat¹ he can wiþoute presumpcioun of pryde
[2262] and suche þinges as he nought¹ can he
schal not ben aschamed to lerne hem and enquere of lasse

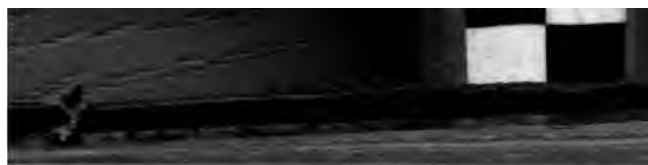
folk^t þan himself [2263] ¶ And sire þer haþ
 be ful many a good womman [.
 [2264]] if alle
 wommen hadde ben wikke [2265] after þat for
 þe grete bounte þat is in wommen! Oure lord ihu crist/
 whan he was risen fro deþ to lyue apperede rap^r to a
 womman þan to his apostles. [2266] ¶ And þough
 þat^t Salamon say he fond neuer good womman
 It^t folwith nouȝt^t þerfore þat^t alle wommen ben
 wikke. [2267] For þough þat he fonde noone goode
 wommen certes many a noþer man haþ founden
 many a womman ful goode and trewe [2268] ¶ Or elles
 paraenture þentent of^t Salamon was þis as in
 souereyn bounte. he fond no womman [2269] þis is to
 say þat^t þer is no wight^t þat haþ souerein bounte
 saue god aloone as he himself recorderþ in his euaun-
 gelie. [2270] For þer nys no creature so good þat^t him
 wantith som-what of^t þe perfeccioun of god þat is his
 makere [2271] ¶ Ȝoure þridde resoun is þis. ȝe seyn. þat^t if
 ȝe gouerned ȝow by counsel of me it schulde seme þat ȝe
 hadde yeue me the maystry and þe lordschipe ouer ȝoure
 persone. [2272] sire saue ȝoure grace it^t is not so. For
 if^t so were þat no man schulde be counseiled but by
 hem þat hadde maystrye and lordschipe of his persone:
 men wolde nought^t be counseiled so ofte [2273] ¶ For sopy



suche wommen seiþ salomon þat it were better to a man to dwelle in desert þan with a womman þat is riotous [2278] and sire by þoure leue þat am not I [2279] ¶ For ȝe han ful ofte assayed my grete scilence and my grete pacience and eek how wel þat I can hyde and hele þinges þat ben secrely to hyde [2280] ¶ And soþly as to þoure fyfte resoun wher as ȝe sayn þat in wikkede counseil wommen venquisscheth men. god wot pilke resoun stont here in no stede / [2281] For vnderstondith now ȝe aȝein counseil to do wickidnes [2282] and if ȝe wil wirke wickidnes and þoure wyf restreyne pilke wicked purpos and ouercome þou by resoun and by good counseil! [2283] Certes þoure wyf oweth ȝaper be preised than y-blamed / [2284] ¶ Thus schulde ȝe vnderstonde þe philosopher þat seiþ in wicked counseil wommen venquyschen her housbondes [2285] ¶ And þer as ȝe blame alle wymmen and here resouns! I schal schewe by many resouns and ensamples þat many a womman hath ben ful good and ȝit been and here counseiles ful holsome and profitable [2286] ¶ Eke some men han sayd þat þe counseilyng of wommen is ouþer to dere or to litel of pris [2287] But al be it so þat ful many a womman is badde and hir counseil vile and not worþ! ȝet han men founde many a ful good womman and ful discret and wys in counseilyng [2288] ¶ lo Iacob by counseil of his moder Rebecca wan þe blessyng of his fader ysaak and þe lordschipe of alle his breþeren [2289] ¶ Iudith by hire goode counseil delyuered þe Citee of Bethulie in which sche dwellid out of þe hous of Olophernus þat had it bysegged and wolde it al destroye [2290] ¶ Abigayl deliuered Nabal hir housbond fro Dauid þe king þat wolde haue I-slayn him and appesed þe Ire of þe kyng by hir witte and by hir good counseilynge [2291] ¶ Hester by good counseil enhaunsed gretly þe poeple of god In þe regne of assuerus þe kyng [2292] and þe same bounte in good counseilyng of many

a good womman may men rede and telle [2293] And more
ouere whan oure lord had creat adam oure forme fader:
he sayde in þis wise [2294] ¶ Hit is not goode to be a
man aloone. make we to him an help semblable to him
self [2295] ¶ here may ȝe se þat if þat a womman
were not 'good and hir counseil good and profytable:
[2296] oure lord god of heuen wolde neither haue wrouȝt
hem ne called hem help of man but raper confusioun to
man [2297] ¶ And þer sayde oones a clerk' in tuo *versus*
¶ what is better than gold. Iasper. And what is better þan
Iasper: wisdom. [2298] and what is better than
wisdom: womman. and what is better than good
womman: No þing [2299] ¶ And sire by many oþer
resouns may ȝe se þat many wommen ben goode
and [. . . *no gap in MS.*] profitable [2300] and þerfore
if ȝe wil truste to my counseil: I schal restore ȝou
ȝoure douȝter hool and sound [2301] ¶ and eek' I wil doon
ȝou so moche þat ȝe schul haue honour in þis cause

[2302] ¶ whan Melibe had herd þese wordes of his
wif prudens: he seide þus. [2303] ¶ I se wel þat þe
word of Salomon is soþ ¶ he seith þat þe wordes þat
ben spoken discretly by ordinaunce been hony combes.
For þay ȝeuen swetnes to þe soule. and holmes
to þe body [2304] ¶ And wyf bycause of þy swete
wordes and eek' for I haue assayed and proued þi grete
sapiens & þi grete troupe: I wil gouerne me by þy



god and pray him to dresse þy wayes. and loke þat alle þi counseiles be in him for euermore [2309] ¶ Saint Iame eek saith ¶ If eny of ȝow haue neede of sapiens axe it of god. [2310] and aftirward þanne schul ȝe take counseil in ȝoure self. and examine wel ȝoure þouȝtes of suche þinges as ȝou þinkþ þat is best for ȝoure profyt [2311] and þanne schul ȝe dryue fro ȝoure hertes þo þat ben contrarie to good counseil. [2312] þat is to say. Ire. coueytise. and hastynes

[2313] ¶ First he þat axeþ counseil of himself. certes he moste be wipoute Ire. for many cause [2314] ¶ The first is þis ¶ He þat hæþ gret Ire and wrappe in himself. he weneth alwey he may do þing þat he may not doo [2315] ¶ And secoundly he þat is Irous and wroþ. he may not wel deme [2316] ¶ and he þat may not wel deme: may nought wel counseile [2317] ¶ The þridde is þis. þat he þa is Irous and wroth as saip Senec may not speke but blameful þinges [2318] and with his vicious wordes he stireþ oþer folk to anger and to Ire [2319] ¶ And eek sire ȝe moste dryue coueitise out of ȝoure herte / [2320] ¶ For þapostil saith þat coueytise is roote of alle harmes. [2321] And trusteth wel þat a coueitous man ne can not deme ne þinke¹ but oonly to fulfille þe ende of his coueitise [2322] ¶ And certes þat may neuer ben accomplished ¶ For euer þe more abundaunce þat he hath of riches. þe more he desireth [2323] And sire ȝe moste also dryue out of ȝour herte hastynes. [2324] For certes ȝe may nought deme for þe beste a sodein þouȝt þat falleþ in ȝoure herte ¶ But ȝe moste auyse ȝou on it ful ofte [2325] ¶ For as ȝe herde here biforn þe comune prouerbe is þis: þat he þat soone demeth soone repentith:

[2326] ¶ Sire ȝe ben not alway in lik disposicioun [2327] For certis som þing þat som tyme semeþ to ȝow þat it is good for to doo: anoþer tyme it semeþ to ȝou þe contrarie

[2328] whan 3e han taken counseil in 3oure seluen. and han demed by good deliberacioun such þing as 3ow semeþ best [2329] ¶ þanne rede I 3ou þat 3e kepe it secre. [2330] Bywreie nought 3oure counseil to no persone but it so be þat 3e wene sicurly that þurgh 3oure bywreyinge 3oure condicioun schal be to 3ow þe more profytable [2331] ¶ For Ihe Syrac saiþ ¶ Neiþer to þi foo ne to þi freend discouere not þy secre ne þy foly [2332] ¶ For þey wil 3iue 3ou audience and loking and supportacioun in þi presence and scorn in thin absence [2333] ¶ anoper clerk saiþ þat skarsly schalt þou fynde eny persone þat may kepe counseil secreely [2334] ¶ The book saith ¶ whil þou kepist þi counsail in þin herte þou kepest it in þi prisoun [2335] ¶ and whan þou bywreiest þi counseil to any wight he holdeþ þe in his snare [2336] ¶ And þefore 3ow is better hyde 3oure counseil in 3oure herte þan prayen him to whom 3e haue bywryed 3oure counseil þat he wol kepe it clos and stille [2337] ¶ For Seneca seith ¶ If so be þat þou ne maist not þin owne counsel hyde how darst þou preuen any oper wight þi counseil secreely to kepe [2338] ¶ But napeles if þou wene securly þat þy bywreying of þy counsel to a persone wol make þy condicioun stonde in þe better plite þanne schalt þou telle him þy counsel in þis wise [2339] ¶ First þou shalt make no semblaunt wher þe were leuer werre or



sidere which of hem beþ most faithful and most wise and eldest and most approuyd in counsaylinge [2346] ¶ And of hem schalt þou axe þy counsail as þe caas requireth

[2347] ¶ I say þat first 3e schul clepe to 3our counseil 3oure frendes that ben trewe [2348] ¶ For Salomon saith For right as þe hert of a man delitith in sauour þat is soote: Right so. þe counseil of trewe frendes 3eueþ swetnes to þe soule [2349] ¶ he saith also ther may no þing be likened to þe trewe freend [2350] ¶ For certes gold ne siluer beþ nought so moche worþ as þe goode wil of a trewe freend. [2351] ¶ And eek he sayde þat a trewe frend is a strong defens who þat it fyndeþ certes he fyndeþ a gret tresour [2352] ¶ þanne schul 3e eek considere if þat 3oure trewe frendes ben discrete and wyse For þe book saith. axe þi counseil alwey of hem þat ben wyse. [2353] and by þis same resoun shul 3e clepe to 3oure counseil of 3oure frendes þat ben of age suche as haue I-seye sightes and ben expert in many þinges and ben approuyd in counseylinges [2354] ¶ For þe book saith þat in olde men is þe sapience and in longe tyme þe prudence [2355] ¶ And tullius saith þat grete þinges ben not ay accompliced by strengþe ne by delyuernes of body: but by good counseil by auctorite of persones and by science. the whiche þre þinges ne been not feble by age: but certis þay enforsen and encresen day by day [2356] and thanne schul 3e kepe þis for a general reule ¶ First schul 3e clepe to 3oure counseil a fewe of 3oure frendes þat ben especial [2357] For Salomon saith ¶ Many frendes haue þou but among a þousand chese þe oon to be þy counsellour. [2358] For al be it so þat þou first ne telle þy counseil but to a fewe: þou mayst afterward telle it to mo folk if it be neede [2359] But loke alwey þat þy counsellours haue þilke þre condiciouns þat I haue sayd

bifore þat is to say þat þay ben trewe and olde and of wys experiens [2360] ¶ And werke nouȝt alwey in euery neede by oon counseilour alloone ¶ For som tyme byhouep it be counseiled by many [2361] ¶ For Salomon saith ¶ Saluacioun of þinges is wher as þere beþ many counseilours.

[2362] Now seiþ þat I haue told ȝow of which folk ȝe schul be counseled ¶ Now wil I telle ȝow which counsel ȝe ouȝt eschiewe. [2363] First ȝe schal espie þe counsel of fooles ¶ For Salomon seiþ take no counsel of a fool For he ne can not counseile but after his ouȝne lust and his affeccoun [2364] ¶ The book seiþ þat þe proprete of a fool is þis he troweþ lightly harm of euery wight & lightly troweþ alle bounte in himself [2365] ¶ Thow schalt eschiewe eek þe counsel of alle flaterers suche as enforcen hem rapere to prayse ȝoure persone by flaterie þan for to telle ȝow þe soþfastnesse of þinges

[2366] ¶ wherfore Tullius saith Amonges alle pestilences þat ben in frendschipe þat is þe grettest flaterie. ¶ And þerfore is it more neede þat þou eschiewe and drede flaterers more þan eny oþer peple [2367] ¶ The book seiþ. þou schalt rapere drede and flee fro þe swete wordes of flaterers. þen fro þe egre wordes of þy frend þat seiþ þe þi soþes [2368] ¶ Salamon seiþ þat þe wordes of a flaterer is a snare



grace of his olde enemyes [2374] ¶ And ysope saith. Ne truste not to hem wiþ which þou hast had som tyme werre or enmyte. ne telle not hem þy conseil [2375] And Seneca telleþ þe cause why it may not be saith he þat wher as a greet fuyr haþ longe tyme endured: þat þere ne leueþ som vapour of hete [2376] ¶ And þerfore saith Salomon ¶ In þin olde enemy truste þou neuere [2377] ¶ For sicurly þough þin enemy be reconsiled and make þe cheer of humilite and lowteþ to þe his heed: ne trist him neuer [2378] For certes he makip þilke feyned humilite more for his profyt þan for eny loue of þi persone by cause he demyth to haue victorie ouer þi persone ¶ By such feyned countynauce the whiche victorie he might nouȝt haue by stryf and werre [2379] ¶ And Petir Alfons saip ¶ Make no felaschipe with þine olde enemyes. for if þou do hem bounte: þey wil peruerten it in to wikkednes [2380] & eek þou most eschiewe þe counseilynge of hem þat ben þy seruaunt; and beren þe gret reuerence. For þur auenture þai say it more for drede þan for loue [2381] And þerfore saith a philosopre in þis wise ¶ Ther is no wight parfytly trewe to him þat he to sore dredeth [2382] ¶ And Tullius saith ¶ þer is no wight so gret of eny emperour þat onge may endure but if he haue more loue of þe peple than drede [2383] ¶ Thow also eschiewe þe conseil of folk þat ben dronkelewe For þay ne can no counsel hyde [2384] ¶ For Salomon saith ¶ Ther regnep no priuete þer as is dronkenesse [2385] ¶ ȝe schul also haue in suspect þe conseil of such folk as counseileþ ȝou oon þing priuely and counseile ȝow þe contrarie openly [2386] ¶ For Cassiodorie saith it is a maner sleighte to hindre whan he schewip to doon oon þing openly and werkith priuely þe contrarie. [2387] ¶ þou schalt also eschiewe þe conseil of wikked folkes ¶ For þe book saith. ¶ The counselyng of wikked folk is alway ful

of fraude [2388] ¶ and David saith ¶ Blisful is þat man
þat hap not folwed þe counseilyng of wikked men or
schrewes [2389] ¶ Thow schalt also eschiewe þe counseilynge
of ȝonge folkes for here counseil is nought/ rype

[2390] ¶ Now sire syn I haue schewed ȝou of what folk
ȝe schul take ȝoure counsail and of whiche folk ȝe schullen
folwe þe counseil [2391] ¶ Now schal I teche ȝow how ȝe
schul examyne ȝoure counseil after þe doctrine of tullius
[2392] ¶ In the examynyng of ȝoure conseiloures
ȝe schul considre many þinges [2393] ¶ Al-thir first ȝe
schul considre þat in þilke þing that þou proposist
and vp what þing þou wilt haue counseil that verray
trouthe be sayd and considerid. þis is to sayn. telle
trewely þy tale [2394] ¶ For he þat saith fals may not
wel be counseled in þat cas of which he lyeth [2395]
¶ And after þis þou schalt considere the þinges þat
accorden to þat purpos. for to do by þy counseil
if resoun accorde þer to [2396] ¶ and eek if þy
might may accorde þer to. and if þe more part and þe
better part of þy conseilours accorde þer-to or noon
[2397] ¶ Thanne schalt þou considere what þing schal
folwe of þat counsailyng. as hate. pees. werre.
grace. profyt/. or damage and many oþer þinges
[2398] ¶ And in alle þese þinges þou schalt chese
þe beste and weyue alle oþer þinges [2399] þanne
schalt þou considre of what roote engendred is þy matier



schulde take vpon him so heuy a charge þat he mighte not
bere it [2405] ¶ For þe prouerbe seiþ ¶ He þat moche
embrasith destroyeþ litel [2406] ¶ And Catoun seiþ
Assay to do such þing^s as þou hast power to doon.
lest þat þy charge oppresse þe so sore. þat þe
bihoue to wayue þing þat þou hast bygonne
[2407] ¶ And if so be þat þou be in doubte¹ wher þou
maist parforme a þing^s or noon chese rather to suffre
þan bygynne [2408] ¶ And petre alfons saith If
þou hast might to doon a þing^s of which þou most
repente it is better nay þan ȝee / [2409] þis is
to sayn þat þe is better holde þy tongue stille þan
to speke [2410] ¶ Than may ȝe vnderstonde by
strenger resouns. þat if þou hast power to parforme a
werk^s of which þou schalt repente^s þanne is it better
þat þou suffre þan bigynne. [2411] wel seyn þay þat
defenden euery wight to assaie þing^s of which he is
in doute wheþir he may parforme it or noon [2412]
¶ And after whan ȝe han examyned ȝoure counseil as I
haue sayd biforn and knowen wel ȝe may par-
forme ȝoure emprise^s conferme it þanne sadly til it be at
an ende

[2413] ¶ Now is it tyme and resoun þat I schewe ȝow
whanne and wherfore þat ȝe may chaunge ȝoure coun-
seil wipouten reproef / [2414] ¶ Sothly a man
may chaunge his purpos and his counseil if þe cause
cesseþ or whan a newe cause bytydeþ [2415] ¶ For þe
lawe seiþ ¶ vpon þinges þat newly bitydeþ bihoueþ
newe counseil. [2416] and Seneca seiþ ¶ If þy counseil
be comen to þe eeres of þin enemy^s chaunge þy counsail
[2417] ¶ Thow maist/ also chaunge þy counseil if so be
þat þou fynde þat by errour or by oþer
processe harm or damage may bytyde [2418] ¶ Also
þou chaunge þy counseil if þay be dishonest^s or elles
comuneth of dishoneste. [2419] For þe lawes sayn ¶ That
alle þe hestes þat ben dishoneste ben of no valieu

[2420] and eek if it so be þat it be impossible. or may not goodly be performed or kept

[2421] and take þis for a general reule ¶ That every counseil þat is affermed or strengþed so strongly þat it may not be chaunged for no condicioun þat may bitide ¶ I say þat pilke counseil is wikked

[2422] ¶ þis melibeus whan he had herd þe doctrine of his wyf dame prudens answerde in þis wise [2423] ¶ Dame quod he ȝit as in to þis tyme ȝe han wel and couenably taught me as in general how I schal gouerne me in chesyng and in wiþholdyng of my counseiloures [2424] ¶ But now wold I fayn ȝe wolde condescende as in especial [2425] & telleþ me what semeþ or how likeþ ȝow by oure counseiloures þat we han chosen in oure present neede

[2426] ¶ My lord quod sche I byseke ȝow in al humblesce þat ȝe wil not wilfully repplye aȝeinst my resonans ne distempre ȝoure herte þough I say or speke þing þat ȝow displeisith [2427] ¶ For god woot þat as in myn entent I speke it for ȝoure beste. for ȝoure honour. and for ȝour ¹profyt eek [2428] ¶ And soþly I hope þat ȝour benignite wol take it in to pacience [2429] ¶ For trusteþ me wel quod sche þat ȝoure counseil as in þis caas ne schulde not as for to speke properly be called a counseilyng! but / a mocioun or a moeuyng of fuly [2430] in which counseil ȝe han erred in many a sondry wise



reconsiled and folk' pat' doon 3ow reuerence wipoute
loue [2436] ¶ Eke also 3e han erred: For 3e han
brou3t' with 3ow to 3oure counseil. Ire. Coueitise and
Hastynes. [2437] þe whiche þre þinges ben contra-
rious to euery counsail honest' and profitable [2438] ¶ The
whiche þre þinges 3e haue nought' annentissched or destroyed
neyþer in 3oure self ne in 3oure conseiloures as 3e oughte
[2439] ¶ Also 3e haue erred. For 3e haue schewed to 3oure
conseilours 3oure talent and 3oure affeccionz to make
werre and for to doon vengeance anon [2440] ¶ þay han
espyed by 3oure wordes to what þinge 3e ben enclined
[2441] and þefore haue þay counseiled 3ow rather to
3oure talent þan to 3oure profyt [2442] ¶ 3e haue erred
also: For it semep þat' 3ow sufficeþ to haue been coun-
seiled by þese conseilours only and wip litel ays
[2443] wher-as in so gret' and so heigh a neede it hadde
be necessarious mo conseilours and more deliberacioun to
parforme 3oure emprise [2444] 3e haue erred also ¶ For
[. [2445] . .
. *no gap*] 3e haue maked no diuisioun bytwixe
3oure counsailours þis is to seyn bitwix 3oure
frendes and 3oure feyned conseilours. [2446] ne 3e ne haue
nought I-knowe þe wille of 3oure frendes olde and wise.
[2447] But 3e haue cast alle here wordes in an hoche poche /
and enclined 3oure herte to þe more part and to þe
gretter nombre and þere be 3e condescendid [2448]
¶ And syn 3e wot wel men schal alway fynde a
gretter nombre of fooles þan of wyse men: [2449] and
þefore þe counsailes þat ben at congregaciouns and mul-
titudes of folk'. þer as men taken more reward to þe
'nombre þan to þe sapience of persones. [2450] 3e se wel
þat' in suche counseilynges fooles haue maystrie [2451]
¶ Melibeus answerde agayn and sayde ¶ I graunte wel þat'
I haue erred: [2452] But' þere as þou hast' told me
toforen þat' he is nought' to blame þat' chaungeþ his coun-

seilours in certeyn caas and for certeyn iuste causes [2453] ¶ I am al redy to chaunge my counseilours right as þou wilt deuyse [2454] ¶ The prouerbe saith þat for to do synne is mannysch. But/ certes for to perseuere longe in synne is werk of þe deuy!

[2455] ¶ To þis sentence anon answerde dame prudens and saide [2456] ¶ Examineth *quod* sche þoure counsail and let vs se which of hem haþ spoke most resonably and taught þou best counsail [2457] And for as moche as þe examinacioun is necessarie: let vs byginne at þe Surgiens and at þe phisiciens þat first spoken in þis matiere [2458] ¶ I say þou þat þe surgiens and þe physiciens han sayd þow in þoure counseil discretly as hem ought [2459] and in here speche sayden ful wisely þat to þe office of hem appendith to doon to euery wight honour and profyt. and no wight to annoye [2460] and after here craft to do gret diligence vn to þe cure of hem which þat þay haue in here gouernaunce [2461] And sire right as þay answerde wisely and discretly: [2462] Right so rede I þat þay be heihly and souerainly guerdoned for here noble speche / [2463] and eek for þey schullen do þe more ententyf besynes in þe curyng of þoure douȝter dere [2464] ¶ For al be it so þat þai be þoure frendes: þerfore schul þe nought suffre þat þay schul serue þow for nouȝt / [2465] But þe oughte þe rapere to guerdoune hem and schewe hem þoure largesse [2466] ¶ & as touchynge þe proposiciouns whiche þe phisiciens han schewed þou in þis caas þis is to sayn [2467] þat in maladyes oon contrarie is warissed by anoper contrarie. [2468] I wolde fayn knowe þilke text and how þay vnderstonde it and what is þoure entente [2469] ¶ Certes *quod* Melibeus vnderstonden it is in þis wise [2470] þat right as þay han do me a contrarie: right so schold I do hem anoper [2471] ¶ For right as þai han venged hem on me and doon me wrong: Right so schal I venge me vp on hem



and doon hem wrong' [2472] and þanne haue I cured oon contrarie by anoþer

[2473] ¶ lo lo quod Dame prudence how lightly is every man enclined to his oughne plesaunce and to his oughne desir [2474] ¶ Certes quod sche þe wordes of þe phisiciens¹ ne schulde nouȝt haue ben vnderstonde sone in þat wise [2475] ¶ For certes wikkednesse is no contrarie to wickednesse. ne vengauns to vengeance. ne wrong' to wrong': but þai ben semblable [2476] And þerfore on vengeance is nouȝt warissshed by anoþer vengeance. ne oon wrong' by anoþer wrong'. [2477] but euerych of hem encreseth and engreggith oþer [2478] ¶ But certes þe wordes of þe phisiciens schul ben vnderstonde in þis wise. [2479] For good and wikkednesse ben tuo contraries. and pees and werre. vengeance & sufferance. Discord and accord and many oþer þinges [2480] ¶ but certes wikkednes schal be warrissshed by goodnesse. Discord by accord. werre by pees and so forth of oþer þinges [2481] ¶ And her-to accordith seint paul þe apostil in many places [2482] ¶ He saith. ne ȝeldith nouȝt harm for harm. ne wikked speche for wikked speche [2483] ¶ But do wel to him þat doþ þe harm and blesse him that doþ þe harm [2484] and in many oþer places he amonesteth pees and accord [2485] ¶ But now wil I speke to ȝow of þe counseil which was ȝiue to ȝow by þe men of lawe & þe wise folkes [2486] þat sayde alle by oon accord as ȝe haue herd byfore [2487] That ouer alle þinges ȝe schal do ȝoure diligence to kepe ȝoure persone and to warmstore ȝoure hous. [2488] and seyden also þat in þis ȝow aughte for to wirche ful auysily and with gret' deliberacioun. [2489] ¶ And sire as to þe firste poynt þat touched to þe kepinge of ȝoure persone: [2490] ȝe schul vnderstonde. þat he þat haþ werre: schal euermore deuoutly and mekely prayen biforn alle þinges [2491] þat Ihū crist wil of his mercy

haue him in his proteccioun and ben his souerayn helpyng
 at his neede / [2492] ¶ For certes in þis world þer nys no
 wight þat may be counseiled or kept sufficaun[t]ly wiþ-
 oute þe kepinge of oure lord ihū crist [2493] ¶ To þis
 sentence accordeþ þe prophete Dauid þat seith [2494]
 ¶ If god ne kepe not þe citee. in ydel wakith he þat kepith
 hit [2495] ¶ Now sire þanne schul 3e committe þe kepinge of
 3oure persone to 3oure trewe frendes þat ben approued
 and y-knowe [2496] and of hem schul 3e axen help 3oure
 persone to kepe ¶ For Catoun saith ¶ If þou haue
 neede of help: axe it of þy freendes. [2497] For þer is
 noon so good a phisicien at neede: as is a trewe frend.
 [2498] ¶ And after þis: þan schal 3e kepe 3ou fro alle
 straunge folkes and fro lyeres and haue alway in suspect/
 here compaignye [2499] ¶ For Pieres alfons saith ¶ Ne
 take no compaignie by the way of a straunge man. but/
 so be þat þou knowe him of a lenger tyme [2500]
 And if so be he falle in to þy compaignye par
 aventure wiþouten þin assent: [2501] enquere þanne
 as subtilly as þou maist of his conuersacioun and of his lyf
 bifore and feyne þy way and say þat þou wilt go þider
 as þou wolt nought goon [2502] ¶ And if he bere a spere
 ¶ hold þe on the right syde ¶ And if he bere a sword:
 holde þe on þe lyft syde. [2503] and so after þis.
 þanne schul 3e kepe 3ou wisely from al such
 peple as I haue sayd bifore / and hem and here counsel



schal 3e euermore counterwayte enbusshementz and alle
espiaille [2510] ¶ For Senec saith þat þe wise man
þat dredip harmes / eschiewith harmes. [2511] ne he ne
fallip in to noone perils þat perils eschiewep [2512] ¶ And al
be it so þat þe seme þat þou art in sikur place! 3it
schaltow alway do þy diligence in kepyng of þy persone
[2513] ¶ This is to say ¶ Be not necgligent to kepe þy
persone nought oonly for þy gretteste enemyes! but fro þy
lest enemyes [2514] ¶ Senec saith ¶ A man þat is
wel auysed! he dredip his lest enemy [2515] ¶ Ovide
seip þat þe litel wesil wol sle þe grete bole and þe
wilde hert. [2516] ¶ And þe book saip. a litel þorn
wol prikke a þing ful sore. ¶ And an hound wol
holde þe wilde boore [2517] ¶ But napeles I say not þat
3e schul be so moche a coward þat 3e doute where is no
neede or drede [2518] ¶ þe book saip þat som folk haue
gret lust to disceyue ¶ but 3it þay dreden hem to be de-
ceyued [2519] ¶ 3et schal 3e drede to ben empoisoned
¶ And kepe þe fro þe companye of scorners [2520]
For þe book saith with scorners make no compaignye
but flee hem and here wordes as venym

[2521] ¶ Now as to þe secounde poynt where as 3oure
wise counseillours warnede 3ow to warmstore 3oure hous
with gret diligence! [2522] I wolde fayn wite ¹how þat
3e vnderstoode pilke wordes what is 3oure sentence

[2523] ¶ Melibeus answerde and saide ¶ Certes I vnder-
stonde it in þis wise þat I schal warmstore myn hous
with toures suche as han castiles and oper maner
edifices and armure and artilries [2524] by suche
þinges I may my persone & myn hous so kepen and
edifien and defenden þat myn enemyes schul be in drede myn
hous to approche

[2525] ¶ To þis sentence answerde dame prudence
¶ warmstorynge quod sche of heihe toures and grete
edifices [. [2526] . . .
. no gap] wiþ grete

cessaȝe and gret trauaile and whan þat þay len
 accomplisid þi þeþ þay nouȝt worth a straw but if þey be
 defended by trewe frendes þat beþ olde and wise [2527]
 ¶ And vnderstondeþ þat þe grettest strength or
 garnisoun that þe riche man may haue as wel to kepe his
 persone as his goodes is [2528] þat he be biloued
 wiþ his subgites and wiþ his neighebouris [2529] ¶ For
 þus saith tullius ¶ That þer is a maner garnisoun þat
 no man may venquisshe ne discomfite and þat is [2530]
 a lord to be biloued with his citezeins and of his peple

[2531] ¶ Now þanne as to þoure þridde poynt where as
 þoure olde and wyse counsellours sayde. ȝe
 oughte nought sodeinly ne hastily procede in þis neede.
 [2532] but þat ȝe oughte purueyen ȝow and appaiaile ȝow
 in þis caas wiþ gret diligence and gret deliberacioun.
 [2533] trewely I trowe þat þay sayden soþ and
 right wisely [2534] ¶ For Tullius saith ¶ In euery
 uede er þou bigynne it/ appaiaile þe wiþ gret
 diligence [2535] ¶ Thanne say I þat in vengeance
 takinge in werre in bataile and in warstoringe of þin hous
 [2536] er þou bygynne I rede þat þou appaiaile þe
 þerto and do it with gret deliberacioun. [2537] For
 tullius saith ¶ That long apparaylyng byfore þe bataille
 makeþ schort victorie [2538] ¶ And Cassidorus saith ¶ The
 garnisoun is strengre whan it is long tyme auysed

[2539] ¶ But now let vs speke of þe counsaill þat was



þe purpose special ¶ 3e schul first procede after þe doctrine of
Tullius [2546] ¶ Certes þe trouþe of þis or
þis counseil nedep nought diligently enquire [2547] For it
is wel wist whiche it ben þat doon to 3ow þis
trespas and vilonye [2548] & how many trespasours
and in what maner þay han to 3ow doon al þis
wronge and al þis vilonye [2549] ¶ And after þat
schul 3e examyne þe secounde condicioun which
Tullius addip þer to in þis matier [2550]
¶ Tullius put a þing which þat he clepeth couetyng. þis
is to sayn [2551] who ben þay and whiche ben þay and how
many þat consentid to þis matiere and to þy counsail in þy
wilfulnesse to do hasty vengeaunces [2552] & let vs considere
also who ben þo and how many ben þo [.
. . . *no gap*] þat ben conseilours to 3oure aduersaries. [2553]
and certes as to þe first poynt it is wel knowen whiche
folk ben þay þat consentid to 3oure first wilful-
nes. [2554] For trewly alle þo þat counsailled 3ow
to make sodeyn werre beþ nouȝt 3oure frendes [2555]
¶ let vs considre whiche ben þo þat 3e holde
so gretly 3oure frendes as to 3oure persone [2556] ¶ For
al be it so þat 3e be mighty and riche: certes 3e
been alloone. [2557] for certes 3e haue no childe
but a douȝter. [2558] ne 3e haue no breþeren ne cosins
germayns ne noon oþer neigh kynrede / [2559] wherfore
þat 3oure enemyes for drede schulden stynte for to plede wip
3ou and stryue 3oure persone [2560] ¶ 3e knowe
also þat 3oure riches mooten in diuers parties
be departed. [2561] and whan euery wight hap
his part: þay wol take but litel reward to venge
þy deth [2562] ¶ But þyne enemyes ben þre and
haue many children breþeren. cosynes and oþer neigh
kynrede. [2563] and þough it so were 3e hadde
slayn of hem tuo or thre: 3et dwellen þere ynowe to wreke
here deth and sle þi persone [2564] ¶ And þough so
were þat 3oure kynrede were more sekir and stedefast þau



schalt vnderstonde þat þe wrong þat þou hast receyued
hap certeyn causes [2585] whiche þat clerkes calle
Orience and Offiience. and causa longinqua. and causa
propinqua. þis is to say. þe fer cause. and þe neigh
cause. [2586] for þe fer cause is almighty god þat is
cause of alle þinges. [2587] þe nere cause is þe
þre enemyes. [2588] þe cause accidental was hate.
[2589] þe causes materiales been þe fyue woundes of
þy doughter. [2590] the cause formal is þe maner of
here werkyng þat brought in laddres and clombe in at
þin wyndowes. [2591] þe cause final was for to sle þy
doughter hit letted nouȝt in as moche as was in hem [2592]
¶ But for to speke of þe fer cause as to what ende þay
schal come or what schal finally betyde of hem in þis
cause. can I not deme but by comittyng and by
supposyng. [2593] For we schul suppose þat þay schul
come to a wikked ende [2594] by cause þat þe book
of degrees saith ¶ Seelden or wiȝ gret peyne ben causes
I-brought to a good ende. whan þay ben euyl bygonne

[2595] Now sire if men wolde axe me why þat
ȝe suffrede men to do ȝow þis wrong and vilonye Certes I
can not wel answeere as for no sofastnes [2596] For
þe apostil saith. þat þe sciences and þe Iuggements of
oure lord god almyghty ben ful deepe [2597] ¶ Ther may
no man comprehende ne serchen hem sufficiantly [2598]
¶ Natheles by certeyn presumpciouns and coniectinges
I holde and bilieue [2599] þat god which þat is ful of
iustice and of rightwisesse hap suffred þis to betyde by
iuste cause resonable

[2600] ¶ Thy name Melibe is to say a man
þat drynkeþ hony. [2601] þou hast y-dronke so moche
hony. of sweete tamplet riches and delices and hon-
ours of þis world [2602] þat þou art dronke and
hast forȝete Ihū crist þy creatour. [2603] þou
hast not doon him such honour and reuerence as þe
oughte to doone. [2604] ne þou hast nouȝt wel taken keep to

þe wordes of Ovide þat saith [2605] ¶ vnder þe hony
 of þy goodes of þy body is hid þe venym þat sleep
 þi soule [2606] ¶ And Salomon saith ¶ If þou haue
 founde hony. ete of it þat sufficeþ. [2607] For if þou
 ete of it out of mesure: þou schalt spewe and be nedý
 and pouere. [2608] and perauenture crist haþ þe in
 despit. and hath torned away fro þe his face and his
 eeres of misericorde [2609] ¶ And also he haþ suffred
 þat þou hast ben punysshed in þe maner þat þou
 hast I-trespased [2610] ¶ Thou hast doon synne aȝeinst
 oure lord crist. [2611] for certes þi þre enemyes of man-
 kinde þat is to say þy flessch þe feend and þe
 world. [2612] þou hast y-suffred hem to entre in to þin
 herte wilfully by þe wyndow of þy body [2613] and
 hast nouȝt defended þiself sufficiently agayns here asceutis
 and here temptaciouns So þat þay haue woundid þi
 soule in fyue places [2614] This is to sayn þe dedly
 synnes þat ben entred in to þin herte by þy fyue
 wyndowes [2615] ¶ And in þe same maner oure lord crist
 hath wolde and suffred þat þy þre enemyes ben entred
 in to þin hous by þo wyndowes [2616] and haue
 I-woundid þi doughter in þe forsayde maner

[2617] ¶ Certes quod Melibeus I se wel þat ȝe en-
 force ȝow moche by wordes to ouercome me. in such
 manere þat I schal not venge me on myn enemyes [2618]
 schewynge me þe perils and þe yueles þat mighten
 falle of þis vengeaunce [2619] ¶ But who-so wolde considre
 in alle vegeaunces þe periles and þe yueles þat mighten folwe
 of vengeaunces takynge. [2620] a man wolde neuer take
 vengeaunce and þat were harm. [2621] For by venge-
 aunce takynge be ¹wikked men destroyed and disseuered fro
 þe goode men. [2622] and þay þat haue wille to wikked-
 nes restreignen here wikked purpos whan þay seen þe
 punysshynge and þe chastisynge of trespasours [2623]
 [.]
 [.]



[2624]

.

. *no gap in the MS.*

[2625] ¶ And ȝit say I more þat right so as a sengle
persone synnep in taking of vengeance! [2626]
Right so þe Iugge synnep if he doo no vengeance
on him þat it haþ deserued [2627] ¶ For Senec saith
þus ¶ he þat maister is he saith good to reprove schrewes
[2628] And as Cassoder saith ¶ A man dredeþ to doon
outrage whan he woot and knoweþ þat it displeseþ
to þe Iugges and þe soueraynes. [2629] and anoþer saith ¶ The
Iugge þat dredeþ to demen right makeþ schrewes //
[2630] And seint poul þappostoil saith in his epistil
whan he writeþ to þe romayns ¶ The Iugges bere
not þe spere wiþoute cause. [2631] but þay beren it
to punyashe þe schrewes and mys doers and for to defende
wiþ þe goode men. [2632] If ȝe wol take vengeance
on ȝoure enemyes ȝe schul retourne or haue recours
to þe Iugges þat haue iurediccioun vpon hem [2633]
and he schal pun[i]sche hem as þe law axeþ and requireþ

[2634] ¶ A quod melibeus þis vengeance likeþ me
no þing! [2635] I byþenke me now and take heed
how fortune haþ norissched me fro my childhode
and haþ holpe me to passen many a strayt passage [2636]
¶ Now wol I aske her þat sche schal wiþ goddes help
helpe me my schame for to venge

[2637] ¶ Certes quod prudence if ȝe wil wirche by my
counseil. ȝe schul not assaye fortune by no maner way [2638]
ne schul not lene ne bowe vnto hire after þe word of
Senec [2639] ¶ For þinges þat beþ folye and
þat beþ in hope of fortune schul neuer come to good
ende [2640] ¶ And as þe same Senek saiþ ¶ The more
cleer and þe more schynynge þat fortune is þe more
brutil and þe sonner brokeþ sche. [2641] so trusteþ nought
in hire For sche is nouȝt stedefast ne stable [2642] ¶ For
whan þou wenest or trowest to be most seur of hir

help. sche wil fayle þe and deceyue þe. [2643] And
 wher as he say þat fortune haþ nourished þow fro þoure
 childhede [2644] I say þat in so mochal þe schul
 þe lasse truste in hire and in hire witte [2645] ¶ For Senek
 saith ¶ whar man þat is nourished by fortune! sche makeþ
 him to grete a fool [2646] ¶ Now siþþe þe desire
 and axe vengeance and þe vengeance þat is doon [. . .
 [2647]
 so greþ] in hope of fortune is peril-
 ous and vncertejn [2648] þanne haueþ noon ¹oper
 remedye but for to haue recours vnto þe soueraigne
 Iugge þat vengith alle vilonies and wronges [2649]
 and he schal venge þow after þat himself witnesseth
 wher as he saith [2650] ¶ leueþ þe ve[n]geaunce to me
 and I schal gelde it

[2651] ¶ Melibeus answerd. If I ne venge me nouȝt of
 þe vilonye þat men haue doon vnto me. [2652] I schalsouere
 warne hem þat han doon to me þat vilonye and alle
 opere to doo me anoþer vilonye [2653] For it is writen
 ¶ Tak' no vengeance of an old vilonye þou suf-
 frest þin aduersarie do þe a newe vilonye. [2654]
 and also for my suffraunce men wolde do me so
 moche vilonye þat I mighte neither bere it ne sus-
 tayne it. [2655] and so schulde I be put over
 lowe [2656] For men say In moche sufferynge schal
 many þinges falle vnto whiche þou schal nouȝt



wipoute punysshynge [2662] þay somne not a man
oonly to doo newe wronges: but þay comaunde hit.
[2663] also þe wise man saith ¶ The Iugge þat correct-
eþ not þe synnere comaundith him and byddith him doon
anoþer synne [2664] ¶ And þe Iugges and souereignes mighten
in here lond so moche suffren of þe schrewes and mys-doeres
[2665] þat þay schulde by such suffraunce by proces of
tyme wexen of such power and might þat þay schulde
put out þe Iugges and þe souereignes from here places
[2666] & atte laste do hem lese here lordschipes

[2667] But lete vs now putte þat 3e han leue to
venge 3ow. [2668] I say 3e ben nouȝt of might ne
power as now to venge 3ou [2669] ¶ For if he wolde make
comparisoun as to þe might ¶ Of 3oure aduersaries 3e schulde
fynde in many þinges þat I haue I-schewed 3ow er þis
þat here condicioun is bettre þan 3oures [2670] And
þerfore say I þat it is good as now þat 3e suffre and
be pacient

[2671] ¶ Forþermore 3e knowe þat after 1 þe
comune sawe it is a woodnesse a man to stryue with a
strenger or a more mighty man þan him-seluen is
[2672] And for to stryue wip a man of euene strengþe
þat is to say with as strong a man as he is. it is peril.
[2673] and for to stryue with a weykere it is folye
[2674] and þerfore schulde a man fle stryuyng as
moche as he mighte [2675] ¶ For Salomon seith ¶ It is a
gret worschipe a man to kepe him fro noyse and
stryf [2676] ¶ And if it so bifalle or happe þat a man
of gretter might and strengthe þan þou art do þe
grenaunce [2677] stude and busye þe rapier to stille
þe same grenaunce þan for to venge þe [2678] ¶ For
Senec saith. he putteþ him in a gret peril þat
stryueth wip a gretter man þan he himseluen is [2679]
¶ And Catoun saith ¶ If a man of heihier estat or degre or
more mighty þan þou do þe anoþer grenaunce:
Suffre him. [2680] For he þat hap oones don þe a grenaunce

may anoþer tyme relieue þe and helpe þe. [2681] 3iþ sette I a caas 3e haue bothe might and licence to venge 3ow: [2682] I say þer ben ful many þinges þat schulde restreinge 3ow of vengeaunce takynge [2683] and make 3ow to encline to suffre and to haue pacience of þe wronges þat han ben doon to 3ow. [2684] First and forward 3e wol considre þe defautes þat been in 3oure owne persone. [2685] for whiche defautes god haþ suffred 3ow to haue þis tribulacioun as I haue sayd 3ow her byfore [2686] ¶ For þe poete saith // we oughten paciently to suffre þe tribulacioun þat cometh to vs whan þat we þenken and consideren þat we han deserued to haue hem [2687] ¶ And seint poul saith þat whan a man considereþ wel þe nombre of his defautes and of his synnes: [2688] þe peynes and þe tribulaciouns þat he suffereþ semen þe lasse vnto him [2689] ¶ and in as moche as him þenkiþ his synnes þe more heuy and greuou: [2690] in so moche his peyne is þe lighter and þe more esier vn-to him [2691] ¶ Also 3e oughten to encline and bowe 3oure herte to take þe pacience of oure lord ihū crist. as seiþ seint peter in his epistles [2692] ¶ Ihū crist he seiþ haþ suffred for vs and 3iuen ensample vnto euery man to folwe and sewe him. [2693] For he dede neuer synne ne neuer cam vileyns worde out of his moup [2694] whan men cursed him: he cursed hem not ¶ And whan men beete him: he manased hem not. [2695] ¶ Also þe grete pacience which þat seintes þat been in paradys¹ han had in tribulaciouns þat þay haue had and suffred withoute desert/ or gult [2696] oughte moche stire 3ow to pacience [2697] ¶ Forþer more 3e schul enforce 3ow to haue pacience [2698] consideringe þat þe tribulaciouns of þis world but litel while endure & soone passed ben and goon [2699] ¶ And þe ioye þat a man seeþ to haue by pacience in tribulaciouns is perdurable after þat þe



apostil seiþ in his epistil [2700] ¶ The ioye of god he
seiþ is perdurable þat is to say euer-more lastynge [2701]
¶ Also troweth and bilieueþ stedefastly þat he is not
wel norished and taught þat can nought haue pacience
or wil nouȝt receyue pacience [2702] ¶ For Salomon saith
þat þe doctrine and þe witte of a man is I-knowe by
pacience [2703] ¶ And in anoþer place he seiþ ¶ he þat
hath pacience: gouerneþ him by gret prudence [2704]
¶ And þe same salamon seiþ. þat þe wrapful and þe angry
man makeþ noyses. and þe pacient man attempereth
and stilleþ him. [2705] he seiþ also ¶ It is more
worth to be pacient þan for to be right strong. [2706] And
And he þat may haue his lordschipe of his oughne herte: is
more worþ and more to preise þan he þat by his force & by
his strengthe takeþ grete citees [2707] ¶ And þerfore saith
seint Iame in his epistil þat pacience is a gret vertu of
perfeccioun.

[2708] [. no gap]
[2709] but euery man may not haue þe perfeccioun þat ȝe
seekyn [2710] ne I am not of þe nombre of right par-
fytte men: [2711] For myn herte may neuer be in
pees vnto þe tyme it be venged [2712] ¶ And al be it/ so
that it was a gret peril to myne enemyes to don me a
vilonye in takinge vengeaunce vpon me: [2713] ȝit
tooken þay noon heede of þe peril but filden here
wikked desir and her corrage. [2714] and þerfore me
þenkith men oughten nought repreue me þough I putte me
in a litel peril for to venge me [2715] ¶ And þough I do
a gret excesse þat is to say þat I venge oon outrage
by anoþer

[2716] ¶ A quod dame prudence ȝe say ȝoure wille
and as ȝow likith. [2717] but in noon caas in þe world a
man ne schulde nouȝt doon outrage ne excesse for to venge
him. [2718] ¶ For Cassidore seiþ. as euil doþ
he þat auengith him by outrage as he þat doth þe

outrage / [2719] and þerfore 3e schul venge 3ow after
 þe ordre of right þat is to sayn by þe lave and nouȝt
 by excesse ne by outrage [2720] ¶ And also if 3e wil
 venge 3ow of þe outrage of 3oure aduersaries in oþer
 maner þan right comaundep: 3e synnen [2721] ¶ And
 þerfore saiþ Senec / that 'a man schal neuer venge
 schrewednes by schrewednes. [2722] ¶ And if 3e say
 þat axep a man to defende violence by vyolence.
 and fightyng' by fightyng [2723] ¶ Certes 3e say soþ
 whan þe defence is doon anon wipouten interualle or
 wipouten taryng or dilay [2724] for to defenden him
 and nought for to venge him [2725] ¶ And it bihouep
 a man putte such attemperance in his defence!
 [2726] þat men haue no cause ne matiere to reprisen
 him that defendith him of excesse and outrage [. . .
 no gap] [2727] ¶ Parde 3e knowe wel
 þat 3e make no defence as now for to defende 3ow
 but for to venge 3ow [2728] and so semeþ it / þat 3e
 haue no wille to do 3oure wille attemperelly [2729] &
 þerfore me þenkiþ þat pacience is good ¶ For Salamon
 saith þat he þat is not pacient schal haue gret
 harm .

[2730] ¶ Certes quod melibeus I graunte 3ou wel þat
 whan a man is inpacient and wroth. [.

 no gap] [2731] for þe lawe saith



SIX-TEXT 236

GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Harleian 7334. 513

is to sayn myn disease and my grief touchen me right
neigh. [2736] and perfore pough I be wroþ:
it is no meruayle. [2737] and sauynge þour
grace I can not see þat it mighte gretly harme me
pough I toke vengeaunce. [2738] For I am richer and
more mighty þan myne enemyes been / [2739] And wel
knowe þe þat by money and by hauynge of grette posses-
siouns ben alle þe þinges of þis world gouernede [2740]
¶ And Salamon saith þat alle þinges obeyen to
moneye / dispraisynge þe power of his aduersaries

[2741] [.
.
. no gap] ¶ Tho sche spak and sayde in
þis wyse [2742] ¶ Certes deere sire I graunte þow þat
þe ben riche and mighty [2743] and þat richesse
is good to hem þat wel haue geten it/ and þat
wel conne vse it [2744] For right as þe body of a
man may not be wipoute þe soule: no more may a man
lyue wipoute temperel goodes [2745] and by rich-
esse may a man gete him greet frendschipe / [2746] ¹¶ And
perfore saith Pamphilles. If a neet-hurdes douȝter he seiþ
be riche: sche may cheese of a þousand men which
she wol take to hir housbonde [2747] ¶ For
of a þousand men oon wil not forsake hir ne refuse
hire [2748] ¶ And þis pamphilles seiþ also ¶ If þou be
right happy þat is to sayn if þou be right riche: þanne
schalt þou fynde a gret nombre of felawes and frendes [2749]
¶ And if þy fortune chaunge þat þou wax pore: fare
wel frendschipe. [2750] For þou schalt ben
aloone wipouten eny compaignie but if it be þe
compaignie of pore folk // [2751] And ȝit saith þis
pamphilles more ouer ¶ That þey þat/ ben þral and
bonde of linage schullen ben maad worpy and noble by
richesse [2752] ¶ And right so as by richesse þer
come many goodes: Right so by pouert comen þer
many harmes. [2753] [.

. *no gap*] [2754] And þerfore clepeþ Cassidore pouert. [.] ruyne. [2755] þat is to sayn þe moder of ouerþrowyng' or fallynge doun [2756] ¶ & þerfore Pieres alphones oon of þe grettest aduersites of þis world is: [2757] whan a free man by kyn or burthe is constreigned by pouert to eten þe almes of his enemyes [2758] ¶ And þe same seiþ Innocent' in oon of his bookes ¶ þat sorweful & vnhappy is þe condicioun of a pouere begger. [2759] for if he axe nouȝt his mete: he deyeth for hungir: [2760] and if he axe: he deyeth for schame. And algates þe necessite constreigneþ hym to axe. [2761] And þerfore seiþ Salamon þat bettre it is to deye þan to haue such pouert [2762] And as þe same Salamon saith Bettir is to deye on bitter deth þan for to lyue in such a wyse [2763] ¶ By þese resouns þat I haue sayd vnto ȝow and by many anoper resoun þat I knowe and couþe say [2764] I graunte ȝow þat riches ben goode to hem þat gete hem wel. & to hem þat hem wel vsen [2765] ¶ And þerfore wol I schewe ȝow how ȝe schulde bere ȝow in getyng' of riches and in what maner ȝe schulde vse hem

[2766] ¶ First ȝe schulde gete hem wipoute gret' desir by good leysir sokyngly and nought ouer hastily [2767] ¶ For a man þat is to desiryng' for to gete riches



saith þat no man makeþ himselfe riche þat dop
harm to anoþer wight. [2774] þis is to say. þat
nature defendeþ and forbedith by right þat no man
make himselfe riche vnto þe harm of anoþer persone.
[2775] Tullius saith. þat no sorwe ne drede
of deth. ne thought þat may falle to a man [2776]
is so moche azeinst nature as a man to encrease his
oughne profyt to þe harm of anoþer man [2777] ¶ And
þough þe grete men and þe riche men gete richesse more
lightly þan þou! [2778] 3it schalt þou not be ydil ne
slowe to þy profyt/ For þou schalt in alle wise flee ydil-
nes. [2779] For Salamon saith þat ydelnesse techiþ
a man to do many yueles [2780] ¶ And þe same salamon
saith þat he þat trauaileth and besieþ him to tilye
þe lond schal ete þe breed. [2781] But he þat is ydil and
casteþ him to no busynesse ne occupacioun schal falle in to
pouert and deye for hunger [2782] ¶ And he þat is
ydel and slough can neuer fynde him tyme for to
do his profyt [2783] ¶ For þer is a versifour saith;
þe ydel man excuseþ him in wynter by cause of þe
grete colde. And in somer by enchesoun of þe grete hete.
[2784] ¶ For þese causes saith Catoun ¶ waketh and enclineþ
þow nouȝt ouer moche for to slepe. For ouermuche reste
norischeþ and causeþ many vices [2785] ¶ And þerfore
saith seint Ierom! Dop some goode deedes þat þe deuel
which þat is oure enemy ne fynde þow vnoccupied
[2786] ¶ For þe deuel ne takiþ not lightly vnto his werkes
suche as he fyndeth occupied in goode werkes

[2787] ¶ þanne þus in getyng of riches 3e
moot flee ydelnesse / [2788] ¶ and afterward 3e schul vse
þe richesþes þe whiche 3e han geten by þoure witte and by
þoure trauaile [2789] in such a maner þat men
holde þow not skarce / ne to sparynge ne to fool large
þat is to say ouer large a spender [2790] For right as
men blamen an auerous man by cause of his skarsete
and chyncherie [2791] in þe same manere is he to blame

þat spendeth ouer largely [2792] ¶ And þerfore saith
 Catoun ¶ Vse he saith þi richesces þat þou hast y-ge-
 ten [2793] in such a manere þat þay haue no matier ne
 cause to calle þe neiþer wrecche ne chynche [2794]
 ¶ For it is gret schame to a man to ¹haue a pouer herte
 and a riche purse [2795] ¶ He saith also þe goodes þat
 þou hast I-ge-ten vse hem by mesure þat is to say
 spende hem mesurably [2796] For þay þat folily wasten
 and spenden þe goodes þat þay haue: [2797] whan
 þay haue no more propre of here oughne: þay schape hem
 to take þe goodes of anoþer man [2798] ¶ I say thanne
 3e schul flee auarice [2799] vsynge 3our richesces
 in such manere þat [. . . *no gap*] 3oure [. . .]
 be buried. [2800] but þat 3e haue þanne in 3oure
 might and in 3oure weldynge. [2801] For þe wise man
 reprouep þe auerous man and saith þus in tuo
 versus [2802] ¶ wher-to and why burieth a man his
 goodes by his auarice and knowip wel þat needes
 most he deye. [2803] for deth is þe ende of euery man
 as in this present lif. [2804] And for what cause or
 enchesoun ioynep he him or knetteþ him so fast
 vnto his goodes [2805] þat alle his wit'es mowe nought
 disseuer him or departe him fro his goodes
 [2806] & knowip wel or oughte knowe wel þat whan he
 is deed he schal no þing bere with him out of þis
 world. [2807] ¶ And þerfore seiþ seint/ Austyn þat



ne þy goodes schul not be so open to be euery
mannes goodes [2814] ¶ Aftirward in getyng of þoure
richesses and in vsyng hem þe schul alway haue þre
þinges in þoure herte [2815] þat is to say Oure lord
god. Conscience. and good name. [2816] First þe schul
haue god in þoure herte [2817] and for no riches þe
schul in no manere doo no þing which might displese
god þat is þour creatour and þoure maker. [2818] For after
þe word of Salamon. It is better to haue litil good
wip loue of god. [2819] þan to haue mochiil good
and tresor and lese þe loue of his lord god. [2820]
And þe prophete saith. Better is to ben a
good man and haue litel good þan tresore [2821] þe to
ben holden a schrewe and haue gret riches [2822]
¶ And 3it say I forþer more þat þe schuln alway
doon þoure businesse to gete þow riches. [2823] so þat
þe gete hem with good conscience [2824] ¶ And þe apostil
seith. ther is þing in þis world of which we
schuln haue so gret ioye as whan oure conscience bereþ
vs good witnes [2825] ¶ And þe wise man saith
substaunce of a man is ful good whan synne is not in
his conscience. [2826] Afterward in getyng of þoure
richesses and in vsyng of hem [2827] þou most haue
gret busynesse & gret diligence þat þoure good
name be alway kept and conserued [2828] ¶ For Sala-
mon saith. better it is and more abelith a man
for to haue a good name þan for to haue gret riches
[2829] and þerfore he saith in anoþer place. Do gret
diligence saith Salamon in kepyng of þy frend and of
þy good name. [2830] For it schal lenger abyde wip
þe þan eny tresor be it neuer so precious [2831]
¶ And certes he schulde nouȝt be cleped a gentil man þat
after god and good conscience alle þinges left ne doþ
his diligence and busynesse to kepe his good name.
[2832] And Cassidore saith þat it is signe of a good man &
a gentil or of a gentil herte whan a man loueþ or desireþ to

haue a good name. [2833] and þerfore saith seint augustyn
 þat þer ben tuo þinges þat ben necessarie and needful
 [2834] and þat is good conscience and good loos [2835]
 þat is to sayn. good conscience in þin oughne persone
 inward. and good loos of þin neghebor outward.
 [2836] and he þat trusteþ him so moche in his good
 conscience [2837] þat he displeseþ and settiþ at
 nought his good name or loos and rekkeþ nought þough
 he kepe not his good name: nys but a cruel churl

[2838] ¶ Sire now haue I schewed 3ow how 3e schulde
 doon in getyng of good and riches and how 3e schuld vse
 hem [2839] I see wel þat for þe trust þat 3e haue in
 3oure riches: 3e wolde meue werre and bataile [2840]
 ¶ I counseile 3ow þat 3e bygynne no werre in trust of
 3oure riches. for thanne suffisen not werres to mayn-
 tene [2841] ¶ And þerfore saith a philosophre ¶ That
 man þat desireþ and wol algate haue werre: schal
 neuer haue sufficeaunce. [2842] For þe richere þat he is:
 þe gretter dispense most he make if he wol haue wor-
 schipe or victorie [2843] ¶ And Salamon saith. þe
 gretter riches þat a man hap: þe moo despendours he
 hap. [2844] And deere sire al be it so þat for 3oure
 riches 3e mowe haue moche folk: [2845] 3it byhoueþ
 it not ne it is not good to bygynne werre þer as 3e
 may in oþer maner haue pees vnto 3oure worschipe
 and profyt. [2846] For þe victorie of batailles þat ben



[. . . *no gap*] [2852] For þe victorie of batailles comeþ nouȝt by þe grete nombre of poeple! [2853] but it comeþ fro oure lord god of heuen [2854] ¶ And dere sire for as moche as þer is no man certeyn if it be worpi þat god ȝiue him victorie [.
. *no gap*] or nouȝt after þat þat Salamon saiþ. [2855] þerfore euery man schulde gretly drede werres to bygynne. [2856] And by cause þat in batailles falle many meruayles and periles [2857] and happeþ oper while þat as soone is þe grete man slayn as þe litel man. [2858] and as it is writen in þe secounde book of kynges þe deedes of batayles be auenturous and no thing certeyn [2859] For as lightly is oon hurt with a spere as anoper. [2860] and þerfore is gret peril in werre. þerfore schulde a man flee and eschewe werre in as moche as a man may goodly [2861] ¶ For Salamon saith. ¶ he þat loueth peril schal falle in peril

[2862] ¶ After þat dame prudens hadde spoke in þis maner! Mellibe answerde and sayde [2863] ¶ I se wel dame þat by ȝoure faire wordes and by ȝoure resouns þat ȝe haue schewed me þat þe werre likeþ ȝow no ping. [2864] but/ I haue not/ ȝit/ herd ȝoure counseil how I schal doo in þis neede

[2865] ¶ Certes quod sche I counseile ȝow þat ȝe accorde wiþ ȝoure aduersaries and þat ȝe haue pees with hem [2866] ¶ For seint Iame saiþ in his epistles þat by concord and pees þe smale rypes wexen grete. [2867] and by debaat and discord þe gret richesses fallen doun [2868] ¶ And ȝe knowe wel þat oon of þe mooste grettest and souerain pinges þat is in þis world is vnite & pees [2869] ¶ And þerfore saith oure lord ihū crist to his aposteles in þis wise [2870] ¶ wol happy and blessed be þay þat louen and purchacen pees. for þay ben called children of crist [2871] ¶ A quod Melibe. Now se I wel þat ȝe louen not myn honour ne my worschipe [2872] and knoweþ wel þat myne

aduersaries han bygonne þis debate and brige by here outrage [2873] And ȝe see wel þat þay require ne praye me not of pees. ne þay askyn nouȝt to be recounseild: [2874] wol ȝe þanne þat I goo & ¹meke me vuto hem and crie hem mercy. [2875] for soþe þat were not my worschipe [2876] ¶ For right as men seyn þat ouer gret pryde engendreþ despiying. so fareþ it by to gret humblete or mekenesse

[2877] ¶ Thanne bygan dame prudence to make semblant of wrappe and sayde. [2878] Certes sire saue ȝoure grace. I loue ȝoure honour and ȝoure profyt as I doo myn owne and euer haue doon [2879] ȝe ne mowe noon oþer seyn [2880] ¶ And ȝit if I hadde sayd ȝe scholde haue purchaced pees and þe reconsiliacioun. I ne hadde not moche mys-take me ne seyð amys: [2881] For þe wise man saith. þe discencioun bigynneþ by anoþer man and þe reconsilynge bygynneþ by þyself [2882] ¶ And þe prophete saith ¶ Flee schame and schrewednesse and doo goodnesse. [2883] Seeke pees and folwe it as moche as in þe is. [2884] Ȝet seiþ he not þat ȝe schul raper pursewe to ȝoure aduersaries for pees þan þei schul to ȝow. [2885] For I knowe wel þat ȝe be so hard-herted þat ȝe wil doo no þing for me [2886] ¶ And salamon saith. he þat is ouer hard herted atte laste he schal mys happe and my[s]-tyde

[2887] ¶ whan melibe had seyn dame prudence



3ow [2894] ¶ For Salamon saip þat he þat repreueþ him þat doth folie: [2895] he schal fynde gretter grace þan he þat deceyueth him by swete wordes

[2896] ¶ Thanne sayde dame prudence I make no semblant of wrappe ne of anger but for 3oure grete profyt [2897] ¶ For Salamon saith. he is more worth þat reproueþ or chydeþ a fool for his folie schewynge him semblant of wrappe [2898] þan he þat supporteþ him and prayseþ him in his mysdoynge. and laugheþ at his folie [2899] ¶ And þis same Salomon saip afterward þat by þe sorweful visage of a man þat is to sayn by sory and heuy countenance of a man [2900] þe fool correcteþ himself and amendeþ

[2901] ¶ þanne sayde Melibeus. I schal not conne answer to so many resouns as 3e putten to me and schewen. [2902] sayeth shortly 3oure wille and 3oure counseil. and I am al redy to fulfille and parfourme it

[2903] ¶ Thanne dame prudence discouered al here counsail and hire wille vn-to him and sayde [2904] ¶ I counseile 3ow quod sche aboue alle þinges þat 3e make pees bitwen god and 3ow [2905] and beþ reconsiled vnto him and to his grace. [2906] for I haue sayd 3ow her biforn. God hath suffred 3ow haue þis [. . . no gap] disease for 3oure synnes [2907] and if 3e do as I say 3ow god wol sende 3oure aduersaries vnto 3ow [2908] and make hem falle at 3oure feet al redy to doo 3oure wille and 3oure comaundement [2909] ¶ For Salamon saith. whan þe condicioun of man is plesant and likyng to god: [2910] he chaungeþ þe hertes of þe mannes aduersaries and constreigneþ hem to biseke him of pees & of grace. [2911] and I pray 3ow let me speke wiþ 3oure aduersaries in priue place [2912] for þay schul not knowe it by 3oure wille or 3oure assent [2913] ¶ And þanne whan I knowe here wille and here assent: I may counseile 3ow þe more seurly

[2914] ¶ Dame quod Melibeus doþ 3oure wille and

your Mayng [2915] For I pounse me holly in youre
disposicion and ordinaunce

[2916] ¶ Thanne Dame prudence whan sche saw þe
good wile of hir housbond. sche delivered and took a vis by
hir self [2917] þe kyng how sche mighte bringe þis
neede vnto a good conclusion and to a good ende
[2918] ¶ And whan sche saugh hire tyme she sente for þese
adversaries to come vnto hire in to a priue place
[2919] and schewed wyly vnto hem þe grete goddes
þat comen of þees [2920] and þe grete harmes and
perils þat ben in warre [2921] and sayde to hem in
goodly manere how þat hem aughte to haue gret re-
pentance [2922] of þe iniurie & wrong þat þay
hadde don to Melibe hire lord and vnto hire and
hire dougter.

[2923] and whan þay herden þe goodly wordes of
dame prudence [2924] þey were þo surprised and
rauyssched and hadden so gret ioye of hire þat wonder
was to telle [2925] ¶ A lady quod thay. 3e haue schewed
vnto vs þe blessing of swetnes after þe sawe of
Dauid þe prophete [2926] for þe recounsilyng which
we be nougt worþy to haue in no manere. [2927] But we
oughten require it wip gret contricioun and humilite.
[2928] 3e of youre grete goodnes haue presented vnto vs
[2929] ¶ Now we se wel þat þe science
of Salamon is ful trewe [2930] he saith þat



þat we haue offended and greued my lord Melibe out of
resoun and out of mesure [2936] so ferforth þat we ben
nouȝt/ of power to make his amendes. [2937] and þerfore we
oblie vs and bynde vs and oure frendes for to doo al his wille
and his comaundermentȝ. [2938] But peraenture he haþ such
heuynes & such wrappe to vs ward by cause of oure
offence: [2939] þat he wol enioyne vs such peyne
as we mow not bere ne susteyne [2940] ¶ and þerfore
noble lady we biseke to ȝoure wommanly pite [2941]
to take such auysement in þis neede þat we ne oure
frendes ben not disherited and destroyed þurgh oure
folye

[2942] ¶ Certes quod dame prudence it is an hard þing
and right a perilous [2943] þat a man put him al outrely
in þe arbitracioun and Iuggement and þe might and
power of his enemyes [2944] ¶ For Salamon seiþ leueþ
and ȝiueþ credence to þat þat I schal say. I say
quod he ȝeue poeple and gouernours of holy chirche
[2945] to þy sone to þi wyf/. and to þy frend ne to
þy brother [2946] ne ȝeue þou neuer might ne
maystry of þy body whil þou lyuest [2947] ¶ Now
sith he defendith a man schulde not ȝiue to his
broþer ne to his frend þe might of his body.
[2948] by a strengre resoun he defendeþ and forbedith a
man to ȝiue his body to his enemye. [2949] but naþe-
les I counseile ȝow þat ȝe mystruste nouȝt my lord.
[2950] For I wot wel and knowe verrailly þat he is
debonaire and meke. large curteys [2951] and no
þing desirous ne coueytous of good ne richesse. [2952]
For þer nys no þing in þis world þat he desireth
saue oonly worschipe and honour. [2953] Forþermore
I knowe and am right seure þat he wol no þing
doo in þis neede wiþoute counsail of me [2954] and I
schal so worche in this cause þat by þe grace of oure lord
god ȝe schul be recounsiled vnto vs

[2955] ¶ Thanne sayde þay with oon voys worschiful

haly we pynne vs and our goodes al fully in youre wille
and disposicioun [2955] and ben redy to come what
day but of like soun and that soun noblesse to limite vs or
assigne vs [2956] for to make our obligacioun and bond as
stronge as is likyd to our goodes [2958] þat we mowe
fulfil þe wille of soun and of my lord Melibe

[2959] ¶ When thanne prudence had herd þe an-
swers of þese men. sche had ben go agayn pryuely
[2960] and sche returned to his lord Melibe and tolde
him how sche find his adversaries ful repentant [2961]
knowlechinge ful lowely here synnes and trespasses and how
þey were redy to suffre alle payne [2962] requyring and
praying him of mercy and pite

[2963] ¶ þanne saide Melibens. he is wel worþy to
haue pardon and foryeuenes of his synne þat excusith not
his synne [2964] but knowlechep and repentith
him axinge indulgence. [2965] For Senek saith. þere
is þe remissioun and foryeuenesse wher as þe confessioun is
[2966] ¶ For confessioun is neighebor to Innocence [2967]
And he saith in anoþer place. he þat hath schame of
his synne knowlechith it. [. no gap]
and þerfore I assente and conferme me to haue pees.
[2968] but it is good þat we doo it nouȝt wipoute assent
& þe wille of oure frendes

[2969] ¶ Thanne was prudence right glad & iolyf
and wayde. [2970] Certes sire quod sche ȝe ben wel and



and tolde hem by ordre in þe presence of Melibe of
þis matier as it is aboue expressed and declared [2976]
and praide hem þat þay wolde ȝiue here auys and coun-
seil what best were to doon in þis matiere [2977] ¶ And
whan melibeus frendes hadde take here auys and deliber-
acioun of þe forsayde matier [2978] and hadden examyned
it by greet besynes and gret diligence [2979] þey ȝafe
him ful counsail to haue pees and reste. [2980] and þat
Melibeus schulde wiþ good hert resceyue his aduersaries
to forȝiuenes and mercy

[2981] ¶ And whan dame prudence had herd
thassent of hir lord Melibeus and counseil of his frendes
[2982] accorde wiþ hire wille & hire entencioun: [2983]
sche was wonderly glad in herte and sayde [2984]
¶ Ther is a noble prouerbe þat saith ¶ The
goodnesse þat þou maist do þis day: [2985]
abyde not ne delaye it nouȝt vnto to morwe. [2986] and
þerfore I counseile ȝow ȝe sende ȝoure messageres¹ whiche
þat ben discrete and wise [2987] vnto ȝoure aduersaries
tellynge hem on ȝoure bihalue [2988] þat if þay wol
trete of pees and of accord [2989] þat þay schape hem
wiþoute dilay or taryinge to come vnto vs. [2990]
which þing was performed in dede [2991] and
whan þese trespasours and repentyng folk of here
folies þat is to sayn þe aduersaries of Melibe [2992]
hadden herd what þe messangeres sayden vnto hem:
[2993] þay were right glad and iolif and answerden
ful mekely and benignely [2994] ȝeldyng graces &
þankinges to here lord Melibe and to al his compaignye
[2995] and schope hem wiþout delay to go wiþ þe
messangeres and obeye hem to þe comaundement of here lord
Melibe

[2996] ¶ And right anon þay token here way to þe
court of Melibe / [2997] and token wiþ hem some
of here trewe frendes to make faith for hem and for to
þen here borwes [2998] ¶ And whan þay were comen to

[¹ leaf 214, back]

þe presence of Melibeus he seyde hem þise wordes
 [2999] ¶ It stondith þus quod Melibeus and soþ it is
 þat 3e [3000] causeles and wipouten skile and reson
 [3001] haue doon gret iniuries and wronges to me and
 to my wyf prudence and to my douȝter also. [3002] For
 3e haue entred in to myn hous by violence [3003] and haue
 doon such outrage þat alle men knowe wel þat 3e haue
 deserued þe deth. [3004] And þerfore wil I knowe
 and wite of 3ow [3005] wheþer 3e wol putte þe
 punyschment and þe chastisement and þe vengeance/ of
 þis outrage in þe wille of me and of my wif dame prudence
 or 3e wil not

[3006] ¶ þanne þe wisest of hem þre answerde for
 hem alle & sayde [3007] ¶ Sire quod he we knowe
 wel þat we be vnworþy to come to þe court
 of so gret a lord and so worþy as 3e be [3008] ¶ For
 we han so gretly mystake vs and haue offendid and giltyd
 in such a wise ageins 3oure heighe lordschipe [3009] þat
 trewely we haue deserued þe deþ [3010] ¶ But 3it/ for
 þe greete goodnes and debonairete þat al þe world
 witnesseth of 3oure persone! [3011] we submitten vs to
 þin excellence and benignite of 3oure gracious lordschipe
 [3012] and ben redy to obeye to alle 3oure comaundement3
 [3013] bi-sekyng 3ow þat of 3oure merciable pite 3e
 wol considre oure grete repentaunce and lowe submissioun
 [3014] and graunte vs forȝiuenes of oure outrage
 trespas and offence. [3015] For wel 3e knowen þat 3oure
 liberal grace and mercy strechen forþere in to good-
 nesse þan doþ oure outrage gilt and trespas in to
 wikkednes [3016] al be it þat cursedly & damp-
 nably we haue agilt ageinst 3oure highe lordschipe

[3017] ¶ Thanne Melibe took hem vp fro þe ground
 ful benignely [3018] and resceyued here obligaciouns and here
 londes by here oþes vpon here plegges & borwes [3019]
 and assigned hem a certeyn day to retourne vnto his
 court [3020] for to accepte and receyue þe sentence and



iuggement þat Melibe wolde comaunde to be doon on hem by þese causes aforþ sayde. [3021] which þing ordeyned: euery man retourned home to his hous

[3022] ¶ And whan þat Dame prudence saugh hire tyme: sche feyned and axed hire lord Melibe [3023] what vengeance he poughte to take vpon his aduersaries.

[3024] to which Melibeus answerd and saide. Certes quod he I þenke and purpose me fully [3025] to disherite hem of al þat euer þay haue and for to putte hem in exil for euermore

[3026] Certes quod dame prudence þis were a cruel sentence and mochil azeinst resoun [3027] For 3e ben riche ynough & haue noon neede of oþer mennes good [3028] and 3e mighte lightly gete 3ow a coueitous name [3029] which is vicious þing and oughte to ben eschewed of euery man [3030] for after þe sawe of þe word of þapostil: Couetise is roote of alle harmes. [3031] And þerfore it were bettre for 3ow to lese so moche good of 3oure oughne þan for to take of here good in þis manere. [3032] For bettir it is to lese good wip worschipe þan it is to wyne good with vilonye and schame. [3033] and euer a man oughte to do his diligence and his busynesse to gete him a good name. [3034] [. no gap] [3035] but he schulde enforce him alway to do som þing by which he may renouele his good name. [3036] for it is writen þat þe olde goode loos of a man is soone doon or goon and passed whan it is not newed ne renoueled. [3037] And as touchinge þat 3e sayn þat 3e wol exile 3oure aduersaries: [3038] þat þinketh me mochil azeinst resoun and out of mesure [3039] consideriþ þe power þat þay han 3yue to 3ow vpon here body and on hemself [3040] ¶ And it is writen þat he is worpy to lese his priuelege þat mys vseth þe might and þe power þat is 3eue to him [3041] ¶ And 3it I sette þe caas 3e mighte enioyne hem þat peyne by right and lawe [3042] which I

trowe 3e mow nouȝt do [3043] I say 3e mighte nouȝt
 putte it to execucioun peraventure [3044] and þanne
 were it likly to torne to þe werre as it was biforn
 [3045] And þerfore if 3e wol þat men do 3ow obeis-
 saunce! 3e moste deme more curteisly [3046] þis is to
 sayn. 3e moste ȝiue more esyere sentence & iuggement
 [3047] ¶ For ¹it is writen. he þat most curteysly
 comaundeth to him men most obeyen. [3048] and þer-
 fore I pray 3ow þat in þis necessite and in þis neede
 3e caste 3ow to ouercome 3oure herte [3049] ¶ For Senek
 saip. he þat ouercomeþ his herte ouercomeþ
 twyes [3050] ¶ And thullius saith. þer is no þing so
 comendable in a gret lord [3051] as whan he is debon-
 aire and meeke and appesith him liztly [3052] ¶ And I pray
 3ow þat 3e wol forbere now to do vengeaunce [3053] in
 such a manere þat 3oure goode name may be kept/ &
 conserued. [3054] and þat men mowe haue cause / and
 matiere to prayse 3ow of pite and of mercy [3055] and
 þat 3e haue noon cause to repente 3ow of þing þat 3e doon
 [3056] ¶ For senec saith ¶ he ouercomeþ in an euel
 manere þat repenteth him of his victorie [3057] ¶ wher-
 fore I pray 3ow let mercy be in
 3oure herte [3058] to theeffect and thentent þat god
 almighty haue mercy and pite vpon 3ow in his laste iuggement
 [3059] ¶ For seint Iame saith in his Epistil! Iuggement wiþ
 oute mercy schal be doon to him þat hap no mercy vpon



SIX-TEXT 252
GROUP B. § 10. MELIBEUS. Harleian 7334. 529

ful goodly and sayde in þis wise. [3066] ¶ Al be
it so þat of ȝoure pryde and heigh *presumpcioun* and folye
and of ȝoure negligence/ and vnconnyng [3067] ȝe haue
mys-bore ȝow and trespassed vnto me! [3068] ȝit/ for as
moche as I se and biholde ȝoure humilite
[3069] þat ȝe ben sory and repentaunt of ȝoure giltes!
[3070] hit constreigneth me to do ȝow grace. and mercy.
[3071] wherfore I receyue ȝow to my grace [3072] and
forȝeue ȝow outerly alle þe offenses iniuries and wronges
þat ȝe haue don to me and agayns me and myne / [3073] this
is þeffect & to þis ende þat god of his endeles mercy
[3074] wole at þe tyme of oure deyinge forȝiue vs oure
giltes þat we haue trespassed to him in þis wrecched
world. [3075] for douteles & we ben sory & repentaunt
of þe synnes & giltes whiche we haue trespassed Inne in þe
sight of oure lord god! [3076] he is so free and so merci-
able [3077] þat he wil forȝiue vs oure gultes [3078]
and bringe vs to þe blisse þat neuer hap ende AmeN
¶ Here endith Chaucer his tale of Melibe

[leaf 226]

¶ And here bygynneþ þe prologe of þe monkes tale /

[Break of one line in the MS.]

Whan ended was my tale of Melibe 3079
 And of prudence and hire benignite
 Oure hoste sayde as I am faithful man

And by þe precious corpus Madryan

I hadde leuer þan a barel ale

That godeleef my wyf had herd þis tale 3084

For sche is no þing of such pacience

As was þis melibeus wyf dame prudence

By goddes boones whan I bete my knaues

Sche bringeth me forth þe grete clobbet staues 3088

And criep slee þe dogges euerychon

And breke of hem boþe bak and bon

And if þat eny neghebour of myne

wol nought to my wyf in chirche enclyne 3092

Or be so hardy to hir to trespase

whan sche comþ hom sche rampeth in my face

And criep false coward wreke þy wyf

By Corpes bones I wil haue þy knyft 3096

And þou schalt/ haue my distaf and go spynne

Fro day to night þus sche wil bygynne /

Allas sche saith þat euer I was I-schape

To wedde a mylk-sop or a coward ape 3100

[That wil be over led with every night]



SIX-TEXT 254
GROUP B. § 11. MELIBE-MONK LINK. Harleian 7334. 531

For sche is big' in armes by my faith 3111
That schal he fynde þat hire mys doth or saith [leaf 220, back]
But let vs passe a way fro þis matiere
My lord þe monk quod he be mery of chere /
For 3e schul telle a tale trewely
Lo Rowchestre stant' heer faste by 3116
Ryde forþ myn oughne lord brek' nouȝt oure game
But by my troupe I can not ȝoure name
whether schal I calle ȝow my lord dan Iohn
Or daū Thomas or elles dan albon 3120
Of what hous be ȝe by ȝour fader kyn
I vow to god þou hast' a ful fair skyn
It is a gentil pasture þer þou gost'
Thow art not lik' a penaunt' or a goost' 3124
vpon my faith þou art' an officer
Som worþy sexteyn or som Celerer
For by my fader soule as to my doome
Thou art' an officer whan þou art' at hoom 3128
No pouer cloysterer ne non nouys
But a gouernour wily and wys
And þer wiþ al of brawne and of bones
A wel faryng' persone for þe noones 3132
I praye god ȝiue him confusioun
þat first/ þe brouȝte to religioun
Thow woldist han be a tredefoul aright'
haddist' þou as gret' a leue as might' 3136
To parforme al þi wil in engendrure
Thow haddist' bigeten many a creature
Allas why werest' þou so wyd a cope
God ȝif me sorwe and I were a pope 3140
Nought' only þou but euery mighty man
Though he were schore brode vpon his pan
Schuld han a wif for al þis world is lorn
Religioun hath take vp al þe corn 3144
Of tredyng' and we burel men ben schrympes
Of feble trees þer comeþ feble ympes

This makip þat oure heires ben so sclender
 And feble þat þay may not wel engender 3148
 This makeþ þat our wyfes wol assaye
 Religious folk for þay may bettre paye [leaf 227]
 Of venus payementes þan may we
 God woot no lusscheburghes paye 3e / 3152
 beþ nouȝt wroþ my lorde þough I play
 For oft in game a soth I haue herd say
 This worþy monk took al in pacience /
 And saide I wol doon al my diligence 3156
 Als fer as sounep in to honeste /
 To telle ȝow a tale or tuo or þre
 And if ȝow lust to herken hiderward
 I wil ȝow say þe lif of seint Edward 3160
 Or elles first tredis wil I ȝow telle /
 Of which I haue an hundred in my celle /
 Tregedis is to sayn a certeyn storie
 As olde bookes maken vs memorie 3164
 Of hem þat stood in greet prosperite
 And is fallen out of heigh degre
 In to miserie and endith wrecchedly
 And þay ben versifyed comunly 3168
 Of six feet which men clepe exametron
 In prose ben eek endited many oon
 And in metre eek and in sondry wise
 Lo þis declaryngt ought ynough suffise / 3172



I wol bywaile in maner of tregedye
The harm of hem þat stood in heigh degre
And fallen so þe is no remedye
To bring hem out of her aduersite 3184
For certeynly whan fortune lust to flee
Ther may no man þe cours of hir whiel holde
let no man truste in blynd prosperite *[leaf 227, back]*
Beþ war by þese ensamples trewe and olde / 3188
[No stanza-breaks in the MS.]

[Lucifer.]

AT lucifer pough he an aungil were **¶ Lucifer**
And no man at him wil I bygynne
For pough fortune may non aungel dere
From heigh degre ȝit fel he for his synne 3192
Doun in to helle. wher he ȝet is inne
O lucifer brightest of aungels alle
Now art þou Sathanas þat maist nouȝt twynne
Out of miserie in which þou art falle 3196

[Adam.]

Lo adam in þe feld of Damassene **¶ Adam**
wiþ goddes oughne fynger wrought was he /
And nought bigeten of mannes sperma vnclene
And welt al paradys sauynȝ oon tre 3200
had neuer worldly man suche degre
As adam til he for mys gouernance
was dryuen out of heigh prosperite
To labour and to helle and to meschaunce 3204

[*Sampson.*]

Lo Sampson. þat was annunciate ¶ **Sampson**
 By þangel long' er his natiuite /
 And was to god almighty consecrate
 And stood in nobles whil þat he might se 3208
 was neuer such anoþer as was he
 To speke of strengþ. and þerto hardynesse
 But to his wyfes tolde he his secre
 Thurgh which he slough himself for wrecchidnesse / 3212

[.

 3216

 *no gap in the MS.* 3220

Thre hundred foxis. tok Sampson for Ire
 And alle her tayles he togider bond
 And sette þe foxes tailles alle on fuyre
 For he in euery tail hath knyht a brond 3224
 And þay brent alle þe cornes of þat lond
 And alle her Olyuers. and vynes eeke
 A þousand men he slough eek wip his hond

By verray fors of algason on a night
 Maugre þe philistiens of þat cite
 The gates of þe toun he haþ vp plight/
 And on his bak' caried hem haþ he / 3240
 heigh vpon an hil wher men might' hem se /
 O noble almighty Sampson leef' and deere
 haddest' þou nought' to wommen told þy secre
 In al þe world ne hadde be þy peere 3244

This sampson neyther siser dronk' ne wyn /
 Ne on his heed com rasour noon ne schere
 By precept' of þe messenger diuyn
 For alle his strengþes in his heres were 3248
 And fully twenty wynter 3er by 3ere/
 he hadde of Ierusalem þe gouernaunce
 But' soone he schal wepe many a teere
 For wymmen schuln him bringe to meschaunce 3252

Vn-to his lemman Dalida he tolde
 That' in his heres al his strengþe lay
 And falsly to his foomen' sche him solde
 And slepyng' in hir barm vpon a day 3256
 Sche made to clippe or schere his heres away
 And made his foomen al his craft' espien
 And whan þay fond him in þis array
 Thay bound him fast' and put out boþe his yen 3260

But er his heer clipped was or I-schaue
 Ther was no bond wiþ which men might' him bynde
 But' now is he in prisoun in a caue
 Ther as þay made him at þe querne grynde 3264
 O noble Sampson strengest' of al man kynde
 O whilom iugge in glory and in richesse /
 Now maystow wepe wiþ þine eyzen blynde
 Sith þou fro wele art falle to wrecchednesse 3268

Thend of þis caytif was as I schal say
 his foomen made a fest vpon a day
 And made him as here fool biforn hem play [See/228, back]
 And þis was in a temple of gret array 3272
 But/ atte last he made a foul affray
 For he two pilers schook and made hem falle
 And doun fel temple and al and þer it lay
 And slough himsilf and eek his fomen alle 3276

This is to sayn þe princes euer ichon
 And eek þe þousand bodies were þer slayn
 with fallyng of þe grete temple of stoon
 Of Sampson wil I no more sayn 3280
 Be war by þese ensamples olde and playn
 That no man telle his counseil to his wyf
 Of such þing as he wold haue secre fayn
 If/ þat/ it touche his lymes or his lif 3284

[Hercules.]

Of Ercules þe souereyn conquerour ¶ De Ereule
 Singing his werkes laude and heigh renoun
 For in his tyme of strength he bar þe flour
 he slough and rafte þe skyn fro þe leoun 3288
 he of Centaures layde þe bost a doun
 he arpies slough þe cruel briddes felle
 The gold appul he raft fro þe dragoun



GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 537

SIX-TEXT 260

Was neuer wight / sippen þe world bigan
That slough so many monstres as dede he
Thurgh-out þe wide world his name ran
what for his strengþe and for his bounte 3304
And euery roialme went he for to se
he was so strong per might no man him lette
At hope þe worldes endes as saith trophe
In stede of boundes he a piler sette 3308

A lemman hadde þis noble campioun [100/22]
That highte Deianire freish as may
And as þese clerkes maken mencion
Sche haþ him sent a schurte fresch and gay 3312
Alas þis schirt allas and wailaway
Enuynmed was soply with alle
That er he hadde wered it half a day
It made his fleisch al fro his bones falle / 3316

But natheles som clerkes hir excusen
By oon þat highte Nessus þat it makyd
Be as be may I wil nouȝt hir accusyn
But on his bak / he wered þis schirt al naked 3320
Til þat his fleisch was for þe venym blaked
And whan he saugh noon oþer remedye
In hote colis he haþ himself I-raked
For no venym deyned him to dye 3324

Thus start þis mighty and worthy Ercules
lo who may truste fortune eny þrowe
For him þat folweþ al þis world of pres
Er he be war is oft y-layd ful lowe / 3328
Ful wys is he þat / can himseluen knowe /
Be war for whan þat fortune lust to glose /
Than waytith sche hir man to ouerþrowe /
By suche way as he wolde lest suppose 3332

[Nebuchadnezzar.]

The mighty trone þe precious tresor ¶ De rege
 The glorious ceptre and real mageste Nabugodonosor
 That had þe king Nabugodonosore
 wiþ tonge vnnethes may descryued be 3336
 he twyes wan ierusalem þat Cite
 The vessel out of þe temple he wiþ him ladde / ¶ Daniel's 4th
 At Babiloyne was his souereyn see regum &c
 In which his glorie and his delyt he ladde / 3340

The fairest children of þe blood roial
 Of Israel he dede gelde anoon
 And made ylk of hem to ben his þral
 Amonges opre Daniel was oon 3314
 That was þe wisest / child of euerychoon
 For he þe dremes of þe king expounded
 Ther as in Caldeyn was þer clerkes noon [leaf 229, back]
 That wiste to what fyn his dremes souned 3348

This proude king let make a statu of gold
 Sixty cubites long and seuen in brede
 To which ymage boþe 3onge and olde /
 Comaunded he to loue and haue in drede 3352
 Or in a fornays ful of flames rede
 he schulde be brent þat wolde not obeye /
 But neuer wolde assente to þat dede
 Danyel ne his felawes tweye 3356

This king of kinges preu was elate
 he wende god þat sit in mageste
 Ne might him nought / bireue of his estate
 But sodeynly he left / his dignite 3360
 I-lik a best him semed for to be
 And eet hay as an oxe and lay þer-oute /
 In rayn with wilde bestes walkyd he.
 [til certain tyme was i-come aboute¹] [¹ In margin, in a later hand.]



GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 539

SIX-TEXT 262

And lik/ an Eglis fetheres were his heres
his hondes like a briddes clowes were
Til god releessed him a certeyn ȝeres
And ȝaf him witte and þanne with many a tere 3368
he þanked god and euer he is afere
To doon amys or more to trespace
And er þat tyme he layd was on bere
he knew wel god was ful of might and grace 3372

His sone which þat highte Balthazar
That huld þe regne after his fader day
he by his fader coupe nought be war
For proud he was of hert/ and of array 3376
And eek an ydolaster was he ay
his heigh astate assured him in pryde
But fortune cast him down and þer he lay
And soðeynly his regne gan diuide 3380

A fest he made vnto his lordes alle
vpon a tyme he made hem blipe be
And þan his officeres gan he calle
God bringeth forth þe vessealx quod he 3384
The which my fader in his prosperite
Out of þe temple of ierusalem byraft [leaf 230]
And to oure hihe goddis þanke we/
Of honours þat oure eldres with vs laft 3388

His wif his lordes and his concubines
Ay dronken whiles her arriont last
Out of þis noble vesseals sondry wyne
And on a wal þis king his yhen cast / 3392
And saugh an hond armles þat wroot fast /
For fere of which he quook and siked sore
þis hond þat balthazar so sore agast
wrot. mane. techel. phares. and no more / 3396

In al þe lond magicien was noon
 That coupe expounde what þis lettre ment
 But Daniel expoundiþ it anon
 And sayde king god þy fader sent 3400
 Glori and honour. regne tresor and rent
 And he was proud and no þing god ne dredde
 And þerfor god gret wreche vpon him sent
 And him biraft þe regne þat he hadde / 3404

He was out cast of mannes compaignye
 with asses was his habitacioun
 And eete hay in wet and eek in drye
 Til þat he knew by grace and by resoun 3408
 That god of heuen had dominacioun
 Ouer euery regne and euery creature
 And þan had god of him compassioun
 And him restored to his regne and his figure 3412

Eke þou þat art his sone art proud also
 And knowest al þis þing so verrayly
 And art rebel to god and art his fo
 þou dronk eek of his vessel bodily 3416
 Thy wyf eek and þy wenche sinfully
 Dronke of þe same vessel sondry wyne
 And heriest false goddes cursedly



SIX-TEXT 264
GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 541

Lordyngs ensample her-by may ȝe take
how þat in lordschip is no sikernesse
For whan fortune wil a man forsake
Sche bereþ a-way his regne and his richesse / 3432
And eek' his frendes hope more and lesse /
And what' man hath of frendes þe fortune
Mishap wil make hem enemyes I gesse
[þis prouerbe is ful soth & ful comune¹] <sup>[¹ In a later hand
in the margin.]</sup>

[No break in the MS.]

Cenobia of palmire þe queene
As writen parciens of hir noblesse
So worþy was in armes and so keene
That' no wight' passed hir in hardynesse 3440
Ne in lynage ne in oþer gentilesse /
Of þe kinges blood / of pers sche is descendid
I say þat' sche had not most' fairnesse
But' of hir schap sche might' not' ben amendid 3444

Fro hir childhod / I fynde þat' sche fledde
Office of' wommen and to woode sche went
And many a wilde hertes blood sche schedde
with arwes brode þat' sche to hem sent / 3448
Sche was so swyft' þat' sche anon hem hent
And whan þat' sche was elder sche wolde kille
Leouns / lebardes / and beres alto-rent
And in hir armes weld hem at hir wille 3452

Sche dorste wilde bestes dennes seke/
And renne in þe mounteyns al þe night'
And slepe vnder a bussch and sche couþe eeke
wrastil by verray fors and verray might 3456
wiþ eny ȝong' man were he neuer so wight'
Ther mighte no þing' in hir armes stonde
She kept' hir maydenhed from euery wight'
To no man deyned hire to be bonde 3460

But atte last hir frendes han hir maried
 To Odenake a prince of þat Citee
 Al were it so þat sche him longe taried [100/231] 3464
 And ȝe schul vnderstonde how þat he
 had suche fantasies as hadde sche /
 But napeles whan þay were knyȝt in fere
 Thay lyued in ioye and in felicite
 For ech of hem had oȝer leef and deere 3468

Saue oon þing sche wolde neuer assent
 By no way þat he schulde by hir lye
 But oones for it was hir playn entent
 To haue a child þe world to multiplie 3472
 And also soone as she might aspye /
 That sche was not wiȝ childe ȝit in dede /
 Than wold sche suffre him doon his fantasie
 Eft sones and nought but oones out of drede / 3476

And if sche were wiȝ child at pilke cast
 No more schuld he playe pilke game
 Til fully fourty dayes were y-past
 Than wold sche suffre him to do þe same 3480
 Al were þis Odenake wilde or tame
 he gat no more of hir for þus sche sayde
 hit nas but wyues lecchery and schame /
 In oȝer caas if þat men with hem playde / 3484



Hir riche array if it might be told
As wel in vessel as in hir cloping'
Sche was al cloped in perre and gold
And eek' sche lafte nought' for hir huntyng' 3496
To haue of sondry tonges ful knowing'
whan sche had leyser // and might' perto entent
To lerne bookes was al hir likyng'
How sche in vertu might' hir lif' despent' 3500

And shortly of pis story for to trete [leaf 231, back]
So doughty was hir housbond and eek' sche
That' pay conquered many regnes grete
In thorient' with many a fair citee 3504
Appurtienant' vnto that' mageste /
Of Rome. and with strong' hond hulden hem fast'
Ne neuer might' her fomen doon hem fle
Ay while Odenakes dayes last/ 3508

Her batails who / so lust' hem for to rede
Agayn Sapor þe king' and oþer mo
And how þat' pis processe fel in dede
why sche conquered and what' title had perto 3512
And after of hir meschief' and hir woo /
how þat' sche was deceyued and I-take /
let' hem vnto my mayster perark' go
That' writeth of pis ynough I vndertake / 3516

Whan Odenake was deed sche mightily
The regnes huld and wip hir propre hond
Azeins hir foos sche faught' ful trewely
That' þer nas king' ne prince in þat' lond 3520
That' he nas glad if he þat' grace fond
That' sche ne wold vpon his lond werraye
with hir þay made alliaunce by bond
To ben in pees and let' hir ryde and play 3524

The emperour of Rome Claudius
 Ne him biforn þe romayn· Galiene
 Ne dorste neuer be so corrageous
 Ne noon ermine ne Egipcienne 3528
 No Surrien ne noon arrabiene
 wipinne þe feld þat durste with hir fight
 Lest' þat' sche wold hem wip her hondes sleen
 Or wip hir meyne putten hem to flight 3532

In kinges abyht went hir sones tuo
 As heires of her fadres regnes alle
 And hermanno and Themaleo
 here names were and Parciens men hem calle / 3536
 But ay fortune hath in hir hony galle
 This mighty queene may no while endure
 Fortune out' of hir regne made hir falle [leaf 123]
 To wrecchednesse and to mys aduenture 3540

Aurilian whan þat' þe gouernaunce
 Of Rome cam in-to his hondes tway /
 he schop him of þis queen to do vengeance /
 And with his legiouns he took' þe way 3544
 Toward Cenoby and schortly to say
 he made hir flee and atte last' hir hent
 And feterid hir and eek' hir children tweye
 And wan he lond and home to Rome he went 3548



GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 545

SIX-TEXT 268

Alas fortune . sche that whilom was
Dredful to kinges and to Emperoures
Now gaulith al þe pepul on hir alas
And sche þat helmyd was in starke stoures / 3560
And wan bifore tounes stronge and toures
Schal on heed now were a wyntermyte
And sche þat bar þe cepter ful of floures
Schal bere a distaf hir self for to quyte 3564

[No break in the MS.]

O noble petro . þe glori of Spayne / ¶ De petro his
whom fortune held so heigh in mageste pannie rege
wel oughte men þy pitous dep complayne
Thy bastard broþer made þe to fle 3568
And after / at a sege by subtilte
þow were bytrayed and lal to his tent
wher / as he with his oughne hond slough þe
Succedyng in þy lond and in þy rent 3572

The feld of snow with thegle of blak þer-Inne
Caught wip þe leoun reed coloured as is þe gleede
he brewede þe cursednesse and synne
The wikked nest werker of þis neede 3576
Nought Oliuer ne Charles þat ay took heede
Of trouthe and honour but / of armoryk [leaf 232, back]
Geniloun oliuer corruptid for nede
Broughte þis worþy king in such a bryk 3580

[No break in the MS.]

O worþy petro king of Cipres also ¶ De petro Cipre rege
That alisaunder wan by heigh maistrye /
Ful many an hethen wroughtest þou ful wo
Of which þin oughne lieges had enuye 3584
And for no þing but for þy chivalrie
pay in thy bed han slayn þe by þe morwe
Thus can fortune þe whel gouerne and gye
And out of ioye bringe men in to sorwe 3588

[No break in the MS.]

Of Melayn grete Barnabo viscount' ¶ De Barnabo Co-
 God of delyt' and strength of lumbardye mite Mediolano
 why schuld pyn infortune I nought' accounte
 Syn in astaat' þou clombe were so hye 3592
 Thy broþer sone þat' was þy double allie
 For he þy neuew was and sone in lawe
 wiþinne his prisoun made þe to dye
 But' why ne how not' I þat' þou were slawe / 3596
 [No break in the MS.]

Of erl hugilin of pise þe langour ¶ De hugilino
 Ther may no tonge telle þe pite Comite Pise
 But' litel out' of pise stant a tour
 In whiche tour / in prisoun put' was he / 3600
 And with him been his litil children þre
 Theldest' skarsly fyf' ȝer was of age /
 Allas fortune it was gret' cruelte
 Suche briddes to put in such a cage 3604

Dampnyd he was to deye in þat' prisoun
 For Roger which þat' bisschop was of pise
 Had on him maad a fals suggestioun
 Thurgh which þe peple gan on him arise 3608
 And putte him in prisoun in such wise
 As ȝe han herd and mete and drynk' he hadde
 So smal þat' wel vneþe it may suffise
 And þer wiþ al it was ful pore and badde 3612

And on a day bifel þat' in þat' hour
 whan þat' his mete was wont' to be brought'
 The gayler schet' þe dores of þat' tour
 He herd it wel but he saugh it' nought' [leaf 233] 3616
 And in his hert' anoon þer fel a þought'
 þat' þay for hungir wolde doon him dyen
 Alas quod he allas þat' I was wrought'
 Ther-wiþ þe teeres felle fro his eyen 3620



GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 547

SIX-TEXT 270

His 3ongest sone þat þre 3er was of age
Vnto him sayde fader why do ye wepe
whan wil þe gayler bringen oure potage
Is þer no morsel bred þat 3e doon kepe 3624
I am so hongry þat I may not sleepe
Now wolde god þat I might alepe euer
Than schuld not hunger in my wombe crepe
Ther is no þing saue bred þat me were leuer 3628

Thus day by day þis child bigan to crie
Til in his fadres barm a-down he lay
And sayde far wel fader I moot dye
And kist his fader and dyde þe same day 3632
And whan þe woful fader deed it say
For wo his armes tuo he gan to byte
And sayde fortune alas and waylaway
Thin false querel al my woo I wye 3636

His childer wende þat it for hongir was
That he his armes gnaw and nought for wo
And sayden fader do nought so allas
But rather et þe fleisch vpon vs tuo 3640
Oure fleisch þou 3aue vs / oure fleisch þou take vs fro
And ete ynough right þus þay to him seyde
And after þat wipinne a day or tuo
Thay layde hem in his lappe a-down and deyde 3644

Himself despeired eek for longer starf
Thus ended is þis mighty eorl of pise
For his estate fortune fro him carf
Of þis tegrede it ought ynough suffise / 3648
who-so wil it hiere in lenger wise
Rede þe gret poet of Itaille
That highte Daunt for he can it deuise
Fro poynt to poynt nou3t oon word wil he fayle 3652

[No break in the MS.]



GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. SIX-TEXT 272
Harleian 7334. 549

IN ȝouþe a maister had þis emperour
To teche him letterure and curtesye
For of moralite he was þe flour
And in his tyme but if þe book' lye 3688
And whil his maister had of him maistrie
he made him so connyng' and so souple /
That' long' tyme it was or tyrranye
Or ony vice dorst' on him vncouple / [leaf 124] 3692

This Seneca of which þat' I deuyse ¶ Seneca
By cause Nero had of him such drede
For fro vices he wolde him chastise
Discretly by word and nouȝt by dede / 3696
Sir wold he sayn an emperour mot neede /
Be vertuous and hate tyrannye
For which he in a bath made him to bleede
On boþe his armes til he moste dye 3700

The nero hadde eek' a custumance /
No ȝouþe aȝein his maister for to ryse /
which afterward him þought' a gret greunaunce
Therefore he made him deye in þis wise 3704
But' napeles þis Seneca þe wise
Ches in bath to deye in þis manere /
Raper þan to haue anoþer tyrannye
And þus haþ Nero slayn his maister deere / 3708

Now fel it so þat' fortune lust' no lenger
The highe pride of Nero to cherice
For þough he were strong' ȝit' was sche stronger
Sche þoughte þus by god I am to nyce 3712
To set' a man þat' is ful sad of vice
In high degre and emperour him calle /
By god out' of his cite I wil him trice
whan he lest' wenep' sonnest' schal byfalle 3716

The people rose to him upon a night
 The night before and when he it aspyed
 Out of his doore anon he hap him dight
 A horse and he he wende hane ben allyed 3720
 To an liked fast and ay he more he cried
 The faster schene pay he doores alle/
 Thus went he wel he had himself mynyed
 And went his way no lenger durst he calle 3724

The people cried and tumbled vp and down
 Thus with his eyes herd he how pay sayde
 Thus was his tale trowen his neroun
 Thus he was set out of his wyne he prayde / 3728
 And thus he prayde piously he prayde /
 Thus he was set out of his wyne he prayde / [Leaf 224, back]
 Thus he was set out of his wyne he prayde
 And thus he was set out of his wyne he prayde 3733

And in his garden found he cherlis twaye
 Styrred by a faye ful greet and reed
 Thus he was set out of his wyne he prayde
 Thus he was set out of his wyne he prayde 3736
 Thus he was set out of his wyne he prayde
 Thus he was set out of his wyne he prayde
 Thus he was set out of his wyne he prayde
 Thus he was set out of his wyne he prayde 3740



GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 551 SIX-TEXT 274

Nought oonly þat þe world had of him awe /
 For lesyng' of riches and liberte
 But' made euery man reneye his lawe /
 Nabugodonosor was lord sayde he / 3752
 Noon oper god schuld honoured be
 Azeinst' his heste dar no wight' trespase ¶ Et fecerunt filij
 Saue in Betholia a strond cite israel secundum
 wher Eliachim a prest' of þat' place quod constituit eis
dominus sacerdos
Elyachym

But' tak' keep of þat' day of Olipherne
 Amyd his ost/ he dronke lay on night'
 wiþinne his tente large as is a berne
 And jit' for al his pomp and al his might' 3760
 Iudith a womman as he lay vpright
 Slepyng' his heed of smot' and fro his tent
 Ful priuely sche stal from euery wight
 And with his heed vnto hir toun sche went 3764
[No break in the MS.]

What' needith it' of king' antiochius ¶ De Rege Anti-
 To telle his heyre real mageste / ochie illustri.
 his heyhe pride his werke venemous
 For such anoþer was þer noon as he [leaf 235] 3768
 Redep' which þat' he was in machabe
 And redith þe proude wordes þat' he sayde
 And why he fel fro his prosperite
 And in an hil. how wrecchidly he deyde 3772

Fortune him hap' enhaunced so in pryde
 That' verrailly he wend he might' han teyned
 Vnto þe sterreis vpon euery syde /
 And in a balaunce weyen what' ech mounteyned 3776
 And alle þe floodes of þe see restreyne
 And goddes peple had he most' in hate
 hem wold he slee in torment' and in peyne
 wenyng' þat' god ne might' his pride abate 3780

And for þat Nichosor and Thimothe /
 with Iewes were venquist/ mightily
 Vn to þe Iewes such an hate had he /
 That he bad graithe his chaar hastily 3784
 And swor and sayde ful despitously
 Vnto Ierusalem he wold eft soone
 To wreke his Ire on it ful cruelly
 But of his purpos he was let ful soone 3788

God for his manace him so sore smoot
 wiþ inuisible wounde. incurable
 That in his guttes carf so and bot
 That his peynes were importable 3792
 And certeynly þe wreche was resonable
 For on many a man. dede he peyne
 But fro his purpos cursed and dampnable /
 For al his smert he nolde him nought restreyne / 3796

But bad anon apparailen his host
 And sodeynly er he was of it ware
 God dampned al his pride and al his bost
 For he so sore fel out of his chare 3800
 That his lymes and his skyn to-tare /
 So þat he no more might go ne ryde /
 But in a chare men aboute him bare /
 Al forbrosed boþe bak and syde / 3804

The wreche of god him smot so cruelly
 That in his body wicked wormes crept *(leaf 235, back)*
 And þer with al he stonk/ so orribly
 That noon of his meyne þat him kep[t]e 3808
 wheþer þat he wook or elles slepte
 Ne mighte nought þe stynk of him endure
 In þis meschief he weyled and eek wepte /
 And knew god lord of euery creature 3812



GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 553

SIX-TEXT 276

To al his host and to himself also
Ful wlatson was þe stynk and þe carayne
No man might him bere to ne fro
And in stynk/ and orrible payne 3816
he starf ful wrecchedly in a mountayne
Thus haþ þis robbour and þis homicide /
That many a man made wepe and playne /
Swich guerdoun is þat longeþ vnto pryde 3820
[No break in the MS.]

The story of alisaunder is so comune ¶ De alexandro
That every wight þat haþ discrecioun magno philip-
haþ herd som what or al of this fortune pi regis mace-
Thys wyde world as in conclusioun donie filio &c / 3824
he wan by strengþe or for his heigh renoun
Thay were glad for pees vnto him sende
The pride of man and bost he layd a doun
Wher-so he cam. vnto þe worldes ende / 3828

Comparisoun ȝit mighte neuer be maked
Bitwen him and noon oþer conquerour
For al þis world for drede of him haþ quaked
he was of knyghthod and of fredam flour 3832
Fortune him made þe heir of hir honour
Saue wyn and wymmen no þing might aswage
his heigh entent in armes and labour
So was he ful of lumyne corage 3836

What pite were it to him pough I ȝow tolde
Of Darius and an hundred þousand mo
Of kynges princes Dukes and eorles bolde /
which he conquered and brouȝt/ vnto wo 3840
I say as fer as men may ryde or go
The world was his what schold I more deuyse /
[. no gap in the MS.]
Of his knighthood it mighte nouȝt suffise / 3844

Twelf þer he regned as saith machabe [Aug 226]
 Philippes son of Macedon he was
 That first was king in Crece þat contre
 O worþy gentil alisaundre alas 3848
 That euer schulde falle such a caas
 Empoysoned of þin oughne folk þou were
 Thyn fortune is torned in to an aas
 And right for þe ne wepte sche neuer a teere 3852

Who schal me giue teeres to compleigne
 The deþ of gentiles and of fraunchise
 That al þe worlde had in his demeigne
 And ȝit him þought it mighte nouȝt suffice 3856
 So ful was his corage of high emprise /
 Allas who schal helpe me to endite/
 Fals infortune and poysoun to deuyse
 The whiche two al þis wo I wyte 3860
 [No break in the MS.]

By wisdom manhod and gret labour
 Fro humble bed to royal mageste /
 Vp roos he Iulius þe conquerour
 That wan al thoccident by land and see 3864
 By strengþe of hond or elles by trete /
 And vnto Rome made hem contributarie
 And sippe of Rome þemperour was he
 Til hatt fortune was his aduersarie / 3868



But now a litel while I wil bywaile
This pompeus þe noble gouernour
Of Rome which þat flowe fro þis bataile
Alas I say oon of his men a fals traitour 3880
his heed of smoot to wynne his fauour
Of Iulius and him þe heed he brouȝt
Alas pomp of þe orient conquerour [leaf 226, back]
That fortune to such a fyn þe brought 3884

To Rome agayn repaireþ Iulius
wiþ his triumphe laurial ful hye
But on a tyme brutus Cassius
That euer had to his estat enuye / 3888
Ful priuely haþ made conspiracie /
Agains þis Iulius in subtil wise /
Cast the place. in which he schulde dye
with boydekyns as I schal ȝow deuyse / 3892

This Iulius to þe Capitoile went
vpon a day as he was wont to goon
And in þe Capitoil anoon him hent
This false brutus and his oþer foon 3896
And stiked him wiþ boydekyns anoon
with many a wounde and þus þay let him lye
But neuer gront he at no strook but oon
Or elles at tuo but if þe storie lye. 3900

So manly was þis Iulius of hert/
And so wel loued estatly honeste
That þough his deedly woundes sore smert
his mantil ouer his hipes caste he 3904
For no man schulde seen his priuete
And as he lay deyinge in a traunce
And wiste wel þat verrayly deed was he
Of honeste ȝet had he remembraunce / 3908

Loken to þe þe story I recommende
 And to weeten and to fulfyllen hit
 That al þe story witten wold and maie
 how to þe grace vnderstande
 Fortune was first frend and nippen fi
 No man trust vpon his favoure longe
 But haue hit in awaite for evermo
 withoute on alle þe consequences strange
 [No break in the MS.]

Off riche greuous whilom king of lyde ¶ Greus leuit
 Off which greuous. Cirus him sore dradde / iij' capitulo
 þet was he caught amyldes al his pride / ij' de spira
 And to þe fuyr to brenne him men him ladde / phitaneus ha
 But such a rayn down fro þe heuen schadde¹ / bende octas
 That alough þe fuyr and made him to eschape / iij' liro Re
 But to be war yett grace noon he hadde / gum capitulo
 Til fortune on þe galwes made him gape / primo
 3924

Whan he was eschaped he couþe nouzt/ stent
 For to bygynne a newe werre agayn
 he wende wel for þat fortune him sent
 Such hap þat he eschaped þurgh þe rayn 3928
 That of his foes he mighte not be slayn
 And eek't a sweuen vpon a night he mette
 Of which he was so proud and eek't so fayn



GROUP B. § 12. MONK'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 557

SIX-TEXT 280

The tree quod sche þe galwes is to mene
And Iubiter likenith snow and rayn
And phebus with his towail so clene
Tho ben þe sonne stremes soþ to sayn 3944
Thow schalt enhangid ben fader certayn
Rayn schal þe wasch and sonne schal þe drye
Thus warned sche him ful plat and ek ful playn
his doughter which þat called was phanie 3948

And hanged was Gresus þis proude king
his real tour might him not auaille /
Tegredis ne noon oþer maner þing
Ne can in I synge crie ny biwayle 3952
But for þat fortune wil alway assayle
wiþ vnwar strook þe regnes þat ben proude
For whan men trusteth hir than wil sche failo
And couer hir brighte face with a clowde 3956
¶ Here endep þe monk his tale

[No break in the MS.]



þat on þour bridil hong' on euery syde
By heuen king' þat for vs alle dyde
I schold er þis han falle down for sleep
Al þough þe slough had neuer ben so deep 3988
Than had þour tale. haue be told in vayn
For certeynly as þese clerkes sayn
wher as a man may haue noon audience
Nought helpith it to tellen his sentence 3992
And wel I wot þe substance is in me
If eny þing' schal wel reported be
Sir say som what of huntyng' I þow pray [700/282]
Nay quod þe monk' I haue no lust' to play 3996
Now let' another telle as I haue told //
Than spak' our ost' wiþ rude speche and bold //
And said vnto the nonnes prest anoon //
Come ner þou prest'. come ner þou sir Iohn //
Come ner þou prest'. come ner þou sir Iohn //
Tel vs such þing' as may our hertes glade 4000
Be bliþe al þough þou ryde vpon a iade //
what' þough þin hors be boþe foul and lone //
If he wil serue þe rek' not a bene // 4004
lok' þat þin hert' be mery euer mo //
þis sire þis hoste. also mot I go //
But I be mery I-wis I wol be blamed //
And right' anoon he hap' his tale tamyd // 4008
And þus he sayd vnto vs euerich oon //
This sweete prest this goodly man sir Iohn

¶ Explicit
prologue

[No break in the MS.]



His vois was merier þan þe mery Orgon
On masse dayes þat in þe chirche goon
wel sikerer was his crowyng in his logge
þan is a Clok' or an abbay Orologge 4044
By nature knew he ech ascensioun
Of equinoxial in þilke toun
For whan degrees fyftene were ascendid
Thanne crew he it might not ben amendid 4048
His comb was redder þan þe fyn coral
And batayld as it were a castel wal
his bile was blak' and as þe geet it schon
lik' asur were. his legges and his ton 4052
His nayles whitter þan þe lily flour
And lik' þe burnischit gold was his colour
This gentil cok' had in his gouernaunce
Seuen hennes for to do al his plesaunce 4056
whiche were his sustres and his paramoures
And wonder lik' to him as of coloures
Of whiche þe fairest hiewed on hir prote
was cleped fayre damysel pertilote 4060
Curteys sche was discret and debonaire
And companable and bar hir self ful faire
Syn þilke day þat sche was seuen 3or old
That sche hap trewely þe hert in hold 4064
Of chaunteclere loken in euery lith
He loued hir so þat wel him was þer-with
But such a ioye was it to here him synge
whan þat þe bryghte sonne gan to springe 4068
In swete accord my lief is faren on londe
Fro þilke tyme as I haue vnderstonde
Bestis and briddes cowde speke and synge
And so byfel þat in a dawenyng 4072
As Chaunteclere amongt his wyues alle /
Sat on his perche þat was in his halle
And next him sat þis faire pertelote
This Chauntecler gan gromen in his prote 4076

As man þat in his dreem is drecched sore /
 And whan þat Pertelot þus herd him rore
 Sche was agast and sayde herte deere
 what eylith ȝow to grone in þis manere 4080
 ȝe ben a verray sleper fy for schame
 And he answerd and sayde þus ma dame
 I pray ȝow þat ȝe take it nouȝt agreef
 By god me mette I was in such meschief 4084
 Right now þat ȝit myn hert/ is sore afrighȝt
 Now god quod he my sweuen rede arighȝt
 And keep my body out of foul prisoun
 Me mette how þat I romed vp and down 4088
 wiȝinne oure ȝerd wher as I saugh a beest/
 was lik an hound and wold haue maad arrest/
 Vpon my body and wold han had me deed
 His colour was bitwixe ȝolow and reed 4092
 And tipped was his tail and boȝe his eeres
 with blak/. vnlik þe remenaunt of his heres
 His snouwȝ was smal with glowyngȝ yen tweye
 ȝet of his look/ for fer almost I deye 4096
 This caused me my gronyngȝ douteles
 A way quod sche. fy on ȝow herteles
 Allas quod sche for by þat god aboue
 Now haue ȝe lost myn hert and al my loue 4100
 I can nought loue a coward by my feith
 For certis what so eny womman seith
 we alle desiren if it mighte be



Sweuens engendrid ben of replecciouns
And often of fume and of complexiouns
whan humours ben to abundaunt in a wight
Certes pis dreem which 3e han met to-night 4116
Comeþ of þe grete superfluite
Of 3oure reede Colera parde
which causeth folk to dremen in here dremes
Of arwes and of fuyr with reede beemes 4120
Of rede bestis þat þai wil him byte /
Of Contek and of whelpis greet and lite
Right as þe humour of malencolie
Causeþ in sleep ful many a man to crye 4124
For fere of beres or of boles blake
Or elles blake deuueles wol hem take
Of oþer humours couþe I telle also
That wirken many a man in slep ful woo 4128
But I wol passe as light[ly] as I can
lo Catoun which þat was so wis a man
Sayde he nouȝt þus ne do no force of dremes
Now sire quod sche whan we fle fro þise beemes 4132
For goddis loue as tak som laxatyf
Vp peril of my soule and of my lyf
I counsel 3ow þe best I wol not lye
[. 4136
. *no gap in the MS.*]
Though in þis toun is noon apotecarie
I schal my-self tuo herbes techyn 3ow
That schal be for 3our hele and for 3oure prow 4140
And in oure 3erd þo herbes schal I fynde
The whiche han of her proprete by kynde
To purgen 3ow byneþe and eak aboue
Forget not þis for goddis oughne loue 4144
3e ben ful colerik of complexioun
ware þe sonne in his ascencioun
Ne fynd 3ow not/ replet in humours hote
And if it do I dar wel lay a grote [leaf 340] 4148

That 3e schul haue a feuer terciane
 Or an agu þat may be 3oure bane
 A day or tuo 3e schul haue digestiues
 Of wormes er 3e take 3our laxatiues 4152
 Of lauriol Century and fumytene
 Or elles of Elder bery þat growith þere /
 Of Catapus or of gaytre berijs
 Of erbe yue groweþ in our 3erd þer mery is 4156
 Pike hem vpright as þay growe and et hem In
 Be mery housbond for 3our fader kyn
 Dredip non dremes I can say no more
 Ma dame quod he graunt mercy of 3our lore 4160
 But napeles as touching daun Catoun
 That hath of wisdom such a gret renoun
 Though þat he bad no dremes for to drede
 By god men may in olde bookes rede 4164
 Of many a man more of auctorite
 That euer catoun was so mot I the
 That al þe reuers sayn of his sentence
 And han wel founden by experience 4168
 That dremes ben significaciouns
 As wel of ioye as of tribulaciouns
 That folk enduren in þis lif present
 Ther nedeth make of þis noon argument 4172
 The verray preue schewith it in dede
 Oon of þe grettest auctorite þat men rede
 Saith þus þat whilom tway felawes wente
 On pylgrimage in a ful good entente / 4176
 And happed so þay com in to a toun
 wher as þer was such congregacioun
 Of people and eek so streyt of herbergage
 þat þay fond nouȝt as moche as oon cotage / 4180
 In which þat þay might boþe I-logged be
 wherfor þay mosten of necessity
 As for þat night depart her campaignye
 And ech of hera goþ to his hostelrye 4184



And took' his loggyng' as it wolde falle
That oon of hem was loggid in a stalle [leaf 240, back]
Fer in a 3erd with oxen of þe plough
That oþer man was logged wel ynough 4188
As was his aduenture or fortune
That vs governith alle in comune
And so bifel þat long' er it were day
This oon met' in his bed þer as he lay 4192
how þat his felaw gan vpon him calle
And sayd alas for in an oxe stalle /
This night I schal be murdrid þer I lye
Now help me deere broþer or I dye 4196
In alle cum to me he sayde
This man out of his slep for fer abrayde
But whan þat he was waked out of his sleep
he torned him and took' of þis no keep 4200
him þought' him dreem nas but a vanite /
Thus twies in his sleepe dremed he
And at/ þe þridde tyme 3et his felawe
Com as him þought' and sayd I am now slawe 4204
Bihold my bloody woundes deep and wyde
Arise vp erly in þe morwe tyde /
And at the west gate of þe toun quod he /
A cart' of donge þere schalt' þou see 4208
In which my body is hyd priuely
Do þilke cart' arresten boldely
My gold caused my mouldre soþ to sayn
And told him euery poynt how he was slayn 4212
with a ful pitous face pale of hewe
And truste wel his dreem he fond ful trewe /
For on þe morwe as sone as it was day
To his felawes In he took' þe way 4216
And whan þat he cam to þis oxe stalle
After his felaw he bigan to calle /
The hostiller answered him anoon
And sayde sire 3our felaw is agoon 4220

Als soone as day he went/ out of þe toun
 This man gan falle in a suspeccioun
 Remembring on his dremes þat he mette /
 And forth he goth no lenger wold he lette [leaf 241] 4224
 Vnto þe west gate of þe toun and fond
 A dong' cart went as it were to donge lond
 That was arrayed in þe same wise
 As 3e han herd þe deede man deuise / 4228
 And with an hardy hert he gan to crie
 Vengeaunce and iustice of þis felonye
 My felaw mordrid is þis same night
 And in þis carte. he lith heer vpright 4232
 I crye out on þe ministres quod he /
 That schulde kepe and reule þis Cite
 harrow allas her lith my felaw slayn
 what schold I more vnto þis tale sayn 4236
 The peple vpstert and caste þe carte to grounde /
 And in þe myddes of þe dong' þay founde
 The dede man þat mordred was al newe /
 O blisful god þou art ful iust and trewe 4240
 Lo how þow bywreyest mordre al day
 Mordre wil out certes it is no nay
 Morder is so wlatson and abhominable
 To god that is so iust and resonable 4244
 That he ne wold nouȝt suffre it hiled be
 Though it abyde a 3eer or tuo or þre
 Morder wil out þis is my conclusioun
 And right anon þe mynistres of þat toun 4248
 Han hent þe carter and so sore him pyned
 And eek the hostiller so sore engyned
 That þay biknew her wikkednes anon
 And were anhonged by þe nekke boon 4252
 Here may men se þat dremys ben to drede
 And Certes in þe same book I rede
 Right in þe nexte Chapitre after þis
 I gabbe nought so haue I ioye or bliss 4256



SIX-TEXT 290
GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S-PRIEST'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 567

Tuo men þat wolde haue passed ouer see /
For certeyn causes in-to fer cuntre
If þat þe wynd ne hadde ben contrarie
That/ made hem in a Cite for to tarie 4260
That stood ful mery vpon an hauen syde /
But on a day agayn þe euen tyde [leaf 241, back]
The wynd gan chaunge and [blew] right as him list
Iolyf and glad þey wenten vnto rest 4264
And casten hem ful erly for to sayle
But herkneþ to þat oon man fel a gret meruayle
That oon of hem in his slepyng as he lay
him met a wonder drem a-gayn þe day 4268
him þought a man stood by his beddes syd
And him comaunded þat he schuld abyde
And sayd him þus if þou to morwe wende
Thow schalt be dreynt my tale is at an ende 4272
¶ He wook and told his felaw what he mette
And prayde him his viage to lette
As for þat day he prayd him to abyde
his felaw þat lay by his beddis syde 4276
Gan to lawgh and scorned him ful fast
No drem quod he may so myn herte gaste /
That I wil lette for to do my þinges
I sette not a straw by þy dremynges 4280
For sweuens been but vanitees and iapes
Men dreme al day of owles and of apes
And eke of many a mase þer with al
Men dreme of þinges þat neuer be schal 4284
But sith I see þat þou wilt her abyde /
And þus forslouthe wilfully þy tyde
God wot it reweth me and haue good day
And þus he took his leue and went his way 4288
But er he hadde half his cours I-sayled
Noot I nouȝt why. ne what meschaunce it ayled
But casuelly þe schippes bothom rent
And schip and man vnder þe watir went 4292

In sight of oþer schippes þer byside
 That with him sailed at þe same tyde
 And þefore faire pertelot so deere
 By such ensamples olde maistow leere 4296
 That no man scholde be to recheles
 Of dremes for I say þe douteles
 That many a dreem ful sore is for to drede
 Lo in þe lif of seint/ kenelm I rede [leaf 242] 4300
 That was kenulphus sone þat noble king
 Of mertinrike how kenilm mette a þing
 A lutil he was mordred vpon a day
 His mordre in his auysiou he say 4304
 His norice him expounded euerydel
 His sweuen and bad him for to kepe him wel
 For traisoun for he nas but seuen 3er old
 And þefore litel tale haþ he told 4308
 Of eny drem so holy was his hert
 By god I hadde leuer þan my schert
 þat 3e had rad his legend as haue I
 Dame pertelot I say 3ow trewely 4312
 Macrobius þat writ þe auisioun
 In auffrik of þe worþy Cipioun
 Affermeþ dremes and saith þat þay been
 Warnyng of þinges þat men after seen 4316
 And forþermore I pray 3ow lokeþ wel
 In þe olde testament of Daniel
 If he huld dremes eny vanyte /
 Rede eek of Ioseph and þer schal 3e see / 4320
 whepir dremes ben som tyme I say noughit alle
 warnyng of þinges þat schul after falle
 Lok of Egipt þe king daun pharao
 his baker and his botiler also 4324
 whethir þay felte noon effect in dremis
 who-so wol seke actes of sondry remys
 May rede of dremes many a sondry þing
 Lo Cresus which þat was of lydes king 4328



Mette þat' he sat' vpon a tre
which signified he schuld hanged be /
Lo hir andromachia Ectors wif
That' day þat' Ector schulde lese his lif 4332
Sche dremed on þe same night' byforn
how þat' þe lif of Ector schulde be lorn
If pilke day he wente to batayle /
Sche warned him but it might' nouȝt' auaile / 4336
He wente forþ to fighte napeles
But he was slayn anoon of achilles [leaf 212, back]
But pilke tale is al to long' to telle/
And eek/ it is neigh day I may not' duelle 4340
Schortly I say as for conclusioun
That' I schal haue of þis auisioun
Aduersite and I say forþermore
That' I ne telle of laxatifs no store 4344
For þay ben venemous I wot' it' wel
I hem defye I loue hem neuer a del
Now let' vs speke of mirthle and lete al þis
Madame pertilot' so haue I blis 4348
Of o þing' god haþ me sent large grace
For whan I see þe beaute of þour face
þe ben so scarlet' hiew about' þour eyȝen
hit' makith al my drede for to deyȝen 4352
For als siker as In principio
Mulier est' hominis confusio
Madame þe sentence of þis latyn is
womman is mannes ioȝe and mannes blis 4356
For when I fiele a-night' þour softe syde /
Al be it' þat' I may not' on þou ryde
For þat' þour perche is mad so narrow allas /
I am so ful of ioȝe and solas 4360
That' I defye boþ sweuen and drem
And with þat' word he fleigh down fro þe beem
For it was day and eek' his hennes alle
with a chuk'. he gan hem for to calle / 4364

For he had found a corn lay in þe 3^{er}d
 Real he was he was nomore aferd
 he fetherid pertelote . twenty tyme
 And trad as ofte er þat it was prime 4368
 he lokith as it were a grim lioun
 And on his toon he romeþ vp and down
 him deyneth not to set his foot to grounde
 And chukkiþ whan he haþ a corn I-founde 4372
 And to him rennen þan his wifes alle
 Thus real as a prince is in his halle
 ¶ Leue I þis Chauntecler in his pasture
 And after wol I telle his aduenture [14a/215] 4376
 whan þat þe moneth in which þe world bigan
 That highte march whan god maked first man
 was complet and passed were also
 Syn march bygan tway monþes and dayes tuo 4380
 Byfeþ þat Chauntecler in al his pride
 His seuen wyues walkyng by his syde
 Cast vp his eyzen to þe brighte sonne
 That in þe signe of Taurus had I-ronne 4384
 Twenty degrees and oon and som what more
 And knew by kynde and by noon oþer lore
 þat it was prime and crew with blisful steuen
 The sonne he sayde . is clomben vpon heuen 4388
 Twenty degrees and oon and som what more I-wis
 Ma dame pertelot my worldes blis



This story is also trewe I vndertake
As þe book' is of Launcelot' þe lake
That' womman huld in ful gret' reuerence
Now wol I torne agayn to my sentence 4404
A Colefox ful / sleigh of iniquite
That' in þe groue had woned ȝeres þre
By heigh ymaginacioun forncast'
The same nighte þurgh þe hegge brast' 4408
In to þe ȝerd þer Chaunteclere þe faire
was went' and eek' his wyues to repaire
And in a bed of' wortes stille he lay
Til it was passed vndern of' þe day 4412
waytyng' his tyme on Chaunteclere to falle /
As gladly doon þese homicides alle [leaf 213, back]
That' in awayte lyn to morthier men
O false mordrer lurkyng' in þy den 4416
O newe Scariot newe Genilon
Fals dissimilour. greke Synon
That' broughtest' troye al outrelly to sorwo
O Chauntecler. O cursed be þe morwe 4420
That' þou in to þe ȝerd flough fro þe bemys
Thow were ful wel I-warned by þy dremys
That' þilke day was perilous to þe
But' what' þat' god forwot' most' needes be / 4424
After þe opynyoun of' certeyn clerkis
witnesses on him þat' eny clerk is
That' in scole is gret' altercacioun
In þis matier and gret' desputesoun 4428
And hath ben of' an hundred þousend men
But' ȝit' I can not. bult' it to þe bren
As can þe holy doctor augustyn
Or boece. or þe bisshop Bradwardyn 4432
Wheþer þat' goddis worpy forwetyng'
Streigneth me needely for to do a þing'
Needely clepe I simple necessite
Or elles. if' fre choys be graunted me 4436

To do þat same þing' or to do it nouȝt
 Though god forwot it er þat it was wrought
 Or of his wityng' streyneþ neuer a deel
 But by necessite condicionel 4440
 I wol not haue to do of such matiere
 My tale is of a Cok' as ȝe schal hiere
 That took' his counseil of his wyf' with sorwe /
 To walken in þe ȝerd vpon þe morwe 4444
 That he had met þe dreame þat I tolde
 wymmens counseiles ben fulofte colde
 wommannes counseil brouȝt vs first to woo
 And made adam fro paradys to go 4448
 Ther as he was ful mery and wel at ease
 But for I not' to him it might displease
 If I counseil of womman wolde blame
 Pas ouer for I sayd it in my game [leaf 211] 4452
 Red auctours wher þay trete of such matiere
 And what þay sayn of wommen ȝe may heere
 These ben þe cokkes wordes and not myne
 I can / noon harme / of wommen diuine / 4456
 Faire in þe sond to baþe hir merily
 lith pertelot and alle hir sustres by
 Agayn þe sonne and Chaunteclere so free
 Sang merier þan þe meremayd in þe see 4460
 For phisiologus seith sicurly
 how þat þay syngen wel and merily



he wold han fled but þat þe fox anon
Said gentil sire / allas why wol 3e goon
Be 3e affrayd of me þat am 3oure frend
Certes I were worse þan any feend 4476
If I to 3ow wold harm or vilonye
I am nouȝt come 3our counsail to espye
[.
. no gap in the MS.] 4480
But trewely 3e haue als mery a steuen
As eny aungel hath þat is in heuen
Ther wiþ 3e han in musik' more felynge
Than had Boece or eny þat can synge 4484
My lord 3our fader god his soule blesse /
And 3oure moder of her gentilesse
han in myn hous I-been to my gret ease
And Certes sire ful fayn wold I 3ow please 4488
But for men speke of syngyng' I wol say
So mot' I brouke wel myn yen tway
Saue 3e I herde neuer man so synge
As dede 3our fadir in þe morwenyng' [leaf 241, back] 4492
Certes it was of hert' al þat he song'
And for to make his vois þe more strong'
he wold so peynen him þat wiþ boþe his yen
he moste wynke so lowde he wolde crien 4496
And stonden on his typtoon þer wiþ al
And streche forth his necke long' and smal
And eek/ he was of such discessioun
That þer nas no man in no regioun 4500
That him in song' or wisdom mighte passe
I haue wel rad in Daun Burnel thasse
Among' his verses how þer was a Cok'
For a prestes sone ȝaf him a knok' 4504
vpon his leg' whil he was 3ong' and nyce
He made him for to lese his benefice
But certeyn þer is no comparisoun
Bitwix þe wisdom and discessioun 4508

Of þoure fader and of his subtilte
 Now syngeþ sire for scinte charite
 let so can ȝe ȝour fader countrefete
 This Chanteclere his wynges gan to beto 4512
 As man that couþe his tresoun nouȝt espye
 So was he ranysht wip his flaterie
 Allas lordynges many a fals flatour
 Is in ȝour hous and many a losengour 4516
 That pleasen ȝow wel more by my faith
 Than he þat soþfastnesse vnto ȝow saith
 Rediþ Ecclesiast of flaterie
 Beþ war ȝe lordes of her treccherie / 4520
 This Chaunteclere stood heihe vpon his toos
 Strecching his necke and his yhen cloos
 And gan to crowe lowde for þe noones/
 And daun Russel þe fox stert vp at oones 4524
 And by þe garget hente Chaunteclere
 And on his bak toward þe woode him bere
 For ȝit was þere / no man þat him sewed
 O desteny þat maist not ben eschiewed 4528
 Allas þat Chaunteclere fleigh fro þe bemis
 Allas his wif roughete nouȝt of dremis [leaf 265]
 And on a friday fel al þis meschaunce
 O venus þat art god of pleasaunce 4532
 Syn þat þy seruant was þis Chaunteclere
 And in þy seruice did al his powere



Certis such cry ne lamentacioun
was neuer of ladies maad whan Ilioun
was wonne and pirrus with his strit' sward
whan he hente kyng' priam by þe berd 4518
And slough him as saith vs Eneydos
As maden alle þe hennes in þe clos
whan þay had sayn of Chauntecler þe sight'
Nought' soueraignly . dam pertelote schright' 4552
Ful lowder þan did hasdrubaldes wyf'
whan þat' hir housebond had lost/ his lyf'
And þat' þe Romayns had I-brent' Cartage
Sche was so ful of torment' and of rage / 4556
That' wilfully vnto þe fuyr sche stert
And brend hir seluen with a stedfast' hert
O woful hennes right' so cride 3e
As whan þat' Nero brente þe cite 4560
Of Rome criden þe senatoures wyues
For þat' her housbondes losten alle here lyues
wipouten gult þis nero hath hem slayn
Now wol I torne to my matier agayn 4564
¶ The sely wydow and hir doughtres tuo
herden þese hennys crie and maken wo
And out' at dores starte þay anoon
And sayden þe fox toward þe woode is goon [17215, 24] 4568
And bar vpon his bak' þe cok' away
And criden out' harrow and wayleway
ha . ha . þe fox and after him þay ran
And eek' with staues many anoper man 4572
Ran Colle our dogge and talbot' and Garlond
And Malkyn wip a distaf' in hir hond
Ran cow and calf' and þe verray hoggoes
So were þey fered for berkyng' of dogges 4576
And schowtyng' of þe men and wymmen eke
þay ronne þat' þay þought' her herte breke
Thay 3elleden as feeldes doon in helle
The dokes criden as men wold hem quelle 4580

The gees for fere flowen ouer þe trees
 Out of þe hyues cam þe swarm of bees
 So hidous was þe noyse a benedicite
 Certes þough lakke straw and his meyne 4584
 Ne maden schoutes neuer half so schrille
 whan þat þay wolden eny flemyng kille /
 As þilke day was maad vpon þe fox
 Of bras þay brough hornes and of box 4588
 Of horn of boon in which þay blew and powped
 And þer with al thay schryked and þay howped
 It semed as þat heuen schulde falle
 Now goode men I pray herknep alle / 4592
 lo how fortune torneþ sodeinly
 The hope and pride eek of her enuy
 This Cok þat lay vpon þis foxes bak
 In al his drede vnto the fox he spak 4596
 And saide sire if þat I were as þe
 3et schuld I sayn as wis god helpe me
 Turnep azein þe proude cherles alle
 A verray pestilens vpon þow falle / 4600
 Now am I come vnto þis woodes syde /
 Maugre þoure heed þe Cok / schal heer abyde
 I wol him ete in faith and þat anon
 The Fox answerd in faith it schal be doon 4604
 And whil he spak þat word al sodeinly
 This Cok brak from his mouth delyuerly [100/244]



GROUP B. § 14. NUN'S-PRIEST'S TALE. SIX-TEXT 300
Harleian 7334. 577

And first I schrew my self boþe blood and boones
If þou bigile me. any ofter þan oones
Thou schalt no more þurgh þy flaterye
Do me to synge and wynke with myn ye 4620
For he þat wynkith whan he scholde se
Al wilfully god let him neuer the
Nay quod þe Fox but god ȝiue him meschaunce /
þat is so vndiscret of gouernaunce / 4624
þat iangleth whan he scholde holde his pees
Lo such it is for to be recheles
And necligent and trust on flaterie /
But ȝe þat holde / þis tale a folye / 4628
As of a Fox. or of a cok or of an hen
Takith þe moralite goode men
For seint poul saith þat al þat writen is
To oure doctrine it is I-write I-wys 4632
Takith þe fruyt and let þe chaf be stille
Now goode god. if þat it be þy wille
As saith my lor so make vs alle good men
And bring vs alle. to his blisse ameN 4636
¶ Here endep þe tale of Chaunteclere and pertelote

[No break in the MS.]

¶ Here bygynneþ þe prologe of þe maunciples tale

WOt 3e not wher þer stont a litel toun
 which þat' clepéd is Bob vp and down
 vnder þe Ble in Caunterbury way

Ther gan our hoste for to iape and play 4

And sayde sires what' dun is in þe myre

Is þer no man for prayer ne for hyre [leaf 246, back]

Thal wol awake our felawes al by-hynde

A theef' mighte ful lightly robbe and bynde 8

Se how he nappith se for goddes boones

That' he wol falle fro his hors at' ones

Is þat' a Cook' of londoun wiþ meschaunce /

Do him come forth he knoweth his penaunce / 12

For he schal telle a tale by my fay

Al þough it be nouȝt worþ a hotel hay

Awake þou Cook! sitt up god aift þe sorwe



SIX-TEXT 577

GROUP H. § 1. MANCIPLE'S HEAD-LINK. Harleian 7334. 579

¶ wel quod þe maunciple if þat I may doon ease /
To þe sir Cook' and to no wiȝt displease /
which þat her rydeþ in þis compaignye
And our host wolde of his curteisie 28
I wol as now excuse þe of þy tale
For in good faith þi visage is ful pale
þyn eyen daswen eek'. also me þinkith
And wel I woot þy breth ful foule stynkith 32
That scheweþ eek' þou art nought wel disposid
Of me certeyn þou schalt nouȝt ben I-glosed
Se how he ganith. lo þis dronken wight
As þough he wolde swolwe vs anon right 36
hold clos þy mouth by þy fader kynne
The deuel of helle sette his foot þer Inne
Thy cursed breth effecte wil vs alle
Fy stynkyng' swyne foule mot þe falle 40
A. takip heed sires of þis lusty man
Now swete sir. wol ȝe ioust' atte fan
Therto me þinkþ. ȝe beþ right' wel I-schape
I trowe þa ȝe dronken han wyn ape (leaf 247) 44
And þat whan men playen with a straw
And with his speche þe cook' wax angry & wraw
And on þe maunciple bygan he nodde fast
For lak' of speche. and down þe hors him cast 48
wher as he lay til þat men him up took'
This was a fair Chiuahe of a cook'
Allas þat he nad hold him by his ladil
And er þat he agayn were in his sadil 52
Ther was gret' schowuyng' boþe to and fro
To lift' him vp and moche care and wo
So vnwelde was þis sory pallid gost
And to þe maunciple þanne spak' oure host 56
By cause drink' hath dominacioun
Vpon þis man by my sauacioun
I trow he lewedly tel wol his tale
For were it wyn or old moysty ale 60

þat he hæp dronk't. he spekiþ in his nose /
 And fnesith fast'. and eek' he hæp þe pose
 he also to do more þan ynough
 To kepe him and his Capil out of þe slough 64
 And if he falle fro his capil eft' sone:
 þan schal we alle haue ynough to doone
 In lifyng' vp his heuy dronken cors
 Tel on thy tale of him make I no fors 68
 But' 3it' maunciple in faith þou art' to nyce
 Thus openly reproeue him of his vice
 Anoper day he wil par aduenture
 Reclayme þe and bringe þe to lure 72
 I mene he speke wol of smale þinges
 As for to pynchyn at þy rekenynges
 That' were not' honest' if it cam to pref'
 Quod þe maunciple þat' were a gret' meschief' 76
 So might' he lightly bringe me in þe snare
 3it' had I leuer payen for þe mare
 which he ryt' on. þan he schulde with me stryue
 I wil not' wrath him al so mot' I þriue 80
 That' at I spak' I sayd it in my bourde
 And wite 3e what' I haue heer in a gourde [leaf 247, back]
 A draught' of wyn. is of a ripe grape /
 And right' anon 3e schal se a good iape 84
 þis Cook' schal drinke þer-of if I may
 vp peyn of deth he wol nou3t' say me nay
 And certainly to tellen as it was /



SIX-TEXT 579
GROUP H. § 1. MANCIPLE'S HEAD-LINK. Harleian 7334. 581

For þat wol torne rancour and desese
To accord and loue and many racour pese /
O þou bacus I-blessid be þin name
That so canst torne earnest in to game 100
worschip and þonke . be to þy deite
Of þat matier ȝe get no more of me
Tel on þi tale mauncipel I þe pray
wel sir quod he . now herkyn what I say ¶ Narrat 104

[No break in the MS.]

Whan phebus duelt her in þis erþe a doun
 As olde bookes maken menciouun
 He was þe moste lusty bachiler
 Of al þis world and eek þe best archer 108
 He slough phiton þe serpent as he lay
 Slepyng agayn þe sonne vpon a day
 And many another noble worþy dede
 He with his bowe wrought as men may rede / 112
 Pleyen he couþe on euery mynstralcy
 And syngen þat it was a melodye
 To heren of his cleere vois þe soun
 Certes þe kyng of Thebes amphioun 116
 That with his singyng wallid þat citee
 Couþe neuer synge half so wel as he /
 Ther-to he was þe semlieste man
 That is or was sippen þe world bigan [leaf 240] 120
 what nedip it his fortune to descriue
 For in þis worlde is noon such on lyue



SIX-TEXT 581
GROUP H. § 2. MANCIPLE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 583

whit' was þis crowe as is a snow-whyt swan
And countrefete the speche of euery man
he couþe whan he schulde telle a tale
Ther is wipinne þis world no nightingale 136
Ne couþe by an hundred þousend del
Singe so wonder merily and wel
Now had þis phebus in his hous a wyf
which þat' he loued. more þan his lif 140
And night' and day. did euermor diligence /
hir for to please. and doon hir reuerence
Sauf' oonly if þe soþ þat' I schal sayn
Ialous he was and wold haue kept hir fayn 144
For him were loth biiaþed for to be /
And so is euery wight' in such degre
But' al for nough't for it auailleth nouȝt
A good wyf þat' is clene of werk' and thought 148
Schuld not' be kept' in noon awayt certayn
And trewely þe labour is in vayn
To kepe a schrewe for it wil nough't be
This hold I for a verray nycete 152
To spille labour for to kepe wyues
Thus olde clerkes writen in her lyues
But' now to purpos as I first' bigan
This worþi phebus dop al þat' he can 156
To plesen hir wenyng' by such plesaunce /
And for his manhod and his gouernaunce [leaf 248, back]
That' no man schuld han put him fro hir grace
But' god it' woot'. þer may no man embrace 160
As to destroy a þing'. þe which nature
hap' naturelly. set' in a creature
Tak' any brid and put him in a cage
And do al þin entent and þy corrage 164
To foster it tenderly wip mete and drynk'
And wip alle þe deyntees þou canst' þink'
And keep it' al so kyndly as þou may
Al þough his cage of gold be neuer so gay 168

3it hap þis brid by twenty þousand fold
 Leuer to be . in forest wyd and cold
 Gon ete wormes and such wrecchidnes
 For euer þis brid wil doon his busynes 172
 To scape out of his cage whan he may
 his liberte þe brid desireth ay
 let take a cat and foster him wel wip mylk/
 And tender fleisch and mak' his bed of silk/ 176
 And let him see a mous go by þe wal
 Anoon he wayueth mylk' and fleisch and al
 And euery deynte which is in þat hous
 Such appetit hap he to ete þe mous 180
 lo heer hap lust' his dominacioun
 And appetit . flemeth discr[e]scioun
 Also a sche wolf hap a vilayns kynde /
 The lewigest' . wolf þat sche may fynde 184
 Or lest' of reputacioun him wol sche take
 In tyme whan hir lust/ to haue a make/
 Alle þis ensamples . tel I by þis men
 That' ben vntrewe and no þing' by wommen 188
 For men han euer a licorous appetit
 On lower þing' to parforme her delit
 Than on her wyues ben þay neuer so faire
 Ne neuer so trewe ne so debonaire 192
 Fleissch is so newfangil with meschaunce
 That' we can in no þinge haue plesaunce



GROUP H. § 2. MANCIPLE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. SIX-TEXT 583
585

hir lemman certes. þis is a knauisch speche
Forziueþ it me and þat I ȝow biseche
The wise plato saith as ȝe may rede
þe word not' neede accorde wiþ þe dede 208
If men schal telle properly a þing'
The word not' corde wiþ þe þing' werkyng'
I am a boystous [man] right thus say I
There is no difference trewely 212
Bytwix a wyf þat is of heigh degre /
If of hir body dishonest' sche be
And a pore wenche oper þen þis
If so be þay werke boþe amys 216
But the gentil in estat' aboue
Sche schal be cleped his lady as in loue
And for þat' oper is a pore womman
Sche schal be cleped his wenche and his lemman 220
And god it wot my goode lieue broþer
Men layn þat' oon as lowe as þat' oper
Right' so betwixe atticles tirant
And an outlawe or a þef' erraunt 224
The same I say þer is no difference
To alisaunder told was þis sentence
þat' for þe tiraunt is of gretter might
Bi force of meyne for to sle doun right 228
And brenne hous and home and make al playn
Lo þerfor is he cleped a Captayn
And for an outlawe haþ so smal meyne
And may not' doon so gret an harm as he 232
Ne bringe a contre to so gret meschief' /
Men clepen him an outlawe or a þeef' [leaf 240, back]
But' for I am a man not' texted wel
I wil not' telle of textes neuer a del 236
I wol go to my tale as I bigan
whan phebus wyf had sent' for hir lemman
Anon þay wrouȝten al her wil volage
This white crow / þat' heng' alway in cage 240

Bihiid her werk' and sayde neuer a word
 And whan þat' hom was come phebus þe lord
 This Crowe song'. Cuckow . Cockow . Cuckow
 what' bird quod phebus what' song' syngistow 244
 Ne were þou wont' so merily to synge
 That' to myn hert' it was a reioysynge
 To here þi vois . allas what' song' is þis
 By god quod he I synge not' amys 248
 Phebus quod he for al þy worþynes
 For al þy beaute and þy gentiles
 For alle þy songes and þy menstralcie /
 For al þy waytyng' blered is þin ye / 252
 with oon of litel reputacioun
 Nought' worth to þe as in comparisoun
 The mountauns of' a gnat' so mot' I þriue
 For on þy bed þy wif' I saugh him swyue 256
 what' wol 3e more þe crowe anon him tolde /
 By sadde toknes and by wordes bolde
 how þat' his wyf' had doon hir lecherie
 him to gret' schame and to gret' vilonye 260
 And told him oft/ he saugh it wip his yen
 This phebus gan awayward for to wryen
 him þought' his sorwful herte brast' on tuo
 his bowe he bent' and sett' þer-In a flo 264
 And in his ire he haþ his wif' I-slayn
 þis is þeffect þer is no more to sayn
 For sorw of which he brak' his menstralceye
 Boþe harp . giter . and sauterie 268
 And eek' he brak' his arwes and his bowe
 And after þat' þus spak' he to þe crowe
 Traytour quod he wip tunge of' scorioun
 Thow hast' me brought' to my confusioun [leaf 250] 272
 Allas þat' I was born why nere I deed
 O dere wyf' O gemme of' lustyhed
 That' were to me so sad and eek' so trewe
 New list þou deed with face pale of' hewe 276



GROUP H. § 2. MANCIPLE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. SIX-TEXT 585
587

Ful gulteles þat dorst I swere I-wis
O racle hond to do so foule amys
O trouble wit O Ire recheles
That vnaused smytet gulteles 280
O wantrust ful of fals suspeccioun
wher was þy wit and þy discrecioun
O euery man be war of racle nesse
Ne trowe no þing wipoute gret witesse 284
Smyt nouȝt to soone. er þat þou wite why /
And be auysed wel and sobrelly
Er ȝe doon eny execucioun
Vpon ȝour Ire for suspeccioun 288
Allas a þousand folk hap racle Ire
Fordoon. or dun hath brouȝt hem in þe myre
Allas for sorw / I wil my seluen sle
And to þe crowe o false þeef sayd he 292
I wyl þe quyt anoon þy false tale /
Thow songe whilom as any nightyngale /
Now schaltow false þeef þy song forgoon
And eek þy white fetheres euerich oon 296
Ne neuer in al þy lyf ne schaltow speke
Thus schal men on a fals þeef ben a-wreke
Thou and þin o[f]spring euer schuln be blake
Ne neuer sweete noyse schul ȝe make 300
But euer crye agayn tempest and rayn
In tokenyng þat þurgh þe my wyf was slayn
And to þe crowe he stert and þat anoon
And puld his white feþeres euerychoon 304
And made him blak and raft him al his song
And eek his speche and out at dore him slong
vnto þe deuel which I him bytake
And for þis cause ben alle crows blake 308
Lordyngs by þis ensample I ȝow pray
Beth war and takeþ kepe what ȝe say / [leaf 250, back]
Ne tellith neuer man in al ȝoure lif
how þat anoþer man hap dight his wyf 312

he wol þou hatin mortelly certeyn
 Daun Salamon as wise clerkes seyn
 Techeþ a man to kepe his tonge wel
 But as I sayd. I am nought tixted wel 316
 But, napeles þus taughte me my dame
 My sone thenk' on þe crowe in goddes name
 My son keep wel þy tonge and kep þy frend
 A wicked tonge. is worse þan a feend 320
 My sone fro a feend men may hem blesse
 My sone god of his endeles goodnesse
 wallid a tonge wiþ teþ and lippes eek'
 For man schal him auyse what he speak' 324
 My sone ful ofte for to mochil speche /
 haþ many a man be spilt' as clerkes teche
 But for a litil speche auisily
 Is no man schent to speke generally 328
 My sone þy tonge scholdest þou restreigne
 At alle tyme but whan þou dost þy peyne /
 To speke of god in honour and prayere
 The firste vertu sone if þou wilt lere 332
 Is to restreigne and kepe wel þy tonge
 Thus lerne clerkes whan þat þay ben 3onge
 My sone of mochil speking' euel auised
 Ther lasse speking' had ynough suffised 336
 Comeþ mochil harm þus was me told and taught
 In mochil speche synne wantiþ nought



GROUP H. § 2. MANCIPLE'S TALE. Harleian 7334. SIX-TEXT 587
589

The flemyng' saip and lere it if þe lest' /
That litil iangling causeþ mochi rest'
My sone if þou no wikked word hast' sayd
The thar not drede for to be bywrayd 352
But he þat haþ mys sayd I dar wel sayn
he may by no way clepe his word agayn
Thing' þat is sayd . is sayd . and forþ it goþ
Though him repent or be him neuer so loþ 356
He is his þral to whom þat/ he haþ sayd
A tale of which he is now yuel a payd
My sone be war and be noon auctour newe /
Of tydyngs wheþer þay ben fals or trewe / 360
wher-so þou comest' amonges heih or lowe /
kep wel þy tonge / and thenk' vpon þe crowe
¶ Here endith þe tale of þe crowe

[No break in the MS.]

he wol þou hatin mortelly certeyn
 Daun Salamon as wise clerkes seyn
 Techeþ a man to kepe his tonge wel
 But as I sayd. I am nought tixted wel 316
 But, napeles þus taughte me my dame
 My sone thank on þe crowe in goddes name
 My son keep wel þy tonge and kep þy frend
 A wicked tonge. is worse þan a feend 320
 My sone fro a feend men may hem blesse
 My sone god of his endeles goodnesse
 wallid a tonge wiþ teeþ and lippes eek
 For man schal him anyse what he speak 324
 My sone ful ofte for to mochil speche /
 haþ many a man be spilt as clerkes teche
 But for a litil speche auisily
 Is no man schent to speke generally 328
 My sone þy tonge scholdest þou restreigne
 At alle tyme but whan þou dost þy peyne /
 To speke of god in honour and prayere
 The firste vertu sone if þou wilt lere 332
 Is to restreigne and kepe wel þy tonge
 Thus lerne clerkes whan þat þay ben 3onge
 My sone of mochil spekinge euel auised
 Ther lasse spekinge had ynough suffised 336
 Comeþ mochil harm þus was me told and taught
 In mochel speche synne wantiþ nought



GROUP 2

The
The
My
The
Bar
he
The
The
H
A
My
V
A

5
5

2

12

6

2

6

6

GROUP I. FRAGMENT X.

§ 1. THE BLANK-PARSON LINK.

¶ And here begynneth the prolōge of þe Persouns tale

By þat þe mannciple had had his tale endid

The sonne fro þe south line is descendid

So lowe þat it nas nouȝt to my sight

Degrees [nyne and twenty as in highit¹] [In a later hand.] 4

Ten on þe Cllokke it was as I gesse /

For enleuen foote or litil more or lesse /

My schadow was at pilk tyme of þe ȝere

Of which feet as my lengþe parted were / 8

In [sixe¹] feet equal of proporcioun

Ther-with þe mones exaltacioun

In mena libra alway gan ascende

As we were entryng at a townes ende 12

For which our host as he was wont to gye

As in þis caas our ioly compaignye

Said in his wise lordings overich con-



SIX-TEXT 590
GROUP I. § 1. BLANK-PARSON LINK. Harleian 7334. 591

For euery man saue þou hath told his tale
vnhocle and schew vs what is in þy male
For trewely me þinkeþ by þy chier
þou scholdist wel knyht vp a gret matier 28
Tel vs a tale anoon for cokkes boones
This persoun answerde al at oones /
Thow getist fable noon I-told for me
For poul þat writes vnto thimothe 32
Repreueþ hem þat weyueþ sothfastnesse
And tellen fables and such wrecchednesse /
why schuld I sowen draf out of my fest/
whan I may sowe whete if þat me lest/ 36
For which I say if þat 3ow lust to hie
Moralite and vertuous matiere
And þanne þat 3e wil 3iue me audience
I wol ful fayn at cristis reuerence 40
Do 3ow plesaunce leful as I can
But trusteþ wel I am a suthern man
I can not geste . rum raf . ruf by letter
Ne god wot rym hold I but litel better 44
And þerfor if 3ow lust I wol not glose
I wol 3ow telle a mery tale in prose /
To knyht vp al this fest and make an ende
And Ihū for his grace wit me sende 48
To schewe 3ow þe way in þis viage
Of þilke parfyt glorious pilgrimage
That hadde Ierusalem celestial
And if 3e vouche sauf anoon I schal 52
Bygynne my tale for which I 3ow pray
Telle 3our avis I can no better say
But napeles þis meditacioun
I put it ay vnder correctioun 56
Of clerkes for I am not textuel
I take but þe sentens trustip wel
Therfor I make protestacioun
That I wol stonde to correccioun [leaf 259] 60

591 SIX-TEXT

592 GROUP I. § 1. BLANK-PARSON LINK. **Harleian 7334.**

Vpon þis word we han assented soone
For as it semed it was for to done
To enden in som vertuous sentence
And for to ȝeue him space and audience 64
And bad oure host he schulde to him say
That alle we to telle his tale him pray
Our host hadde þe wordes for vs alle
Sir prest quod he now faire ȝow bifalle 68
Say what ȝow lust and we wil gladly hie
And wiþ þat word he said in þis manere
Telleþ quod he ȝour meditacioun
But hasteth ȝow þe sonne wol a doun 72
Beþ fructuous and þat / in litil space
And to do wel! God sende ȝow grace /

[*No break in the MS.*]

*(The Page-numbers are those of the Six-Text.)*

THE PARSON'S TALE.

A TREATISE ON PENITENCE, IN 3 PARTS:

Part I. On Penitence, and its 1st requisite Contrition (A) (p. 593—612).

Part II. On its 2nd requisite, Confession (B) (p. 612—679).

Part III. On its 3rd requisite, Satisfaction (C) (p. 679—684), with the Writer's Leave-taking and Retractations (p. 684—85).

PART I. (p. 593—612).

ON PENITENCE, AND ITS 1ST REQUISITE, CONTRITION.

Proem on Jeremiah vi. 16. The Tale is to be on *Penitence* as a full noble way to lead folk to Christ, and is to treat of

- i. 'what is Penitence' (p. 594).
- ii. 'whennes it is cleped Penitence'. [*not in the Tale.*]
- iii. 'in how manye maneres been the acciouns or werkynge of Penitence' (p. 594-5).
- iv. 'how many speses ther been of Penitence' (p. 595).
- v. 'whiche thynges apertenen and bihouen to Penitence' (p. 595—682: nearly all Parts I and III, and all Part II).
- vi. 'whiche thynges destourben Penitence' (at end of Part III, p. 682) (p. 593).
- i. Penitence defined, by *a.* St Ambrose; *b.* 'som doctour'; *c.* the writer. Its requisites: 1. bewailing of sins; 2. purpose to have shrift, to do satisfaction, never to sin again, to continue in good works (p. 594).
- [*ii. not given.*]
- iii. The 3 actions of Penitence: 1. Baptism after sin; 2. not to do deadly sin after baptism; 3. not thus to do venial sin (p. 594-95).
- iv. The 3 speses or kinds of Penitence: 1. Solemn (to be put out of church, or do open penance); 2. Common (to go naked on pilgrimage); 3. Private (p. 595).
- v. The 3 necessities or requisites for Penitence (p. 596—682):
 - A. Contrition of heart (p. 596—612).
 - B. Confession of mouth (Part II, p. 612—679).
 - C. Satisfaction (Part III, p. 679—682).
- Penitence avails against 3 things, by which we wrath Christ (p. 595).
- A. Contrition is the root of Penitence, whose stem bears branches and leaves of Confession, and fruit of Satisfaction.
- Contrition also bears a seed of grace, whose heat draws men to God. (Simile of the child and his nurse's milk.)
- Penance is the tree of life (p. 596).

Four Points to be known about Contrition:

1. What it is; 2. the causes that move a man to it; 3. how to be contrite; 4. what it avails the soul (p. 597).
2. The 6 Causes that should move a man to Contrition:
 - a. Remembrance of Sins (p. 597-8).
 - b. Whoso does sin is the Thrall of Sin (p. 598-99).
 - c. Dread of the Day of Doom and the Pains of Hell (p. 599—604). These described: the Doom (p. 599-600); Job's 'lond of mysese and of derknesse' (p. 600-1); the 3 shames in hell against (1) 'Honours, (2) delices, and (3) riches' (p. 611); poverty in 4 things: no treasure, food, clothing, or friends (p. 602); and no delights of the 5 senses. The pain shall be eternal (p. 603). Hell is orderless (p. 603-4). The 7 causes why the damnd have lost all hope (p. 604).
 - d. Remembrance of the good works we've left undone, and the loss of the good works done while we were in sin (p. 604-6). Deadly sin wipes out all good works formerly done (p. 605); and no good works can be done in deadly sin (p. 605-6). The new French song, *J'ai tout perdu mon temps* (also quoted in Chaucer's late poem of *Fortune*).

- e. Remembrance of Christ's suffering for our sins (p. 606). In man's sin, every ordinance is turnd up-so-down (p. 607). For this disorder Christ sufferd (p. 608).
- f. The hope of 3 things: 1. Forgiveness of Sins, 2. the Gift of Grace to do well, 3. the Glory of Heaven (p. 609).
- 3. How to be contrite. Contrition must be universal and total: for sins of thought, for desires against God's law, for wicked words as well as wicked deeds (p. 610). Contrition must be angwishous and continual (p. 609-11).
- 4. How Contrition helps the soul. It sometimes delivers a man from sin; destroys the prison of hell; cleanses the soul; changes the son of Wrath to the son of Grace (p. 611-12).

PART II (*no. v. continued*).**B. CONFESSION (THE 2ND REQUISITE FOR PENITENCE)**
(p. 612-679).

- B. Confession. § 1. (l. 317) 'what is confession' (p. 612).
- § 2. 'wheither it oghte nedes be doon or noon' (p. 672-9).
- § 3. 'whiche thynges been couenable to verray Confession' (p. 674-79).

CONFESSION, § 1.

- 1. 'Confession is verray shewyng of synnes to the preest' (l. 318) (p. 612). We must understand too
 - a. (l. 321) 'whennes that synnes spryngen' (p. 612-15).
 - b. 'how they encreessen' (p. 615-16; 672-74).
 - c. 'whiche they been' (p. 616-672).
- 1.a. Sin sprang from the fall of Adam (p. 612). The legend of Adam and Eve told (p. 613). From Adam we took Original Sin, and were born sons of eternal damnation; but Baptism rescues us; though we keep liability to temptation, or Concupiscence (p. 613-14).
Concupiscence, or the nourishing and occasion of sin. St Paul and St Jerome's temptations (p. 614-15).
- 1.b. How Sin grows in a man. 1. by Concupiscence; 2. Subjection to the Devil; 3. Hesitation; 4. Doing, the Sin becoming Actual (p. 615-16).
- 1.c. Sin is *α*. venial, *β*. deadly (or mortal).
 - α*. 1. Venial Sin defined. It skips into Deadly Sin. (Simile of the drops of water into a vessel's hold drowning the ship;) (p. 616).
 - β*. 1. Deadly Sin defined (p. 617).
 - α*. 2. Of divers small venial sins, hardly thought sins (p. 617-18); eating, drinking, talking, too much; using your



Presumption, 13. Irreverence, 14. Pertinacity, 15. Vain-glory, 16. Jangling (chattering).

A private kind of pride (the Host's Wife's and Wife of Bath's¹), wanting to go to offering first, &c. (p. 620).

Two kinds of Pride, *a.* 'within man's heart', *b.* without; *b.* being the sign of *a.*, 'as the gaye leefsel atte Taverne is sign of the wyn that is in the Celer'² (p. 620-21), *b.* outside pride.

a. in dear clothing, 1. superfluity of it: its cost, furring, chisel-holes, dragging in the dung, waste of material (p. 621), unfitness for giving to the poor: 2. scantness of it: showing men's privy members, and buttocks (like a she-ape's rump), and the former as half-flayed, in parti-coloured hose³. The 'outrageous array of Women' (p. 623).

β. in horses (p. 623), and vicious grooms to tend 'em; plate-harness, &c.

γ. in household: keeping too many retainers or servants, who oppress the poor (p. 624).

δ. in table: not asking the poor to feasts; having burning and ornamented dishes⁴; too costly cups, &c., and too choice minstrelsy (p. 624).

What Pride sins are deadly, and what venial (p. 624).

The Sources of Pride (p. 624): goods of Nature, Fortune, Grace (p. 624). The Folly of Pride in any of these goods of Nature: 'we ben alle of o fader and of o mooder, and . . . of o nature'⁵. The general signs of *Gentleness*. (The flies call'd 'bees', and their stingless king) (p. 625); 3 gifts of Grace; 3 of Fortune. The brittleness of popular praise⁶ (p. 626).

The Remedy against Pride.

Humility or Meekness, and its 3 kinds: in 1. heart, 2. mouth, 3. works. 4 kinds of each of these (p. 626-27).

ii. ENVY (p. 627-30): defined by the Philosopher and St Augustine. It springs from Malice (p. 627).

Malice; 2 kinds of: 1. hardness of heart, or recklessness; 2. opposing truth (p. 627).

The 2 kinds of Envy (p. 628): 1. sorrow at other men's prosperity; 2. joy at other men's harm: whence comes

Backbiting; 5 kinds (p. 628): 1. praise with a *but* at the end; 2. turning well-meant things upside down to ill ones; 3. lessening a neighbour's goodness; 4. putting one man above another; 5. glad listening to scandal (p. 628).

Grudging or murmuring (p. 628): 1. against God (p. 629); 2. Murmuring from avarice, 3. from pride, 4. from envy; 5. among Servants, who say 'the Devil's *Paternoster*'; 6. Murmuring from ire or hate: thence, *a.* Bitterness of Heart, *b.* Discord, *c.* Scorning; *d.* Accusing (p. 629); *e.* Malignity (p. 630).

The Remedy against Envy (p. 630-31).

Love of God and one's neighbour. How a man shall love his neighbour. How an enemy is included in the name 'neighbour' (p. 630). 3 Remedies of Love, against 3 deeds of Hate (p. 631). Love is the medicine that casts out the venom of Envy from man's heart (p. 631).

iii. IRE or ANGER (p. 631-42), and its 2 kinds: *a.* good Ire or Wrath (p. 632); *b.* wicked Ire, and its 2 kinds: sudden ire, and ire of malice aforethought (p. 632-33).

Three Shrews that forge in the Devil's furnace: Pride, Envy, and Contumely (p. 633).

¹ Melibe-Monk Link, B. § 11; and General Prologue, A.

² Chaucer's father no doubt had a sign outside his wine-shop or tavern in Thames Street, London.

³ The outspoken and somewhat coarse abuse of the new fashions in dress is a great change from Chaucer's admirable Third-Period chaff of the moral short-comings of the monks and friars, &c., in the Prologue and middle Tales. If this is not change of man, it's change of mood.

⁴ Chaucer must have seen plenty of these when he was page, valet, and squire.

⁵ Compare Chaucer's *Gentleness*, &c. ⁶ Compare Clerk's Tale, Part VI, st. 128.

Wrath takes away a man's wit and spiritual life (p. 634).

Fruits of Wrath: 1. Hate. 2. War and wrong. 3. Manslaughter, *a.* spiritual; *b.* bodily (p. 634).

a. The 3 kinds of spiritual Manslaughter (3, calld 6 in MSS. p. 634): 1. by Hate. 2. by Backbiting. 3. Giving wicked Counsel, by Fraud (p. 634).

b. bodily Manslaughter: slaying with your tongue, giving orders or counsel to slay a man (p. 634).

Manslaughter in deed: its 4 (that is, 7) kinds (p. 635): 1. by law: a Justice condemning a man to death; 2. justifiable homicide, in defence of one's own life; 3. by misadventure: shooting an arrow, &c.; 4. a woman overlying her child; 5. a man making a woman barren by drinks, &c., killing the foetus within her, shedding his seed in the wrong place; a woman killing the child in her womb; 6. a woman killing her child (after birth) for shame; 7. a man by lechery or blows killing a foetus.

(Sixteen) other sins coming from Ire or Anger.

1. blaming or despising God, as hazarders do (Cp. *Pardoner's Tale*) (p. 635); and those who treat of the Sacrament of the altar irreverently (p. 636).

2. Attry anger: making angry false excuses for sin.

3. Swearing, which dismembers Christ (p. 636).

a. Of lawful Swearing, before a Judge: its 3 conditions, and its motives; *b.* God's name and Christ's, not to be taken in vain (p. 637); *c.* swearing for gentility or manliness (p. 638); *d.* swearing suddenly; *e.* of Adjuration and Conjurat[i]on by enchanter[s] and necromancer[s]; *f.* of Divination by Dreams, &c.; *g.* of Charms for Wounds and Maladies (p. 638).

4. Lying (p. 638), and its 6 kinds.

5. Flattering. How Flatterers are the Devil's Nurses, his Enchanters and Chaplains (p. 639).

6. Cursing that comes of irous heart: Malison.

7. Chiding and Reproach (p. 640); (specially a chiding wife¹) (p. 640-41).

8. Scorning (p. 641).

9. Giving wicked Counsel (p. 641).

10. Sowing and making Discord (p. 642).

11. Double tongue (p. 642).

12. Betraying of Counsel (p. 642).

13. Menace.

14. Idle words.

15. Jangling (chattering) (p. 642).

16. Japing (joking) (p. 642-43).

The Remedy against Anger (p. 643-5). Debonairtee and Patience (p. 643). Four kinds of grievances, and their remedies: 1. wicked words, 2. loss of goods, 3. harm of body, 4. outrageous labour (p. 644).

Incentive to Patience. Story of the Philosopher and Child



- v. **AVARICE** (p. 651-57). The difference between Avarice and Covetousness (p. 651); and between an Idelater and an avaricious man (p. 652). Of Covetousness, and lords' extortion from their bondmen: "humble folk been Cristes freendes" (p. 652-53). The Duty of lords to their thralls or churls. Of those that pillage Holy Church (p. 653-54); lords who plunder the poor are like wolves (p. 654). Of Deceit between Merchant and Merchant (p. 654). Of honest bodily Merchandise (the surplus of one country may be sent to help another) (p. 654). Of spiritual Merchandise, or Simony, and its 2 kinds (p. 655),—thieves that steal Christ's souls get livings (p. 655-56);—Hasardry or Games of Chance (p. 656). Other outcomes of Avarice (p. 656): 1. Lying, 2. Theft (bodily and spiritual) (p. 656-57), 3. False Witness, 4. False Oaths (p. 657).

The Remedy against Avarice (p. 657): Mercy and Pity, and reasonable Liberality (p. 658). Of foolish largess (p. 658).

- vi. **GLUTTONY** (p. 658-59), and its 5 kinds (p. 659): 1. Drunkenness, or the burial of man's reason; 2. a troubled spirit; 3. bad way of eating; 4. distempred bodily humours; 5. forgetfulness. Or, as St Gregory says, 1. eating too soon; 2. eating too delicate food; 3. taking too much; 4. troubling too much about cooking food; 5. eating greedily: these are the 5 fingers of the devil's hand (p. 659).

The Remedy against Gluttony (p. 660): Abstinence, and its fellows. Temperance, Shame, Content with plain food, Moderation, Soberness, Sparing (p. 660).

- vii. **LECHERY** (p. 660). Its punishment in the Old Testament (p. 660). Adultery, and the desire of it (p. 661-62).

The 5 fingers of the Devil's other hand (p. 662); 1. foolish looking; 2. villainous touching; 3. foul words; 4. kissing (old dotards, and dry dogs at a rose-tree (p. 662); and how a man should love his wife); 5. the stinking deed of lechery (p. 663). Its kinds: 1. Fornication. Taking a maid's maidenhead, or 100th fruit (p. 663). 2. Adultery, defined. 3. Harms following from it: a. breaking of faith; b. theft (of the wife's body from her husband (Joseph and Potiphar's wife), and of her soul from Christ); c. breaking God's commandment, and defouling Christ (p. 664). Of Harlots and Bawds (p. 665). Adultery is set between Theft and Manslaughter. More kinds of Adultery: 1. by Men bound by Religious Vows, &c.; 2. those in Holy Orders (p. 665). Lecherous Priests are like a free Bull in a town, and they eat raw flesh of folk's wives and daughters (p. 666); 3. by man and wife copulating for pleasure only (p. 667); 4. copulation with kinsfolk, spiritual (or godchildren) or fleshly (blood relations). 5. the abominable unmentionable sin; 6. Pollution, of 3 kinds: 1. too rank humours; 2. weakness (p. 667); 3. evil thoughts (p. 668).

The Remedy for Lechery (p. 668): I. Chastity and Continence.

1. in Marriage. (The true effect of Marriage. One husband to have one wife (p. 668). How a man should behave to his wife (p. 669). How the wife should be subject to her husband (p. 669), and be moderate in behaviour, discreet in words, &c. (p. 669-70). The 3 causes for which man and wife may copulate (p. 670): a. begetting of children; b. to pay the mutual debt of their bodies; c. to avoid lechery (p. 670). The 4th cause, pleasure, is deadly sin (p. 670-71).)

2. In Widowhood; 3. Virginity (p. 671).

- II. Special avoidance of causes of lechery: a. eating and drinking; long sleeping; b. the person who'd tempt you (p. 671-72). (I wish I could tell you the Ten Commandments; but it's too high doctrine (p. 672).) [End of *Confession*, § 1, c.]

Sin is in heart, mouth, deed, by the 5 Wits (p. 672).

- § 1. *b.* (see p. 615-16.) The 7 Circumstances that encrease or aggravate sins (p. 672). 1. the person who sins (male or female, &c.); 2. the kind of sin (fornication or homicide); 3. the place it was committed in (as in a church, by a priest) (p. 673); 4. for what motive; 5. the number of times it was committed; 6. by what temptation; 7. how it was committed; and all other circumstances (p. 674).

CONFESSION, § 2, § 3 (p. 674-79).

Profitable Confession, and its 4 (= 3) Conditions (p. 674):

1. sorrowful bitterness of heart (p. 674); its 5 signs: *a.* shamefastness (like the Publican's) (p. 675); *b.* humility; *c.* fulness of tears (p. 675); *d.* no hesitation (like the Magdalen) for shame; *e.* obedience to receive penance laid on you (p. 675).
2. speedy Confession (p. 676); its 4 Conditions: *f.* that it be well thought over; *g.* the greatness and number of sins must be understood; *h.* the sinner must be contrite, and *i.* avoid occasions of sins.
3. Shrift must be made to one man, not more (p. 676).

True Shrift, and its 10 Conditions (p. 677): 1. that it be of free will; 2. that it be lawful (both sinner and priest, Popish); 3. that it be not despairing of Christ's mercy; 4. that a man accuse himself only, and not another; 5. that it be not lying (accusing oneself of sins never committed) (p. 678); that it be by one's own mouth, and not by letter; 7. that the sin be not painted with fair words; 8. that the shrift be to a discreet priest; 9. that the shrift be not made for vain-glory, but for fear of Christ; 10. that the shrift be not made suddenly, for a joke (p. 678). You may be shriven more than once for the same sin; and should be houseld once a year (p. 679).

PART III (*no. v. continued, and no. vi.*).

SATISFACTION (THE 3RD REQUISITE FOR PENITENCE)
(p. 679-684).

In *a.* Alms. *β.* bodily punishment.

a. *Alms and its three kinds* (p. 679): 1. Contrition of heart. 2. Pity for one's neighbour's faults. 3. Giving good counsel to other's souls and bodies (food, visits in prison, burial). These Alms should be done privily, if possible (p. 680).

β. *Bodily Punishment (Penance), of 4 kinds*: 1. Prayers (chiefly of the Paternoster, whose expounding I leave to Masters of Theology) (p. 680). 2. Watching, and its 3 kinds: forbearing, *a.* meat and drink, *b.* worldly jollity, and *c.*



[There are no paragraph-breaks or line-numbers in the MS., but
Tyrwhitt's breaks are kept in the print for convenience sake.]

¶ Ier. 6°. State super vias & videte et interrogate de
semitis antiquis que sit via bona et ambulate in ea
et inuenietis ¶ refrigerium animabus vestris, &c.

[75]

O wre swete lord god of heuen þat no man wil
perische but wol þat we comen alle to þe
knowleche of him and to þe blisful lif
þat is perdurable / [76] ammonestith vs by þe
prophet Ieremye þat saith in þis wise
[77] ¶ Stondeth vpon þe weyes and seep & axeþ
of olde pathes þat is to sayn of old sentence
which is þe good way. [78] [. . . no gap in the MS.]
and 3e schul fynde refresshyng for 3oure soules &c.
[79] ¶ Many ben þe wayes espirituels þat leden folk
to oure lord Ihū crist/. and to þe regne of glorie.
[80] Of whiche weyes þer is a ful noble way and ful
couenable which may not faile to man ne to
womman þat þorugh synne haþ mysyon fro þe right
way of Ierusalem celestial [81] and þis wey is cleped
penitence ¶ Of which men schulden gladly herken and
enquere wiþ al here herte [82] to wyte what is penitence
and whens it is cleped penitence and in what maner and in
how many maners been þe acciones or workynges of pe-
naunce [83] and how many spieces ben of penitences &
whiche pinges apperteynen and byhouen to penitence. and
whiche pinges destourben penitence

[84] ¶ Seint ambrose saith. þat penitence is þe pleydyng¹ of man for þe gult þat he haþ doon. and no more to do ony þing for which him oughte to pleigne [85] ¶ And som doctour saith. penitence is wayment-ynge of man þat sorweþ for his synne and peyneþ himself for he haþ mysdoon [86] ¶ Penitence wiþ certeyn circumstaunces: is verray repentaunce of man þat holt himself in sorwe and in woo for his giltyes [87] ¶ And for he schal be verray penitent: he schal first/ bywaile þe synnes þat he haþ do and stedfastly purposen in his hert to haue schrifte of mouth. and to doon satisfaccioun [88] and neuer to do þing for which him oughte more to bywaile or to complayne. and to continue in goode werkes or elles his repentaunce may nouȝt auayle [89] For as saith seint Isidre ¶ he is a iapere and a gabbers and no verray repentaunt þat eft soone doþ þing for which him oughte to repente: [90] wepynge. and nouȝt for to stynte to doon synne may nouȝt auayle [91] ¶ But napeles men schal hope þat at euery tyme þat men fallith. be it neuer so ofte: þat he may arise þorugh penitence if he haue grace ¶ But certeyn it is a gret doute. [92] For as saith seint Gregory. Vnneþe arist he out of his synne þat is charged wiþ þe charge of yuel vsage [93] ¶ And þerfore repentaunt folk þat stinte for to synne and forlete synne er þat synne forlete hem. holy chirche holt hem siker of her sauacioun. [94] And he þat synneth and verrailly repentith him in his last ende: holy chirche ȝit hopeþ his sauacioun by þe grette mercy of oure lord ihū crist/ for his repentaunce. but take þe siker way

[95] ¶ And now siþ þat I haue declared ȝow what þing is penitence. now schul ȝe vnderstonde þat þer ben þre acciouns of penitence [96] ¶ The first is þat if a man be baptized after þat he haþ synned. [97] Seint augustyn saith but if he be penitent for his olde synful lif: he may not bygygne þe newe

[¹ leaf 252, back]



clene lif [98] ¶ For certes if he be baptized wipoute penitence of his olde gilt. he receyueth þe mark of baptisme: but nouȝt þe grace ne þe remissioun of his synnes til he haue repentaunce verray [99] ¶ Anoper defaute is þis þat men doon deedly synne after þat þay haue receyued baptisme [100] ¶ þe þridde defaute is þat men fallen in to venial synne after here baptisme fro day to day. [101] þer of seiþ seint austyn ¶ That penitence of goode men and of humble ¹folk is þe penitens of euery day

[102] ¶ The spices of penitence ben thre ¶ That oon of hem is solempne ¶ Anoper is comune ¶ And þe þridde is pryue [103] ¶ Thilke penaunce þat is solempne is in tuo maners as is to be put out of holy chirche in lente for slaughtre of childre and such maner þing [104] ¶ Anoper is whan a man haþ synned openly. of which synne þe fame is openly spoken in þe contre. and þanne holy chirche by iuggement streyneth him to doon open penaunce [105] ¶ Comune penaunce is þat prestes enioynen men comunly in certeyn caas. as for to goon per aduenture naked in pilgrimage or barfot [106] ¶ Priue penaunce is þilk þat men doon alday for priue synnes of whiche we schryue vs priuely and receyuen priue penaunce

[107] ¶ Now schalt þou vnderstonde what bihoueth and is necessarie to verray parfyt penitence. and þis stondith in þre þinges [108] ¶ Contricioun of hert ¶ Confessioun of mouth ¶ And satisfaccion. [109] ¶ For whiche seiþ seint Iohan Crisostom ¶ penitence distreyneth a man to accepte benignely euery payne þat him is enioyned with contricioun of herte and schrift of mouth with satisfaccioun and in werking of alle maner humblete [110] and þis is fruytful penitence. agayn þre þinges in whiche we wrappe our lord ihū crist/. [111] þis is to sayn by delit in þinking ¶ By rechelesnes in speking ¶ By wicked synful werkyng [112] ¶ Again þese

þe wickid gultes is penitence þat may be likned vnto a tre

[113] ¶ The roote of þis tre is contricioun þat hydyþ him in þe hert/ of him þat is verray repentant ¶ Right as þe roote of a tree hideþ him in þe eorþe. [114] of þe roote of contricioun springeth a stalk þat bereth braunches and leenes of confessioun and fruyt of satisfaccioun [115] ¶ For whiche crist saith in his gospel ¶ Doth digne fruyt of penitence. For by þis fruyt may men knowe þis tree and nouȝt by þe roote þat is hyd in þe hert of a man ne by þe braunches ne the leuys of confessioun [116] ¶ And þerfore oure lord ihū crist saip þus ¶ By þe fruyt of hem schul ȝe knowe hem [117] ¶ Of þis roote eek springeþ a seed of grace. þe which seed is mooder of sikurnes ¶ And þis seed is egre and hoot [118] ¶ The grace of þis seed springeth of god þorugh remembraunce of þe day of doom and of þe peynes of helle [119] ¶ Of þis matier saith Salomon þat in þe drede of god man forleteth his synne [120] ¶ The hete of þis seed is þe loue of god & þe desiring of þe ioie perdurable [121] ¶ þis hete draweth þe hert of man to god and doþ him hate his synne [122] ¶ For soþe þer is no þing þat serueþ so wel to a child as þe mylk of his norice ¶ Ne no þing is to him more abhominable þan þe milk whan it is melled mete. [123] ¶ Right so þe synful man þat loueþ his synne. him semeth it is to him most swete of any þing [124] ¶ But fro þat tyme he loueþ sadly



in verray penitence is blessed after þe sentence of Salomon

[128] In þis penitence or contricioun: men schal vnderstonde foure þinges that is to sayn what is contricioun and whiche ben þe causes þat moeuen men to contricioun and how he schulde be contrit and what contricioun auaileth to þe soule [129] ¶ þanne it is þus þat contricioun is þe verray sorwe þat a man receyueþ in his herte for his synnes wiþ sad purpos to schryue him and to doo penaunce and neuer more to don synne. [130] ¶ And þis sorwe schal be in þis maner as saith seint Bernad ¶ It schal ben heuy and greuous and ful scharp and poynaunt in herte [131] ¶ First for man haþ agilted his lord and his creatour and more scharp and poynaunt. For he haþ agiltid his fader celestial. [132] and ȝit more scharp and poynaunt for he haþ wratthed and agilt him þat bouȝt him wiþ his precious blood and haþ delyuered vs fro þe bondes of synne and fro þe cruelte of þe deuel and fro þe peynes of helle //

[133] ¶ þe causes þat oughten to moeue a man to contricioun ben .viij. ¶ First a man schal remembre him of his synnes. [134] but loke þat þilke remembrance be to no delyt of him by no way but gret schame and sorwe for his gilt. For Iob. saith þat synful men doon werkes worþy of confessioun [135] and þerfor saith Ezechiel ¶ I wol remembre alle þe ȝeres of my lyf in bitternesse of myn hert. [136] and god saith in thapocalips. ^{¶ Sex sunt cause que mouent homines ad contricionem} Remembre ȝow from whens þat ȝe ben falle. For biforn þat tyme þat ȝe synned. ȝe were þe children of god [. no gap] [137] ¶ But for ȝoure synne ȝe be woxe þral and foul and membres of þe feend. hate of aungels. sclaunder of holy chirche & foode of þe fals serpent. perpetual matier of þe fuyr of helle [138] ¶ and ȝet more foule and abhominable For ȝe trespassen so ofte tyme as doþ þe hound þat torneþ to ete his spewyng. [139] & ȝet

3e ben fouler for 3oure longe continuyng^t in synne and 3oure synful vsage. for whiche 3e ben roten in 3oure synne as a beest^t in his donge [140] ¶ Suche maner of poughtes make a man haue schame of^t his synne and no delit. and god saiþ by þe prophete Izechiel [141] ¶ 3e schul remembre 3ow of 3oure weyes. & þay schal displese 3ow soply ¶ Synnes ben þe way þat leden folk to helle

[142] ¶ The secounde cause þat^t oughte make a man to haue desdeyn of^t his synne is þis. þat^t as seiþ seint petre / ¶ who so doth synne is þral of^t synne. and synne put a man in gret^t þraldom. [143] and þerfore saiþ þe prophete. Ezechiel. I wente sorwful in desdeyn of^t myself ¶ Certes wel oughte a man haue desdeyn of^t synne and wiþdrawe him fro þat^t þraldom and vilonye. [144] and lo what^t saiþ Seneca. in þis matiere. he saiþ þus ¶ Though I wiste þat^t god nere god. man schulde neuer knowe it: 3it^t wold I haue disdeyn for to do synne [145] and þe same Seneca also saiþ ¶ I am born to gretter þinges þan to be þral to my body or þan for to make of^t my body a þral [146] ¶ Ne a fouler þral may no man ne womman make of^t his body þan 3iue his body to synne [147] ¶ And were it^t þe foulest^t cherl or þe foulest^t womman þat^t lyueþ and lest^t of^t value: 3et^t is þanne synne more foul and more in seruitute [148] Euer fro þe heigher dege þat^t man falliþ þe more he is þral and more to god vile and abhominable [149] ¶ O goode god wel oughte a man haue gret disdayn o such a þing^t þat^t þorough synne þer he was free now is he maked bonde. [150] an þerfore saiþ seint austyn ¶ If^t þou hast^t disdayn [. . . no gap] þat^t þou þiself^t schuldest^t doon synne: haue þou þanne desdeyn þat^t þou þiself^t schuldist^t do synne. [151] tak^t reward of^t þy value þat^t þou be nou3t^t to foul in þiself^t [152] Allas wel oughte men haue disdeyn to be



seruauntes & þralles to synne. & sore ben aschamed
of hemself [153] þat god of his endeles ¹goodnes
hap set hem in heigh estate or zeuen hem witte. strengþ
of body. hele. beaute. prosperite. [154] and
bought hem fro þe dep wip his herte blood þat
pay so vnkyndely azeinst his gentilesce quyten so
vileynsly to slaughtre of her oughne soules [155] ¶ O
goode god 3e wommen þat ben of so gret beaute
remembreþ 3ow of þe prouerbe of Salamon þat saith.
[156] he likeneth a fair womman þat is a fool of hir body.
to a ryng of gold þat were in þe groyn of a sowe
[157] ¶ For right as a sowe wroteþ in euerich ordure: so
wrootith sche hir beaute in stynkyng ordure of synne

[158] ¶ The þridde cause þat ouzte moeue a man
to contricioun is drede of þe day of doome. & of þe
orrible peynes of helle [159] ¶ For as seint Ierom saith.
At euery tyme þat I remembre of þe day of doom: I
quake [160] ¶ For whan I ete or drinke or what so þat I
doo euer semeth me þat þe trompe sowneþ in myn eere.
[161] Riseth 3e vp þat ben deede / and comeþ to þe
Iuggement [162] ¶ O goode god. mochil ought a man to
drede such a iuggement. þer as we schul be alle
as seiþ seint poul Biforn þe sete of our lord ihū
crist [163] wher as he schal make a general con-
gregacioun wher as no man may ben absent. [164] for
certes þer auayleþ non essoyn ne excusacioun
[165] ¶ And nouzt oonly þat oure defaute schal be
[. no gap] openly
known. [166] and as seint Bernard saiþ ¶ Ther
schal no pleynnyng auayle ne no sleight ¶ we schuln 3iue
rekenyng of euery ydel word [167] ¶ Ther schulle we haue
a Iuge þat may nouzt be disceyued ne corrupt. and why:
For certes alle oure þoughtes ben descouered as to him
ne for prayer ne for meede he nyl not / be corrupt
[168] ¶ And þerfor saiþ Salamon ¶ The wrappe of god ne wol
not be corrupt ¶ And þerfor saiþ Salomon ¶ The wrap of

god ne wol nouȝt spare no wight for praiere ne for gifte ¶ And
 þerfore at þe day of doome þer is noon hope to eschape
 [169] wherfor as seint anselm seiþ ¶ Ful greet
 anguisch schuld þe synful folk haue at þat tyme
 [170] ¶ þere schal þe sterne and þe wroþ Ingge sitte above
 and vnder him þe horrible put of helle open to de-
 stroye him þat mot byknowe his synnes which
 synnes openly ben schewed byforn god and biforn
 euery creature [171] ¶ and on þe lift syde mo deuelis
 þan herte may þynke for to hary and to drawe
 þe synful to pyne of helle [172] ¶ And wiþ-
 inne þe hertes of folk schal be þe bytyng ^{conscience}
 and wiþoute forþ schal be þe world al breunnyng
 [173] ¶ whider schal þanne þe wrecche synful man. Flee
 to hyden him: Certes he may not hyde him. he moot
 come forþ and schewe him [174] ¶ For certes as seiþ
 seynt Ierom ¶ The erþe schal caste him out/ of him
 and þe see also and þe aer also þat schal be ful of
 þunder-clappes and lightnynges [175] ¶ Now soþly
 who-so wel remembrith him of þese tydynges: I gesse
 his synne schal not torne him to delit but/ to gret
 sorw for drede of þe peyne of helle. [176] and þer-
 fore seiþ Iob. to god ¶ Suffre lord þat I may a while
 biwayle and wepe or I go wiþ oute retournyng to þe
 derk lond couered wiþ derknes of deþ [177]
 to þe lond of mysese and of derknesse wher as is þe
 shadow of deþ wher as is noon order [178]



þe world nys but a litel þing at regard of þe sorwe
of helle [181] ¶ The cause why þat Iob. calleþ helle
þe lond of derknes: [182] vnderstondith þat he
clepith it lond or eorþe for it is stable and neuer schal
fayle. derk: for he þat is in helle hat default/ of
light material. [183] for certes þe derke light þat schal
come out of þe fuyr þat euer schal brenne / schal torne
him to payne þat is in helle for it schewiþ him to
þorrible deueles þat him tormenten [184] couered wiþ
the derknes of deth þat is to sayn þat he þat is in
helle schal haue defaute of þe sight of god ¶ For certes
þe sight of god is þe lif perdurable. [185] þe derk-
nes of deth ben þe synnes þat þe wrecchid man
haþ doon whiche þat stourben him to see þe face
of god right as a derk cloude doþ bitwixe vs and þe
sonne [186] ¶ lond of myseyse: By cause þat þere ben
þre maner of defautes agains þre þinges þat folk
of þis world han in þis present lif þat is to sayn.
honours. delices. and riches [187] ¶ Agayns honours.
han þey in helle / schame and confusioun. [188] For wel 3e
witen þat men clepyn honore þe reuerence þat men
doon to þe man. but in helle is ¹noon honour ne reuerence.
for certes no more reuerence schal ben doon to a
kyng þan to a knaue [189] ¶ For which god saiþ by
þe prophete Ieremie ¶ Thilke folk/ þat me displesen schul
be despit [190] ¶ Honour is eke cleped gret lord-
schipe. þere schal no wight seruen opir but of harm and
of torment ¶ honour eek is cleped gret dignite and heigh-
nes: but in helle schulle þay be al fortrode of deueles
[191] ¶ And god saith. horrible deueles schuln goon and
comen vpon þe heeddes of dampned folk. And þis
is for als moche as þe heyher þat þay were in þis present
lif: þe more schuln þay ben abatid and defouled in
helle [192] ¶ Agayns riches of þis world schuln
þay han mysese of pouert. A þis pouert schal be
in .iiij. þinges [193] In default of tresor of which as

dauid saith ¶ The riche folk þat embraseden and onedin
 in al here herte þe tresor of þis world. schuln slepen in þe
 slepyng of deth and no þing schuln þay fynde in
 her hondes of al her tresor [194] ¶ & more-ouer þe
 mysease of helle schal be in þe defaut of mete and
 drink. [195] For god saith þus by moyses ¶ Thay schul
 be wasted by hunger and þe briddes of helle schuln
 deuoure hem wip bittir teeth and þe galle of þe
 dragoun schal be her drink & þe venym of þe
 dragoun here morsels [196] ¶ And forþer more ouer her
 misease schal be in defaut of cloþing/ for þay schul be naked
 in body as of cloþing ¶ For þay schuln be nakid of body
 saue of fuyr in which þay brenne and oþer filþis. [197] and
 naked schuln þay be of soule. of alle maner vertues which
 þat is cloþing of soule ¶ wher ben þanne þe gaye
 robes. and þe softe scheetis and þe smale schirtes. [198]
 lo what saip of hem þe prophete Isaye
 ¶ vnder hem schuln be strawed motthis and here
 couertours schuln ben of wormes of helle [199] ¶ And
 forþer mor ouer here disease schal be in defaute of
 frendes. for he is not pouere that haþ goode frendes.
 but here is no frend. [200] For neyþer god ne no
 creature schal be frend vnto hem. and euerich of hem
 schal hate oþer wip dedly hate [201] ¶ The sones and
 the douȝtres schuln rebellen agayns þe fader and þe mooder
 and kynrede agayns kynrede and chiden and despisen



in no manere [206] ¶ And þerfore in helle is no solace
ne frendschipe. but euer þe more fleshly kynredes
þat ben in helle: þe more cursynges þe more chyd-
ynges and þe more deedly hate þer is among hem
[207] And forþer ouer þay schul haue defaute of alle
manere delices ¶ For certis delices ben þe appetites
of þy fyue wittes as sight hieryng. smellyng. sauor-
ing and touchyng [208] ¶ But in helle here sight schal be
ful of derknesse / and of smoke and þerfore ful of
teeris. and her hieryng ful of waymentynge and of
gruntyng of teeth as saip ihū crist // [209] ¶ here nose
þurles schuln ben ful of styngyng styng. and as saith
ysaye þe prophete ¶ here sauoringe schal be ful of bitter
galle. [210] and touchyng of al here body y-couered
with fuyr þat neuer schal quenche / and wip wormes
þat neuer schuln deyen / as god saip by þe moup of
ysaie [211] ¶ And for al so moche as þay schul nouȝt/ wene/
þat þay may deyen for peyne / and by here deth fle fro
peyne. þat may þay vnderstonde in þe word of Iob /
þat saip ¶ Ther as is þe schadow of deth [212] ¶ Certes
a schadow hap þe liknesse of the þing of which it is
a schadow. [.
no gap] [213] Right so fareth þe peyne of helle. it is
lik deth. for þe horrible anguisshe. And why: for it
peyneþ hem euer as though men scholden deye anon. But
certes þay schul not deye. [214] For as saith *Seint*
GreGory ¶ To wrecchid caytifs shal be ȝiue deth wipoute
deth and ende wipouten ende / and defaute withouten
faylinge. [215] For here deth schal alway lyuen. and here
ende schal euermore bygyne. and here defaute schal not
fayle [216] ¶ And þerfor saip seint Iohan þe
euaungelist ¶ þay schul folwe deth. and þay schuln
nouȝt fynde him. and þay schul desire to deyen And deth
schal flee fro hem. [217] ¶ and eek Iob. saip. þat in helle
is noon ordre of rule [218] ¶ And al be it þat god hap
creat al þing in right ordre and no þing wip-

oute ordre. but ¹alle þinges ben ordeyned and noum-
 bred: ȝit napeles þay þat ben dampned been nouȝt
 in ordre ne holden non ordre [219] For þe
 corpe schal bere hem no fruyt [220] ¶ For as þe prophete
 dauid saiþ. God schal destroye þe fruyt of þe corpe as
 for hem. ne watir schal ȝiue hem no moysture ne
 þe aier non refreisching. ne fuyr no light. [221] For as
 seiþ seint Basile ¶ The brennyng of þe fuyr of þis
 world schal god ȝiue in helle to hem þat ben dampnyd.
 [222] But þe light and þe clernesse / schal be ȝeue to
 heuene to his children. Right as þe goode man ȝeue
 fleisch to his children and bones to his houndes / [223]
 ¶ And for þay schul haue noon hope to eschape. saiþ seint
 Iob. atte laste þat þer schal horroure and grisly drede
 duelle wiþouten ende [224] ¶ horroure is alway drede
 of harm þat is to come. and þis drede schal euer duelle
 in þe hertes of hem þat ben dampnyd. And þerfore
 han þay lorn al here hope for vij. causes [225] ¶ First /
 for god þat is here Iugge schal be wiþoute mercy to
 hem ne þay may not please him ne noon of his
 halwes Ne þey may ȝiue no þing for here raunsoun /
 [226] ne þay haue no voice to speke to him. ne þay
 may not fle fro peyne. ne þay haue no goodnes in
 hem. þat þay may schewe to deliuere hem fro peyne
 [227] ¶ And þerfore saiþ Salomon / The wikked man
 deyeth. and whan he is deed: he schal haue noon hope to
 eschape fro peyne [228] ¶ who-so wolde haue wel yn-



haue contricioun is þe sorwful remembraunce of þe
good þat he hath left to doon heer in eorþe. and
eek þe good þat he haþ lorn [232] ¶ Soply þe goode
werkes þat he hath left: eyþer þay been þe goode
werkes þat he wrought er he fel in to dedly synne:
or elles þai ben þe goode werkes þat he [.
. . . [233] *no gap in the MS.*] dede
er he fel into synne ben amortised. and astoneyed
and dullid by ofte synnyng. [234] þat opere
goode werkes that he wrouȝte whil he lay in dedly
synne been outrely deede ʼas to þe lif perdurable in
heuen. [235] þanne pilke goode werkes þat ben
mortified by ofte synnyng whiche goode werkes he dede
whiles he was in charite ne mowe neuer quyken agayn
withouten verray penitence. [236] And þerof saith god
by þe mouth of Ezechiel ¶ That if þe rightful man re-
tourne agayn fro his rightwisnesse and werke wikked-
nesse. schal he liue: [237] nay. For alle þe goode werkes
þat he haþ wrought ne schuln neuer be in remembrance
for he schal dye in his synne. [238] And vpon pilke
chapitre saith seint Gregory þus. þat we schuln vnder-
stonde þis principally. [239] That whan we doon dedly
synne it is for nouȝt þanne to reherse or to drawe in to
memorie þe goode werkes þat we han wrought biforen.
[240] For certis in þe werkynge of þe dedly synne
þer is no trust to no good werkes that we han don biforne
þis tyme. þat is to say as for to haue þerby þe lif per-
durable in heuen. [241] But napeles þe goode
werkes quiken agayn and comen again and helpen and
auailen to haue þe lif perdurable in heuen whan we
han contricioun [242] ¶ But soply þe goode werkes þat
men doon whil þat þai ben in dedly synne. for as moche
as þay were doon in dedly synne: þay may neuer quyken
[. . . [243]
. *no gap in the MS.*] ¶ And al be it þat þay
auailen not to haue þe lif perdurable: ȝit auaylen

þay to abbrigging^t of þe peyne of helle or elles to gete
 temporal riches. [244] Or elles þat^t god wol þe
 rap^rer enlumyne and lightene þe hert^t of þe synful
 man to haue repentaunce. [245] and eek^t þey auailen
 for to vsen a man to do goode werkes þat^t þe feend
 haue þe lasse power of his soule. [246] ¶ And þus þe
 curteys lord ihū crist^t ne wolde nouȝt^t no good werk^t
 be lost^t. For in som what it schal auaille. [247] But^t for als
 moche as þe goode werkes þat^t men don whil þay
 ben in good lif^t ben amortised by synne folwyng^t
 and eek^t sith þat^t alle the goode werkes þat^t men doon
 whil þay ben in dedly synne been outrelly deede
 as for to haue þe lif^t perdurable^t. [248] wel may þat^t man
 þat^t no goode werkes werk^t syng^e þilke newe freisch song^r.
 Iay tout^t perdu moun temps et moun labour [249] For
 certis synne byreueth a man boþe goodnes of nature
 and eek^t þe goodnes of grace [250] ¶ For soþly
 þe grace of þe holy gost^t fareþ lik fyre þat^t may not
 ben ydel. For fuyr as it forlet^t his werk-
 yng^t it faileth anon ¶ And right^t so whan þe grace
 faileþ^t. [251] þan lesith þe synful man þe goodnes
 of glorie þat^t oonly is bylight^t to goode men þat^t labouren
 and werken [252] ¶ wel may he be sory þanne þat^t
 oweth al his lif^t to god as longe as he haþ lyued and
 eek^t as longe as he schal lyue. þat^t no goodnes ne hath
 to paye wiþ his dette to god to whom he oweth al his
 lyf^t. [253] For trusteþ wel he schal giue account^t as saith



braunce of þe passioun þat oure lord ihū crist suffred for
vs in preching. [257] his werynesse in trauayling his tempt-
acioun whan he fastid. his longe wakinges whan he
prayde his teeres whan he wepte for pite of
good peple [258] þe wo and þe schame and þe
filthe þat men saide to him ofte foul spitting
þat men spitten on his face. Of þe buffettis þat men
ȝaf him of þe foule mowes and of þe re-
proues þat men to him saiden [259] of þe nayles
with whiche he was nayled to þe cros and of al þe
remenaunt of his passioun þat he suffred for my synnes
and no þing for his gilt [260] ¶ And ȝe schal vnder-
stonde þat in mannes synne is euery maner ordre
of ordinaunce turned vpsodoun. [261] ¶ For it is soþ
þat god & resoun and sensualite and þe body of man
be so ordeyned that euerich of þese .iiij.
schulde haue lordschipe ouer [. . . [262]
. *no gap in the MS.*] resoun and resoun ouer
sensualite. and sensualite ouer þe body of man.
[263] ¶ But soþly whan man synneþ al þis ordre or
ordinaunce is torned vpsodoun [264] and
þanne for as moche as þe resoun of a man ne wol not be
subiect ne obeissant to god þat is his lord by right: þer-
fore lesith it þe lordschipe þat it schulde haue in
sensualite and eek ouer þe body of man. [265] And
why? For sensualite rebellith þanne agayns resoun. And
by þat way lesith resoun þe lordschipe ouer sensualite
and ouer þe body. [266] For right as resoun is rebel to
god: Right so is boþe sensualite rebel to resoun and
þe body also. [267] And certis þis disordynance and
þis rebelloun oure lord ihū crist bought vpon his
precious body ful deere ¶ And herkeneth in which wise
[268] ¶ For as moche as resoun is rebel to god: þer-
fore is man worþy to haue sorwe and to be deed.
[269] þis suffred oure lord ihū crist for man and after þat
he was bytrayed of his disciple and destreyned and



word of ysaye ¶ He was woundid for
oure mysdede and defouled by oure felonyes [282]
¶ Now sith ihū crist tok vpon him pilke
peyne of alle oure wikkednes! Mochil oughte synful
men wepe and bywayle þat for his synnes schulde goddes
sone of heuene al þis endure [283] ¶ The .vj^{te}.
þing þat ouȝte to moeue a man to contricioun is þe hope
of þre þinges. þat is to sayn. forȝeuenes of synne
and þe ȝifte of grace wel ¹for to do. and þe glorie of
heuen wip which god schal guerdoun man for his
goode deedis [284] ¶ And for als moche as ihū crist
ȝeueþ vs þese ȝiftes of his largesse and of his souerayn
bounte! þefore is he cleped. Ihc nazarenus rex
Iudeorum [285] ¶ Ihū is for to say saueour or sa-
uacioun of whom me schal hope to haue forȝeuenes of
synnes which þat is proprely sauacioun of synnes
[286] ¶ And þefore seyde þe aungel to Ioseph ¶ Thow
clepe his name Ihc þat schal saue his poeple of here
synnes [287] ¶ And her of saith Seint petir ¶ Ther is
noon oþer name vnder heuen þat is ȝeue to any man
by which a man may be sauȝd. but oonly Ihc [288]
nazarenus is as moche to say as florischig in
which a man schal hope þat he þat ȝeueþ him remissioun
of synnes schal ȝiue him grace wel wel to doo ¶ For
in þe flour is hope of fruyt / in tyme comyng. And in
forȝiuenes hope of grace wel to do [289] ¶ I
was at þe dore of þin herte seiþ Ihc and cleped for to
entre. he þat openith to me. schal haue forȝeuenes of
synne. [290] I wol entre into him by my grace and
soupe with him by þe goode workes þat he schal doon
whiche werkis ben þe foode of god ¶ And he schal soupe
wip me by þe grete ioye þat I schal ȝiue him [291]
¶ Thus schal man hope þat for his werkis of penaunce
god schal ȝiue him his regne as he bihetith him in þe
gospel

[292] Now schal man vnderstonde in what

maner schal be his contricioun ¶ I say it schal
be vniuersal and total ¶ þis is to say. a man schal be
verray repentaunt for alle his synnes þat he hap doon in
delyt of his þought for delit is ful perilous [293] ¶ For þer
ben tuo maners of consentynge [.
. *no gap*] of affeccoun whan a man is moeued
to synne & delitith him longe for to pinke on
þat synne. [294] and his resoun aparceyueth wel þat
it is synne agayns þe lawe of god. & ȝit his resoun
refreyneþ not his foule delit or talent þough he seth wel
apertly þat it is aȝenst/ þe reuerence of god al þough
his resoun consente not to do þe synne in dede:
[295] ȝit sayn some doctours delyt þat
duellith longe it is ful perilous al be it neuer so lite
[296] ¶ And also a man schulde sorwe namely for al
þat he hap desired agayn þe lawe of god wip
parfyt consentynge of his hert and of his resoun ¶ For þerof
is no doute þat it is dedly synne [297] [.
. *no gap*] þat it nas first in mannes
þought. & after þat in his delit/ and so forþ in to
consentyng and in to dede [298] ¶ wherfore say I þat
many men repente hem neuer ¹of suche þoughtes and
delitis. ne neuer schriue hem of hit. but oonly of þe
dede of grete synnes outward [299] ¶ wherfore I say
þat suche wickid delitis and wickid þouȝtes ben
subtile bigilours of hem þat schuln be dampned [300]
¶ More ouer man oughte to sorwe for his wicked



remenant of his oper synnes! Nay. [304] And forþer
ouer contricioun schulde be woundes sorwful and an-
guisschous and þerfore ȝiueth him god plainly his
mercy ¶ And þerfore whan my soule was anguisseous
wiþinne me! I hadde remembraunce of god þat
my prayer mighte come to him [305] ¶ And forþer ouer.
contricioun moste be continuely and þat a man haue stede-
fast purpos to schryue him and for to amende him of
his lyf [306] ¶ For sople whil contricioun lastith man
may euer hope of forȝeuenes and of þis comeþ
hate of synne þat destroyeth synne boþe in himself
and eek in oper folk at his power [307] ¶ And þerfore
saith dauid. ȝe þat louen god! hatith wikkidnesse. For
trustiþ wel for to loue god. is for to loue þat he loueþ.
and hate þat he hatip

[308] ¶ The laste þing þat a man schuld vnderstonde in
contricioun is þis. wher of auailith contricioun ¶ I say
þat som tyme contricioun deliuereþ man fro synne
[309] of which þat dauid saith ¶ I say quod dauid.
þat is to say. I purposid fermely to schryue me and
þou lord relestedist my synne [310] ¶ And right so
as contricioun auailith nat wiþoute sad purpos of
schrift if man haue oportunité! Right so. litil worth is
shrifte or satisfaccioun wiþoute contricioun [311] ¶ And
more ouer contricioun destruyeþ þe prisoun of helle
and makip wayk and feble þe strengthes of þe
deueles and restorith þe ȝift of þe holy gost/ and
of alle vertues [312] and it clensith þe soule of
synnes and deliuereþ þe soule fro þe peynes of helle
and fro þe compaignie of þe deuel and fro þe seruage
of synne and restorith to alle goode espiritueles in
to þe compaignie & communioun of holy chirche [313]
¶ And forþer ouer it makith him þat som tyme was
sone of Ire! sone of grace ¶ And alle þese þinges
he prouith by holy writte. [314] And þerfore he þat
wil sette his herte to þese þinges! he were ful

wys ¶ For soþe he scholde not þanne in al his lyf
 haue corrage to synne. but ȝiuen his body and al his herte
 to þe seruice of Ihū crist and þerof do him
 homage [315] ¶ For certis oure swete lord ihū crist
 hap sparið vs so debonerly in oure folyes. þat if he ne
 hadde pite of mannes soule! sory songe mighte we alle
 syngre. ¶ *Explicit prima pars Incipit secunda pars*
eiusdem

[No break in the MS.]

[316]

THe secounde partye of penitence is confessioun.
 þat is signe of contricioun [317] ¶ Now schul ȝe
 vnderstonde what is confessioun and wheþir
 it oughte needes be doon or noon. A whiche
 ben conuenable to verray confessioun

[318] ¶ First schalt þou vnderstonde þat confessioun is
 verrey schewyng of synnes to þe prest [319] þis is to
 sayn verray. For he moot schewe him of alle þe
 condiciouns þat ben longynge to his synne as ferforth as he
 can [320] al mot be sayd and nouȝt excused ne
 hyd ne forwrappid and nouȝt auaunte him of his goode
 werkis [321] ¶ And forþermore it is necessary to vnder-
 stonde whens þat synnes springe and how þay
 exersen. and whiche þer ben

[322] of þe springing of synnes as seint poul saip
 in his wise ¶ That right as by a man synne entred first



makid were in paradys and no ping^t schame ne hadden
of her nakidnesse. [326] how þat þe serpent þat was
most wyly of alle oper bestis þat god hadde makid
sayde to þe womman ¶ why comaundid god to þow
þe schulde nouȝt ete of euery tree in paradys [327] ¶ The
womman answerde ¶ Of þe fruyt quod sche of þe trees
in paradys we feede vs ¶ But sonly of þe fruyt of þe
tre þat is in þe myddil of paradis. god forbad vs
for to eten ne not^t touche it lest^t perauenture we schulde
deye [328] ¶ The serpent sayde to þe womman. Nay
nay. þe schal not drede of deth for soþe god wot þat
what day þe ete þerof^t þoure eyen schal open
and þe schul ben as goddis knowing^t good and harm
[329] ¶ The womman saugh þe tree was good
to feedyng^t. and fair to eyen and delitable to
sight. She tok^t of þe fruyt^t of þe tree and eet it^t and
ȝaf it to hir housbond And he eet it^t ¶ And anon þe eyen of
hem boþe openeden [330] And whan þat þay knewe
þat þay were naked^t þay sowede of fige leues in maner
of breches to hiden here membris [331] ¶ here may þe
see þat dedly synne hap first^t suggestioun of þe
feend as schewep^t here by þe neddir. and aftirward
þe delit^t of þe fleisch as scheweth here by eua. and
after þat þe consentyng^t of resoun as schewith by
adam [332] ¶ For trustip wel þough so were þat þe
feend temptid oon. þat is to sayn þe fleissch
hadde delit^t in þe beaute of þe fruyt^t defendid.
ȝit certes til þat resoun þat is to say adam con-
sented to þe etyng^t of þe fruyt/. ȝit stood he in pastaat^t
of Innocence [333] ¶ Of þilke adam took^t we þilke
synne original. for of him flesschly descendit be we alle.
and engendrit of vile and corrupt m[a]tiere [334] ¶ And
whan þe soule is put^t in oure body right anon is con-
tract^t original synne. [.
.
.
no gap] [335] and þerfore be we alle I-born sones of

wraþþe and of dampnacioun perdurable if it nere baptisme
 þat we resceyuen which bynymeþ vs þe culpe ¶ But for-
 soþe þe peyne duellip wiþ vs as to temptacioun which
 peyne highte concupiscence [336] ¶ And þis concupiscence
 whan it is wrongfully disposed or ordeyned in man: hit
 makith him to coueyte couetise of fleisschly synne by sight
 of his cyzen as to erþely þinges. and eek coueityse of heigh-
 nesse as by pride of herte

[337] Now as to speke of þe firste coueitise
 þat is concupiscence after þe lawe of oure membris
 þat is [.
 [338] no gap] nouȝt
 obeissant to god þat is lord þerfore is fleissch to
 him disobeissant þurgh concupiscence which þat ȝit is
 clepid norisshing of synne [. no gap]
 [339] ¶ Therefore al þe while þat a man haþ in him þe
 peyne of concupiscence it is impossible but he be
 tempted som tyme and moeued in his fleisch to synne /.
 [340] ¶ And þis may not faille as longe as he lyueþ
 ¶ hit may wel waxe feble and faille by vertu of baptisme
 and by þe grace of god þorugh penitence. [341] but
 fully schal it neuer ¹quenche þat he schal som
 tyme be moeued in himself but if he were al refreydit by
 siknes or by malice of sorserye or colde drinkes
 [342] ¶ For what saiþ seint poul ¶ The fleissch coueitith
 agayn þe spirit. and þe spirit agayn þe fleisch þay
 ben so contrarie and so stryuen þat a man may nouȝt



no mete but herbes & water to his drink. ne non bed
but þe nakid erþe. For which his fleisch was as blak¹ as an
Ethiopen for hete and neigh destroyed for cold [346]
¶ 3it¹ sayde he þat þe brennyng¹ of lecchery boylid in al
his body [347] ¶ wherfore I wot wel sicurly þat þay
be desceyued þat say þay ben not temptid in
here body. [348] ¶ witnesse on seint Iame thapostil
þat saith. þat euery wight¹ is tempted in his oughne con-
cupiscence þat is to sayn þat euerych of vs hath matere
and occasioun to be tempted of þe norischyng¹ of synne
þat is in his body [349] ¶ And perfore seint Iohan
þe Euangelist¹ saith ¶ If þat we sayn we be wipoute
synne¹ we deceyue oure silf and troupe is nought¹ in vs

[350] ¶ Now schal 3e vnderstonde in what maner
þat synne waxiþ and encresceth in a man ¶ The firste
þing¹ is þilke norischyng¹ of synne of which I spak¹
byforn þilke concupiscence. [351] And after
þat cometh þe Subieccioun of þe deuel. þis is to sayn
þe deueles bely with which he bloweþ in man þe fuyr
of fleisschly concupiscence [352] And after þat a man by-
think¹ him wheþir he wol don it/ or non. þilke þing¹
to which he is tempted. [353] ¶ and þanne if þat a
man wipstonde and wayue þe firste entisynges of his
fleisshe and of þe feend it is no synne. and if
so¹ be he do not so¹ þanne fleeth he anon a flame
of delit/ [354] and þanne it is good to be war and kepe
him wel or ellis he wil falle anon in to consentyng¹ of
synne / and þanne wol he do it¹ if he may haue tyme
and space and place [355] ¶ And of þis matere saith Moysees by
þe deuel in þis manere ¶ þe feend¹ saith. // I wol
chace and pursewe þe man by wickid suggestiouns
and I wil hent¹ him by moeuynge¹ or steryng of
synne and I wil parte my prise or my pray by de-
liberacioun and my lust schal be accomplisht in delit.
I wil drawe my sword in consentynge [356] ¶ For certes
right¹ as a sword departiþ a þing¹ in tuo parties right¹

¶ Consentyng departed god fro men and þanne
wylle us and wylle my hand in dede of synne. þus
wylle be dede [357] For certis þanne is a man al
dred in soule and þus is synne accomsid by tempt-
acioun by lust and by consentyng and þanne is þe
synne begynned.

[358] ¶ For þe synne is in two maneres. ouer
it is venial and dedly synne. Sothly whan man louth
myngelous more þan ill cristoure creatoure þanne
it is dedly synne. And venial synne is. if a man loue
his self more þan him oughte [359] ¶ For soþe þe
dede of þe venial synne is ful pardous. For it amenisith
þe love þat men schuld haue to god more and more
[360] ¶ And þerfore if a man charge more himself with many
such venial synnes. Certes but if so be þat he som
tyme discharge him of hem by schrifte þay may ful
hertly synne in him al þe loue þat he hath to ihu
crist [361] and in þis wise shippith venial in to dedly
synne. ¶ For certis þe more þat a man chargith his soule
wþ venial synnes þe more is he enclined to falle in
dedly synne [362] ¶ And þerfore let vs nouȝt be negligent to
discharge vs of venial synnes ¶ For the prouerbe saith.
þat many smale makith a gret [363] ¶ And herken
þis ensample ¶ A greet wawe of þe see comeþ som tyme
wþ so greet a violence þat it drenchith þe schip.
and þe same harm doon som tyme smale droppis
of water batti onwitht bryneth a litil groun in to a



¶ And þerfore þe loue of euery þing þere is not byset in god ne doon principally for goddes sake / al þough a man loue it lasse þan god. ȝit is it venial synne [367] ¹And dedly synne whan þe loue of eny þing weyeth in þe hert of a man as moche as þe loue of god or more [368] ¶ Dedly synne is as saith seint austyn. whan man torneth his hert from god which þat is verray souerayn bounte þat may not chaunge and flitte. and ȝiue his herte to a þing þat may chaunge and flitte. [369] and certes þat is euery þing saue god of heuen ¶ For soþe if þat a man ȝiue his loue þe which that he owip to god wip al his herte vnto a creature. certes as moche of loue as he ȝiueþ to þilke creature so moche he reueth fro god. [370] and þerfore doth he synne. ¶ For he þat is dettoure to god and ȝeldeth not his dette þat is to sayn al þe loue of his hert

[371] ¶ Now sippe man vnderstondith generally which is venial synne: þanne is it couenable to telle specially of synnes whiche þat many man perauenture ne demith hem no synnes and schryueth him not of þe same þinges and ȝit napeles þay ben synnes [372] ¶ And soþly as clerkes writen þis is to say. at euery tyme þat man etith or drinkith more þan suffiseþ to þe sustenaunce of his body in certeyn he doþ synne: [373] and eek whan he spekith more þan it needith he doþ synne. and eek whan he herkeneth nouȝt benignely þe pleynt of þe pore [374] eek whan he is in hele of body and wil not faste whan oþer folk fasten wipouten cause resonable. / eek whan he slepith more þan needith or whan he comeþ by þilk enchesoun to late to holy chirche or to oþer werkes of charite [375] Eke whan he vseþ his wyf wipoute souerayn desir of engendrure to thonour of god and for þentent to ȝelde to his wyf þe dette of his body. [376] eek whan he wil not visite þe sike and þe prisoner if he may

¶ eek' if he loue wyf or child or oþer worldly þing' more þan resoun requireth. eek' if he flatere or blaundisshe more þan him oughte for eny necessite [377] ek' if a man menuse or wiþdrawe þe almesse of þe pouere eek' if he apparaylith his body more deliciously þan it nedith or ete it to hastily by licouresnes. [378] eek' if he talke of vanitees at chirche or at goddis seruice. or þat he be a talkere of ydil wordes of vanite or of vilonye / for he schal zelde of hem account at þe day of doome. [379] eek' whan he heetith or assureth to do þinges þat he may nouȝt performe. eek' whan þat by lightnes or foly he myssaith or scorneth his ¹neighebor. [380] eek' whan he haþ any wicked suscecioun of þing' þat he wot of it no sothfastnesse. [381] þese þinges and mo wiþoute nombre ben synnes as saith seint' austyn

[382] ¶ Now schal men vnderstonde þat al be it so þat noon erpely man may eschiewe alle venial synnes! ȝit may he refreyne hem by þe brennyng' loue þat he haþ to oure lord ihū crist and by prayeres and by confessioun and oþer goode werkes. so þat it schal but litil greue [383] ¶ For as saith seint' austyn ¶ ȝif a man loue god in such a maner þat al þat euer he doth is in þe loue of god or for þe loue of god verrailly for he brenneth in þe loue of god [384] ¶ loke how moche þat a drope of watir þat fallith in a furneys ful of fuyr annoyeth of greueth! So moche annoyeth a venial synne vnto a man þat is perfyt in þe loue of ihū crist [385] ¶ Men may also refreyne venial synne vnto a man by resceyuyng' of þe precious body of ihū crist / [386] by receyuyng' eek' of holy water. by almes dede. by general confessioun of Confiteor at masse and at complyn and blessing' of bisschops and of prestes and by other goode werkis

[No break in the MS.]



[387] ¶ Now it is bihouely ping' to telle which ben dedly synnes. þat' is to sayn chiueteyns of synnes. alle þay renne in oon loos. but' in diuers maners now ben þay cleped chiueteyns. For als moche as þay ben chief' and springers of alle opere synnes [388] ¶ Of þe roote of þese seuē synnes; þanne is pride þe general synne and roote of alle harmes ¶ For of þis roote springen general braunches. As Ire. Enuye. accidie or sleuthe. auarice or coueitise. to commune vnderstondynge. glotonye and leccherie [389] ¶ And euerich of þese synnes hath his braunches and his twigges as schal be declarid in here chapitres folwinge.

[No break in the MS.]

[390] and þough so be þat' no man can telle vtterly þe nombre of þe twigges and of þe harm þat' cometh of pride; 3it' wol I schewe a party of hem as 3e schul vnderstonde [391] ¶ Ther is Inobedience. auauntynge. ypocrisye. despit'. arragaunce. Imprudence. Swellyng' of hert'. Insolence. Elacioun. [.
. . . no gap in the MS.] pertinacie. veinglorie. and many anoper twigge þat' I can not telle ne declare [392] Inobedient' is he þat' disobeieth for despyt' to þe comaundementz of god and to his souereigns. and to his gostly fader. [393] Auauntour is he þat' bosteth of þe harm or of þe bounte þat' he haþ don [394] ¶ ypocrisy is þat' 1hydeth to schewe him such as he is and scheweth him such as he not' is [395] ¶ Despitous is he þat' haþ desdayn of his neighebour þat' is to say of his euen cristen or haþ despit' to doon þat' him ought to doon [396] ¶ Arragaunt' is he þat' pinkeþ þat' he hath pilke bountees in him þat' he haþ not' or

vnderstande howe he shalde haue him by desert. or
 else he shalde haue him by force. [397] ¶ Im-
 pudent is he that for his pride hath no shame of his
 name. [398] ¶ Swallowing of heart is whan a man
 suspecteth him of harm but he hapeth don. [399] ¶ Inso-
 lence is he that dependeth in his judgement alle oþer
 folk as he regardeth of his valour and of his cunning & of
 his speaking and of his beryng. [400] ¶ Elacioun is whan
 he may becom softe to haue maister ne felawe. [401]
 ¶ Impudent is he that wil not ben I-taught ne vnder-
 stande of his wises and by story werreþ troupe witynge
 and belideth his fole. [402] ¶ Contemner is he that
 despiseth his indignation and agains euerych auctorite or
 power of him but been his soverayns. [403] ¶ Pre-
 somptioun is whan a man undertaketh and emprisith þat
 him oughte not to do. or elles þat he may not doo. and þat
 is depele arrogancye. ¶ Intemperance is. whan men doon not
 honour þat as he ought to doon. and wayteth to be
 reuerenced. [404] ¶ Pertinacie is. whan man defendith
 his fole and trusteth to moche to his owne witte. [405]
 ¶ Vayne glorie is. for to haue pomp and delit in
 temporal heighnes and glorifie him in worldly
 estate. [406] ¶ Iangelyng is whan a man spekith to
 moche bifore folk & clappith as a mille and takeþ no
 keep what he saith.

[407] and 3it is þat a pryncipe of pride þat

waryeth first to be salueth or be salueth of his



oper is wipoute. [410] of which sople þese for-
sayde þinges and mo þan I haue said aperteynen to
pride þat is in þe hert of a man. and þat oper spices
of pride ben wipoute [411] ¶ But natheles þat oon
of þise spices of pride is signe of þat oper. Right
as gay leuesselle at þe tauerne is signe of wyn
þat is in þe celer. [412] and þis is in many þinges
as in speche and countenaunce and in outrageous array of
cloþing [413] ¶ For certis if þer hadde be no synne
in cloþing: crist wolde not so soone haue notid and spoke of
þe cloþing of þilke riche man in þe gospel. [414] And
saith seint Gregorie þat precious cloþing is cou-
pable for derthe of it and for his schortnes. and
for his straungenes and disgisines. and for þe super-
fluite. or for þe inordinat skantnes of it/ [415]
Allas many man may sen as in oure dayes þe synful
costlewe array of cloþing [.]

[416]
. . . no gap] which þat makid is so dere to harm of þe
poepel. [417] not oonly þe cost of embrowdyng
þe guyse endentyng of barryng. / Swandyng. palyng.
or bendyng. and semblable wast of cloþ
in vanite [418] ¶ But þer is also costlewe furring in
here gownes so mochil pounsyng of chiseles to make
holes so moche daggyng of scheris. [419] for with
þe superfluite in lengþe of the forsaide gownes trayl-
inge in þe donge and in þe myre on hors and eek on
foote as wel of man as of womman þat al þilke
traylyng is verray as in effect/ wasted consumed þred-
bare and rotyn with donge rapen þan it is zeuen to
þe pore to gret damage of þe forsaide pore folk.
[420] and þat in sondry wise. þis is to sain þat þe
more þat cloþ is wastid þe more most it/ coste to
þe poepel for þe scarsenes [421] and forþermore
if it so be þat þay wolde giue suche pounsed and



en for delyt^t þat^t þay ben so faire fat^t and costlewe [433]
and also many a vicious knaue mayntened by
cause of hem and in to curious harnoys as in sadelis and
bridlis cropours and peytrelle couered with precious
cloping^t and riche barres and plates of gold and of
siluer [434] For whiche god saith by zacharie þe
prophete ¶ I wol confounde þe ryders of such horsis
[435] ¶ These folk^t take litil reward of þe ryding^t of
goddes sone of heuen and of his harneys whan he rode
vpon an asse. and hadde noon oþer harneys but
þe cloping^t of his disciples newe. ¶ Ne rede I not^t
þat^t euer he rode on oþer beest^t [436] ¶ I speke þis
for þe synne of superfluite and nouȝt for resonable
honeste whan resoun it requirith [437] ¶ And forþer ouer
certes pride is gretly notified in holdyng^t of gret^t meyne
whan þay ben of litil profyt^t or of right^t no profyt^t.
[438] and namely whan þat^t meyne is felenous and daun-
gerous to þe poeple by hardynesse of lordschipe or by
way of offices [439] Fo[r] certes suche lordes selle
þanne here lordschipe to þe deuel of helle whan þay
susteyne þe wickidnes of here meyne [440] or elles
whan þese folk^t of lowe degre as is þilke þat^t holden
hostilries and susteyne þe þafte of here hostilers
and þat^t is in many maneres of disceytes.
[441] þilke maner of folk^t ben þe flyes þat^t folwen
þe hony or elles þe houndes ¹þat^t folwen þe carayn.
suche forsayde folk / strangelen spirituelli here lordschipes
[442] for whiche þus saith dauid þe prophete ¶ wikked
deth moot^t come vpon such lordschipes. & god ȝeue þat^t
þay moot^t descende in to helle a doun. For in
here houses ben iniquites and schrewednesses and not^t god
of heuen. [443] and certes but^t þay do amende-
ment. right^t so as god ȝaf^t his benisoun to pharao by þe
seruice of Iacob and to balan þe seruice of Ioseph.
Right^t so god wil ȝeue his malisoun to such lordschipes
as susteynen þe wikkednes of her seruauantes but^t þay

come to amendment [444] ¶ Pride of þe table apperith
 ful ofte. for certes riȝte men ben cleped to feste
 and pore folk ben put away and rebuked [445] ¶ Also
 in excesse of divers metis and drinkis and namely
 of suchē maner of bake metis brennyng of
 wilde fuyr and peynted and castelid wiþ papire and
 semblable wast. so þat it is abusious for to þinke [446]
 and eek in greet preciousnes of vessel & in curiousnesse
 of vessel and of mynstraleye by þe whiche a man is stired þe
 more to delitis of luxurie [447] if so be that þay sette her
 herte þe lasse vpon oure lord ihū crist ¶ Certeyn it is a
 synne. and certainly þe delites mighte be so grete
 in þe caas þat men mighte lightly falle by hem in to
 dedly synne [448] ¶ þe espices þat souden of pride
 soþely whan þay souden of malice ymagined and auised.
 aforē cast or elles of vsage ben dedly synnes it is
 no doute. [449] and whan þay souden by frelte vn-
 auysed sodeinly and sodeinly wiþdrawe agayn al be
 þay greuous synnes I gesse þay ben not
 dedly [450] Now mighte men axe wher-of pride
 souldeth and springeth ¶ I say som tyme it
 springith of þe goodes of nature / and som tyme of
 þe goodes of [. no gap]
 grace. [451] certes goodes of nature stonden
 ouper in goodes of body or goodes of soule [452]
 ¶ Certis þe goodes of body ben hele of body.
 strengthe. delineraunce. beaute. gentrie. fraunchise.



¶ Now as for to speke of goodes of nature: god wot þat som tyme we haue hem in nature as moche as to oure damage as to oure profit [458] ¶ As for to speke of hele of body. certes it passith ful lightly. and eek it is ful ofte enchesoun of þe siknesse of þe soule [. *no gap in the MS.*]

¶ And þefore þe more þat oure body is hool þe more be we in peril to falle [459] ¶ Eke for to pride him in his strengþe of body it is a folý. for certes þe fleisch coueytith again þe spirit. and ay þe more strong þat þe fleisch is þe sorier may þe soule be / [460] and ouer al þis strengþe of body and worldly hardynes causeþ ful ofte many man to peril and meschaunce [461] Eek for to pride him of his gentrie is ful gret folýe: For often tyme þe gentrie of þe body bynymeth þe gentery of þe soule ¶ And we ben alle of oon fader and of oon moder & alle we ben of oon nature roten and corrupt riche and pore [462] ¶ For soþe oon maner gentry is for to prayse þat apparilleþ mannes corrage with vertues and moralitees and makith him cristes child [463] ¶ For trustiþ wel ouer what man þat synne haþ maistry: he is verray cherl to synne

[464] ¶ Now ben þer general synnes of gentilesce as schewyng of vice & rybaudrie and seruage of synne. in word in werk and contenaunce [465] ¶ And vsinge vertu curtesie and clennes / and to be liberal þat is to sayn large by mesure. for þilke þat passith mesure is folý and synne [466] ¶ And anoþer is to remembre him of bounte þat he of oþer folk haþ receyued [467] ¶ Another is to be benigne to his goode subiectis ¶ wherfore as saith senek. ¶ Ther is no þing more couenable to a man of heigh estate þan debonaite and pite [468] ¶ And þefore þise flies þat men clepen bees whan þay make here king: þay chesen oon þat haþ no pricke wher wiþ he may styng [469]

¶ Anoper is. a man to haue a noble herte & a diligent
to atteigne to hihe vertuous þinges [470] ¶ Certis
also who þat prideth him in þe deedes of grace: is eek an
outrageous fool ¶ For þilke giftes of grace þat schulde
haue I-torned him to goodnes and medicyne: torneth
him to veyn and to confusioun as saip seint gregory
[471] ¶ Certis also. who-so pridith him in þe goodes of
fortune. he is a ful gret fool ¶ For som tyme is a man a
gret lord by þe morwe þat is a caytif and a wrecche
er it be night. [472] ¶ And som tyme þe riches of a man is
cause of his deth. ¶ Som tyme þe delice is
cause of his greuous maledye þurgh which he deieth
[473] ¶ Certis þe commendacioun of þe poeple is som-
tyme ful fals and ful brutil for to truste. þis day þay
pryset to morwe þay blame [474] ¶ God woot desir to
haue commendacioun of þe poeple haþ causid deth of
many a busy man [475] ¶ Now sith so is. þat ȝe han herd and
vnderstonde what is pride. And whiche ben þe spices of
it and whens pride sourdeth and springeþ:

[No gap in the MS.]

[476] Now schul ȝe vnderstonde. which is þe remedy
agayns pride ¶ And þat is humilitie



no man [480] ¶ The pryd is. whan he ne
 rekkij noughþ þough a man holde him nouȝt worth ¶ The
 ferþe is whan he holdeþ him noughþ sory of his humiliacioun
 [481] ¶ Also þe humilite of mouth is in foure þinges. In
 attempre speche. and in humbles of speche. and
 he byknowith wip his owne mouth þat he is
 such as him þenkith þat he is in herte. Anoper
 is whan he praisith þe bounte of anoper man and
 no þing þerof amenusith [482] ¶ Humilite eek in
 werk is in foure maneres ¶ The first is whan he puttith
 oper men toforn him ¶ þe secounde is to chese þe
 lewedest place ouer al ¶ þe pryd is gladly to assente
 to good counseil [483] ¶ þe ferþe is gladly to stonde to
 thaward of his souereyns or of him þat is in heigher
 degre. certeyn þis is a gret werk of humilite

[No break in the MS.]

[484] ¶ De Inuidia. [in margin]

After pride now wol I speke of þe foule synne of Envy
 which þat is as by þe word of þe philosophre.
 sorwe of other mennes prosperite ¶ And after þe
 word of seint austyn. is it sorwe of oper mennes
 wele & ioye of oper mennes harm [485] ¶ This
 foule synne is platly agayns þe holy gost. al be it so
 þat euery synne is agayn the holy gost: ȝit natheles
 for as moche as bounte aperteyneth proprely to þe
 holy gost. and enuye proprely is malice: þer-
 fore is it proprely agayns þe bounte of þe holy gost
 [486] ¶ Now hap malice ʼtuo spices. þat is to sayn
 hardnes of hert in wickednes or ellis þe fleisch of
 man is blynd þat he considereth not þat he is in
 synne [. no gap] which
 is þe hardnes of the deuyl [487] ¶ That oper
 spice of enuye is . whan a man warieth troupe
 and wot þat it is troupe. and eek whan
 he warieth þe grace þat god hap ȝeue to his

neighebor and al þis is by enuye [488] ¶ Certes þan is enuye þe worste synne þat is ¶ For sothely alle oþer synnes ben somtyme oonly agains oon special vertu [489] ¶ But certes enuye is agayns alle vertues and agayns al goodnes. for it is sory of alle þe bountees of his neighebor ¶ And in þis maner it is diuers from alle þe synnes. [490] ¶ For wel vnneþe is þer any synne þat he ne hath som delit in himself sauf oonly enuye þat euer hath in it self anguisch and sorwe [491] ¶ The spices of enuye ben þese ¶ Ther is first sorwe of oþer mennes goodnes and of her prosperite. and prosperite is kyndely matier of ioye. þanne is enuye a synne agayns kynde [492] ¶ The secounde spice of enuye. is ioye of oþer mennes harm. and þat is proprely lik to the deuyl þat euer reioyeth him of mennes harm [493] ¶ Of þese tuo spices comeþ bacbytyng. and þis synne of bakbytyng or detraccioun hath certein spices as þus ¶ Som man praiseth his neighebor by a wickid entent. [494] For he makith alway a wickid knotte atte last ende. alway he makith a but. at þe last ende þat is þing of more blame þan worth is al þe praysing [495] ¶ The secounde spice is þat if a man be good and doth or saip a þing to good entent: þe bacbiter wol torne al þilke goodnes vps-down to his schrewed entent. [496] þe þridde is to amenuse þe bounte of his neighe-



[500] agayns god is it. whan a man grucchith agayn
pyne of helle or agayns pouerte. or of losse of catel.
or agayn reyn or tempest¹ or elles grucchiþ þat schrewes
han prosperite or ellis þat goode men han ad-
uersite. [501] and alle þese þinges schulde men suffre
patiently. for þay come by rightful iuggement and
ordinaunce of god [502] ¶ Som tyme cometh grucching^e of
auarice as Iudas grucched aȝens þe Maudeleyn whan
sche anoynted þe hed of oure lord ihū crist with hir
precious oynement. [503] þis maner murmur is swich
as man grucchith of goodnes þat himself
doþ or þat oþer folk doon of here owne catel [504]
¶ Som tyme cometh murmur of pride. as whan Symon
þe pharise grucchid agayn þe maudeleyn whan
sche approachid to ihū crist and wepte at his feet for hir
synnes. [505] And somtyme it sourdith of
enuye whan men discoueren a mannes harm þat was
priue or bereþ him on hond þing þat is fals [506]
¶ Murmuryng eek is ofte among seruauantz þat grucchen
whan here souerayns bidden hem to doon leeful þinges.
[507] and for as moche as þay dar nouȝt openly wiþstonde
the comaundementz of here souerayns! ȝit wol thay sayn
harm and grucche and murmure priuely for verray
despit / [508] whiche wordes men clepe þe deueles
pater noster. þough so be þat þe deuyl hadde
neuer pater noster but þat lewed men calle it so
[509] ¶ Som tyme it cometh of Ire of
priue hate þat norischeth rancour in herte as
I schal declare. [510] þanne cometh eek bitternes of
herte. þorugh which bitternesse euery good deede of his
neighebore semeth to him bitter and vnsauery [511]
¶ But þanne cometh discord þat vnbyndeth alle maner
of frendschipe. þanne cometh scornynge. of [.
. no gap] his neighe-
bor al do he neuer so wel. [512] þanne cometh
accusyng. as whan man seketh occasioun to annoyen his

neighebores which þat is lik' þe craft of þe deuel
 þat waytith boþe night and day to accuse vs alle
 [513] ¶ þanne cometh malignite þurgh which a man
 annoyeth his neighebor priuely if he may. [514] And if he
 not may algate his wikkid while schal nought wante
 as for to brenne his hous priuely or empoysone or sleen
 his bestis priuely and semblable þinges

[*No break in the MS.*]

[515] ¶ *Remedium contra Inuidiam.* [*from the margin*]

NOW wol I speke of þe remedies agayns þise foule
 þinges and þis foule synne of enuye ¶ First is þe loue
 of god principal and louynge of his neighebor as himself.
 ¶ Soþely þat oon ne may nought ben wipoute þat
 oþer [516] ¶ And truste wel þat in þe name of þy
 neighebour þou 'schalt vnderstonde þe name of þy
 broþer. For alle we haue oon fader fleisschly and oon
 mooder þat is to sain adam and eua and eck' oon fader
 spirituel & þat is god of heuen. [517] þy
 neghebor artow holden for to loue. [.]



ment for if it were resoun that man schulde hate his enemy For-soþe god nolde nouȝt receyue vs to his loue þat ben his enemys [524] ¶ Agains þre maner of wronges þat his enemy doþ to him he schal do þre þinges as þus. [525] agayns hate and raucour of herte he schal loue him in herte. Agayns chydyng and wicked wordes he schal pray for his enemye. agains wikked dede of his enemy he schal doon him bounte [526] ¶ For crist saith loueþ ȝoure enemyes and prayeþ for hem þat ȝow chacen and pursewen. and doþ bounte to hem þat ȝow haten. [.]
[. no gap.] [527] For sothely nature driueþ vs to loue oure frendes / and þar fay oure enemyes han more neede to loue þan oure frendes ¶ For sothely to hem þat more neede haue certis to hem schul men do goodnes. [528] And certis in þilke dede haue we by remembraunce of þe loue of ihū crist þat dyed for his enemys [529] ¶ And in als moche as þilke loue is more greuouse to parforme: so moche is þe more gret remedye & meryt ¶ And þerfore þe louyng of oure enemy haþ confoundid the venym of þe deuel. [530] For right as þe deuel is confoundid by humilite: Right so is he woundid to þe deoth by loue of oure enemy [531] ¶ Certes þanne is loue þe medicine þat castith out þe venym of enuye fro mannes hert. [532] the spices of þis part¹ schuln be more largely declared in here chapitres folwyng

[No break in the MS.]

¶ De Ira. [from the margin]

[533]

After enuye wol I descryuen þe synne of Ire. For soþely who so haþ enuye vpon his neighebor: anon he wol comunly fynde him a matiere of wrappe in word or in dede agayns him to whom he haþ envie. [534] and as wel comeþ Ire of pride

as of enuye ¶ For soþly he þat is proud or enuyous
is lightly wroth.

[535] þis synne of Ire after þe descryuyng of
seint austyn is wikked wille to ben auengid by
word or by dede [536] ¶ Ire afte þe philosofer is
þe feruent blood of man I-quiked in his hert þurgh
which he wolde harm to him þat him hatip [537] ¶ For
certes þe hert of man by eschawfyng and mornyng of
his blood waxith so trouble / þat he is out of alle
Iuggements of resoun [538] ¶ But ȝe schal vnder-stonde
þat ire is in tuo maneres. þat oon of hem is good.
þat oþer is wikke [539] ¶ The good Ire is by
ialousy of goodnesse þurgh which a man is wroþ
wip wikkidnes. and [. *no gap*] þer-
fore saith a wise man þat ire is bet þan play. [540]
This Ire is with deboneirete. and it is wroþ wip-
oute bitternes. not wroth with þe man: but
wroþ wip þe mys dedes of þe man as saip þe
prophet dauid ¶ *Inscimini & nolite peccare.* &c [541] ¶ Now
vnderstonde þat wikked Ire is in tuo maners



right so as fuyr is more mighty to destroye erþely
þinges þan eny oþer element: Right so Ire is mighty to
destroye alle spirituel þinges [548] ¶ loke how þat
fuyr of smale gledis þat ben almost dede vnder asshen
wolden quiken agayn whan þay ben touched [.]
[.] *no gap in the MS.* ¹by pride þat is couered in
mannes herte [549] ¶ For certes fuyr may nouȝt come
out of no þing [.] *no gap*
naturelly as fuyr is drawe out of flintes with steel
[550] ¶ Right so as pride is often tyme mater of Ire:
Right so is Rancour norice and keper of Ire [551] ¶ Ther is
a maner tree as seiþ seint Isydre . þat whan men
maken fuyr of þilke tree and couer þe colis wiþ
asshen: soþly þe fuyr of it wol lasten al a ȝer or more.
[552] And right so fareþ it of rancour whan it oones is
conceyued in þe hertis of som men: certein it wol
lasten fro oon estren day vntil anoþer
ester day and more. [553] but certis þilke man
is ful fer fro þe mercy of god al þilke while

[554] ¶ In þis forsaide deuceles fornays þer
forȝen þre schrewes. pride þat/ ay blowith & encresith
þe fuyr by chidynȝ and wickid wordis [555] ¶ þanne
stont enuye and blowith þe hooȝe Iren vpon þe hert/
of man wiþ a paire of longe tonges of rancour
[556] and þanne þe sinne of contumelie or
strif and cheste and baterith and forȝeth by vileyns
repreuynges [557] ¶ Certes þis cursed synne annoyeth
boþe to þe man himsilf and eek to his neighbor
¶ For soþely almost al þe harm þat eny man
doth to his neighbor cometh þurȝ wrappe [558] ¶ For
certis outrageous wrappe doþ al þat euer þe
deuyl him comaundeth. For he ne spareþ neȝþer
crist ne his moodir. [559] and in his out-
rage anger and Ire. allas ful many oon
at þat tyme felith in his herte ful wikkedly

daggid cloping^t to þe pore folk^t. it is not^t conuenient
to were to the pore folk^t ne suffisaunt^t to beete here necessite
to kepe hem fro þe desperance of þe firmament^t
[422] ¶ vpon þat^t oþer syde to speke of þe horrible
disordinat scantnes of cloping^t. as ben þese cuttid
sloppis or Anslets þat^t þurgh her schortnes ne
couereth not^t þe schamful membre of man to wickid
entent [423] Alas som men of hem schewen þe schap and
þe boce of the horrible swollen membres þat^t semeth
like to þe maledies of hirn^t in þe wrapping^t of here hose /
[424] and eek^t þe buttokes of hem þat^t faren as it were
þe hinder part of a sche ape in þe fulle of þe moone
[425] ¶ And more ouer þe wrecchid swollen membres
þat^t þay schewe þurgh desgysyng^t in departyng^t of
here hoses in whyt and reed seemith þat half^t þe schame-
ful priue membres were flayn. [426] And if it so be þat^t
þay departe here hosen in oþer colours. as it whit
and blew. or whit and blak^t and reed and so
forth^t [427] þanne semith it ¹as by variaunce of colour
þat half^t þe party of his priuy membris ben corrupt^t
by þe fuyr of seint^t antony or by cancre or by other
such meschaunce [428] ¶ And ȝit of þe hynder partye of here
buttokes it is ful horrible for to see. For certis in þat
partie of here body þer as þay purgen her stynkyng^t
ordure [429] þat foule party schewe þay to þe poeple
proudly in despyt^t of honeste which honeste þat^t
ihū crist^t and his frendes obserueden to schewen in his
lif [430] ¶ Now as of þe outrageous array of wommen.
God wot^t. þat þough þe visage of some of hem seme
ful chaste and debonaire^t ȝit^t notifie þay in here array of
attyre licorousnesse and pride [431] I say not^t þat^t
honeste in cloping^t of man or womman is vncouen-
able ¶ But certis þe superfluite or disordinat skantnes
of cloping^t is repreuable [432] ¶ Also þe synne of
here ornament^t or of apparaile as in þinges þat aperteynen
to rydyng^t as in to many delicat^t horses þat ben hold-



man [571] ¶ Manslaught^r in dede is in foure maneres
¶ That oon is by lawe. Right as a Iustice dampnith
him þat is coupable to þe deth. But let þe Iustice
be war þat he do it rightfully and þat he do it nought
for delit to spille blood: but for keping of rightwis-
nes [572] ¶ Anoper homicidy is doon for
necessite. as whan a man slep anoper him defendaunt.
and þat he may noon oper wise eschape fro his
deth. [573] but certeynly if he may escape wiþ-
oute slaughter of his aduersarie and sleth him
he doth synne and he schal bere penaunce as for dedly
synne. [574] ¶ Ek if a man by caas or aduenture schete
an arwe or cast a stoon wiþ which he slep a man:
he is an homicide. [575] Eke if a womman by negligence
ouerlye hir child in hir sleping it is homicide and
deedly synne [576] ¶ Eke whan man distourbith con-
cepcioun of a child and makith a womman ouper bareyn
by drinke of venenous herbis purgh whiche sche may
nouȝt conceyue or sleth a child by drynkes. or
elles putteþ certeyn material þinges in secre
place to slee þe child. [577] or elles doþ vnkyndely
synne by which man or womman schedith here nature
in ma[n] or in place þer as þe child may nought be con-
ceyued. or ellis if a womma[n] haue conceyued and hurt
himselþ and sleth þe child ȝit is it homycidie
[578] ¶ What say we eek of wommen þat mordren
here children for drede of worldly schame. Certes an
horrible homicidy. [579] homicidy is eek if a man ap-
proche to a womman by desir of lechery purgh þe which þe
child is perischþ or elles smitith a womman wytyngly
purgh which sche sleeth hir child. alle þese ben homi-
cides [. no gap] [580] ¶ ȝit cometh þer of
Ire many mo synnes as wel in word as in werk &
pought. As he þat arettith vpon god and blamith god
of þing of which he is himself gulty or despisith
god and alle his halwes as doon þese cursed hasardours

in diuers cuntrees. [581] þis cursed synne don þay
whan þay felen in here herte ful wickidly of god and
his halwes [582] ¶ also whan þay treten vnreuerently
þe sacrament of þe auter. þilke synne is so gret
þat vnneþe may it be relessed but þat þe mercy of
god passith alle his werkes. and is so gret and so
benigne [583] ¶ Thanne cometh of Ire attri anger
whan a man is scharly amonested in his schrifte to for-
lete synne: [584] þanne wol he be angry and
answere hokerly and angrily and defenden or excusen
his synne by vnstedfastnesse of his fleisch. or elles he
dede it to holde companye with his felawes. or
ellis he saith þe fend entised him. [585] or elles he
dide it for his youthe. or ellis his complexioun is so
corrageous þat he may not forbere. or ellis it is
desteny. as he saith. [.
. . . *no gap*] it cometh him of gentilesce of his auncetrie
and semblable þinges [586] ¶ Alle þese maner of folk
so wrappen hem in here synnes þat þay wol nouȝt
deliuer hemself ¶ For soþely no wight þat excuseth
him wilfully of his synne may nought / be deliuered of his
synne til þat he mekely biknoweth his synne. [587]
¶ After þis þanne [. *no gap*] þat is expres
agayns þe comaundement of god & þis bifallith often
of angir and of Ire [588] ¶ God saith. þou schalt not
take þe name of þy lord god in vayn or in ydil. ¶ Also
oure lord ihū crist saith by þe word of seint. *Matheu*
[. *no gap in the MS.*] [589] ¶ Ne wol ȝe
not swere in alle manere. neither by
heuen for it is goddes trone. ne by þe eorþe for it is þe
benche of his feet. ne by ierusalem: for it is þe cite of
a gret king. ne by þin heed: þou may nought
make an her whit ne blak. [590] but sayeth by ȝoure
word ȝe. ȝe. and nay. nay. and what it is more: it / is
of euel. þus saith ihū crist [591] ¶ For cristes sake swereþ
not so synfully in dismembring of crist. for cristes sake. bi



soule. ¹herte. boones and body. For certes it semep þat 3e þenke þat cursed Iewes ne dismembrit nought ynough. þe precious persone of crist. but 3e dismembre him more. [592] and if so be þat þe lawe compelle 3ow to swere. þanne reule 3ow after þe lawe of god in 3oure swering as saip. *Ieremie capitulo .iiij^{to}* [. no gap in the MS.] ¶ Thou schalt kepe þre condicions. þou schalt swere in troupe in doom and in rightwisnes [593] þis is to sayn. þou schalt swere soth. For euery lesyng is agayns crist. for crist is verray troupe and þink wel þis þat euery gret swerer not compellid lawfully to swere þe wonder schal not departe fro his hous whil he veeth such vnleful sweringe [594] ¶ þou schalt eek swere in doom whan þou art constreigned by þy domesman to witnesse þe troupe. [595] eek þou schalt not swere for enuye ne for fauour ne for meede but / for rightwisnesse for declaring of it to worschip of god and helping of þin euen-cristen [596] and þefore euery man þat takip goddes name in ydil or falsly swerip with his mouth or elles takip on him þe name of crist and callith himself a cristen man and lyueth agayn cristes lyuyng and his teching alle þay take cristes name in ydel [597] ¶ loke eek what saith seint peter *Actuum ca. .iiij^{to}* ¶ *Non est aliud nomen sub celo &c* ¶ Ther is noon oþer name saith seint peter vnder heuen ne 3euen to noon men in which þay mowe be saued þat is to sayn but in þe name of ihū crist [598] ¶ Tak heede eek how þe precious name of crist as saith seint poule ad philippenses .ij^o. *In nomine ihū &c* ¶ That in þe name of ihū euery kne of heuenly creatures or erþely or of helle schulde bowe and [. no gap in the MS.] tremble to heeren it nempned. [599] ¶ Thanne semep it þat men þat sweren so horribly by his

blessed name þat þay despise it more bodyly
þan dede þe cursed Iewes or elles þe deuel þat
tremlith whan he heerith his name

[600] ¶ Now certis sith þat swering but it be
lawfully doon is so heihly defendid: moche wors is
forswering falsly and ȝit needeles

[601] what say we eek of hem þat deliten hem
in swering and holden it a gentry or manly dede / to
swere grete othis. and what of hem þat of verray
vsage / ne cessen nouȝt to swere grete opis al be not þe cause
worþ a strawe: certes þis is horrible synne [602]
¶ Sweryng sodeynly wiþout auysement is eek a
synne [603] ¶ But let vs now go to pilke horrible sweryng
of adiuracioun and coniuraciouns as I doon þese false en-
chauntours or nigromanciens in bacines ful or
in a bright swerd in a churche or in a fuyr or in þe schulder
bon of a scheep [604] ¶ I can not sayn but þat þay
doon cursedly and dampnably agains þe
faith of holy chirche

[605] what say we of hem þat bilieuen on
diuinales as by flight or by pois of briddes or of



and to damage of an oþer man [610] ¶ Anoþer lesyng^r for to saue his lif or his catel [. *no gap*] cometh of delit^r for to lye. in which delit^r þay wol forge a long^r tale and paynte it with alle circumstaunces wher as þe ground of þe tale is fals [611] ¶ Som lesyng^r cometh. For he wolde susteyne his word ¶ Som lesyng^r cometh of rechelesnes wipoute auisement^r and sem- blable þinges

[612] ¶ lat^r vs now touche þe vice of flaterie which cometh not^r gladly but for drede or for coueitise [613] ¶ Flaterie is generally wrongful preysing^r. Flaterers ben þe deueles norices þat^r norisschen his children wip mylk^r of þe losingerie. [614] forsoþe Salamon saith þat^r flaterie is worse þan detraccioun. for som tyme detraccioun makith an hawteyn man be þe more humble for he dredith detraccioun ¶ But certes flaterie makith a man to enhaunsen his hert^r and his countenaunce [615] ¶ Flaterers ben þe deueles enchauntours. For þay maken man to wene of himself^r þat^r he is like to þat^r he is nouȝt^r like. [616] þay ben like Iudas þat^r bitraised [. *no gap*] to selle him to his enemy þat^r is þe deuel [617] ¶ Flaterers ben þe deueles chapeleyⁿs þat^r singen ay. placebo. [618] I rekene flaterers in þe vices of Ire. For ofte tyme if^r oon man be wroþ wip anoþer. þanne wol he flatere som man to mayntene him in his querel

[619] Speke we now of such cursyng^r as cometh of Irous hert^r malisoun generally may be said euery maner power of harm. such ¹cursyng^r bireueþ man fro þe regne of god as saith seint^r poule [620] ¶ And ofte tyme such cursyng^r wrongfully retourneþ agayn to hym þat^r curseth as þat^r retourneþ agayn to his owne nest. [621] and ouer alle þinges men oughten eschewe to cursen here oughne children and ȝiue to þe deuel here engendrure as ferforth as in hem is Certis it is gret^r peril and gret^r synne

[622] ¶ let vs þanne speke of chydynge and reproche
 whiche þat ben ful grete woundes in mannes hert [. . .
 *no gap in the MS.*]

[623] ¶ For certis vnneþe may a man plainly ben
 aecordid with him þat him openly reuyled and
 reponed and disclaundrid. þis is a ful grisly synne
 as crist saith in þe gospel. [624] and takith keep now
 þat he þat reprouep his neighbor. ouþer he reprouep
 him by som harm of peyne. [.

[625]. *no gap in the MS.*]
 þanne tornith þe reproef to ihū crist. For peyne is
 sent by þe rightwis sonde of god and by his suffraunce
 be it meselrie or many oper maladies. [626] and if he
 repreue him vncharitably as þou holour þou dronk-
 elewe harlot and so forth þanne aperteyneth þat
 to þe reioysing of þe deuel þat euer haþ ioye
 þat men doon synne. [627] And certis chidyng may
 nought come but out of a vileins herte ¶ For after þe
 abundaunce of þe herte spekep þe mouth ful ofte.

[628] and to schel understonde þat loka by any man



And þerfore saith Salamon ¶ An hous þat is vncouered
& droppynge and a chidyng wyf ben like
[632] a man þat is in dropping hous in many
partes þough he eschewe þe dropping in oon place:
it droppeþ on him in anoþer place ¶ So farith it by
a chydinge wyf: But sche chide him in oon place: sche
wol chide him in anoþer [633] ¶ And þerfore better is
a morsel of bred with ioye þan an hous ful of
delices with chydinge seiþ Salamon [634] ¹¶ Seint
poul saith ¶ O ȝe women be ȝe sugettis to ȝoure
housbondes as bihoueþ in god. And ȝe men loueth ȝoure
wyues ad Colocenses iij^o.

[635] ¶ Afterward speke we of scornynge which is a
wikked ping and sinful and namely whan he scornith a man
for his goode workes [636] ¶ For certes suche scornes
faren lik þe foule toode þat may nought endure þe
soote smel of þe vine roote whan it
florischild. [637] þese scorners ben partyng felawes
wip þe deuel. For þay han ioye whan þe deuel
wynneth and sorwe whan he leseth
[638] ¶ Thay ben aduersaries of Ihū crist. for
þay haten þat he loueth þat is to saye sauacioun of soule

[639] Speke we now of wikked counseil ¶ For he þat
wickid counseil ȝiueth. he is a traytour. for he deceyueþ
him þat trusteþ in him ¶ vt achitofel ad absolonem
¶ But napeles ȝet is his wikkid counseil first aȝens him-
self [640] ¶ For as saith the wise man ¶ Euery fals
lyuyng haþ þis proprete in him self. þat he þat
wil annoyen anoþer man: he annoyeth first himself.
[641] ¶ and men schul vnderstonde þat men schulde nought
take his counseil of fals folk ne of angry folk/ [. . .
. . . .] ne of folk þat louen specially to moche her
oughne profyt ne in to moche worldly. folk. namely in coun-
selyng of soules

[642] Now comeþ þe synne of hem þat sounen and
maken discord amonges folk which is a synne þat/

crist hateþ outrelly. and no wonder is. for god died
for to make concord. [643] and more schame do þay to
crist þan dede þay þat him crucifiede ¶ For god
loueth better þat frendschipe be amonges folk ¶ þanne
he dide his owne body which þat/ he ȝaf for vnite.
þerfore ben þay likned to þe deuel þat euer ben
aboute to make discord

[644] ¶ Now comith þe sinne of double tonge. suche
as speken faire biforn folk and wikkedly bihynde or
elles þay make semblaunt as þough þay speke of
good entencioun or ellis in game & play and ȝit þay
speke in wikked entent

[645] ¶ Now comeþ þe wreying of counseil þurgh
which a man is famed ¶ Certes vnnethe may he restore þat
damage

[646] ¶ Now comeþ manace þat is an open foly. For
he þat ofte man[a]ceeth he threttith more þan he may
parfourme ful ofte tyme

[647] ¶ Now comeþ Idel wordes þat is wipoute
profyt of him þat spekith þo wordes and eek of him
þat herkeneth þo wordes. or elles ydel wordes ben



þat' trauailen in þe seruice of crist! Right so conforten
þe violent' wordes and knakkis and iaperies hem þat'
trauayle in þe seruice of þe deuy! [653] ¶ These ben
þe synnes þat/ cometh of [. no gap] Ire
and of oþer synnes

[*No break in the MS.*]

[654]

¶ *Remedium contra Iram*

Remedye agayns ire is a vertue þat' men
clepe mansuetude. þat' is deboneirte. And
eek' anoþer vertue þat' men clepe pacience or
sufferaunce.

[655] debonairete wiþdrawith and restreigneþ
þe stiringes and þe moeuynge of mannys corrage in his
herte in such manere þat' þai ne skip not' out' by
anger ne by Ire [656] ¶ Suffraunce suffrith swetely al
þe annoyaunce and þe wronges þat' men doon to man
outward [657] ¶ Seint Ierom saith þus of debonairete.
þat it doþ noon harm to no wight' ne saith ne for noon
harm þat' men doon ne sayn. he ne eschaufith nought'
agayns his resoun [658] ¶ This vertu comiþ som tyme of
nature ¶ For as saith þe philosopher man is a quik'
ping' by nature and trefable to goodnesse
¶ But' whan debonairete is enformed of grace! þan is
it' þe more worþ

[659] ¶ Pacience þat' is anoþer remedie. agains Ire
is a vertu þat' suffreth swetely euery mannes goodnes
as is not' wroþ for noon harm þat' is doon to him.
[660] þe philosopher saith þat' pacience is þilke
vertue þat' suffrith deboneirly alle þe outrages of
aduersite and euery wickid word [661] ¶ This vertue
makith a man lik' to god and makith him goddes
oughne dere child as saith crist ¶ þis vertu destroyeþ
þin enemy and þerfore saith þe wise man ¶ If þou
wolt venquish þin enemy lerne to suffre [662] ¶ And
þou schalt' vnderstonde þat' man suffrith foure maners

of greuaunces in outward þinges. agains whiche
he moot haue foure maners of pacience

[663] ¶ The firste greuaunce is of wicked wordes.
þilke suffred Ihū crist wipoute grucching ful
patiently whan þe iewes despised him and reprobud him
ful ofte. [664] suffre þou þefore paciently ¶ For þe
wise man seiþ ¶ If ¹þou striue with a fool. þough
þe fool be wroþ or þough he laughhe algate
þou schalt haue no rest [665] ¶ That oþer greuaunce
outward is to haue damage of þi catel: þer agayn
suffred crist ful paciently whan he was despoylid of al
þat he had in his lif and þat nas but his cloþis
[666] ¶ The þridde greuaunce is. a man to haue harm in
his body. þat suffred crist ful paciently in al his
passioun [667] ¶ The ferþe greuaunce is in outrageous
labour in werkis wherfore I say þat folk þat
maken here seruaunt; to trauaile to greuously or out of
tyme as on haly dayes. soþely þay doon greet synne
[668] ¶ Here against suffred crist ful paciently and
taughte vs pacience whan he bar vpon his blisful
schulder þe croys vpon which he schulde suffre



saist^t soth. haue þou þe 3erde my deere sone and
correcte me for myn impacience. [674] Of pacience comeþ
obedience. þurgh which a man is obedient^t to crist/ and
to alle hem to which him oughte to be obedient^t in crist.
[675] and vnderstonde wel þat^t obedience is parfyt.
whan a man doþ gladly & hastily with good
herte outrely al þat^t he scholde do [676] ¶ Obedience is
generally to parforme þe doctrine of god and
of his soueraignes to whiche him oughte to ben obeissant^t
in alle rightwisnes.

[No break in the MS.]

[677]

After þe synne of enuye and Ire. now wol I
speke of [. . . no gap] accidie. For enuye
blendith þe hert of a man and Ire troublith
a man and accidie makith him heuy. þoughtful. and
wrawe [678] ¶ Enuye and Ire maken bitternes in herte.
which bitternesse is mooder of accidie and bynimit^t
þe loue of alle goodnes. þanne is accidie þe
anguische of trouble hert^t and seint^t augustyn saith
[. no gap] [679] ¶ Certes
þis is a dampnable synne. For it^t doþ wrong^t to Ihu^t
crist^t in as moche as it bynymeþ þe seruice þat^t we
ought^t to do to crist^t wiþ alle diligence as saip Salomon
[680] ¶ But^t accidie doþ noon such diligence. he doþ
alle þing^t wiþ anoy and with drawenes. slaknes
and excusacioun. and with ydelnes & vnlust^t for
which þe book^t saith ¶ Accursed be he þat^t doþ þe
seruice of god negligently [681] [. no gap]
enemy to euery astat^t of man ¶ For certes þestat^t of
[. [682] . . . no gap in the MS.]
Innocence. as was þestate of adam biforn þat^t he fel in to
synne in which estate he is holden to worche as in
heryng^t and honouryng^t of god [683] ¶ Anoper astat^t
is þe state of sinful man. in which estate. men ben holden

to labore in praying to god for amendement of her synnes. and þat he wolde graunte hem to rise of here synnes [684] ¶ Anoþer estaat is þestate of which he is holde to werkis of penitence and certes to alle þese þinges is accidie enuye contrarie for it loueþ no busynes at al [685] ¶ Now certis þis foule synne accidie is eek a ful gret enemy to þe lifode of þe body For it hath no þurueaunce azens temperel necessite. for it forslowthith and forsluggith and destroyeth alle goodes temporels by rechelesnes

[686] ¶ The ferþe þing is þat accidie is like hem þat ben in þe peyne of helle by cause of her slouþe and of her heuynes For þay þat ben dampned ben so bounde þat þay may nought wel do ne wel þenke [687] ¶ Of accidie cometh first þat a man is annoyed and encombrid for to do eny goodnes. and makith that god hap abhominacioun of such accidie as saith seint Iohan.

[688] ¶ Now comeþ slouþe þat wol suffre noon hardnes ne no penaunce For soþely slouþe is so



.
.
. *no gap*] saip seynt gregory

[693] ¶ Now comeþ wanhope þat is despair of þe mercy of god þat comeþ som tyme of to moche outrageous sorwe ¹and som tyme of to moche drede ymagynynge þat he haþ do so moche synne þat it wil not auaille him þough he wolde repent him and forsake synne. [694] þurgh which despeir or drede he abundith al his herte to alle maner synne as seith seint augustin. [695] whiche dampnable synne if þat it continue vnto his lyues ende it is cleped synnyng of þe holy gost. [696] This horrible synne is so perilous. þat he þat is despaired þer is no felonye ne no synne þat he doutith for to do. as schewed wel by Iudas. [697] Certes aboue alle synnes. þan is þis synne most displesant to crist and most aduersarie [698] sothely he þat despisith him is like þe coward campioun recreaunt þat seith recreaunt wipoute neede. allas allas needeles is he recreaunt and needeles despaired [699] ¶ Certes þe mercy of god is euer redy to þe penitent and is aboue alle his werkes. [700] allas can not a man byþenk him on þe gospel of seint luk/ wher as crist saith þat as wel schal þer be ioie in heuen vpon a synful man þat dop penitence as vpon nynety and nyne þat ben rightful men þat [. *no gap*] needen no penitence [701] ¶ Ioke forþer in þe same gospel þe ioie and þe fest of þe goode man þat had lost his sone. whan þe sone with repentaunce was torned to his fader [702] ¶ Can not þay remembre eek þat as saip seint luk xxiiij°. how þat þe þef þat was hangid biside ihu crist sayde ¶ lord remembre of me whan þou comest in to þy regne [703] ¶ Forsope saith crist. to day þou schalt be wip me in paradys [704] ¶ Certis þer is noon so horrible synne of

man þat it may in his lif be destroyed with penitence
 þorugh vertu of passioun of þe deth of crist
 [705] ¶ Allas what needith it man þanne to be despaired
 sith þat his mercy is so redy and large. aske and haue
 [706] ¶ Thanne comeþ sompnoient þat is sluggish
 slumbring which makip a man ben heuy and dul in
 body and in soule. and þis synne comeþ of slouþe
 [707] and certes þe tyme þat by way of resoun man
 schulde nouȝt slepe þat is by þe morwe but if þer were
 cause resonable [708] For soþely þe morwe tyde is
 most couenable to a man to say his prayers and for
 to þenk vpon his god and to honoure god and to
 geue almes to þe pore þat first comeþ in þe name
 of crist [709] ¶ lo what saith Salamon. ¶ who-so wol
 by þe morwe arise and seeke me schal fynde
 [710] ¶ þan comeþ negligence that/
 rekkith of no þing and how þat ignorauce be
 moder of alle harm! Certis neeglence is þe norice
 [711] ¶ Neeglence doþ no force whan he schal doon
 a þing whether he doo it wel or baddely

[712] ¶ Of þe remedy of hese tuo synnes as saith



[717] ¶ Certes þanne semeth it þat þay schal be tormentid
wiþ þe deuel in helle but if þay don penitence

[718] ¶ þanne comith þe synne þat men clepe
tarditas. as whan a man is so latrede or taryng^r er
he wil torne to god. and certis þat is a gret foly.
he is like him þat fallith in to þe dicke and wol not
arise / [719] And þis vice cometh of a fals hope þat
he þinkith he schal lyue longe. but þat hope
fayleþ ful ofte

[720] ¶ þanne comith laches. þat is he when he
bigynneth any good werk^t anoon he wol forlete it and
stynthe as doon þay þat/ han eny wight to gouerne.
and ne take of hem no more keep anoon as þay fynde
eny contrarie or eny anoy [721] ¶ þese ben þe newe
schepherdes þat leten her schep wityngely go renne to
þe wolf þat is in þe breres or don no force of her oughne
gouernaunce. [722] Of þis cometh pouert^t and destruccioun
boþe of spirituel and of temperel þinges ¶ Thanne cometh
a maner of coldenesse þat freseþ al þe hert^t of man
[723] þanne cometh vndeucioun þurgh which a man is
so blunt^t & as saith seint Bernard he hap such a langour in
soule þat he may neyþeir rede ne synge in holy chirche ne
heere ne þinke ondeucioun in holy chirche ne trauayle with
his hondes in no good werk^t þat nys þo him vnsauory
and al [724] þanne waxith he slow and
alombry and soone wol he be wroþ and soone is enclined
to hate and to enuye [725] ¶ þanne comith þe synne of
worldly sorwe such as is clepid tristicia þat sleth
man as saith seint poule [726] ¶ For certis such sorwe
werkith to þe deth of þe soule. & of þe body also.
For þer of cometh þat a man is anoyed of his oughne lif^t.
[727] which sorwe schorteþ ful ofte þe lif^t of a
man or þat his tyme is come by way of kynde

[No break in the MS.]

[728] ¶ Agains þis horrible ¹synne of accidie and þe
 braunches of þe same þer is a vertu þat is cleped
 fortitudo or strengþe þat is affecioun þurgh
 which a man despiseth alle noyous þinges [729] ¶ This
 vertu is so mighty & so vigorous þat it dar wipstonde
 mighty and wisely kepe himself from perils þat ben
 wicked and wrastil agains þe assautes of þe deuel.
 [730] For it enhaunsith and enforceþ þe soule. Right as
 accidie abateth it and makith it feble. For þis fortitudo
 may endure by long sufferaunce þe trauailes þat ben
 conuenables

[731] ¶ This vertu haþ many spices. þe
 first is cleped magnanimite þat is to sayn gret corrage.
 For certis þer bihoueþ gret corrage agains accidie lest
 þat it ne swolwe not þe soule by þe synne of sorwe or
 destroye it by wanhope [732] ¶ This vertu makith
 folk vndertake harde þinges and greuous þinges
 by his owne wille willfully and resonably. [733] and for
 als moche as þe deuel fighiteth agaynst a man more by
 queyntise and by sleight þan by strengþe þerfore many a man
 schal azeinstonde him by witte. and by resoun and by dis-
 crecioun. [734] Thanne is þer þe vertu of faith and
 hope in god and in his seintes to eschew. and to acomplise
 þe goode werkes in þe whiche he purposith fermely
 to continue. [735] thanne comeþ seurte or sikernes
 and þat is whan a man doutith no trauaile in tyme
 comyng of good werk þat a man haþ bygonne
 [736] ¶ þanne comeþ magnificence þat is to say whan
 a man doth and parformith grete werkes of goodnesse
 þat he hath bygonne. and þat is þende why þat men schulden
 do goode werkes. for in þe accomplisng of grete goode
 werkes liþ þe grete guerdoun. [737] þanne is þer
 constaunce þat is stablenes of corrage and þis schulde
 ben in herte by stedefast faip. and in mouthe. and in



beryng'. and in cheer and in deede. [738] eek' þer ben
mo special remedies agayns accidie, in dyuers werkis
and in consideracioun of þe peyne of helle and of þe
ioye of heuen and in þe trust of þe hyhe grace of þe holy
gost'. þat wil zeue him might to parforme his good
entent.

[*No break in the MS.*]

[739]

De Auaricia [*from margin*]

After accidie! I wil speke of auarice and of
coueytise. Of whiche synnes For sothely whan
saith sein poule þat þe roote of alle eueles &
harmes is coueytise/ [740] and þat þe hert' of
man is confoundid in it self and troublid and þat þe
soule hap lost þe comfort of god. þanne seekith he an
ydel solas of worldly þinges.

[741] ¶ Auarice after þe descripcioun of seint' austyn.
is a likerousnes in hert' to haue erpely þinges
[742] ¶ Some oþer folk sayn þat' auarice is for to
purchace many erpely þinges and no þing' zeue
to hem þat' han neede [743] ¶ And vnderstonde þat'
auarice ne stont' not' oonly in lond ne in catel! But' som
tyme in science and in glorie and eny maner
outrageous þinges is auarice [744] ¶ And
þe difference bytwixe auarice and coueytise is þis.
Coueitise is for to coueyte suche þinges as þou
hast not' [.
. *no gap in the MS.*] [745] ¶ And
auarice is a synne þat' is ful dampnable. For al holy
writ curseth it' and spekith agayn þat' vice. for it dop
wrong' to Ihū crist'. [746] For it bireueth him þe loue
þat' men to him owen and turnith it' bakward agains
al resoun. [747] and makith þat' þe auarous man
hath more hope in his catel þan in ihū crist'. and
[.
. *no gap in the MS.*] [748] þerfore saith

what god is ydolater. þat an anerous man is
þe þriller of ydolater

[747] "what difference is þer betwene an ydolaster and
an anerous man. þat þat an ydolaster þer adventure
taketh for a maymer

[748] [750] "and certes þe synne of maymetrie is
þe more þat þat and defendith in þe ten comaunde-
ments as þerþ winnes in exode capitulo [751] þou
shalt have none false golles before me. ne þou shalt make
to the no grune þing. thus is he an anerous man þat
loveth his tressour to form god " And an ydolaster [752] þurgh
his cursel synne of avarice and couetyse comen þese
housholdes þurgh whiche thay ben distreyned
by tallages custumes and cariages more þan here
dote of resoun is. and elles take þay of here bonde
men amercementes whiche mighte more resonably ben
cullid extorciouns þan mercymentis. [753] of whiche
mercyments and raunsounyng of bonde men some
lordes stywarles seyn þat it is rightful. For as moche as
a cherl hab no temperel hings butt it nys his lordes



seip Seneca. ¶ Thi prudence schulde liue benignely wip
þi þrallis [760] þilke þat þay clepe thralles
ben goddes poeple. For humble folk ben cristes frendes
þay ben contubernially wip þe lord

[761] ¶ Thenk' eek as of such seed as cherles
springen. of such seed springe lordes. as wel may
þe cherl be saued as þe lord. [762] The same deth þat
takith þe cherl [.
. *no gap in the MS.*] as þou woldist
þi lord dide wip þe if þou were in his plyt.
[763] Euery sinful man is a cherl as to synne ¶ I rede
þe certes þat þou lord werke in such a wise wip
þy cherles þat þay raper loue þe þan drede þe. [764]
I wot wel þer is degre aboue degre as resoun
is and skil þat men don her deuoir þer as it is dewe.
¶ But certes extorciouns and despit of oure vndirlinges is
dampnable

[765] ¶ And forþermore vnderstonde wel þat
conquerours or tyrauntes maken ful ofte þralles of
hem þat born ben of als royal blood as ben þay þat
hem conqueren. [766] þis name of cherdome was
neuer erst' couth til noe sayde þat his sone
chanaan schulde be þral of his breþeren for his synne
[767] ¶ what say we þanne of hem þat pylen and doon
extorciouns to holy chirche ¶ Certis the swardes þat
men zeuen first' to a knight whan he is newe dubbyd
signifieth faith and þat he schulde defende holy chirche
[.
. . . *no gap*] [768] and as seith seint' austin. Thay ben
þe deueles wolues þat stranglen þe scheep of ihū
crist. and doon wors þan wolues. [769] for soþely
whan þe wulf hap ful his wombe he stintith to
strangle scheep. but soþly þe pilours and þe destroy-
ers of þe goodes of holy chirche ne doon nouȝt so. For þai
stynthe neuer to pile. [770] ¶ Now as I haue sayd. sith so
is. þat synne was first' cause of þraldom. þanne is it

þus. þat ilke tyme þat al þis world was in synne.
 þanne was al þis world in þraldom and in subieccioun
 [771] But certis sith þe tyme of grace com: God
 ordeyned þat somme folk schulde be more heigh in estaate
 and in degre and somme folkes more lowe and þat
 euerich schulde be serued in here estate and in degre
 [772] ¶ And þerfore in somme contrees þere þay ben
 thralles whan þay han turned hem to þe faith: þay make
 here þralles free out of thraldom ¶ And þerfor certis
 þe lord oweth to his man þat þe man owith to
 þe lord. [773] ¶ The pope callith himself seruauant
 of seruauants of god ¶ But for as moche as þe staat/ of
 holy chirche [. no gap] to þe commune
 profit might nought haue ben kepte ne pees ne reste in
 erthe. but if god had ordeyned som man of
 heihir degre and some men of lower: [774] þerfore was
 soueraignte ordeyned to kepe and to mayntene and de-
 fende her vnderlynges or her subiectis in resoun as fer-
 forth as it lith in her power and not to destroye
 ne confounde hem [775] ¶ wherfore I say þat þilke lordes
 þat be like wolues þat deuouren þe possessioun of
 þe catel of pore folk wrongfully wipoute mercy or
 mesure: [776] þay schul receyue by þe same mesure
 þat þay han mesured to pouer folk þe mercy of ihū
 crist but if it be amendid [777] ¶ Now comþ decept
 bitwixe marchaunt and marchaunt. and þou schalt vnder-
 stonde þat marchaundise is in many maneres. þat oon
 is bodily. and þat oþer is gostly. þat oon is honest
 and leful. and þat oþer is dishonest & vnleful
 [778] ¶ Of þilke bodily marchaundise þat is honest and
 leful is þis. þat þer as god haþ ordeyned þat a
 regne or a cuntre is suffisaunt/ to himself. þanne is it
 honest/ and leful þat of þe abundaunce of þis contre
 þe men helpe an oþer cuntre þat is more needy
 [779] ¶ And þerfore þer moote be marchauntz to
 bringe fro þat oon cuntre to þat oþer her march-



aundise [780] ¶ That oper marchaundise þat men
hauntyn with fraude and treccherie and deceit/ with
lesynges and fals othis is cursed and dampnable
[781] ¶ Espirituel marchaundise is proprely symonie
þat is ententyf desire to beye þing/ espirituel þat is
þing þat apperteyneth to þe seintuarie of god and to
þe cure of þe soule [782] þis desir is if so be þat a
man do his diligence to parforme it. al be it þat his
desir take noon effect. 3it is it/ to him a dedly
synne. and if he be ordrid he is irregular [783] ¶ Certis
Symonye is cleped of Symon Magus þat wolde han
bought for temporel catel þe 3ifte þat god had 3iuen
by þe holy gost to seint petir and to þapostlis
[784] ¶ And þerfor vnderstonde þat boþe he þat
sellith and he þat bieth þinges espiritueles ben
cleped Symonials be it by catel be it by procurement
or by fleissshly prayere of his frendes eiper fleshly frendes
or spirituel frendes [785] ¶ Fleissshly in tuo maneres
as by kynrede or oper frendes ¶ Sothely if þay pray
for him. it is not worth [. no gap] if he
take þe benefice it is Symonie. and if he be worthy & able.
it is non [786] ¶ That oper is whan man or
womman prayen for folk to auance hem oonly for
wikkid fleissshly affeccioun þat þay haue vnto þe persone
and þat is ful Symonye. [787] but certis in seruice
[.
. no gap]
moot he be honest and ellis not. and eek þat lit be
withoute bargaynyng and þat þe persone be able
[788] ¶ For as saith seint Damase ¶ Alle þe synnes of þis
world at þe reward of þis synne is a þing of nought.
For it is þe gretteste synne þat may be after þe synne
of lucifer and antecrist [789] ¶ For by þis synne god
forlesith þe chirche and þe soule þat he bought wip
his precious blood by hem þat 3euen churches to hem
þat ben not digne [790] ¶ For þay putten in þeues þat

stelen þe soules of ihū crist and destroyen patri-
 moygne. [791] by suche vndigne prestis and curates.
 han lewed men þe lasse reuerence of þe sacrament/ of
 holy chirche and suche zeueres of chirches putten out
 þe children of crist. and putten in to þe chirche þe
 dencles oughne sone. [792] þay sellen soules
 þat lambes schulde kepe to þe wolf þat stranglith
 hem. And þefore schul þay neuer haue part
 of þe pasture of lambes þat is þe blisse of
 heuen [793] ¶ Now comeþ hasardrie wiþ his appur-
 tenaunce. as tables. and rafles. of whiche comeþ deceipt.
 fals othis. chidynges and alle raueynes. blasphemynge.
 and reneying of god and hate of his neighebers. wast
 of goodes out of tyme. and som tyme man-
 slaughter. [794] ¶ Certes hasardours ne mowe not be
 wiþoute gret synne whil þay haunte þat craft [795]
 ¶ Of auarice comeþ eek lesynges. þeste and fals witnesse and
 falsopes ¶ And ȝe schul vndirstonde þat þese ben grete synnes
 and expresce agains þe comaundementȝ of god as I haue
 sayd [796] ¶ Fals witnesse is in word and eek in dede.

In word as for to hisse his neighebor his good



yng^e of holy ping^es . or of ping^e sacred of crist ¶ Sacrilege is in tuo¹ maneres þat^e oon is by resoun of holy place as chirches or chirchewhes . [802] For whiche euery vileins synne þat^e men doon in suche places may be clepid sacrilege or euery violence in semblable place ¶ þat^e oþer maner is . as þo þat^e wiþdrawen falsly þe rightes þat^e longen to holy chirche [803] ¶ [. . . no gap] and generally sacrilege is to reue holy ping^e fro holy place . and vnholly ping^e out of holy place . or holy thing^e out of holy place

[No break in the MS.]

¶ Remedium contra Auariciam [from margin]
[804]

Now schul ȝe vnderstonde þat^e þe releuyng^e of auarice is misericorde and pite largely taken . And men might axen why þat^e misericord and pite is relieuyng^e of auarice . [805] ¶ Certes þe auaricious man schewith no pite ne misericorde to þe needeful man . For he delitith him in kepyng^e of his tresor and nouȝt in þe rescowyng^e ne relieuyng^e of his euen-cristen . & þerfore speke I first of misericord [806] ¶ Thanne is misericord as saith þe philosopher a vertu . by which þe corrage of a man is stired by þe myseise of him þat^e is myseysed . [807] vpon which misericorde folwith in parformyng^e of chariteable werkis of misericord . [808] ¶ And certes þese moeuen men to þe misericord of ihū crist þat^e ȝaf himself for oure gult^e . and suffred deþ for misericord and forȝaf vs oure original synne [809] and þar by releseid vs fro peyne of helle and amenusid þe peynes of purgatorie by penitence and ȝeueþ grace wel to do and at þe laste þe ioye of heuen [810] ¶ The spices of misericorde ben for to loue and for to ȝiue . and eek for to forȝiue and for to relesee and for to haue pite in herte and compassioun of þe meschief of his

euencristen and eek' chastite þe as needs is
 [811] ¶ Anoper maner of remedye agayns auarice is
 reasonable largesse but sothely here bihouith þe con-
 sideracioun of þe grace of ihū crist and of his
 temporel goodes and eek' of his goodes perdurable
 þat crist þat vs. [812] and eek' to haue remembrance of
 þe dep þat he schal receyue he noot not whanne
 [. . . no gap] and eke he schal forgon al þat he hath
 saue only þat he haþ dispendid in goode werkes

[813] ¶ But for als moche as some folk' ben vnreson-
 able men oughte to eschiewe foly largesse þam
 clepen wast/ [814] Certes he þat is fool-large ne
 giueþ nouȝt his catel. [. no gap] Sothely
 what þing' þat he giueth for vayn glorie as to
 mynstrals and to folk' for to bere his renoun in þe
 world: he haþ synne and noon almes
 [815] ¶ Certes he lesith foule his goodes þat sekith
 wiþ þe gift ¹of his good no þing' but synne.
 [816] he is like to an hors þat sekith rapier to drynke
 drouy watir and trouble þan for to drinke watir of þe
 welle þat is cleer. [817] And for as moche as þay giue þer
 as þay schuld not giue: to hem appendith þilke
 malisoun þat crist schal giue at þe day of doom to
 hem þat schal be dampned.

[No break in the MS.]

¶ De Gula [from margin]

[818] **A**fter auarice comeþ Gloteny which is expresse eke
 agayns þe comaundement of god. Gloteny is
 vnreasonable and desordeyned coueytise to ete and
 to drynke. [.
 no gap] [819] þis synne cor-
 ruptid al þis world as is wel schewed in þe synne of
 adam. and of Eua ¶ Ioke eek' what saith seint poul of
 glotouns [820] ¶ Many saith seint/ poul gon of whiche

[¹ leaf 276, back]



I haue ofte said to ȝow and now I say it wepyng
¶ That thenemyes of þe cros of crist of
whiche pende is deth and of whiche here wombe is
here god and here glorie in confusioun þat so
saueren erþely þinges [821] ¶ he þat is vsant [. .

.
.
. *no gap in the MS.* [822] to þis

synne hath many spices ¶ The firste is dronkenes
þat is horrible sepulture of mannes resoun. And
whan man is drunken he hath lost his resoun and
þis is dedly synne [823] ¶ But shortly whan þat a
man is not wont to stronge drinke and par aventure ne
knowiþ not þe strengþe of þe drynk or hath feblesse
in his heed or hap trauayled þurgh whiche he drynkith
þe more and be sodeynly caught wiþ drynke it is no
dedly synne but venial [824] ¶ The secounde spice of
dedly synne is. whan þe spirit of a man wexith al trouble
for drunkenesse. and bireueþ him his witte and his discre-
sioun [825] ¶ The þridde spice of glotouns is whan a man
deuoureth his mete and hap no rightful maner of etyng
[826] ¶ þe ferþe is whan þurgh þe grete abund-
aunce of his mete þe humours of his body been dis-
temperid [827] ¶ þe fift is þe Idilnes by to moche
drinking. For which a man som tyme forgetith by þe
morwe what he dide at eue or on þe night before

[828] In oþer maner ben distinct þe spices of
glotonye after seint Gregory ¶ The firste is for to ete or drynke
byfore tyme to ete ¶ The secound is. whan man ȝueth him
to delicate mete or drinke [829] ¶ The þridde is. whanne
man takith to moche þerof ouer mesure ¶ The ferthe is
curiosite wiþ gret entent to make and apparayle
his mete ¶ The fift is. For to ete to greedly [830] ¶ These
ben þe fyue fynghres of þe deueles hand. by whiche
he drawith folk to synne. /

[831]

¹ A Gayns Glotonye is þe remedie abstinence as
 saip Galien. But þat holde I nouȝt meritorie. If
 he do it oonly for þe hele of his body ¶ Seint
 austyn wol þat abstinence be don for vertu and
 wiþ pacience. [832] Abstinence he saith is litil worth
 but if a man haue good wille þerto and but it be enforced
 by pacience. and by charite. and þat men doon it for
 goddes sake and in hope to haue þe blisse of heuen

[833] ¶ The felawes of abstinence ben attemper-
 aunce þat holdith þe mene in alle þinges. eek
 schame þat eschiewith al dishoneste. Suffisaunce þat
 seeketh noone riche metes ne drynkes ne doþ no force of to
 outrageous apparaillyng of mete [834] ¶ Measure also
 þat restreyneþ by resoun the dislaue appetit of etyng.
 Sobernes also restreyneþ [.]

[835]] þe delicat wille to ete and þe lasse leysir
 [.]
 no gap in the MS.]

[No break in the MS.]

¶ De luxuria

[836]

A Fter Glotonye þanne cometh leccherie. For þese
 two synnes ben so neih cosyns þat ofte tyme þay
 wol not departe. [837] Vnde paulus ad Ephesios ¶ Nolite
 inebriari vino &c. God wot þis synne is ful displeaunt
 þing to god. vino in quo est luxuria. For he sayde him-
 self. Do no leccherie. and þefore he putte gret peyne
 agayn þis synne / in þe olde lawe. [838] If a wom-
 man þral were take in þis synne. sche scholde be
 beten with stoones to þe deth. and if sche were a gentil
 woman: sche schulde be slayn wiþ stoones. / and if sche
 were a bisschoppis douȝter: sche schulde be brent by
 goddis comaundement. [839] ¶ Forther ouer by þe
 synne of leccherie: god dreinte al þe world at þe



dilune ¶ And after þat he dreynthe fyue citees with thonder
layt and sonk hem in to helle

[840] ¶ Now let vs thanne speke of þilke stynkyng
synne of leccherie þat men clepen aduoutry of weddid
folk þat is to sayn if þat oon of hem be weddid
or elles boþe [841] ¶ Seint Iohan saith þat adoutris
schuln be in helle in watir breunying of fuyr and
of brimston. In fuyr for þe leccherie. In brimston For þe
stynk or her ordure. [842] ¶ Certis þe brekyng of
þis sacrament is an horrible þing. hit was makid of
god himself in paradis Confermed of ihū crist as
witnesseth seint Mathew ¶ A man schal lete
fader and mooder and take him to his wif and þay
schul ben two in oon fleisch [843] ¶ This sacrament bitok-
enep þe knyttyng togider of crist and of holy chirche
[844] nat oonly þat god forbad aduotrie in dede:
but eek he comaunded þat þou scholdest not coueyte þy
neyhebers wif [845] ¶ In þis heste seiþ seint
austyn is forboden al maner coueytise to do
leccherie ¶ lo what seiþ seint mathew in þe gospel. that
who-so seth a womman to coueytise of his lust: he hap
doon lecchery wip hir in his herte. [846] ¶ here may ȝe
se þat nouȝt oonly þe dede of þis synne is forboden:
but eek þe desir to do þat synne [847] ¶ This cursed
synne annoyeth greuously hem þat it haunten and first
to here soule. for he obligith it to synne and to pyne of
þe deþ þat is pardurable [848] ¶ vnto þe body annoyep
it greuously. also for it dreyep him and wastith him &
schent him. and of his blood he makith sacrifice to þe
deuel of helle ¶ It wastith eek his catel and his substaunce.
[849] and certes if þat it be a foul þing a man to waste
his catel on wommen: ȝit is it a fouler þing whan þat
for such ordure wommen dispende vpon men here catel
and here substaunce [850] ¶ This synne as saith þe prophete
byreueth man and womman her good fame and al here
honour. and it is ful pleasaunt to þe deuel. For þer by

wynneth he þe moste pray of þis world
[851] ¶ And right as a marchaunt deliteþ him most
in chaffare þat he haþ most auantage of. Right
so delitith þe feend in þis ordure

[852] ¶ This is þe oper hond of þe deuel with fyue
fyngres to cacche þe poeple to his vilonye [853] ¶ þe
firste fynger is þe foule loking of þe foule womman
and of þe foule man þat sleth right as a basiliskoc
slep folk by þe venym of his sight. For þe coueytise
of eyen folwip þe coueytise of þe herte [854] ¶ The
secounde fynger is the vileynes touchinge in wikkid
manere. and þerfore saith salamon þat who-so
touchith and handelith a womman he farith lik him
þat handelith þe scorioun þat styngith and sodeinly
sleeth þurgh his enuenemyng as who so touchith
warm picche. it schent his fyngres [855] ¶ The þridde is
foule wordes þat farith lik fuyr þat right anon
brenneth þe herte [856] ¶ The ferþe is þe
kissing. and trewely he were a greet fool þat wolde
kisse þe mouth of a brennyng ouen or of a forneys:
[857] and more fooles ben þay þat kyssen in vilonye.
For þat mouth is þe moup of helle. and namely pise
olde dotard fooles holours. 3it wol þay kisse þough
þay may nought do & smater hem. [858] ¶ Certis þay
ben like to houndes. For an hound whan he cometh to
a roser or by oper beautes. þough he may nouȝt
pisse: 3et wil he heue vp his leg and make a coun-
tenaunce to pisse. [859] and for þat many man weneth
he may not synne for licorousnes þat he doth
with his wif: Certis þat oppinioun is fals. God wot a
man may sle himself wip his owne knyfe and mak
himself dronke of his oughne tonne [860] ¶ Certis
be it wif or child or eny worldly þing þat he
louyth bifore god it is his maumet and he is an ydolastre /.
[861] man schulde loue his wyf by discrecioun
paciently and attemperelly. and þanne is sche as it



were his suster [862] ¶ The fyfte fynger of the deueles
hond is þe styntyng dede of leccherie [863] ¶ Certes þe fyue
fyngres of glotony þe deuel put in þe wombe of a man.
& his fyue fyngres of lecchery bygripeth hym by
þe reynes for to þrowe him in to þe fourneys of
helle. [864] þere as þey schuln haue þe fuyr. and þe wormes
þat euer schal lasten. and wepyng and wayling
scharp hunger and þurst. and grislines of deueles
þat schul alto-tere hem wipoute respit/ and wip-
outen ende [865] ¶ Of leccherie as I sayde souldren
diuers spices of fornicacion þat is bitwen man
and womman þat ben nouzt married and þis is dedly
synne and against nature [866] al þat is enemy and
destruccioun to nature. [867] par fay þe
resoun of a man tellip him wel þat it is dedly
synne For als moche as god forbad leccherie and seint
poule ȝeuiþ hem þat regne þat is due to no wight
but hem þat doon synne dedly [868] Anoper synne
of lecchery is for to bireue a mayden of hir maydenhede /
for he þat so dopþ Certes he casteth maydenhede out
of the heighest degre þat is in þe present lif [869] and
bireuith hir þilke precious fruyt þat þe book clepith þe
hundrid fruyt. I can ȝeue it noon oþer name in englich.
but in latyn it is I-cleped *Centesimus fructus secundum*
Ieronimum contra Iouinianum [870] ¶ Certes he þat so
doth is cause of many harmes and vilenyes mo þan eny man
can rekene. Right as he som tyme is cause of alle þe damages
þat bestis doon in þe feeld þat brekith þe hegge or þe closure
þurgh which he destroyeþ þat may not be restored!
[871] for certes no more may maydenhode be re-
stored þan an arm þat is smytten fro þe body
retourne agayn to waxe. [872] sche may haue mercy þis
wot I wel if sche do penitence but neuer schal it
be þat sche nas corrupt [873] ¶ And al be it so þat I
haue spoke som what of aduoutre: ȝit is it good to speke of
mo ¹perils þat longen to aduoutre for to eschiewe þat foule

synne [874] ¶ Aduoutrie in latyn is for to sayn approaching
of oþer mannes bed þorugh þe which þat whilom
were oon fleisch abounden here bodyes to oþer persones
[875] ¶ Of þis synne as saip þe wise man
many harmes cometh þer-of ¶ First brekyng of faith ¶ And
certes faith is þe keye of cristendom. [876] and whan þat
faith is broke & lorn: soþely cristendom stont
veyn and wipouten fruyt [877] ¶ This synne is eek a
þeef. For þeste is generally to speke to reue a wight his þing
agayns his wille [878] ¶ Certis þis is þe foulest thefte
þat may be whan a womman stelith hir body from
hire housbounde and ȝueth it to hire holour to defoule
hire & stelith hir soule fro crist/ and ȝeuth it to
þe deuel [879] ¶ This is a fouler þeste þan for to breke a
chirche and stele chalises. For þese aduouteres
breke þe temple of god spirituelly and stelen þe vessel
of grace þat is þe body and þe soule ¶ For Ihū crist
schal destroyen hem as saith seint poule [880] ¶ Sothely
þis þeste doutyd gretly Ioseph whan þat his lordes
wyf prayde him of vilonye whan he saide. lo my lady
how my lord hap take to me vnder my warde al þat he
hap in þis world. ne no þing of his power is oute of
my power but oonly ȝe þat ben his wyf. [881] and
how schuld I do þanne þis wikkidnes and synne so
horribly agayns god and my lord. God it forbede
¶ Alas al to litel is suche trouþe now I-founde [882] ¶ The
þridde harm is þe filthe þurgh which þay breken
þe comaundement of god and defoule þe auctour of
here matrimonye þat is crist. [883] For certis in so moche
as þe sacrament of mariage is so noble and so digne: So
moche is it þe gretter synne for to breke it. for god
makid mariage in paradis in þestat of Innocence to
multiplie man kynde to þe seruice of god [884] and
þefore is þe brekyng þe more greuous. Of which
breking cometh fals heires ofte tymes þat wrongfully
occupien mennes heritage. and þefore wolde crist putte



hem out of þe regne of heuen þat is heritage to goode folk. [885] Of þis breking comeþ ek ofte tyme þat folk vnwar wedden or synnen wiþ her kynrede and namely þese harlottis þat haunten bordels of þese foule wommen þat mowe be likened to a comune gonge where as men purgen here entrayles of her ordure [886] ¶ what say we ek of putours þat lyuen by þe horrible synne of putrie & constreyne wymmen 3e som tyme his oughne wyf or his child as don¹ þese baudes to 3elde hem a certeyn rente of here bodily putrie ¶ Certes þese ben cursede synnes [887] ¶ Vnderstonde eek that avoutrie is set gladly in þe ten comaundements bituixe manslaughter and thefte. For it is grettest thefte þat may be. for it is thefte of body and soule / [888] and it is lik homicidie For it kerueth a-tuo hem þat first were makid oon fleisch. and þefore by þe olde lawe of god þay scholde be slayn [889] ¶ But napeles by þe lawe of Ihū crist þat is lawe of pite whan he sayde to þe womman þat was founde in aduoutri and schulde haue ben slayn with stoones afir þe wille of þe Iewes as was her lawe. Go quod ihū crist and haue no more wille to synne. or wilne no more to do synne. [890] ¶ Sothely þe vengeance of avouterye is awaridid to [. no gap] helle / but it be destourbed by penitence [891] ¶ 3it ben 3er mo spices of þis cursed synne. as whan þat oon of hem is religious or ellis bothe or for folk þat ben entred in to ordre as subdekin or dekin or prest or hospitalers and euer þe higher þat he be. þe gretter is þe synne. [892] þe þinges þat gretly aggreggith her synne is þe brekyng of here avow of chastite whan þay resceyued ordre. [893] and forþer ouer is soþ þat holy ordre is cheft of alle þe tresor of god and his especial signe and mark of chastite to schewe þat þay ben ioyned to chastite which þat is þe moeste precious lif þat is [894] ¶ And eek þese ordred folk ben specially tytled to god and of þe

special meyne of god of whiche whan þay don dedly synne þay ben þe special traytours of god and of his poeple. [. *no gap in the MS.*] and whil þay ben suche traytours: here prayer auayleþ not to þe poeple [895] ¶ Prestis ben aungels as by þe dignite of here misterie ¶ But forsoþe seint poul saith þat Sathanas transformeth him in aungel of light. [896] Sopely þe prest þat hauntith dedly synne: he may be likened to þe aungel of light. [. *no gap*] & he semeth aungel of light: but for soþe he is aungil of derknes [897] whiche ben þe sones of belie as schewith in þe book of kinges þat þay were þe sones of belial þat is þe deuel. [898] belial is to say wipoute Iuge and so faren þay þay þynke hem fre and han no Iuge no more þan hath a fre bole þat takith which cow þat him likeþ in þe toun [899] so faren þay by wommen For right as a fre bole is y-nough for al a toun: / Right so is a wikked prest corrupcioun ynough for al a parissh or for al a contray [900] ¶ These prestes as saip þe book ne conne not þe mistery of presthode. þe poeple ne god ne knowe þay not. þay holde hem nought apayed as saith þe book of soden fleissch þat was to hem offred: but þay tooke by force þe fleissch þat is raw: [901] Certes so þese schrewes holde hem not appayed with rosted fleissch and sode fleissch wip whiche þe poeple feeden hem in gret reuerence. But þay wil haue raw fleissch of folkes wyues and here douztres [902] ¶ And certes þese wommen þat consenten to here harlotrie don gret wrong to crist and to holy chirche and alle halwes / and to alle soules for þay bireuen alle þese hem þat schulde worschipe crist and holy chirche and praye for cristen soules [903] ¶ And þerfore han suche prestis & here femmans eke þat consenten to here leccherie þe malisoun of al þe court cristian til þay come to amendement



[904] ¶ The þridde spice of aduoutry is som tyme bitwix
a man and his wif and þat is whan þay take noon reward
in her assembling but only to þe fleischly delit as
saith seint Ierom. [905] and ne rekke of no þing but
þat þay be assemblid by cause þat þay ben married.
al is good ynough as þinkith hem. [906] But in suche
folk hap þe deuel power as saith þe aungel Raphael
to Thoby in here assemblyng þay 'putten ihū
crist out of her herte. and giuen himself to alle ordure
[907] ¶ The ferthe spice is þe assemble of hem þat ben
of here kynrede or of hem þat ben of oon affinite or
elles wip hem wip whiche here fadres or here kynrede
han delitid in þe synne of leccherie. þis synne makith
hem like houndes þat taken noon heede of kynrede
[908] and certes parenteal is in tuo maneres eyþer
gostly or fleissshly. gostly as for to dele wip her
gossib. [909] For riȝt / so as he þat engendrith a child
is his fleissshly fader: Riȝt so is his godfader his fader
espirituel. for which a womman may in no lasse synne
assemble wip hir gossib þan wip hire oughne fleischly
fader or broþer [910] ¶ The fife spice of þilke abhominable
synne of which þat no man unneþe oughte to speke ne
write. napeles it is openly rehersed in holy wryt/.
[911] [.
. *no gap in the MS.*] but þough þat holy writ
speke of horrible synne: Certes holy writ may not be
defouled no more þan þe sonne þat schyneth on a
dongehul [912] ¶ Anoper synne appertenith to lecchery þat
comeþ in sleping. & þis synne comeþ ofte to hem
þat ben maydenes and eek to hem þat ben corrupte
and þis synne men clepen pollucioun þat cometh in .iiij.
maners [913] ¶ Som tyme of languisschyng of body for
þe humours ben to ranke and to abundaunt in þe body
of man. somtyme of infirmite for þe feblenesse of þe
vertu retentyf as phisik makeþ mencion. And som tyme
for surfete of mete and drynke. [914] som tyme of

vileins þoughtes þat ben enclosed in mannes mynde
 whan he [.
 *no gap in the MS.*] kepe him wisely or elles
 may men synne greuously

[*No break in the MS.*]

[915] ¶ Now cometh þe remedye aȝens lechchery and þat
 is generally chastite of wikkedhede and continence þat re-
 streyneþ alle þe desordeigne moeuyngeþ þat comen
 of fleischly talentes. [916] and euer þe gretter meryt
 schal he han þat most restreyneth eschau-
 fynges of ordure of þis synne. and þis is in þre
 maneres. þat is to sayn chastite of mariage / chastite
 of/ wikkedhede [917] ¶ Now schalt þou vnderstonde þat
 matrimoigne is leful assemblynge of man and
 womman þat resceyuen by vertu of þe sacrament þe
 bond þurgh which þay may not be departid in al here
 lif þat is to say whil þay lyuen boþe.
 [918] þis as saith þe boke is a ful gret sacrament
 God makid it / as I haue said in paradis and wolde him-
 self be born in mariage [919] and for to holden mariage.
 he was at þe weddyngt wher as he turnede watir in to
 wyn which was þe firste miracle þat he wrought in
 erþe biforn his disciples [920] trewe effect of
 mariage clensith fornicacioun and replenischith holy
 chirche of good lynage. for þat is þe ende of mariage
 and it chaungith dedly synne in to venyal bituixe
 hem þat ben weddid [.
 *no gap in the MS.*] as wel as þe bodyes
 [921] ¶ þis is verray mariage þat was first blessed by
 god er þat þe synne bigan whan naturel lawe was in his
 first poynt in paradis. and it was ordeyned þat/ oon man
 schulde haue but oon womman. and oon womman but oon
 man as saith seint augustyn by many resouns

[922] ¶ First for mariage is figured bitwixe crist and



holy chirche ¶ Anoper is for a man is heed of
a womman algate by ordinaunce it/ schulde be so
[923] ¶ For if a womman had mo men þan oon: þanne
schulde sche haue mo hedes þan oon & þat were an
horrible þing biforn god. And eek a womman.
myzte nouȝt please to many folk al at oones. and also
þer ne schulde neuer be pees & rest among hem. For
euerich wolde aske his oughne þing. [924] and
forþer-ouer no man schulde knowe his oughne en-
gendrure ne who schulde haue his heritage and þe
womman scholde be þe lasse loued fro þe tyme þat
sche were ioyned to many men

[925] ¶ Now comeþ how þat a man schulde bere him
wiþ his wif and namely in tuo þinges þat is ¹to
sayn in sufferaunce and in reuerence and þat schewed crist
whan he made first womman. [926] For he ne made hire
not of þe heed of adam. for sche schulde not to
gret lordschipe haue / [927] þer as þe womman haþ þe
maistry sche makith to moche disaray. þer nedith noon
ensample of þis. þe experience of þis of day by day
oughte suffice [928] ¶ Also certes god ne made nouȝt
womman of þe foot of adam. For sche ne scholde nouȝt be
holden to lowe for sche can not/ paciently suffre ¶ But god
made womman of þe ribbe of adam For womman schulde
be felawe vnto man [929] Man schulde bere him to his
wif. in faith in troupe and in loue as saip seint
poule. aman schulde loue his wif as crist loued
holy chirche [. no gap] þat deyed for it.
so schulde a man for his wyf if/ it were neede

[930] ¶ Now how þat a womman schulde be subiect
to hir housbonde þat tellith seint peter . iij°. c°. first in obedi-
ence [931] and eek/ as saip þe decre. A womman þat
is a wif as longe as sche is a wif sche haþ noon
auctorite to swere ne to bere witnesse wiþoute leue of
hir housbonde þat is hir lord. algate he schulde be so
by resoun. [932] sche schulde eek serue him in al

honeste and ben attempre of hir array / I wot wel
 þat þay schulde sette here entent to please her house-
 bondes but noughit by here queyntise of array [933] ¶ Seint
 Ierom saith þat wyues þat ben arrayed in silk and
 in purple ne mowe nouȝt cloþe hem in ihū
 crist ¶ Ioke what saith saint Iohn eek in þe same matier
 [934] ¶ Seint gregori saith eek þat no wight sekith
 precious cloþing ne array but oonly for veyn glorie to ben
 honoured þe more biforn þe poeple [935] ¶ It is a gret
 foly a womman to haue fair array outward and
 hirsilf to ben foul inward [936] ¶ A wyf schulde eek be
 mesurable in lokyng and in beryng and in laugheing
 and discrete in alle hir wordes. [937] and
 aboue alle worldly þinges sche schulde loue hir housebonde/
 with al hire herte and to him to be trewe of hir body.
 [938] so scholde an housebonde eeke ben to his wif.
 For sith þat al þe body is þe housebondes. so schulde
 here herte ben. or ellis þer is bitwixe hem tuo as in
 þat no parfyȝt mariage [939] ¶ Thanne schal men vnder-
 stonde þat for þre þinges a man and his wyf mowe fleischly
 assemble ¶ The firste is in entent of engen-
 drure of children to the seruice of god. for certis þat is
 þe causefynal of matrimoyne [940] ¶ The secounde cause is to
 zelden euerych of hem his dette vn to oþer of his body
 ¶ For euerych of hem haȝ power of his oughne body
 ¶ The þridde is for to eschiewe leccherie and vilenye.
 þe ferþe forsoþe is dedly synne. [941] as to þe
 firste it is meritory. The secounde also for as saȝ þe
 decre þat sche haȝ merit of chastite þat zeldith to
 hir housebonde þe dette of hir body. ȝe þough it be
 agayn hir likyng and þe lust of hir hert [942] ¶ The
 þridde maner is venial synne. and trewly scarsly may
 eny of þese be wiþoute venial synne for þe
 corrupcioun and for þe delit. [943] The ferþe
 maner is for to vnderstonde as if þay assemble oonly for
 amorous loue and for noon of þe forsayde causes. but



for to accomplise þilke brennyng delyt þay rekke neuer how ofte. soþely it is dedly synne and ȝit wip sorwe some folk' wole more payne hem for to doon þan to her appetit suffiseþ.

[944] the secounde maner of chastite is to ben a clene wydewe and to eschiew þe embrasynges of men and desiren þe enbrasynges of ihū crist' [945] þese ben þo þat' han ben wyues and han forȝon here housbondes and eek' wommen þat' han doon lecherie and be relieved by penitence / [946] and certis if þat' a wyf coupe kepe hir al chast' by licence of hir housebonde so þat' sche ȝeue non occasioun þat' he agilt' it were to hir a gret' merit' [947] ¶ Thise maner wymmen þat' obseruen chastite moste be clene in herte as wel as in body and in þought' and mesurable in cloþynge & in countenaunce. abstinent in etyng' and drynkyng' in speche and in dede. and þanne is sche þe vessel or þe boyst' of the blessed Maryladyne þat' fulfillith holy chirche ful of good odour. [948] ¶ The priddyde maner of chastite is virginite. and it/ bihouop þat' sche be holy in herte and clene of body. and þanne is sche spouse of ihū crist' and sche is þe lif of aungels. [949] sche is þe preysyng' of þis world. and sche is an þese martires in egalite. sche hap in hir þat' tynge þat' tynge may nouȝt' telle. [950] virginite bar oure lord ihū crist' and virgine was himselue

[951] ¶ Anoper remedy agayns lecherie is specially to wipdrawe suche þinges as ȝiuen occasioun to þilke vilonye as is ease and etyng' and drynkyng' For certen whan þe pot' boylith strongely. þe beste remedye is to wipdrawe þe fyr [952] slepyng' eek' in gret' quiete is eek' a greet' norice vnto lecherie

[953] ¶ Anoper remedy agayns lecherie is þat' a man or a woman eschiewe þe companye of hem by whiche he doutith to be tempted. for al be it so þat' þe dede be wipatonde: ȝit is þer gret' temptacioun

[954] sothely a whit wal al pough it brenne not fully by stikyng' of a candel 3et is þe wal blak' of stiking' of a candel ful ofte tyme. [955] I rede þat' no man truste in his oughne perfeccioun but he be stronger þan Sampson or holiere þan Dauid. and wiser þan salamon

[956] ¶ Now after þat' I haue declared 3ow þe seuen dedly synnes as I can & some of here braunches and here remedies: soþely if I couþe I wolde telle 3ow þe ten comaundementes. [957] but so heigh a doctrine I leue to diuines. but/ napeles I hope to god þay ben touchid in þis litil tretys eue¶rich of hem alle

De secunda parte penitencie [in margin]

[958] **N**ow for as moche as þe secounde part' of penitence stant' in confessioun of mouth as I bigan in þe chapitre I say seint austyn saith. [959] Synne is euery word and euery dede / and al þat' men coueyten agayn þe lawe of ihū crist'. and þis is for to synne in herte in mouthe and in dede by þy fyue wittis þat' been. sight' heeryng' smellyng' tastyng' or sauoryng' or felyng' [960] ¶ Now it' is good to vnderstonden þe circumstaunces þat' aggreggen moche to euery synne. [961] þou schalt' considre what' þou art' þat' dost' þe synne wheþir þat' þou be mal or femal. old oþer 3ong' gentil or þral. free or seruauñt hool or seck'.
weddid or conde. aridid or unaridid. yue or faul



mennes houses or in þin owne in feld or in chirche
or in chirchewawe. in chirche dedicate or noon.
[965] For if [.

no gap in the MS.] it be dedicate it is enterdited til it
be reconsiled by þe bischop [966] and þe
prest scholde be enterdyted þat dede such a vilonye to terme
of al his lyf & scholde no more synge no masse and if he dede
he schulde do dedly synne at every tyme þat he songt masse
[967] ¶ The ferthe circumstaunce is by which media-
tours as by which messagers ¹or for entysement or for
consentement to bere companye with felawes For
many a wrecche for to bere companye wol go to þe
deuel of helle. [968] for þay þat eggyn. or con-
sentyn to þe synne ben parteneres of þe synne and
of þe dampnacioun of þe synnere

[969] ¶ The fyfte is how many tynes
þat he hap synned if it be in his mynde / and how ofte
þat he hap falle. [970] For he þat ofte fallith in synne.
despiseþ þe mercy of god and encreseceþ his synne
and is vnkynde to crist and he waxith þe more feble
to wipstonde synne and synneþ þe more lightly
[971] and þe latter arrisith and is þe more eschiewe
to schriue him. and namely to him þat hap ben his con-
fessour. [972] For whiche þat folk whan þay falle agayn
in here olde folies eyther þay forletin her confessours
al vtterly or ellis þay departen here schrifte in diuers
places. butt soþely such departed schrifte hap no
mercy of god of his synnes [973] ¶ The sixte circum-
staunce is why þat a man synneþ as by which temptacioun
[. *no gap*] or by ex-
citing^t of oþer folk or if he synne wip a womman by
force or by hir owne assent. [974] or if þe womman
maugre hir heed hap ben enforced or noon. þis
schal sche telle. or for coueytise or for pouerte &
if it was hire procuryng or noon and alle such maner

harneys [975] ¶ The .vij. circumstaunce is in what maner he hap don his synne or how þat sche hap suffred þat folk han doon to hire. [976] þe same schal þe man telle pleyndly alle þe circumstaunces. and wheþer he haue synned wiþ commune bordeal womman or noon. [977] or doon his synne in holy tyme or noon. in fastyng tyme or noon. or biforn his schrifte of after his latter schrifte [978] And hap par aduenture broken his penaunce enioyned þerfore. by whos help or by whos counseil by sorcery or by oþer craft al moste be told [979] ¶ Alle þese þinges after þay be grete or smale engreggen þe consciens of a man and eek þe prest þat is þe iugge may þe better ben auysed of his iugement in ȝiuyng of þy penaunce / and þat is after þy contricioun. [980] For vnderstonde wel þat after þe tyme þat a man hap defouled his baptisme by synne if he wol come to sauacioun þer is noon oþer wey but penitence and schrifte of mouthe and by satisfaccioun [981] and namely by þo tuo. if þer be a confessour to which he may schryue him. and þe þridde if ȝe haue lif to parforme it.

[982] þanne schal men loke it and considre þat if he wol make a trewe and a profitable confessioun þer moste be foure condiciouns [983] ¶ First it moste ben in sorweful bitternesse of herte as sayde þe king Ezechiel to god ¶ I wol remembre me alle þe ȝeres of my lif in bitternes of myn hert. [984] þis condicioun of bitter-



seint' augustyn þat' such schamefast' folk' ben next
forzeuenes of remissioun [988] ¶ The secounde signe is
humilite of confessioun ¶ Of which saip seint petre
humblith ȝow vnder þe might' of god. þe hond of god
is myȝty in confessioun For þer-by god forȝiueth þe
synnes he alone haþ þe power. [989] and þis
humilite schal ben in herte and in signe outward. For
right' as he haþ humilite to god in his herte! right' so
schulde he humble his body outward to þe prest' þat' sittith
in goddes place [990] For which in no manere sith þat'
crist is souerayn and þe prest' is his mene and mediatour bi-
twix crist' and þe synnere and þe synner is þe lasse as by
way of resoun! [991] þanne schulde nouȝt' þe confessour sitte
as lowe as þe synnere but' þe synnere schulde knele biforn him
or at his feet' but' if maladye destourbid it' for he schal take no
keep who sittith þere but' in whos place þat' he sitteth.
[992] a man þat' haþ trespassed to a lord and cometh for to
axe him of mercy and to maken his accord / and settith him
doun anon by þe lord. men wolde holde him outrageous and
not' worþy so soone for to haue mercy ne remissioun [993] ¶ The
þridde signe is þat' þy schrifte schulde be ful of teeris if
men may wepe. and if he may not' wepe wiþ his bodily eyen
let' him wepe wiþ his herte. [994] Such was þe confessioun
of seint peter. For after he hadde forsake ihū crist'.
he wente out' and wepte ful bitterly [995] ¶ The ferthe
signe is þat' he lette nouȝt' for schame to schewen
his confessioun. [996] Such was þe confessioun of þe
magdaleyn þat' spared for no schame of hem þat' were
at þe feste to go to oure lord ¹ihū crist' and byknowe
to him hire synne [997] ¶ The fifte signe is þat' a man
or a womman be obeisaunt/ to resceyue þe penaunce þat'
him is enioyned. For certis ihū crist' for
þe gultes of oon man was obedient' to his deth

[998] ¶ The oþer condicioun of verray confessioun
is þat' it' hastily be doon. For certes if a man had a
dedly wounde. euer þe lenger þat' he taried to warisch

himself: þe more wolde it corrupte and haste him to his deþ and eek þe wounde wolde be þe worse to hele [999] ¶ and right so fareþ synne þat long time is in a man vnschewed [1000] Certes a man oughte soone schewe his synne for many causes as for drede of deth þat comeþ sodeinly and not certeyn what tyme it schal come or ben in what place. and eek þe drecchyng of oon synne draweþ anoþer [1001] and eek þe lenger he tarieþ þe ferþer is he from crist and if he abyde vnto his laste day skarsly may he schriue him or remembre him of his synnes or repente for þe greuous malady of his deth [1002] ¶ And for as moche as he haþ not in his lif herkened Ihū crist whan he haþ spoken: he schal crien to ihū crist at his laste day. and scarsly wol he herken him. [1003] And vnderstonde þat þis condicioun moste haue foure þinges þy schrifte moste ben purueyed byforn and auysed. For wikked haste doþ no profyt and þat a man can schryue him of his synnes. be it of pride or of enuye and so forþ alle þe spices and þe circumstaunces [1004] and þat he haue comprehendid in his mynde the nombre and þe gretnes of his synne [. no gap] [1005] and eek þat he be contrit of his sinnes and in stedefast purpos by þe grace of god neuer eft to falle in synne and eek þat he drede and countrewayte himself and þat he flee þe occasiouns of synne to whiche he



pou hast ben schryuen of þy curate but if it like þe of þin humilite. þis is no departyng of schrifte [1009] ne I ne say not þere as I speke of diuisioun of confessioun ¹þat if þou haue licence to schryue þe to a discret and to an honest prest wher þe likith and eek by þe licence of þy curate þat þou ne maist wel schriue þe to him of alle þyn synnes. [1010] but let no synne be byhinde vntold as fer as þou hast remembraunce. [1011] and whan þou schalt þe schriue to þi curate: telle him eke al þy synne þat þou hast doo sith þou were last I-schryue. þis is no wikkid entent of diuisioun of schrifte

[1012] ¶ Also þy verrey schrifte askith certeyn condiciouns. First þat þou schriue þe by þy fre wille nouȝt constreyned ne for schame of folk ne for maladye or such ping. for is resoun þat he þat trespassith wiþ his fre wille [. . . no gap in the MS.] confesse his trespas. [1013] noon oþer man schal telle his synne but himself. ne he schal not nayte or denye his synne ne wrappe him with þe prest for his amonestyng to lete synne [1014] ¶ The secounde condicioun is þat þy schrifte be laweful þat is to sayn þat þou þat schriuest þe and eek þe prest þat herith þy confessioun ben verrayly in þe feith of holy chirche [1015] and þat a man be nouȝt despaired of þe mercy of Ihū crist/ as caym or Iudas. [1016] and eek a man moot accuse himself of his owne trespas and not another: but he schal blame and wite himself and his oughne malice of his synne / and noon other [1017] ¶ But napeless if þat anoþer man by occasioun or ellis enticer of his synne or þat þe estate of a persone be such þurgh which his synne aggregith or elles þat he may not playnly schryue hym but he telle þe persone wiþ which he haþ synned þanne may he telle it [1018] so þat his entent be nouȝt to bakbyte þe persone: but oonly to declare his confessioun

[1019] Thow schalt nouȝt eke make no lesyng' in
 þy confessioun for humilite [. . . *no gap*] to sayn
 þat þou hast don synnes of whiche þou were
 neuer gulty [1020] as seint augustyn saip ¶ If þou by
 cause of humilite makest lesynges
 on þiself. þough þou were not in synne biforn
 ȝit art þou þanne in synne þurgh þy lesynges [1021]
 ¶ Thou most schewe þy synne by þyn oughne propre
 mouth but þou woxe dombe. and not by no
 lettre. for þou þat hast don þe synne þou schalt haue
 þe schame. [1022] þou schalt nouȝt
 peynte þy confessioun by faire subtil wordes to couer
 þe more þy synne for þanne bigilist þou þiself and
 not þe prest. þou most telle it platly be it
 neuer so foul ne so horrible. [1023] þou schalt eek/
 schriue þe to a prest þat is discrete to counsaile þe ¶ And
 þou schalt nouȝt schryue þe for ¹veinneglorie ne for
 ypoecrisie. [.
 *no gap in the MS.*] [1024] ¶ þou
 schalt not eek renne to þe prest sodeinly to telle him
 lightly þy synne as who-so tellith a tale or a iape. but
 auysily and wiþ gret deuocioun: [1025] and generally
 schriue þe ofte. if þou ofte falle: ofte þou aryse by
 confessioun [1026] ¶ And þough þou schryue þe ofter
 þan oones of synne of which þou hast ben schriuen: it is
 þe more merite and as saith seint augustyn ¶ Thou



[1029]

¶ *De terciā parte penitencie*

The þridde partye of penitence is Satisfaccioun and þat stondith generally in almes dede and bodily peyne [1030] ¶ Now ben þer [. . .] of almes dede ¶ Contricioun of herte where a man offereþ himself to god ¶ The secounde is. to haue pite of þe defaute of his neighebor ¶ The þridde is. in good counseil and comfort gostly and bodily where men han neede and namely in sustenaunce of mennes foode. [1031] and take keep þat a man haþ neede of [. . .] *no gap in the MS.* cloþing and herberwe. he haþ [. . .] charitable counseil and visityng in prisoun and malady. and sepulture of his dede body [1032] ¶ And if þou may not visite þe needeful wip þy persone: visite by þy message and by þy giftes. [1033] þese ben general almesses or werkes of charite of hem þat han temporal riches or discrecioun in counselynge. Of þese werkes schalt þou hieren at þe day of doom

[1034] þis almes schalt þou doon of þin oughne *propur* þinges and hastily and priuely if þou maist. [1035] But napeles if þou maist not do priuely: þou schalt nouȝt forbere to do almes þough men se it / so þat it be nouȝt don for þank of þe world but onoly for þonk of ihū crist [1036] ¶ For as witnessith seint *Mathewe .v^{to}*. ¶ A cite may not ben hid þat is set on a mountayn ne non light not a lanterne and put it vnder a buisschel but men sette it on a candel stikke to lighte þe men in þe hous. [1037] Right so schal ȝoure light lighten biforn men þat men may se ȝoure goode werkes and glorifen ȝoure fader þat is in heuen

[1038] ¶ Now as to speke of bodily peyne. it is in prayere in wakinges in fastynges. in vertuous

techinges of orisouns. [1039] 3e schul vnderstonde þat orisouns or prayeres is for to seyn a pitous wil of herte þat redresseþ in god and expressith it by word outward to remembre harmes and to haue þinges espirituel & ¹ durable and som tyme temporel þinges of whiche orisouns of þe orisoun of þe pater noster . hap oure lord ihū crist enclosed most þinges [1040] ¶ Certis it is priuileged of þre þinges in his dignite [. no gap] þan any oþer prayer. For ihū crist himself maked it. [1041] and it is schort for it schulde be coud þe more lightly. and forto wipholde it þe more esily in herte and helpe himselfe þe oftere with þe orisoun [1042] and for a man schulde be þe lasse wery to say it. and for a man may not excuse him to lerne it. it is so schort and so easy and for it comprehendith in it self alle goode prayeres [1043] ¶ The exposicioun of þis holy praier þat is so excellent and so digne. I bitake to þese maystres of theology. saue þus moche wol I sayn whan þou prayest/ þat god schulde forgiue þe þy gultes as þou forgiuest hem þat þey gulten to þe: be ful wel war. þat þou be not out of charite. [1044] þis holy orisoun amenisith eek venial synne. and þerfore it appendith specially to penitence.

[1045] þis praier moste be trewely sayd and in verray faith. and þat men pray to god ordinatly and discretly & deuoutly and alway a man schulde putte his wille



temptacioun. [1049] 3e schul vnderstonde þat fast-
ynges stont in þre þinges ¶ In forbering^e of bodily mete
and drink^e. and in forberyng^e of worldly iolite. and in for-
bering^e of worldly synne. þis is to sayn þat a man schal
kepe him fro dedly synne in al þat he may

[1050] ¶ And þou schalt vnderstonde eek^e þat god
ordeyned fastyng^e. and to fastyng^e appurteynen foure
þinges [1051] ¶ largesce to pouer folk^e. gladnes of
hert^e espirituel. not^e to ben angry ne annoyed ne
grucche for he fastith. and also resonable hour for to
ete. ete by mesure þat is to sayn a man schulde not^e ete in
vntyme ne sitte þe lenger at his mete for he
fastith

[1052] ¶ Thanne schal þou vnderstonde þat bodily
peyne stant^e in discipline or teching^e by word or by
wrytyng^e or by ensample. Also in heires weryng^e or
of stamyn or of habeious on her naked fleisch for cristes
sake and suche maner penaunce [1053] ¶ But ware þe wel
þat such maner penaunce ¹of þyn fleissch make nouȝt
þin herte bitter or angry or anoyed of þiself^e. for better is
to cast away þin hayre þan for to caste away þe swet-
nes of ihū crist^e. [1054] and þerfor seiþ seint poule
¶ Clothe ȝow as þay þat ben chosen of god in herte of
misericorde debonairete. sufferaunce and such maner of
cloþing^e. of þe which ihū crist^e is more appayed þan of
haire or of hauberkis

[1055] ¶ þan is eek^e in knokkyng^e on
þe brest^e. in scourgyng^e wiþ ȝerdes. in knelynges. in
tribulaciouns [1056] in suffring^e paciently wronges þat
ben doon to him/ and eek^e in pacient^e sufferaunce of maledies
or lesyng^e of worldly catel or of wif^e. or of child or of
opir frendes

[1057] ¶ Thanne schalt þou vnderstonde whiche þinges
destourben penaunce / and þis is in foure þinges. þat is.
drede. schame. hope. and wanhope. þat is desperacioun
[1058] ¶ And for to speke first/ of drede for which he

weneth þat he may suffre no penaunce. [1059] þer
agayns is remedye for to pinke þat bodily penaunce is
but schort and litel at þe regard of þe peyne of helle þat
is cruel and so long þat it/ lastith wipouten ende

[1060] ¶ Now agains þe schame þat a man hap to
schryue him and namely þese ypocrites þat wolde
be holde so parfyt þat þay haue no meede to schriue
hem. [1061] agayns þat schame schulde a man pinke þat
by way of resoun þat he hath not ben aschamed to
do foule þinges. Certis him oughte not ben aschamed to
doon faire þinges & goode þinges and þat is confessioun [1062]
¶ And man scholde eek pinke þat god seeth alle þy
þoughtes and þy werkes to him may no þing be
hyd ne couered [1063] men schulde eek remembre
hem of þe schame þat is to come at/ þe day of doom to
hem þat ben nought penitent and schriuen in þis present
lif. [1064] For alle þe creatures in heuen ne in erthe and in
helle schuln seen apertly al þat he hydith in þis world

[1065] ¶ Now for to speke of hem þat
ben so negligent and slowe to schryue hem stant in
tuo maneres [1066] ¶ þat oon is. þat he hopith for to lyue
longe and for to purchace moche riches for his delyt.
and þanne he wol schriue him. and as he saith he may as
him semith tymely ynough come to schrifte
[1067] ¶ Another is of þe Surquidie þat he hap in cristes
mercy [1068] ¶ Agains þe firste vice he schal pinke

pinke þay mighte nought longe perseuer in goodnesse [1071] ¶ The firste wanhope cometh of þat he demyth þat he synned so highly and so ofte and so longe layn in synne þat he schal not be saued [1072] ¶ Certis aȝens þat cursed wanhope schulde he þenke þat þe passioun of Ihū crist is more strong for to vnbynde þan synne is strong for to bynde [1073] ¶ Agains þe secounde wanhope he schal pinke þat als ofte as he fallith he may arise agayn by penitence / And þough he neuer so longe haue leyn in synne þe mercy of crist is alway redy to resceyue him to mercy [1074] ¶ Agains þe wanhope þat he demeth þat he pinkith he schulde not longe perseuere in goodnesse. he schal pinke þat þe febles of þe deuyl may no þing doon but men wol suffre him. [1075] And eek he schal haue strengþe of þe help of god and of al holy chirche and of þe proteccioun of aungels if him list

[1076] ¶ Thanne schal men vnderstonde what is þe fruyt of penaunce And after þe word of ihū crist ¶ hit is þe endeles blisse of heuen [1077] þer ioye hath no contrariete of wo ne of penaunce ne greuaunce. þer alle harmes ben passed of þis present lif. ther as is þe sikernes fro þe peyne of helle. [.

. [1078]

no gap in the MS.] þere as is þe body of man þat whilom was seek. frel and feble and is immortal. and so strong and so hool þat þer may no þing empeire it. [1079] þer nys neyþer honger þurst ne colde. but euery soule replenished wiþ þe sight and þe parfyt knowyng of god [1080] ¶ This blisful regne may men purchace by pouerte espirituel and þe glorie by lowenes. þe plente of ioye by hunger and þurst and reste by trauaile and þe lif by deth and mortificacioun of synne.

[*Small break in the MS.*]

¶ Preces de Chauceres ./

[1081]

NOW pray I to ȝow alle þat heren þis litel tretis
 or reden þat if þer be any þing þat likes
 hem þat þer-of þay þanke oure lord ihū
 crist of whom procedith alle witte and al goodnes
 [1082] ¶ And if þer be eny þing þat displeith hem I
 pray hem þat þay arette it to þe defaute of myn
 vnconnyng¹ and not to my wille þat wolde sayn haue
 sayd better if I hadde connyng² [1083] ¶ For þe
 book³ saip. al þat is writen. for oure
 doctrine is writen [. *no gap*] [1084] For I
 biseke ȝow mekely for þe mercy of god þat ȝe pray for
 me þat god haue mercy on me and forȝeue me my
 giltyes [1085] and nameliche my translaciouns and of endit-
 yng/ in worldly vanitees. whiche I reuoke in my re-
 tracciouns [1086] as is þe book⁴ of troyles. þe book⁵
 also of fame. þe book⁶ of .29. ladies þe
 book⁷ of þe duchesses. þe book⁸ of seint valentines
 day and of þe parliment of briddes. þe Tales of Cauntur-
 bury alle þilke þat sounen in to synne [1087] þe book⁹ Many
 of þe leo. and oper bokes if þay were in my mynde / or



SIX-TEXT 685

GROUP I. § 2. PARSON'S TALE. Harleian 7334. 691

penitence . confessioun . and satisfaccioun . to don in þis
present lif [1091] þurgh þe benigne grace of him þat is king
of kynges and prest of alle prestis þat bought vs
wip his precious blood of his hert : [1092] So þat I moote
be oon of hem at þe day of doom that schal be sauyd
Qui cum patre



APPENDIX

TO THE HARLEIAN MS 7834

OF AN END-LINK, HYMN, AND CUTS, NOT IN THE MS.

-
- | | PAGE |
|---|------|
| 1. The genuine <i>Nun's Priest's End-Link</i> , Group B,
§ 15, from MS Reg. 17 D xv, Brit. Mus. ... | 694 |
| (T'would have followd p. 3 ²⁹ / ₇ above, had it been
in the Harleian MS.) | |
| 2. The Hymn of Chaucer's Oxford Clerk Nicholas,
" <i>Angelus ad Virginem</i> " (A 3216, p. 92 abuv),
from the Arundel MS 248, ab. 1250-60 A.D.,
in English and Latin ; a facsimile and a print | 695 |
| 3. Woodcuts of the Paintings of the 23 <i>Tellers of
the Canterbury Tales</i> copied from the Ellesmere
MS, and cut, by Mr. W. H. Hooper. | |
| 4. Woodcuts of 6 <i>Tellers of 6 of the Canterbury
Tales</i> — the Reeve, Cook, Wife of Bath,
Pardoner, Monk, and Manciple,—and of 6
<i>Allegorical Figures for the Parson's Tale</i> ,—
Envy and Charity, Gluttony and Abstinence,
Lechery and Chastity,—copied from MS Gg.
4. 27 in the Cambridge University Library,
and cut, by Mr. W. H. Hooper. | |

1.

THE NUN'S PRIEST'S END-LINK.

[MS Reg. 17 D xv., leaf 284 (paper, f 1460).]

Sir Nonnes prist. our host sayde anon
 I-blessid be thy breche. and every stoon
 This was a mery tale of chauntillier
 But be my trowth if thow were a seculer 4640
 Thow woldest bien. a tredefoule aright
 For if thow have corage. as thow hast myght
 The were nede. of hennys as I wene
 Ya mo than .vij. tymes. seventene 4644
 Se whiche brawnes. hath this gentil prist
 So grete a nekke. and so large a brist
 He lokith as a sparhawke. with his Ien
 Hym nedith nat. his colours for to dyen 4648
 With brasil ne with grayne of portyngale
 Now *sir* faire fal yow. for youre mery tale
 Here endith
 the tale of



2.

The Hymn of Chaucer's Oxford Clerk, NICHOLAS,

"ANGELUS AD VIRGINEM."

(Miller's Tale, Group A. l. 3216, p. 92, abuv.)

ENGLISH (rymes *ababcc, dde, cec*).

THE LATIN ORIGINAL:

Arundel MS. 248, leaf 154. Ab. 1250-60, A.D.

'ANGELUS AD VIRGINEM.'

1

Gabriel fram evene king
 sent to þe maide swete,
 broute¹ þire blisful tiding,
 And faire þe gan hire greten : 4
 "Heil be þu, ful of grace arith !
 "for godes sone, þis evene lith, 6
 "for mannes louen,
 "wile man bicomem,
 "and taken 9
 "fles of þe, maiden brith,
 "ma[n]ken fre for to maken
 "of senne and deules mith." 12

2

Mildeliche im gan andsweren
 þe milde maiden þanne :
 'wiche wise sold ichs beren
 child with-huten manne ?' 16
 þangle seide, "ne dred te nout !
 "þurw þoligast sal ben iwrou 18
 "þis ilche þing,
 "warof tiding
 "ichs bringe : 21
 "al manken wrth ibout
 "þur þi swete chiltinge,
 "and hut of pine ibrou." 24

1

Angelus ad uirginem
 subintrans in conclaue,
 Virginis formidinem
 demulcens inquit, "Aue !
 "Aue regina uirginum !
 "celi terreque dominum
 "conciplies,
 "& paries,
 "intacta,
 "salutem hominum,
 "tu, porta celi facta,
 "medela criminum."

2

'Quomodo conciperem,
 'que uirum non cognoui ?
 'qualiter infringerem
 'quod firma mente uoui !'
 "Spiritus sancti gracia
 "perficiet hec omnia.
 "ne timeas,
 "serl gaudeas
 "secura,
 "quod castimonia
 "manebit in te pura,
 "dei potencia."

¹ e is an overline insertion. In lines 3, 4, 26, 28, 53, 60, &c. the 'þ' of þe, þire, þie, þerde, &c. stands for 'h'.

² A later overline 'so' is before 'for'; but the line should be only 2 measures.

3

Wan þe maiden understud,
 and þangles wordes þerde,
 mildeliche, with milde mud,
 to þangle þie andswerde :
 ' Hure lordes þenmaiden iwis
 ' ics am, þat her abouen is ;
 ' aneftis me
 ' fulfurthed be
 ' þi sawe,
 ' þat ics, sithen ¹his wil is,
 ' maiden, with-huten lawe,
 ' of moder haue þe blis.'

4

þangle wente a-wei mid þan,
 al hut of hire sichte ;
 and ²þire wombe arise gau,
 þurw poligastes mithe ;
 in hire was crist biloken anon,
 suth god, soth man, ine fleas and bon ;
 and of hir fleas
 iboren was
 at time,
 war-þurw us kam god won,
 þe bout us hut of pine,
 and let im for us slon.³

5

Maiden moder makeles,
 of milche ful ibunden,
 Bid for þus, im þat he ches

3

25 Ad hec, uirgo nobilis
 respondens, inquit ei,
 ' Ancilla sum humilis
 28 ' omnipotentis dei,
 ' tibi celesti nuncio
 30 ' tanti secreti conscio,
 ' consentiens
 ' & cupiens
 33 ' uidere
 ' factum quod audio,
 ' parata sum parere
 36 ' dei consilio.'

4

Angelus disparuit,
 & statim puellaris
 uterus intumuit,
 40 uí partus salutaris,
 quo circumdatur utero
 nouem mensium numero ;
 post exiit,
 & iniit
 45 conflictum,
 affigens humero
 cruce[m] qui dedit ictum
 48 soli mortifero.

5

Eya mater domini
 que pacem reddidisti
 Angelis & homini




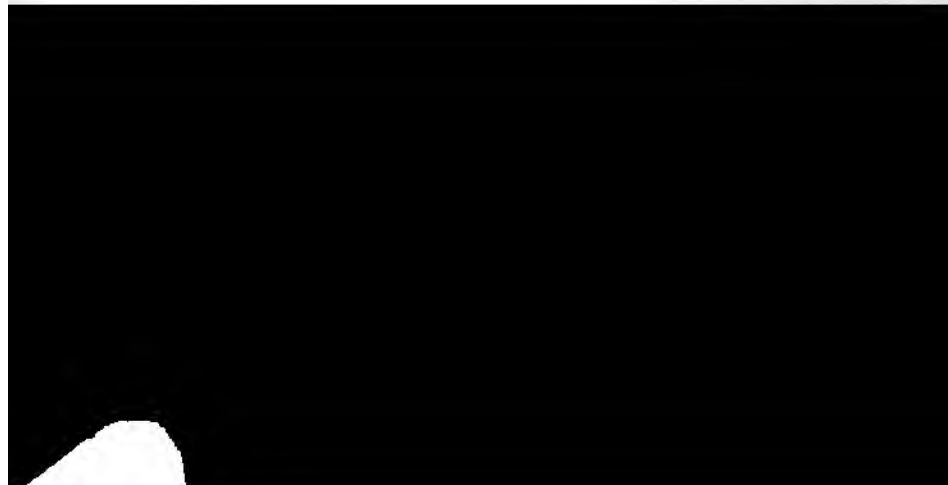
3.

WOODCUTS OF THE
PAINTINGS OF THE 23 TELLERS OF
THE CANTERBURY TALES

COPIED FROM
THE ELLESMERE MS

AND CUT BY
MR W. H. HOOPER.







THE KNYGHT.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 14.

(The brand on the horse's hip—M, 7 for Miles—is in ink, and probably by a later hand.)





STAMPED L.B.



THE MILLERE.
Elfenmere MS. leaf 38, back.

27 MAR 1961

STANFORD LIBRARY



THE REVE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 46.

STANFORD LIBRARY

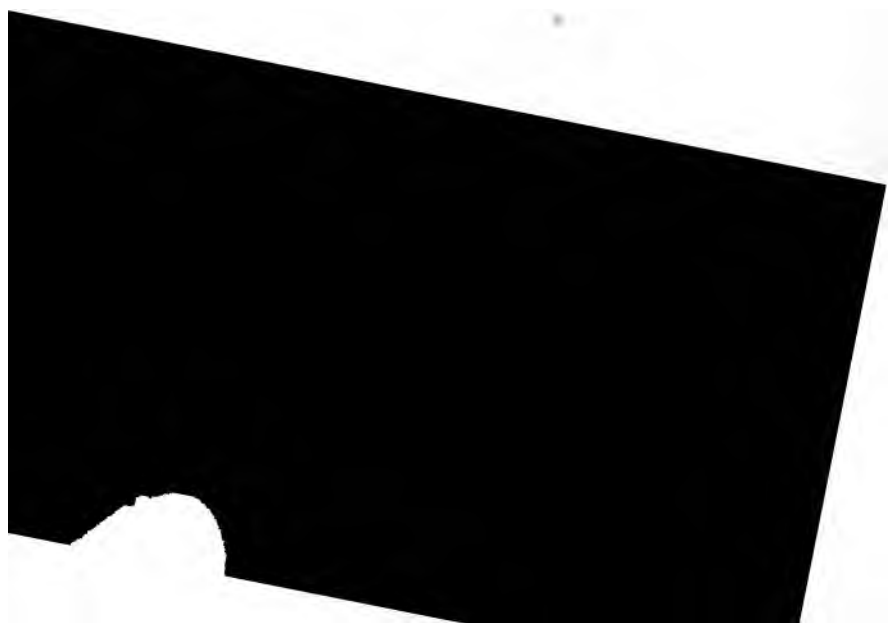


STANFORD LIBRARY



THE COOK.
Elteuere MS, leaf 51.

STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARY





STANFORD LIBRARY



THE MAN OF LAWE.
Ellenore MS, leaf 54, back.

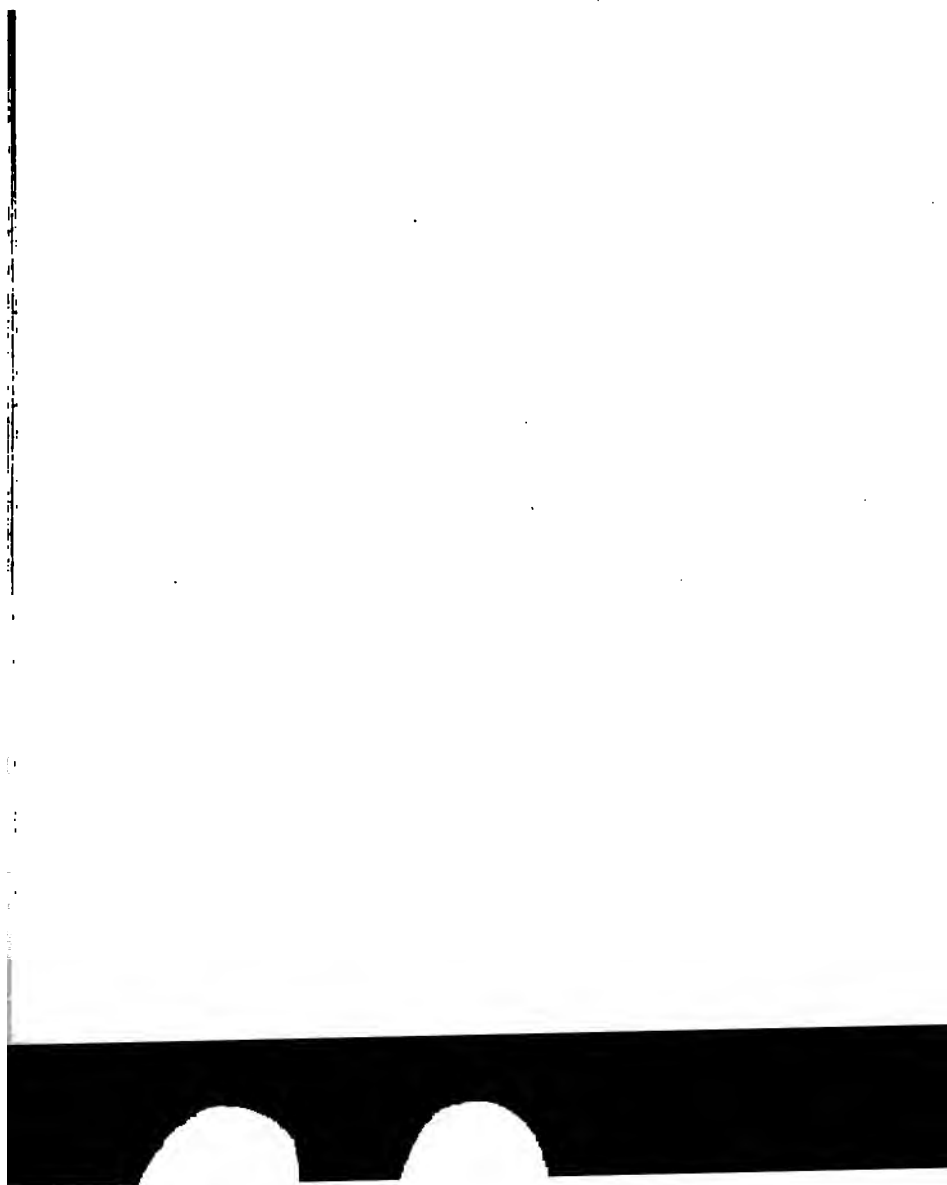
2746700 LIBRARY

STANFORD LIBRARY



THE SHIPMAN.

[Ellesmere MS, leaf 147, back.]





STANFORD LIBRARY



THE PRIORESSE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 152, back.

STANFORD LIBRARY



CHAUCER.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 137, back.

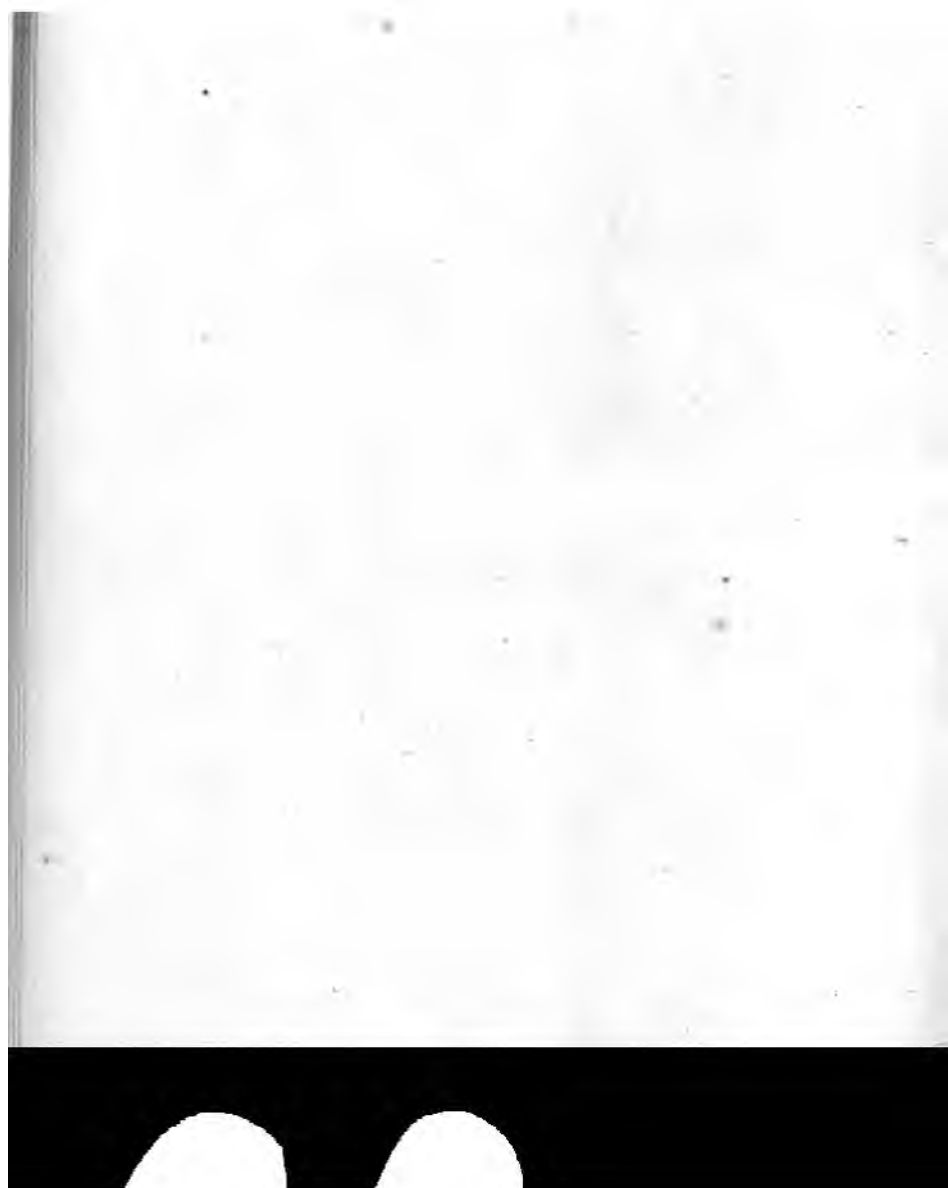
2746060 LIBRARY

STANFORD LIBRARY



THE MONK.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 173.





ANFORD LIBRARY



THE NONNES PREEST.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 183.



STANFORD LIBRARY



THE DOCTOR.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 137.

STANFORD LIBRARY



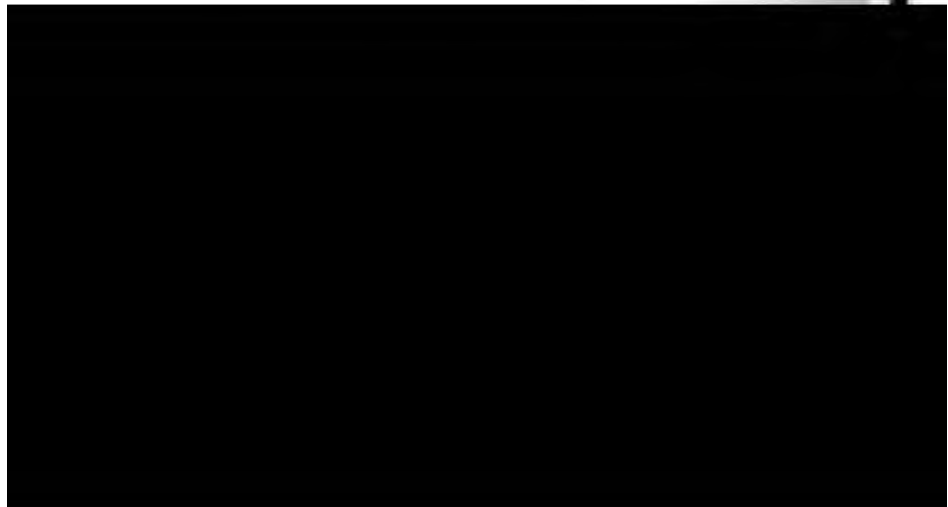
Stanford
Library



THE PARDONER.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 142.

STANFORD LIB.



STANFORD LIBRARY



THE WYF OF BATHE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 76.

STANFORD LIBRARY



THE FRERE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 80, back.

STANFORD LIBRARY

STANFORD LIBRARY



THE SOMONOUR.

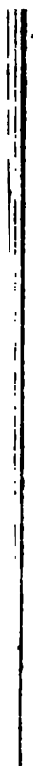
Ellesmere MS, leaf 85, back.

STANFORD LIBRARY

STANFORD LIBRARY



THE CLERK OF OXFORD.
Illustration MS. leaf 88.





STANDARD



THE STANDARD
PUBLISHED BY THE
STANDARD PUBLISHING CO.

STANDARD LAB.



STANFORD LIB.



THE SQUIRE.

Illustration No. 118, back.

1

2

3



THE FRANKLIN.

Elizabethe MS, leaf VII, back.

2146000 LIBRARY

STANFORD LIBRARY



THE SECOND NUN.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 191.



STANFORD LIBRARY



THE CANON'S YEOMAN.

Killemore MS, leaf 128.

100

STANFORD LIBR.



THE MANCIPLE.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 207.

STANFORD LIBRARY





DARFORD LIBRARY



THE PARSON.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 210, back.

[These coloured figures in the Ellesmere MS have evidently been drawn by two different persons. The little pieces of ground on which the later hand places his figures, mark those done by him.

His drawing is not so good as the first hand's; and his colours are badly ground, and of poor quality.—W. H. HOOPER.]



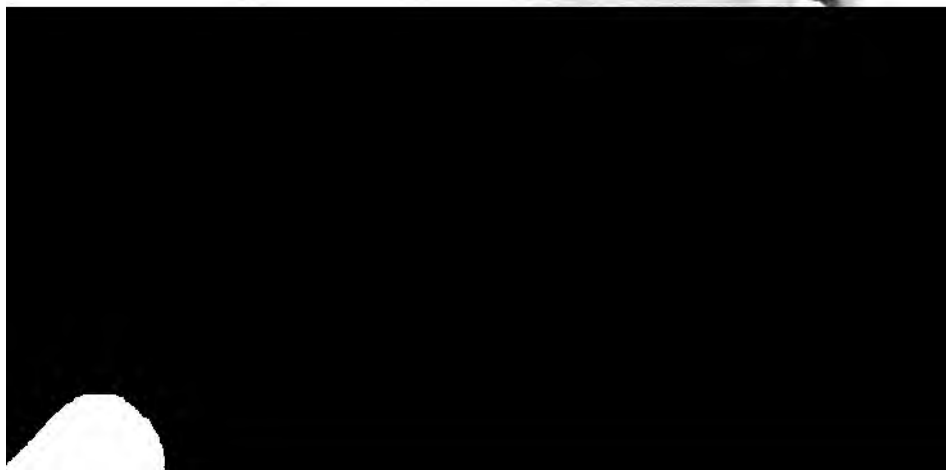
STANFORD LIBRARY



THE REEVE.

MS. Gp. 4. 27, Univ. Libr. Cambr., leaf 186.

Real Growth

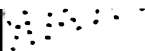


STANFORD LIBRARY



THE FRANKLIN.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 127, back.



STANFORD LIBRARY



THE SECOND NUN.

Ellenmere MS., leaf 191.



STANFORD LIBRARY



THE CANON'S YEOMAN.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 198.



.

.

STANFORD LIBRARY



THE MONK
(without his Bells and Hounds).
MS. Gg. 4. 27, Univ. Libr. Camb., leaf 332.

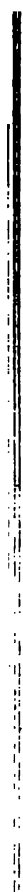
1

STANFORD LIBRARY



THE MANCIPLE.

MS. Gg. 4. 27, Univ. Libr. Cambr., leaf 395.



STANFORD LIBRARY



ENVY

(on his Wolf gnawing a Bone).



CHARITY

(with her wingd and flaming Heart).

Parson's Tale.

MS. Gp. 4. 27, Univ. Libr. Cambr., leaf 416.

STANFORD LIBRARY

STANFORD LIBR.



GLUTTONY AND ABSTINENCE. *Parson's Tale.*

MS. Op. 4. 27, Univ. Libr. Cambr., leaf 432.

1981 09091 3



STANFORD LIBRARY



LECHERY (with her Goat and Sparrow), and CHASTITY (trampling on the Dragon of Lust). *Parson's Tale*.

MS. Gg. 4. 27, Univ. Libr. Cambr., leaf 433.

1

1

STANFORD LIBRARY



THE CANON'S YEOMAN.

Ellesmere MS, leaf 198.

341

0807412

Chaucer Society.

THE
Harleian MS 7334

OF
Chaucer's Canterbury Tales.

EDITED BY
FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL.



LONDON:
PUBLISHED FOR THE CHAUCER SOCIETY BY
N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

—
MDCCCLXXXV.



Chaucer Society.

THE

Harleian MS 7334

OR

Chaucer's Canterbury Tales.

EDITED BY

FREDERICK J. FURNIVALL.



LONDON :

PUBLISHED FOR THE CHAUCER SOCIETY BY
N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

MDCCLXXXV.

The Chaucer Society.

Editor in Chief:—Dr F. J. FURNIVALL, 3, St George's Square, Primrose Hill, N.W.
Hon. Sec.:—W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67, Victoria Road, Finsbury Park, London, N.

THE CHAUCER SOCIETY'S PUBLICATIONS.

To do honour to CHAUCER, and to let the lovers and students of him see how far the best unprinted Manuscripts of his works differed from the printed texts, this Society was founded in 1868. There were then, and are still, many questions of metre, pronunciation, orthography, and etymology yet to be settled, for which more prints of Manuscripts were and are wanted; and it is hardly too much to say that every line of Chaucer contains points that need reconsideration. The founder (Dr. Furnivall) began with *The Canterbury Tales*, and has given of them (in parallel columns in Royal 4to) six of the best theretofore unprinted Manuscripts known. Inasmuch as the parallel arrangement necessitated the alteration of the places of certain tales in some of the MSS, a print of each MS has been issued separately, following the order of its original. The first six MSS printed have been: the Ellesmere (by leave of the Earl of Ellesmere); the Hengwrt (by leave of W. W. E. Wynne, Esq.); the Camb. Univ. Libr., MS Gg. 4. 27; the Corpus, Oxford; the Petworth (by leave of Lord Leconfield); and the Lansdowne 851 (Brit. Mus.). The Harleian 7334 has followed.

Of Chaucer's *Minor Poems*,—the MSS of which are generally later than the best MSS of the *Canterbury Tales*,—all the available MSS have been printed, so as to secure all the existing evidence for the true text.

The *Troilus* Parallel-Text from the 3 best MSS has been issued, and a 4th MS text of it with the englisht Boccaccio Comparison.

The *Boece* from the best MS is now in type.

To secure the fidelity and uniform treatment of the texts, Dr F. J. Furnivall has read and will read all with their MSS.

Autotypes of most of the best Chaucer MSS have been publisht.

The Society's publications are issued in two Series, of which the first contains the different texts of Chaucer's works; and the Second, such originals of and essays on these as can be procured, with other illustrative treatises, and Supplementary Tales.

Messrs Trübner & Co., of 57 & 59, Ludgate Hill, London, E.C., are the Society's publishers, Messrs R. Clay and Sons of Bungay its printers, and the Alliance Bank, Bartholomew Lane, London, E.C., its bankers. The yearly subscription, which constitutes Membership, is two guineas, due on every 1st January, beginning with Jan. 1, 1868. *More Members are wanted. All the Society's Publications can still be had. Those of the first year have been reprinted.*

Prof. Child, of Harvard College, Cambridge, Massachusetts, is the Society's Honorary Secretary for America. Members' names and subscriptions may be sent to the Publishers, or to the Honorary Secretary.

W. A. DALZIEL, Esq., 67, Victoria Road, Finsbury Park, London, N.

FIRST SERIES.

The Society's issue for 1868, in the First Series, is,

I. The Prologue and Knight's Tale, of the *Canterbury Tales*, in 6 parallel



1

2

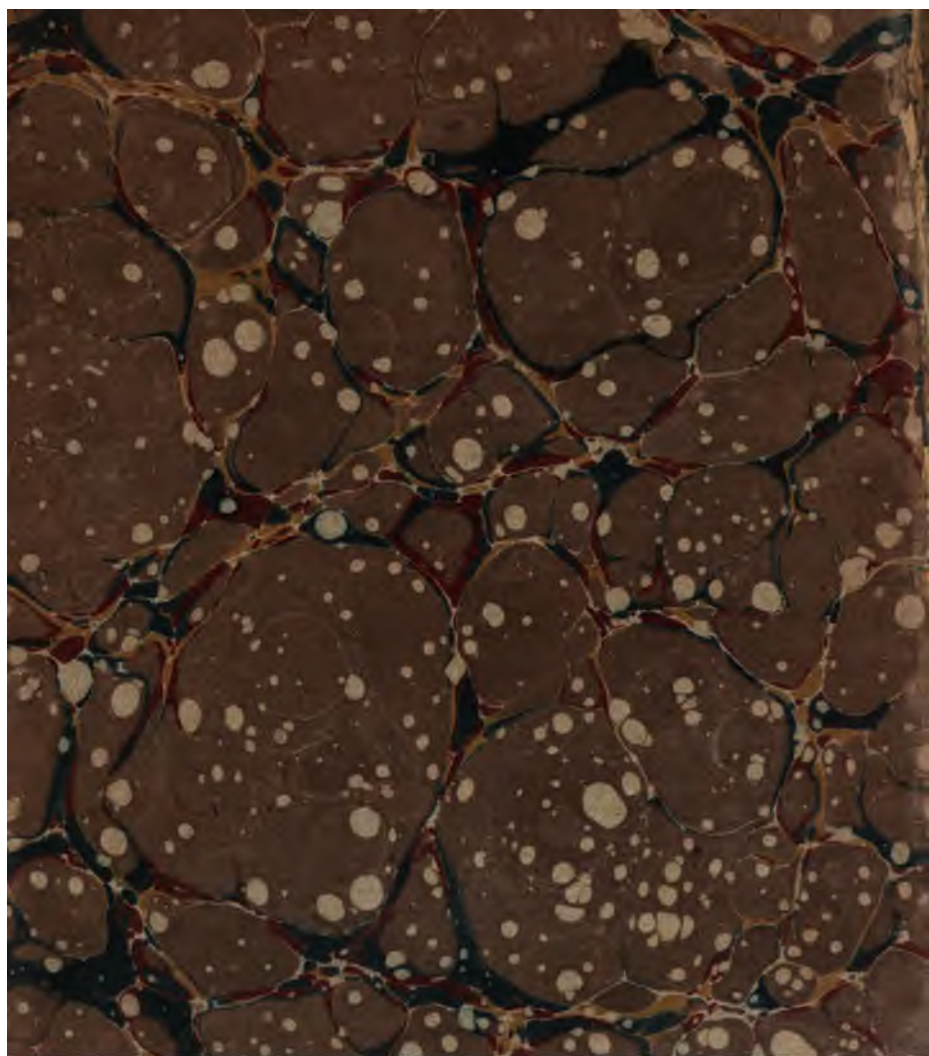
3





•





NOV 25 63

11 13 63

Stanford University Library
Stanford, California

In order that others may use this book,
please return it as soon as possible, but
not later than the date due.

